



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

E Libris

Arturi S. Napier.

F 201 [Per]



300075118P

Oxford University
ENGLISH FACULTY LIBRARY
Manor Road, Oxford OX1 3UQ
Telephone: (0865) 271050

Opening Hours:

Full term: Monday to Friday: 9.30 a.m. to 7 p.m.

Saturday 9.30 a.m. to 12.30 p.m.

Vacation: Monday to Friday 9.30 a.m. to 5 p.m.

Saturday closed.

The Library is closed for approx. one week at Christmas and at Easter, and during August.

This book should be returned on or before the latest date below:

15 OCT 1992

05 DEC 1995

CANCELLED

20 OCT 1999

Readers are asked to protect Library books from rain, etc. Any volumes which are lost, defaced with notes, or otherwise damaged, may have to be replaced by the Reader responsible.

THE
Petworth MS
OF
Chaucer's Canterbury Tales.

THE
Petworth MS
OF
Chaucer's Canterbury Tales.

EDITED BY
FREDERICK J. FURNIVALL.



LONDON:
PUBLISHT FOR THE CHAUCER SOCIETY
BY N. TRÜBNER & CO., 57 & 59, LUDGATE HILL.

—
1868-1879.

First Series.

CLAY AND TAYLOR, THE CHAUCER PRESS, LONDON.

CONTENTS OF THE PETWORTH MS.

Group	Six-Text Pages	Petworth Pages
A. § 1. General Prologue	1	1
§ 2. Knight's Tale (of Palamon, Arcite, and fair Emelye. Pt. II, p. 40 ; Pt. III, p. 54 ; Pt. IV, p. 71)	26	26
§ 3. KNIGHT-MILLER LINK	89	89
§ 4. Miller's Tale (of Nicholas, Absolon, & the Oxford Carpenter's Wife)	92	92
§ 5. MILLER-REEVE LINK	111	111
§ 6. Reeve's Tale (of the Trumpington Miller and Cambridge Clerks)	113	113
§ 7. REEVE-COOK LINK	125	125
§ 8. Cook's Tale (<i>unfinisht</i> : of the Lon- don Victualler's Apprentice) ...	127	127
Appendix to Group A: A <i>spurious</i> COOK-GAMELYN LINK of 2 lines, and The <i>spurious</i> TALE OF GAMELYN		129
<i>Spurious</i> COOK (t. i. GAMELYN)— SHIPMAN LINK ¹		155
<hr/>		
B. § 4. Shipman's Tale (of the Monk and the Merchant's Wife)	168	156
§ 5. SHIPMAN-PRIORESS LINK	181	169
§ 6. Prioress's (Proem and) Tale (of the little murderd Boy)	182	170
§ 1. MAN OF LAW'S HEAD-LINK	129	178
§ 2. Man of Law's (Proem and) Tale (of Constance and her Boy). (Pt. II, p. 142 <i>S.T.</i> , p. 191 <i>Pet.</i> ; Pt. III, p. 157 <i>S.T.</i> , p. 206 <i>Pet.</i>)	132	181
<i>Latin Side-Notes to the Man of Law's Tale</i>	133	182
§ 3. MAN - OF - LAW — SHIPMAN LINK (<i>wrongly</i> as MAN-OF-LAW-SQUIRE LINK)	167	216

¹ Misplaced by the scribe, as its words show it was meant for a
(spurious) *Pardoner-Shipman Link*.

Group	Six-Text Pages	Petworth Pages
[<i>For</i> F, § 1, Squire's Headlink, <i>see</i> p. 375 of the Petworth MS.]		
F. § 2. Squire's Tale (<i>unfinished</i> : of the Magic Horse, &c, and the Falcon) ...	479	217
§ 3. SQUIRE-FRANKLIN LINK (<i>wrongly</i> <i>as</i> SQUIRE-MERCHANT LINK) ...	498	236
[<i>For</i> E, § 1, 2, <i>see</i> p. 335, 387 <i>Pet.</i> ; <i>for</i> E, § 3 (from Addit. MS. 5140), <i>see</i> Appendix 2, p. 709.]		
E. § 4. Merchant's Tale ¹ ...	443	238
[<i>For</i> E, § 5, <i>see</i> p. 374 <i>Pet.</i>]		
D. § 1. Wife of Bath's Preamble ² (of her 5 Husbands, &c.) ...	334	271
§ 2. Wife of Bath's Tale (of what Women most desire) ...	359	296
§ 3. WIFE-FRIAR LINK ...	371	308
§ 4. Friar's Tale (of the Sum'ner carrid off to Hell) ...	372	309
§ 5. FRIAR-SUM'NER LINK ...	383	320
§ 6. Sum'ner's Tale (of the Friar trickt by the sick Husbandman; <i>in-</i> <i>complete, with spurious end.</i> For the genuine end, l. 2159—2294, from Additional MS. 5140, Brit. Mus., <i>see</i> Appendix 1, p. 1*)	385	322
E. § 1. CLERK'S HEAD-LINK ...	403	335
§ 2. Clerk's Tale (of Grisilde). (Pt. II, p. 409 <i>S-T</i> , p. 341 <i>Pet.</i> ; Pt. III, p. 417 <i>S-T</i> , p. 349 <i>Pet.</i> ; Pt. IV, p. 422 <i>S-T</i> , p. 354 <i>Pet.</i> ; Pt. V, p. 428 <i>S-T</i> , p. 360 <i>Pet.</i> ; Pt. VI, p. 433 <i>S-T</i> , p. 365 <i>Pet.</i> ³ Chaucer's Envoy, p. 440 <i>S-T</i> , p. 372 <i>Pet.</i>) ...	405	337

¹ Like the Corpus and Lansdowne MSS., the Petworth has a spurious l. 1778, instead of the genuine E 1777, p. 458 *S-T*, p. 253 *Pet.*, and a spurious l. 1816 (misplaced), p. 459 *S-T*, p. 254 *Pet.* Like Corp. and Lansd., it leaves out l. 1927-8, p. 461 *S-T*, p. 257 *Pet.*, but does not, like Lansd., leave out E 2281-8.

² The MS. wants the lines D 575—584, 609—612, 619—626, 717—720. They are supplied from MS. Reg. 17 D xv. The Petworth MS. also begins the Tale at l. 829 in the Preamble, p. 204, p. 357 *Six-Text*.

³ The MS. wants st. 160, E 1170-76, p. 372 *Pet.*, referring to the Wife of Bath, and also wrongly puts the 4th stanza of the Envoy (st. 164 of the Tale) last, after the 5th and 6th, p. 373 *Pet.*

Group	Six-Text Pages	Petworth Pages
[<i>For E, § 3 (from Addit. MS. 5140), see Appendix 2, p. 709; for E, § 4, p. 238 Pet.</i>]		
E. § 5. MERCHANT'S END-LINK ...	476	374
F. § 1. SQUIRE'S HEAD-LINK ...	478	375
[<i>For F, § 2, 3, see p. 217, 236 Pet.</i>]		
§ 4. Franklin's (Proem and) Tale¹ ...	500	376
G. § 1. Second Nun's (Proem and) Tale (of St. Cecile) ...	527	402
§ 2. SECOND-NUN—CANON'S-YEOMAN LINK ...	547	422
§ 3. Canon's Yeoman's Preamble (of Alchemy, &c.) ...	552	427
§ 4. Canon's Yeoman's Tale (of the ras- cally Alchemist-Canon) ...	560	435
<i>Spurious</i> CANON'S-YEOMAN—DOCTOR LINK		450
C. § 1. Doctor's Tale (of Virginia) ...	303	451
§ 2. DOCTOR-PARDONER LINK ...	312	460
§ 3. Pardoner's Preamble (of his Preach- ing and Tricks) ...	314	462
§ 4. Pardoner's Tale (of the Three Rioters) ...	318	466
[<i>For B, § 1-2, see p. 178—215 Pet.; B, § 3, p. 216 Pet.; B, § 4-6, p. 156—177 Pet.</i>]		
B. § 7. PRIORESS-THOPAS LINK ...	190	481
§ 8. Chaucer's Tale of Sir Thopas (Fitte 2, p. 197 <i>S-T</i>, 488 <i>Pet.</i>) ...	191	482
§ 9. THOPAS-MELIBE LINK ...	199	490
§ 10. Chaucer's Tale of Melibe (prose: on Prudence) ...	201	492
§ 11. MELIBE-MONK LINK ...	253	544
§ 12. Monk's Tale¹ (of Men fallen from high estate) ...	256	547

¹ Like the Corpus and Lansdowne MSS., the Petworth leaves out F 1423-4 and 1433-4, and has a spurious line, F 1436 (misplaced), p. 520 *S-T*; p. 396 *Pet.* It also has not the lines F 1455-6, 1493-8 (p. 398-9), known only in the Ellesmere MS. Like Corp. and Lansd., Petworth has spurious lines for F 1529, F 1556, p. 523 *S-T*, but it does not leave out F 1567-8, as Corp. and Lansd. do.

² The 4 'Modern Instances'—Peter the Cruel of Spain, Peter of Cyprus, Barnabo Visconti of Milan, and Count Ugolino of Pisa—are in their right place, after Zenobia, p. 559 *Pet.*, p. 268 *Six-Text*.

Group	Six-Text Pages	Petworth Pages
§ 13. MONK—NUN'S-PRIEST LINK ...	281	572
§ 14. Nun's Priest's Tale (of the Cock and Fox) ...	283	574
[<i>Fbr</i> B, § 15, NUN'S PRIEST'S END- LINK, <i>see</i> p. 702 <i>Pet.</i>]		
<hr/>		
H. § 1. MANCIPLE'S HEAD-LINK ...	576	592
§ 2. Manciple's Tale (of the Crow) ...	580	596
<hr/>		
I. § 1. BLANK-PARSON LINK ...	589	604
<i>Contents of the Parson's Tale</i> ...	592	607
§ 2. Parson's Tale (a prose treatise on Penitence). (Pt. II, p. 612-678 <i>S-T</i> , p. 628-694 <i>Pet.</i> ; Pt. III, p. 679-683 <i>S-T</i> , p. 695-700 <i>Pet.</i> Leave-taking, p. 684 <i>S-T</i> , p. 701 <i>Pet.</i>) ...	593	609
<hr/>		
<i>Suppl.</i> B. § 15. NUN'S PRIEST'S END-LINK (from the Christ Church MS.)	301	702

Appendix

OF SECTIONS, CUTS, ETC., NOT IN THE PETWORTH MS.

1. Group D, § 6, l. 2159-2294, end of the <i>Sum'ner's Tale</i> , from Addit. MS. 5140, Brit. Mus. ...	397	705
2. Group E, § 3, the <i>Clerk-Merchant-Link</i> , from Addit. MS. 5140 ...	442	709
3. Woodcuts of the 23 <i>Tellers of the 24</i> <i>Canterbury Tales</i> , from the Ellesm. MS.		
4. Woodcuts of 6 <i>Tellers of Canterbury</i> <i>Tales</i> ,—the Cook, Reeve, Wife of Bath, Pardoner, Monk, and Manciple,—and of 6 <i>Allegorical Figures in the Parson's</i> <i>Tale</i> : Wrath and Mercy, Gluttony and Abstinence, Lechery and Chastity, from MS. Gg. 4 27 in the Univ. Libr. Cambridge.		

GROUP A. FRAGMENT I.

§ 1. GENERAL PROLOGUE.

PETWORTH MS.

WHan that Aprille with his shoures soote [leaf 11]
The drought' of marche hath perced to þe roote
And bathes euery veyne in swich licoure
Of which vertue engendrid is þe floure 4
Whan zephirus ek' with his swete breth
Inspired hath in euery holt and heth
The tendre croppis *and* þe yonge sonne
Hath in the ram his halfe cours yronne 8

And smale foules make melodye
That slepen al nyght with open eyghē
So prikeþ hem nature in here corages
Than longen folk' to gon on pilgrymages 12
And palmers for to seke straunge strondes
To ferne halowes couthe in sondry londes
And specially fram euery shires ende
Of engelond to Caunterbury they wende 16
The holy blisseful martir' for to seke
That hem hath holpen when that þey were seke
Byfille þat in that seson on aday
In southwerk' atte Tabbard as I lay 20
Redy to wende on my pilgrymage
To Cantirbury with ful devout corage
At nyht was come in to þat hostellerye
Wel nyne and twenty on a companye 24
Of sondry folk' by auenture yfalle
In felaschipe *and* pilgrymes were þey alle
That toward Cantirbery wolde ryde

2 GROUP A. § 1. GENERAL PROLOGUE. Petworth MS.

The Chambres and stables weren wyde	28
And wel weren esed atte beste	
And schortly whan the sonne was to reste	
So hadde I spoken with hem euerychon	
That I was of here felaschipe anon	32
And made forward erly for to ryse	
To take oure wey there as I you deuyse	
But natheles whil I haue tyme and space	
Or þat I ferther in this tale pace	36
Me thynkep it accordant to reson	
To telle yow al the Condicion	
Of ech of hem so as it semed me	[leaf 1, back]
And whiche they were. <i>and</i> of what degre	40
And eke in what array þat they were Inne	
And at a knyght þan I wol first bigynne	
A knyght þer was <i>and</i> þat a worthy man	
That fro þe tyme þat he ferst bigan	44
To riden out, he louede Chyualrye	
Trouthe <i>and</i> honour fredom and curtesye	
fful worthy was he in his lordis werre	
And therto hadde he ryden no man ferre	48
As wel in Cristendom as in hethenesse	
And euere honoured for his worthynesse	
¶ At Alisaundre he was whan it [was] wonne	
fful ofte tyme he hadde the bord bigonne	52
Aboven alle naciouns in Pruce	
In lettowe had he reysed and in Ruce	
No cristene man so ofte of his degre	
In Gernade at the sege ek hadde he be	56
Of Algezire and riden in belmarye	
At Lyeis was he and at Satalye	
When they were wonne <i>and</i> in the grete see	
At many a noble armeye had he be	60
At mortel batailles had he ben fyftene	
And fouhten for oure faith at tramessene	
In lystes thryes. and ay slayne his foo	

This ilke worthy knyght had ben also	64
Somtyme with the lord of Palatye	
Ayeyn an othir hethen in Turkye	
And euere more he hadde a souereyne pry	
And though þat he was worthy he was wys	68
And of his port as meke as is a mayde	
He neuer yet no velonye ne sayde	
In al his lyf vnto no manere wight	
He was a verrey parfit gentil knyght	72
ffor to tellen yow of his array	
His hors weren gode. but he was not gay	
Of fustyon he werede a gepoñ	
Al bismotered with his habirgeon	76
ffor he was late ycome from his viage	(leaf 2)
And wente for to don his pilgrymage	
With hym þer was his sone a yong squyere	
A lounyere and a lusty bachelere	80
With lockes crulle as they were leyd in presse	
Of twenty yere of age he was I gesse	
Of his stature he was of euene lengthe	
And wonderly delyuere and gret of strengthe	84
And he hadde be somtyme in chynachye	
In flaundres in Artoys and in Pikardye	
And born him wel as of so litil space	
In hope to stonde in his lady grace	88
Embroyded was he as it were a mede	
All ful of fresshe floures white and rede	
Syngynge he was. or floytynge al the day	
He was also fressh as ys þe moneth of may	92
Short was his gowne with sleues longe and wyde	
Wel koude he sitte on an hors and faire ryde	
He koude songes make. and wel endite	
Iuste and eke daunce and wel portrey and write.	96
So hote he louede. that by nygter tale	
He slepte namore than doth a nyghtyngale	
Corteyns he was lowely and servisable	

4 GROUP A. § 1. GENERAL PROLOGUE. **Petworth MS.**

And karf biforn his fadir at the table 100
 A Nothir yeman hadde he *and* seruañtes na mo
 At that tyme. for hym lyst ryde so
 And he was clad in coote *and* hood of grene
 A sheef of pocok arewes bryght and kene 104
 Vndir his belt he bar full thriftily
 Wel couthe he dresse his takel yemanly
 Hise arewes drouped noght with feþeres lowe
 And in his hond he bar a myghty bowe 108
 A not hed hadde he with a broun visage
 Of wode craft wel couthe he al the vsage
 Vppon his arme he bar a gay bracer
 And by his side a sword and a bokeler 112
 And on that opir syde a gay daggere
 Harneysed wel *and* sharp as poynt of spere
 A Cristoffre on his brest of seluer shene (leaf 2, back)
 An horn he bar the bawdrik was of grene 116
 A foster was he sotly as I gesse
 Ther was a nonne also a prioresse
 That of hir smyllynge was ful symple *and* coy
 Hire grettest ooth was but by sey[n]te loy 120
 And she was clepid ma dame Englentyne
 fful wel she song the seruyse divyne
 Entuned in hire nose ful semyly
 And frenshe she spak ful faire and fetysly 124
 Aftir the skole of Stratford atte bowe
 ffor frensch of Parys was to hire vnknowe
 At mete wel I-taught was sche with alle
 She leet no morsel from hir lippes falle 128
 Ne wete hire fyngres in hire sause depe
 Wel couthe she carye a morsel *and* wel kepe
 That no drope ne fille vppon hire breste
 In curtesye was set ful mochel hire leste 132
 Hire ouer lippe wiped she so clene
 That in hir cuppe ther was no ferthing sene
 Of grece whan she dronken hadde hire draughte

ful semyly aftir hir mete she raughte 136
 And sikerly schue was of gret disporte
 And ful plesaunt and amable of porte
 And peynede hire to counterfete chere
 Of court. and to ben estatliche of manere 140
 And to be holden digne of reuerence
 But for to speken of hir Conciense
 She was so charitable and so pitous
 She wolde wepe yif that she sauñ a mous 144
 Kaugh[t] in a trappe yif it were ded or bledde
 Of smale houndes had she that she fedde
 With rostid flesh or mylk or wastelbrede
 But sore wepte she yf oon of hem were dede 148
 Or yf men smoot yt with a yerde smerte
 And al was conscience *and* tendre herte
 fful semeliche hire wimpil pynchid was
 Hir nose was streight. hire eighen grey as glas 152
 Hire mouth ful smal *and* therto softe and rede [leaf 5]
 But sekerly she hadde a fair forhede
 It was almost a spanne brood I trowe
 ffor hardely she was nouht vndingrowe 156
 fful fetys was hir cloke as I was waar
 Of smal coral aboute hir arme she baar
 A paire of bedys gaudid al with grene
 And ther on hyng a broche of gold ful shene 160
 On which þer was first writen a crowned A
 And aftir amor vincit omnia
 An othir Nonne with hire hadde she
 That was hire chapeleyn. *and* prestes thre 164
 A monk þer was a fair for the maistrye
 An out ridere that loued venerye
 A manly man to ben an Abbot able
 fful many a deynte hors hadde he in stable 168
 And whanne he rood. men myhte his brydiß here
 Gynglynge in a whistelynge wynd as clere
 And eke as loude as dooth þe chapel belle

6 GROUP A. § 1. GENERAL PROLOGUE. Petworth MS.

Ther as this lord was keper of the selle 172
 The reule of seynt Maure or of saint Benet
 Bi cause þat yt was olde *and* somdel streit
 This ylke monke leet olde þynges pace
 And heeld aftir the newe world the space 176
 He yaf nouht of the text a pulled hen
 That seith that hunters be nouht holy men
 Ne that a monke whan he is recheles
 Is likened tille a fische þat is watirles 180
 This is to seye a monke out of his cloistre
 But thilke text held he nouht worth an oystre
 And I seyde his opynion was good
 What shulde he studie. and make hymself wood 184
 Vpon a book alwey in cloistre to poure
 Or swynke with his hondis and laboure
 As Austyn bit. hou shal the world be serued
 Lat Austyn haue his swynk to him reserued 188
 Therfore he was a pricasour aright
 Grehoundes he hadde / as swift as foule in flight
 Of prikyng *and* of huntynge for the hare [leaf 3, back]
 Was al his lust for no cost wole he spare 192
 I seigh hise sleeves I-purfiled at the hond
 With grys *and* that the fynest of a lond
 And for to festne his hood vndir the Chynne
 He hadde of gold wrought a ful curious pyne 196
 A loue knotte in the gretter ende þer was
 His hed was ballyd that shon as ony glas
 And eke his face. as he hadde ben anoynt
 He was a lord ful fat and in good poynt 200
 Hise eighen stepe and rollynge in his hede
 That stemed as a fourneys of a lede
 Hise botes souple his hors in grete estate
 Now certeynly he was a fair prelate 204
 He nas nat pale as a forpynd goost
 A fat swan louede he best of any roost
 His palfray was [as] broun as ys a berye

A ffrere ther was a wa[n]toun *and* [a] merye 208
 A lymytour a ful solempne man
 In alle the ordres foure is noon that can
 So mochel of daliañce *and* fair langage
 He hadde made ful many a Mariage 212
 Of yonge wommen at his owne cost
 Vn to his ordre he was a noble post
 fful wel biloued *and* famulier was he
 With frankeleynes oueral in his contre 216
 And with worthy wommen of the toun
 ffor he hadde power of confessioun
 As seide hym self more than a Curat
 ffor [of] his ordre he was lycenciat 220
 fful swetely herede he confession
 And plesaunt was his absolucion
 He was an esy man to yeue penañce
 Ther as he wiste to han a good pitañce 224
 ffor wnto a pore ordre for to yeue
 Is signe that a man ys wel yshreve
 ffor yf he yaf he dorste make avaunt
 He wiste þat a man was repentaunt 228
 ffor many a man is so hard of his herte [leaf 4]
 He may noght wepe al þouh him sore smerte
 Ther fore in stede of wepyng and preieres
 Men mote yeue seluer / to the pore freres 232
 His tipet was ay fassed ful of knyfes
 And pyunes for to yeue faire wyfes
 And certeynly he hadde a mery note
 Wel coude he syngen and playen on a roote 236
 Of yeddynges he bar vtirly the pryce
 His necke white was as the flour delyce
 Therto he was strong as a champioun
 He knew the tauernes wel in every toun 240
 And eueriche Osteller and tapestere
 Bet than a lazer or a beggere
 ffor vnto swich a worthy man as he

8 GROUP A. § 1. GENERAL PROLOGUE. Petworth MS.

Acordith nouht as by his faculte 244
 To haue with swich seke lazars aqueyntaunce
 It is nouht honest / it may nouht auaunce
 ffor to delen with swich poraille
 But al with riche and sillers of vitaille 248
 And oueral ther as profite sholde aryse
 Curtays he was and lowely of seruyse
 Ther nas no man nowher so vertuous
 He was the beste beggere in his hous 252
 [.]
 no gap in the MS.]
 ffor pouh a widewe hadde nouht a sho
 So plesaunt was his Inprincipio
 Yet wolde he haue a ferthyngt or he wente
 His purchace was wel bettere þan his rente 256
 And rage he couthe as it were riht a whelpe
 In loutedaies ther coude he mochil helpe
 ffor ther he was not liche a cloistrere
 With a thredbare cope as a pore scolere 260
 But he was lyke a maistir or a pope
 Of double worstede was his semy cope
 That rounded as a belle out of the presse
 Somwhat he lipsede for his wantonesse 264
 To make his englyssh swete vppon his tonge
 And in his harpynge whan þat he had songe
 Hise eyghen twynclede in his hede aright [leaf 4, back]
 As doon the sterres in a frosty nyht 268
 This worthy lymytour was clepid hubert
 A Marchant was ther with a longe berd
 In motle and heyh on horse he satte
 Vppon his heued a flaundrisshe beuer hatte 272
 Hise botis claspid faire and fetisly
 His rescouns he spak ful solempnely
 Shewynge alwey the encre of his wynnynge
 He wolde the see were kept for any thyng 276
 Bitwixe Middelburgh and Orewelle

Wel coude he in eschange sheldes selle
 This worthy man ful wel his witte bisette
 Ther wiste no wight that he was in dette 280
 So estatly was he of his gouernaunce
 With his bargaynes *and* with his cheuyssaunce
 fforsothe he was a worthy man with alle
 But sothely to seyne I not how men hym calle 284
A Clerk þer was of Oxenforde also
 That vnto logyk hadde longe I-go
 As lene was his hors as ys a rake
 And he was not right fat I wndirtake 288
 But lokede holewh and þerto soburly
 fful thredbare was his ouerest Courtepy
 ffor he hadde yit geten him no benefice
 Ne was so wordly [for] to haue office 292
 ffor hym was leuere haue at his bed hede
 Twenty bokes clad in blak or rede
 Of Aristotle and his philosophie
 Then robes riche or fithel or gay sautrye 296
 But al be that he was a philosofre
 Yet hadde he but litel gold in cofre
 But al that he myhte of his frendes hente
 On bokes and on lernynge he it spente 300
 And besily gan for tho soules preye
 Of hem that yaf hym wharwith to skole-aye
 Of studie took he moost cure *and* most hede
 Naught a word spak he / more than was nede / 304
 And that was seid in forme and reuerence (leaf 5)
 And short and quyke and ful [of] hey sentence
 Sownyng in moral vertue was his speche
 And gladly wolde he lerne *and* gladly teche 308
A sergaunt of the lawe / war *and* wys
 That often hadde ben atte parvys
 That was also ful riche of excellence
 Discret he was and of gret reuerence 312
 He semed swich hise wordis wern so wise

10 GROUP A. § 1. GENERAL PROLOGUE. Petworth MS.

Iustice he was ful often in assise
 By patent *and* by pleyn commyssioun
 ffor his science. and for his high renoun 316
 Of fees and robes hadde he many on
 So gret a purchassour was nowher non
 Al was fee symple to him in effecte
 His purchassyng myht nouht ben infecte 320
 Nowher so besy a man as he ther nas
 And yet he semed bisiere than he was
 In termes hadde he caas *and* domes alle
 That from the tyme of kyng^t william were falle 324
 Therto he cowde endite and make a thyng^t
 Ther couthe no wight^t pynche at his writyng^t
 And euery statute couthe he pleyne by roote
 He rood but homely in a medle coote 328
 Gert^t with a sent^t of selk^t wip barres smale
 Of his array telle I no lenger tale
A frankleyn was in his compaignye
 Whit^t was his berd^t as is the daieseye 332
 Of his complexioun he was sangwyne
 Wel louede he by the morewe a soppe in wyne
 To lyuen in delite euere was his wone
 ffor he was Epiournes owne sone 336
 That helde opynyon^t pat pleyne delite
 Was verrey felicite parfite
 An houshaldere and that^t a greet^t was he
 Seint Iulyan he was in his contre 340
 His bred his ale was alleweys aftir oon
 A bettir envyned man / was nowher noon /
 With oute bakemete was neuere his hous [leaf 5, back]
 Of fissche and fleisshe *and* pat so plentevous 344
 It snewe in his hous of mete and drynke
 Of alle deyntethes that^t men couthe thinke
 Aftir the sondry sesons of the yere
 So changed he his mete and his sopere 348
 ful many a fat^t partrich hadde he in Mewe .

And many a breme *and* many a luce in stewe
 Wo was his cook but [if] his sauce were
 Poynant and sharpe and redy al his gere 352
 His table dormant in his halle al way
 Stood redy couered al the longe day
 At sessions ther was he lord and sire
 fful often tyme he was knyght of the shire 356
 An anelas and a gypsere al of silke
 Heng at his girdel white as morne mylke
 A sherreff had he ben / *and* a comptour
 Was nowher swich a worthy vanasour 360
 A N habirdasshere and a Carpenter
 A Webbe. a Diere and a Tapeceere
 And they were clothid alle in oo lyuere
 Of a solempne and a greet fraternyte 364
 fful fressh and newe here gere apiked was
 Here knyfes nere chap[ed] nouht with bras
 But al with syluer wrought ful clene *and* wel
 Here gerdelles and her pouches euery del 368
 Wel semed ech of hem a fair burgeys
 To sitten in a yeldhalle on a deys
 Eueriche for the wisdom that he can
 Was shaply for to bene an Aldirman 372
 For cateff hadde they I-nouh and Rente
 And eke her wifes wolde it wel assente
 And elles certeyn[ly] they were to blame
 It is ful fair to be clepid Madame 376
 And gon to vigilies al be fore
 And haue a mantel rialliche I-bore
 A Cook they hadde / with hem for the nones
 To boille the chikenes with þe maribones 380
 And poudre Marchant tart of Gallyngale [leaf 6]
 Wel kowde he knowe a drauht of london ale
 He Couthe roste *and* sethe *and* broyle *and* frye
 Maken Mortrews and wel bake a pye 384
 But gret ha[r]m was it / as it thouhte me

12 GROUP A. § 1. GENERAL PROLOGUE. *Petworth MS.*

That on his shene a mormal hadde he
 For blank' manger' that made he with the beste
A Shipman was ther / wonyng' fer bi weste 388
 For ouht I woot' he was of Dertemouthe
 He rood vppon a Rouncey as he couthe
 In a gowne of ffaldyng' to the kne
 A daggar' hangyng in a lace hadde he 392
 Aboute his necke vnder his arme doun
 The hote somer hadde made his hiew al broun
 And Certeynly he was a good felawe
 fful many a drauht of wyn hadde he drawe 396
 ffrom burdeux ward' while the chapmen slepe
 Of nyce conscience took' he no kepe
 Yif that' he fauht' / and hadde the heihere hond'
 By watir he sente hem home to euery lond' 400
 But of his craft / to rikene wel his tydes
 His stremes and his daunger him bisydes
 His herberuſh. his moone *and* his lodmanage
 Ther nos noon such from hulle to Cartage 404
 Hardy he was / and wys to vndirtake
 With many a tempest' had his berd be shake
 He knew alle the haunenes as they were
 ffro gutlond to the cape de fynystere 408
 And euery cryke in bretaygne *and* in Spayne
 His barge y-clepid was the maudeleyne
With us ther was a doctour of ffisik'
 In al this world' ne was ther none hym lik' 412
 To speke of fisike and of surgerye
 ffor he was grounded in astronomye
 He kepte his pacient' a ful greet' del
 In houres by his magik' naturel 416
 Wel couthe he fortune the assendent'
 Of his ymages for his pacient'
 He knew the cause of euery maladye [leaf 6, back]
 Were it' of hoot' or cold' or moyst' or drye 420
 And wher engendred and [of] what humour

He was a verrey parfit practisour
 The cause I-knowe and of his harm the roote
 Anoon he yaf the sike man his boote 424
 fful redy hadde he hise apotecaries
 To sende hem drugges / and his letuaries
 ffor ech of hem made othir for to wynne
 Her frendshipe nas nat newe to bigynne 428
 Wel knew he the olde Escalapius
 And diascoride and ek Rufus
 Old ypocras Hayly and Galien
 Serapion Rasis and Auysen 432
 Aueroys Damascien and constantyne
 Bernard and Gatysden and Gilbertyne
 Of his diete mesurable was he
 ffor it was of no superfluyte 436
 Bot of gret norshinge and digestable
 His studie was but litel on the bible
 In sangweyn and in perce he clad was al
 Lyned with Taffata and with sendal 440
 And yet he was but esy of dispense
 He kepte that he wan in pestilence
 ffor gold in Phisik is a cordeal
 Therefore he louede gold in special 444
 A Good wiff ther was of besides bathe
 But she was somdel def and þat was scathe
 Of cloth makynge sche hadde such an haunt
 She passid hem of ypres and of Gaunt 448
 In alle the parisch wif ne was ther noon
 That to the offrynge toforn hir shulde goon
 And yf ther dide / certeyn wroth was she
 That she was out of al[le] charite 452
 Hir couerchefes ful fyne were of ground
 I durste swere they weyeden ten pound
 That on a Sonday weren vpon hire hede
 Hir hosen weren of fyne scarlet rede 456
 fful streight I-teied / and shoes ful moist and newe [leaf 7]

14 GROUP A. § 1. GENERAL PROLOGUE. *Petworth MS.*

Bold was hir face and faire / *and* red of hiewe
 She was a worthi womman al hir lyue
 Housbondes atte chirche dore she hadde fyue 460
 With outen othir companie in youthe
 But ther of nedith nouht to speke as nouthe
 And thries hadde she bene at Ierusalem
 She had[de] passed many a strange strem 464
 At Rome sche had ben / *and* at boloyne
 In Galice at saint Iame *and* at Coloigne
 She koude moche on wandrynge bi the weye
 Gat tothid was she sothely for to seie 468
 Vp on an Amblere esily she satte
 I-wymped wel and on hir heed an hatte
 As brood as is a bokellere or a targe
 A fot mantel abouten hire hipes large 472
 And on hire feet a paire of spores sharpe
 In felaschipe wel couthe sche lawhe *and* carpe
 Of remedies of loue she kneuþ parchaunce
 ffor she couthe of that art the daunce 476
A Good man was there of religioun
 And was a pore persoun of a toune
 But riche he was of holy thouht *and* werk
 He was also a lerned man *and* a clerk 480
 That Cristes gospel treuly wolde preche
 His parisschens deuoutly wolde he teche
 Benyngne he was and wondir diligent
 And in aduersite / ful pacient 484
 And swich he was [i]preued ofte sithes
 ful looth were him to cursen for his tythes
 But rather wolde he yeuen out of doute
 Vnto his poure parisschens aboute 488
 Of his offrynge and of his substaunce
 He couthe in litil thing han suffisaunce
 Wide was hise parisshe *and* houses fer asondir
 But he ne lafte nouthir for rayne ne for thundir 492
 In sikenesse nor in meschief to visite

The ferrest in his parisch myche and lite
 Vp on his fete / and in his hond a staff [leaf 7, back]
 This noble ensample to his shepe he yaf 496
 That ferst he wroughte. and aftirward þat he tauhte
 Out of the gospel he þo wordes cauhte
 And this figure he addede ek therto
 That yf gold ruste / what shal Iren do 500
 For if a prest be foul on whom we triste
 No wondir is a lewed man to ruste
 And shame it is yf a prest take kepe
 A shiten sheperde and a clene shepe 504
 Wel ouhte a preest ensample for to yeue
 By his clenness hou that his sheepe shulde lyue
 He set nauht his benefice to hire
 And leet his sheep acombred in the myre 508
 And ran to london vn to seint Poules
 To seke hym a chafterye for soules
 Or with a bretherhede to bene with holde
 But duelte at home / and kepte wel his folde 512
 So that the wolf ne made it not myscarye
 He was a shepperde and not a mercenarie
 And thouh he holy were and vertuous
 He was nouht to synful men dispitous 516
 Ne on his speche daungerous ne digne
 But in his techyng discreit and benygne
 To drawen folk to heuene by fairnesse
 By good ensample / this was his bisynesse 520
 But it were eny person obstynate
 What so he were of heigh or lowh estate
 Hym wolde he snebbe sharply for the nones
 A better prest I trowe þat nowher noon es 524
 He waitede aftir no pompe and reuerence
 Ne maked hym a spiced conscience
 But cristes lore / and hise apostles tuelue
 He tauhte / but ferst he folewed in hymselfe 528
 With hym ther was a ploufman / was his bropir

16 GROUP A. § 1. GENERAL PROLOGUE. **Petworth MS.**

That hadde I-lad of dong ful many a fothir
 And a trewe swynkere *and* a good was he
 Lyvyng in pees / and parfit charite 532
 God loued he best with al his hole herte [leaf 8]
 At alle tymes thouh he gamed or smerte
 And than his neighbure riht as hymselfe
 He wolde thresshe and therto dike *and* delue 536
 For cristes sake / for euery pouere wight
 With oute hire / yif hit lay in his myght
 Hise tythis payed he ful faire and wel
 Bothen of his propre swynke and his catel 540
 In a tabbard he rood vp on a mere
 Ther was also a Reve and a Mellere
 A somenour and a Pardoner also
 A Maunciple and my self ther nar na mo 544
 The mellere was a strong carle for the nones
 Tfful bigge he was / of brawne and ek of bones
 That proued wel / for oueral thare he cam
 Atte wrastelyng / he wolde haue a-wey the ram 548
 He was short shuldred a thicke knarre
 Ther was no dore that he ne wolde heue of barre
 Or breke it at a rennyng with his heed
 His berd as any sowe or fox was reed 552
 And therto brood as pouh it were a spade
 Vp on the cop right of his nose he hade
 A werte and peron stood a tuft of heres
 Rede as the brysteles of a sowes eres 556
 His nose prilles blake were and wyde
 A swerd and a bokelere bar he be his side
 His mouthe as greet was as a greet fourneys
 He was a iangelere and a goliardeys 560
 And that was moost of synne *and* of harlotryes
 Wel couthe he stele corn / and tolle thryes
 And yit he hadde a thombe of gold parde
 A white cote and a blewe hood wered he 564
 A bagge-pipe wel couthe he blowe *and* sowne

And perwith al he brouht^r us out^r of towne

A Gentil maunciple was per o[f] a temple
Of which a catour myghte take ensample 568

ffor to ben wise in biynge of vitaille

ffor whepir þat he payed / or toke by taille

Algate he waitede so in his achate [leaf 8, back] 572

That he was ay beforⁿ and in good estate

Now is not^r þat^r of god a ful fair grace

That such a lewed mannes wit shal pace

The wysdom of an hepe of lerned men

Of maystres hadde he mo þan thries ten 576

That were of lawe expert^r an Curious

Of wich ther was a doseyn in that^r hous

Worthy to bene stywardes of Rent^e and lond^e

Of any lord that is in Ingelond^e 580

To make hym lyue by his propre good^e

In honour detteles but if that^r he were wood

Or lyue als skarsly as hym lyst desire

And able for to helpen al a shire 584

In any cas that myhte falle or happe

And yit this Maunciple sette ther althir cappe

The Reue was a sclendre colerik^r man

His berd was shaue / as nyhe as euer he can 588

His heer was by hise eres ful rounde yshorne

His toppe was docked like a prest byforne

fful longe were his legges and ful lene

I-like a staf^r / ther was no calf ysene 592

Wel couthe he kepe a Garner or a bynne

Ther was none auditour couthe on hym wynne

Wel wiste he / by the drought^r and by the reyne

The yeldyng^e of his seed / and of his greyne 596

Hise lordes sheepe / hise neete / hise dayerie

His swyne / his hors / his stoor / and his pultrye

Was hoolly in this reues gouernynge

And by his covenant^r / yaf the rekenynge 600

Syn that his lord was twenty yeer of age

18 GROUP A. § 1. GENERAL PROLOGUE. Petworth MS.

Ther couthe no man brynge hym in a-rerage
 Ther nas baylyf ne herde nor othir hyne
 That he ne knew his sleighte *and* his covyne 604
 They were a-drad of hym / as of the deth
 His wonynge was ful faire vpon an heth
 With grene trees / shadewed was his place
 He couthe bettre than his lord purchace 608
 fful riche he was astored pryuely [leaf 6]
 His lorde he coupe wel plesa *and* sub[t]ily
 To ȝeue and lene him of his owne goode
 To haue a þonke and yit a cote and hode 612
 In ȝoupe he had lered a good mistere
 He was a wel good wrigt a Carpenter
 This Reue sette vpon a wel good stot
 That was al pomel grey *and* highte scot 616
 A longe Surcote of Peers vppon he hadde
 And by his side he bare a rusty blade
 Of Northfolk was þis Reue of which I telle
 Besides a tounne men clepen it Baldewelle 620
 Tukked he was as is a frere aboute
 And euere he rode þe hynderest of our route
 A Somnour was ther wiþ vs in that place
 That had a fury cherubynes face 624
 ffor Sauseflewme he was wiþ eyen narowe
 Als hote he was and leccherous as a sparowe
 With scalled browes. blak and pilled beerde
 Of his visage children weren a-ferde 628
 Ther nas quyke siluer litarge or bremston
 Boras orsure no oyle of tartre nōon
 Ne oynement þat wold[e] clense *and* byte
 That him myght helpe of his whelkes white 632
 Ne of [the] knobbes sitting in his chekes
 Wel loued he garlike. oynyois *and* eke lakes
 And for to drink strong wyne rede as blode
 Than wolde he speke and cry as he were wode 636
 And whan [that] he wel dronken had þe wyne

Than wolde he speke no worde but latyne
 A fewe termes had he two or thre
 That he had lerned out of som decree 640
 No wonder is he herd to al þe day
 And eke 3e knowen it wel how þat a lay
 Can clepe watt as wel as can þe pope
 But who so couþe in oþer þing hym grope 644
 Than had he spent al his Philosophie [leaf 9, back]
 Ay questio quid iuris wold he crye
 He was a gentile harlot and a kinde
 A better felawe shul[de] men not fynde 648
 He wolde suffre for a quarte of wyne
 A good felawe to haue his concubyne
 A twelue month and excuse him ate fulle
 ful priuely eke a ffynche couþe he pulle 652
 And if he fonde owhere a good felawe
 He wolde techen hym to han noon awe
 In such caas of þe archedekens curs
 But if [a] manys soule were in his purs 656
 ffor in his purs he shuld[e] punished be
 Purs is þe erchedekenes Helle seide he
 But wel I wote he lyed riȝt in dede
 Of cursing ouȝt eche gilty man to drede 660
 ffor curs wil slee riȝt as assayling saueth
 And also war hym of a significauith
 In daunger had he at his owne gyse
 The yonge Geerles of þe diocise 664
 And knewe her counsaile *and* what was al her rede
 A Gallonde had he sette vpon his hede
 As grete as it were for an ale stake
 A Bokelere had he made hym of a Cake 668
With hym þer rode a gentile Pardoner
 Of rounceyuale his frende and his comper
 That streght was comen from þe courte of Rome
 ful lowde songe he come hider loue come 672
 This somnour bare to hym a stif burdoñ

20 GROUP A. § I. GENERAL PROLOGUE. *Petworth MS.*

Was neuere trumpe of half so gret a souñ
 This Pardoner had heer as zelowe as wexe
 But smoth it henge. as doþ a strike of flexe 676
 By ounces henge his lockes þat he had
 And þerwiþ he his shulders ouersprad
 But thyn it lay by culpons oon and oñ
 But hode for Iolite wered he noon 680
 ffor it was trussed vp in his walette [leaf 10]
 Hym pouzt he rode al of þe newe gette
 Discheuele sauf his cap he rode al bare
 Suche glaryng eyen had he as an hare 684
 A vernycle had he sewed vpon his cappe
 His walet [lay] biforn him in his lappe
 Bret ful of pardoñ commen from Rome al hote
 A voyce he had as smal as a[ny] goote 688
 No beerde ne had he. ne neuere shuld haue
 As smoth it was as it were late shaue
 I trowe he were a gelding or a mare
 But of his craft from Barwik into ware 692
 Ne was þer suche a noþer pardonere
 ffor in his male he had a pilowhere
 Which þat he seide was oure lady vaile
 He seide he had a gobet of þe saile 696
 That seynt Peter had whan þat he went
 Vpon þe see to Ihesu crist hym hent
 He had a croys of laton ful of stones
 And in a glas he had[de] pigges bones 700
 But wiþ pise relikes whan þat he fonde
 A poor[e] person dwellyng vpon londe
 Vpon a day he gate hym more moneye
 þan þe the persone gate in Monþes tweye 704
 And þus wiþ feyned flateryng and lapes
 He made þe Person and þe puple his apes
 But trew[e]ly to tellen at þe laste
 He was in chirche a noble ecclesiaste 708
 Wel couþe he rede a lessou or a storye

But alperbest he song' an offertorie
 ffor wel he wist' whan þat' songe was songe
 He moste preche and wel afile his tonge 712
 To wynne siluer as he [right] wel cowde
 Therfore he songe so merily *and* lowde
 Now have I tolld' þou soþly in a clause
 The astaat. þe aray. þe nombre *and* eke þe cause 716
 Why þat' assembled was þis companye [leaf 10, back]
 In Suthwerk at' þis gentil hostrye
 That' hight' þe Tabard' faste by þe belle
 But' nowe is tyme to þou forto telle 720
 Howe þat' we beren vs þat' ilke nyght'
 Whan [we] were in þat' Hostrie a-light'
 And after wil I tellen of our viage
 And al þe remenaunt of our Pilgrymage 724
 But' furst' I prey þou of þoure curtesie
 That' ȝe ne rette it' not' my vilanye
 þoo þat' I pleynty speke in þis matere
 To telle þou her wordes *and* her chere 728
 Ne þouȝe he speke her wordes proprely
 ffor þis ȝe knowen as wel as I
 Who so shal telle a tale after a man
 He mote reherce as nyghe as euer he can 732
 Eueriche word if' it' be in his charge
 Al speke he neuere so rudely and large
 Or ellis he mote telle his tale vntrewe
 Or feyne þinggis or fynde wordes newe 736
 He may not' spare al þough' he were his broþer'
 He mot' also wel say. oo word' as another'
 Crist' spak him self ful brode in holy writte
 And wel ȝe wote no vilanye is itte 740
 Eke Plato seiþ who so can hym rede
 The wordes mote be cosyn to þe dede
 Also I prey þou [to] forȝeue it' me
 Al haue I not' sette folk in her degre 744
 Here in þis tale as þat' thei shulde stonde

22 GROUP A. § 1. GENERAL PROLOGUE. Petworth MS.

My witte is short^t 3e may wel vnderstonde

Grete chere made oure hooste vs euerechoñ

And to þe soper sette he vs anoñ 748

He serued vs with vitailles at þe best^t

Stronge was þe wyne and wel [to] drink^t vs lest^t

A semely man our hooste was wiþ all^t

ffor to [han] bene a marshal in an hañt 752

A large man he was with yen stepe

[leaf 11]

A fairer Burges is [ther] none in chepe

Bold of his speche. and wise *and* wel ytaugt

And of manhode hym lacked[e] right^t naught^t 756

Eke þerto he was right^t a mery man

And after soper pleyen he bygan

And spak of myrth amonge oþer þinges

Whan that^t we had[de] made our rekenyngges 760

And seide þus. now lordingges trewly

3e bene to me welcome riȝt^t hertely

ffor be my troupe if þat^t I shal not lye

I seegh not^t þis 3ere so mery a companye 764

At^t ones in þis harborowe as is now

flayne wold I do 3ou merthe wist^t I howe

And of a merþe I am right^t now by-bought^t

To doñ 3ou ease and it shal coste nouȝt 768

3e gone to canterbery god 3ou spede

þe blisful martir. quite 3ou 3our^t mede

And wel I wote. as 3e goon by þe way

3e shapen 3ou to talen and to pley 772

ffor trewly conforte ne myrthe is nōn

To riden by þe wey dombe as a stone

And þerfor wil I. make 3ou disporte

As I seide erste and don 3ou som conforte 776

And if 3ou likeþ alle by oon assente

[Now] fforto stonden at my Iuggemente

And fforto worchen as I shal 3ou seie

To morowe whan 3e riden by þe weie 780

Now be my faders soule þat^t is dede

But 3e be mery. I wil 3ene 3ou my hede
 Holde vp 3oure hondes wip out more speche
 Our counsaile was not longe for to seche 784
 Vs pou3t it was not / worpe to make to wis
 And graunted hym wip oute more avis
 And bad him seie his veredit as him lest
 Lordingges quod he nowe herkenep for þe best 788
 But take it not I prei 3ou in disdeyne (leaf 11, back)
 This is þe point to speke short and pleyne
 That eche of 3ou to shorte wip our weye
 In þis viage shal telle tailles twaye 792
 To Caunterbery ward I mene it so
 And homwardes he shal telle opere twoo
 Of auentures þat han whilom bifalle
 And which of 3ou þat bereþ hym best of alle 796
 þat is to sey þat telleþ in þis cas
 Tales of best sentence and most solas
 shal haue a soper at our alder cost
 Her in þis place sitting by þis post 800
 Whan þat we comen ageyn from Canterburye
 And forto make 3ou þe more merye
 I wil my seluen goodly wip 3ou ride
 Right at myne owne cost and be 3our gide 804
 And who so wil my Iugement wipseye
 Shal pay al þat we spenden by þe weye
 And if 3e vouche sauf þat it be so
 Telle me anoon wip outen wordes moo 808
 And I wiff erly shape me þerfore
 þis þinge was graunted and our opes swore
 Wip ful glad hert and preien hym also
 þat he wolde vouchesauf so to do 812
 And þat he wolde be our gouernour
 And of our tales Iugge and roportour
 And sette a soper at a certeyn price
 And we wold rewled bene at his denice 816
 In heghe and lough and þus by on assent

24 GROUP A. § 1. GENERAL PROLOGUE. Petworth MS.

We bene accorded to þe Iuggement
 And þer vpon þe wyne was fette anon
 We dronken and to reste wente echoñ 820
 Wiþ oute eny lenger tarynge
 On morowe whan þe day [bi]gan to sprynge
 Vp roos oure hooste and was oure alder Cok
 And gadered vs to gidere in a flok. 824
 And forþ we riden a litel more þan paas [Deaf 15]
 Vnto þe watering of Seynt Thomas
 And þer our hooste gan his hors areste
 And seide lordes harkenep if yow leste 828
 3e wote 3oure forward and I it 3ou record
 If euensonge and morowsonge accord
 Lat see nowe who. shal telle þe first tale
 As euer mote I drinke wyne or ale 832
 Who so be rebell to my Iuggement
 Shal paye for al þat by þe way is spent
 Now drawep Cutt er þat we ferþer twynne
 Which þat haþ þe shortest shal bygynne 836
 ¶ Sir knyght quod he my maister and my lorde
 Now drowep Cutte for þat is myn accorde
 Commeth nere quod he my lady prioresse
 And 3e sir Clerk lat be 3oure shamfastnesse 840
 Ne stodieth nouȝt lay honde to euery man
 Anon to drawe every wight bygan
 And shortely forto tellen as it was
 Were it be auenture or sort or cas 844
 The soþe is þis þe Cutt fille to þe knyȝt
 Of which full glad and bliþe was euery wiȝt
 And tellen he most his tale as it was resoñ
 By forward and by compo[sic]ion 848
 As 3e han herde what needet wordes moo
 And whan þis good man seegh þat it was soo
 As he þat wise was and obedient
 To kepen his forward by his fre assent 852
 He seide siþen I shal bygynne þe game

What welcome be þe Cutte a goddis name
Now lat vs ride *and* harkenþ what I saye
And wiþ þat word we riden forþ our waye 856
And [he] byganne wiþ riȝt a mery chere
His tale anon and seide as ȝe may here

¶ Iam que domos patrias scithice post aspera gentis:
Prelia laurigero &c. Thus endep þe Prologe of þis
Boka.

¶ *ffabula militis.* Here bygynneþ the knyghtes tale.

Whilom was / as olde stories tellen vs [leaf 12, back]
 A worpi duk' hight' theseus 860
 Of Athenes he was lord *and* *gouvernour*
 And in his tyme suche a Conquerour'
 That gretter was [ther] noon vnder þe sunne
 fful many a riche contre had he wonne 864
 What' wip' his wisdom and his chyualrye
 He conquered al þe regne of femynye
 That' whilom was ycleped Sithia
 And wedded[e] þe quene ypolita 868
 And brouȝt' her home wip' hym to his cuntre
 Whith' mochi glorie and gret' solempnite
 And eke her ȝenge suster Emelie
 And þus with victorie and with melodye 872
 Lat I þis noble Duke to Athenes ride
 And al his hooste in armes hym beside
 And certes if it nere to longe to here
 I wold' haue tolde fully þe manere 876
 Howe wonnen was þe Reaume of ffemyny
 By Theseus and by his Chiualrye
 And of þe grete bataille for þe nones
 Bytwyxen Athenes and amazones 880
 And howe asseged was ypolita
 The faire ladye qune of Scithia
 And of þe feest' þat' was at her weddinge
 And of þe tempest' at her home *commynge* 884
 But' al þat' þing' I mot' as nowe forbere
 I haue god wote a large feelde to ere
 And weiike bene þe oxen in my plough
 The remenaunte of þe tale is long ynogh 888
 I wil not' letten eke noon of þis route

Lat euery felawe telle his tale aboute
 And lat se nowe who shal þe soper wyne
 And þer I lafte: I wil aȝein bygynne [A break in the MS. with]
Incipit narracio plena Militis.
This Duk of whom I make mencion [leaf 15]
 When he was comen almost to þe toun
 In al his wele and his most Pride
 He was war as he cast his eyen atside 896
 Where þat þer kneled in þe highe weye
 A companye of ladys twey and tweye
 Eche after oþer clad in cloþes blake
 But suche a crye and such a woo þei make 900
 That in þis worlde [n]is creature lyuyng
 That herde suche a noþer wamentinge
 And of þis crie þei nolde neuere stynte
 Til þei þe Reynes of his bridel hente 904
 What folk bene ȝe þat at myn home commyng
 Pertourben so my feest[e] wiþ cryng
 Quod Theseus haue ȝe so grete envie
 Of myn honour þat þus compleyn and crye 908
 Or who haþ ȝou mysdone or offended
 Telleþ me if it may be amendet
 And whi þat ȝe bene cloped þus in blak
 The eldest lady of hem al[le] spak 912
 When she had swowned wiþ a dedly chere
 þat it was rauthe forto sene and here
 She seide lord to whom fortune haþ ȝeuen
 Victorie and as a conquerour to lyuen 916
 Nat greueþ vs ȝoure glory and ȝour honour
 But we biseke mercy and socour
 Haue mercy on our woo and our distresse
 Some drope of Pite þorgh þi gentelnesse 920
 Vpon vs wrecched wommen lat nowe falle
 ffor certes lord þer is noon of vs alle
 That she ne haþ bene a doches or a quene
 Nowe bene we Catynes as it is wel sene 924
 Thonked be fortune and her fals[e] qwhele

þat noon estate ensureþ forto bene wele
 Now certes lord to abide þour presence
 Here in þis temple of þe goddes clemence 928
 We han be wayting al þis fourt[e]nyȝt [leaf 18, back]
 Helpe[þ] vs lord siþ it is in þi myght
 I wrecche which þat wepe *and* weile þus
 Whilom was wif to king Cappareus 932
 That starfe at Thebes cursed be þat day
 And alle we þat bene in þis araye
 And maken al þis lamentacioun
 We losten alle our husbondes at þat town 936
 While þat þe assege þer aboute lay
 And ȝit nowe þe olde Creon weillaway
 That lord is nowe of Thebes Cite
 ffulfilled of yre and of iniquite 940
 He for despite and for his tyrannye
 To doon þe dede bodys vilenye
 Of al our lordes which þat bene sclawe
 Hap al þe bodies on an hepe ydrawe 944
 And wol not suffre hem by noȝ assent
 Neipere to bene yburied neipere brent
 But makeþ houndes ete hem in despit
 And wiþ þat word withouten more respit 948
 þei fillen a Gruf and criden pitously
 Hauē on vs wrecched women som mercy
 And lat oure sorowe synken in þi hert
 ¶ This gentel duke doune from his courser start 952
 Wiþ herte pitous whan he herde hem speke
 Him pouȝte þat his hert wold alto-breke
 Whan he seegh hem so pitous *and* so mate
 þat whilom were[n] of so grete astate 956
 And in his armes he hem alle vp hente
 And hem confortep in ful good entente
 And swore his oþe as he was trewe knyȝt
 He wolde done so ferforþly his myȝt 960
 Vppon the Tirant Creon hem to wreke

þat alle þe puple of Grece shuld speke
 How Creon was of Theseus yserued
 As he þat had his dep ful wel deserved 964
 And right' anon withouten more abode [leaf 14]
 His baner' he displeied and forþ rode
 To Thebes ward' and al his hooste beside
 No ner Athenes wold' he goo ne ride 968
 Ne take his case fulli half a day
 But' onward' on his way þat' nyȝt' he lay
 And sent anon ypolita the quene
 And Emelye hir' yonge sustre Shene 972
 Vnto þe tounne of Athenes to dwelle
 And forþe he ritte þer is no more to telle
 The rede statue of Mars wiþ spere *and* targe
 So shyneþ in his white baner large 976
 þat alle the feeldes glyteren vp *and* down
 And by his baner born is hys pynyoun
 Of gold ful riche in which þer was ybete
 þe Mynataur' which þat he wan in Crete 980
 Thus riȝt' þis duk. thus riȝt' þis conquerour'
 And in his ooste of Chyualrye þe flour'
 Til þat' he come to Thebes and alight'
 ffaire in a felde þer as he þouȝt' to fiȝt' 984
 But' shortely forto speken of þis þing'
 With Creon whiche þat was of Thebes king'
 He faught' and sclowgh him manly as a knyght
 In pleyne bataille and put' þe folk' to flight 988
 And by assent' he wan the Cite after
 And rent' adoun boþ walle spare and rafter
 And to þe ladies he restored ageyñ
 þe bones of her frendes þat' were scleyñ 992
 To done obsequies as was þe gyse
 But' it' were al to longe forto devise
 The grete clamour and þe wamentynge
 þat' þe ladies made at þe brennynge 996
 Of þe bodies and þe grete honour'

30 GROUP A. § 2. KNIGHT'S TALE. Petworth MS.

That thes^eus þe noble conquerour
 Dop to þe bodies whan þei ffrom hym went
 But shortely to telle is myn entent 1000
 Whan þat þis worþi Duke þis thes^eus [leaf 14, back]
 Hap Creon sclayn and wonne Thebes þus
 Stille in þat felde he toke al nyȝt his rest
 And did wiþ al þe contre as hym lest 1004
 To Ransake in þe caas of þe bodies dede
 Hem for to stripe of harneyes and of wede
 The pilours dyden bysynesse and Cure
 Aftere þe bataille and þe discomfiture 1008
 And so bifelle þat in þe caas þei founde
 þorgh girt wiþ many a greuous bloody wounde
 Two yonge knyghtes ligging by and by
 Bothen in armes same wrouȝt ful richelie 1012
 Of whiche two Arcita hight that oon
 And þat opere knyȝt hight Palamon
 Not fully quyk ne fully dede þei were
 But by her cote armours and by her gere 1016
 The herowdes knewe hem self in special
 As þei þat were[n] of þe blood Riȝt
 Of Thebes. and of sustren two yborn
 Out of þe caas þe Pilours han hem torn 1020
 And han hem caried soft vnto þe tent
 Of Theseus and he ful sone hem sent
 To Athenes to dwellen in Prison
 Perpetuelly hem nolde he not raunson 1024
 And whan this worþi Duke hap þus ydon
 He toke his ooste and home he ritte anon
 Wiþ laurere corowned as a conquerour
 And þer he lyueþ in Ioie and in honour 1028
 Teerme of his lif. what nedep wordes moo
 And in a toure in anguiss and in woo
 Dwellen þis Palamon and eke arcite
 ffor euermore þer may no gold hem quyte 1032
 This passeþ yere by yere and day by day

Till it fille onys in a morowe of May
 That Emely þat fairer was to sene
 Than is þe lyle vpon his stalke grene 1036
 And fressher þan þe may wiþ floures newe
 ffor wiþ þe roos colour strof hir hwe (leaf 15)
 I not which was þe fairer of hem twoo
 Er it were day as was her wone to doo 1040
 She was a-risen and al a redy dight
 ffor May wil haue no scloggardy on nyȝt
 The seson pricketh euery gentile hert
 And makeþ hit out of his slepe to start 1044
 And sithen arise and doo May obseruaunce
 This makeþ Emely to haue remembraunce
 To doñ honour to May and forto rise
 Ycloped was she fressh forto devise 1048
 ¶ Her þelowe heer was breided in a tresso
 Behynde her bak. a ȝeerde longe y gesse
 And in þe gardyne at sonne vprist
 She walkeþ vp and down and as her list 1052
 She gadereþ floures partie white and rede
 To make a subtile garlonde for her hede
 And as an aungel heuenly she songe
 The grete toure þat was so pikke and stronge 1056
 Which of þe castel was þe chief dongeon
 There as þe knyghtes weren in prison
 Of which I tolke ȝowe and telle shaft
 Was euene Ioynant to þe gardyn wait 1060
 Ther as þis Emely had her pleyng
 Briȝt was þe sonne and cleer in þat mornynȝ
 And palamon þis woful prisonere
 As was his wone by lieue of his Gaillere 1064
 Was rysen and romed in a chamber on high
 In which he al þe noble Cite segh
 And eke þe gardyne ful of braunches grene
 Ther as þe fressh emelye þe shene 1068
 Was in her walk and romed vp and down

32 GROUP A. § 2. KNIGHT'S TALE. Petworth MS.

This soriful prisoner þis Palamoun
 Gop in þe Chambre romyng to and froo
 And to him self compleynyng of his woo 1072
 That he was born ful ofte seide allas [leaf 15, back]
 And so byfalle by auenture or caas
 That þorowe a wyndowe þikke of mony a barre
 Of yren grete and square as eny sparre 1076
 He cast his eyen vpon Emelia
 A[nd] þerwiþ al he bleynte and cried A
 As þouze he stongen were vnto þe hert'
 And wiþ þat crië Arcyte anoñ vp stert' 1080
 And seide Cosyn myne what eileþ þe
 That art' so pale and dedly on to see
 Whi cridest þowe who haþ þe doñ offence
 ffor goddis loue. take al in pacience 1084
 Our' prison for it may noon othere be
 ffortune hath zeue vs þis aduersite
 Som wikke aspecte or disposicion
 Of Saturne by som constellacion 1088
 Haþ zeuen by þis al þouze he had hit' sworñ
 So stode þe heuene whan þat we were born
 We mote endure it þis is short' and playn
 This Palamon answerd and seide agayñ 1092
 Cosyn forsoþ of þis opynyō
 Thow hast' a veyn ymagynacion
 This prison caused me not' [for] to crië
 But I was hirt rízt' nowe þorgh' out' myn ye 1096
 Into myn hert' þat wil my bane be
 The fairnesse of þat lady þat I see
 3onde in þe gardyne romyng' to and fro
 Is cause of al my cryng and my woo / 1100
 I not' where she be womman or goddesse
 But Venus is it soþly as I gesse
 And þerwiþal on knees down he fille
 And seide Venus if it be þi wille 1104
 3owe in þis gardyne þus to transfigure

Bifore me soriful wrecched creature
 Out of þis Prison helpe þat we mowe scape
 And if so be my destany be shape 1108
 By eterne worde to dyen in prison [leaf 16]
 Of oure lynage haue som compassion
 That is so lowe ybrouzt by tyrannye
 And wip þat word arcite gan asprie 1112
 Where as þis lady romed to and froo
 And wip þat sigt her bewte hurte hym soo
 þat if þat Palamon was wounded sore
 Arcite is hurte as moche as he or more 1116
 And wip a sighe he seide pitously
 þe fresshe bewte sleep me sodeynly
 Of hur þat romed in 3onder place
 And but if I haue her mercy and her grace 1120
 þat I may seen hir atte leeste way
 I ne am but dede þer nys no more to say
 This Palamon whan he þise wordes herde
 Dispitously he loked and answerde 1124
 Wheder seist þou þis in earnest or in pleye
 Nay quod Arcite in earnest be my feye
 God helpe me so me lest ful euel play
 This Palamon gan knytte his browes tway 1128
 It were to the quod he no gret honour
 ffor to be fals ne for to be traitour
 To me þat am þi Cosyn and þi broþer
 Isworne ful depe and eche of vs to oper 1132
 That neuere for to dyen in þe peyn
 Til þat þe deþe departe shal vs tweyn
 Neiper in loue to hynder oper
 Ne in noon oper caas my lief broþer 1136
 But þat þou shuldest trewly ferþermore
 In euery caas and I shal forther þe þore
 þis was þine othe and myn also certeyn
 I wote rigt wele þow darst it not wipseyñ 1140
 Thus art þow of my counsel out of doute

And nowe þou woldest falsly ben aboute
 To loue my lady whom I loue *and* serue
 And euer shal to þat myn herte sterue 1144
 Now certes fals Arcite þow shalt not so (leaf 16, back)
 I loued her first and tolde þe my woo
 As to my counsaile and my broþer sworn
 To forþere me as I haue tolde biforn 1148
 ffor which þow art ybounden as a knyght
 To helpe me if it lay in þi myght
 Or ellis art þou fals I dar wel sayn
 This arcite ful prudently spak agayn 1152
 Thow shalt quod he be rapier fals þan I
 But þou art fals I telle þe witterly
 ffor paramour I loued her first þan þou
 What wilt þow seyn. þou wist it not ȝit nowe 1156
 Whedere she be a womman or goddes
 Thyne is affeccioñ of holynes
 And myne is loue as to a creature
 ffor which I tolde þe myn auenture 1160
 As to my cosyn and to my broþer sworn
 I pose þat þou louedest hur biforn
 Woost þow not wel þe olde clerkes sawe
 þat who shal ȝeue a louer eny lawe ¶ *Quis legem dat amantibus*
 Loue is a gretter lawe by my þan
 þan may be ȝeue to eny erþely man
 And þerfor positif lawe and swich decree
 Is broke al day for loue in eche degre 1168
 A man mote nedes loue mawgre his hede
 He may not fleen it! þouȝe he shuld be dede
 Al be she mayde or widowe or ellis wif
 And eke it is not likly al þi liff 1172
 To stonden in her grace no more shal I
 ffor wel þou woost þi self[e] verrely
 þat þou and I bene dampned to prison
 Perpetually vs geyneth no raunson 1176
 We stryuen as [did] houndes for þe boon

þei foughten alday and ȝit her parte was non
 þere come a kite while þat þei were so wroth
 þat bare away þe boon bitwene hem both 1180
 Ak þerfore at þe kingges courte my brother' [leaf 17]
 Eche man for him self þer is noon oper'
 Loue if þe list. for I loue and ay shal
 And soþly leue broþer þis is all 1184
 Here in þis prison mote we endure
 And euerich of vs take his auenture
 Grete was þe strif and longe bytwix hem tweye
 If þat I had leisere for to seye 1188
 But to þis effect I[t] hapned on a day
 To tellen yowe as soþly as I may
 A worþi duc þat hight Perotheus
 þat felawe was vnto duc Theseus 1192
 Siþ þilk day þat þei weren children lite
 Was comen to Athenes his felawe to visite
 And forto pley as he was wont to doo
 ffor in þis worlde he loued no man soo 1196
 And he loued him also tenderly ageyn
 So wel þei loued as olde bokes seyn /
 That whan þat oon was dede soþly to telle
 His felowe went and souȝt him down in helle 1200
 But of þat storie list me not to write
 Duc Perotheus loued wel arcite
 And had him knowe at Thebes yere by yere
 And fynaly at þe request and preiere 1204
 Of Perotheus wiþ out ony raunson
 Duc theseus him lete out of Prison
 firely to goon wher þat him list oueral
 In suche a gise as I you telle shaft 1208
 This was þe forward pleyntly for to endite
 Bitwene Theseus and hym iercite
 That if so were þat arcite were founde
 Euer in his lif be day or nyȝt or stounde 1212
 In eny cuntre of this theseus

36 GROUP A. § 2. KNIGHT'S TALE. Petworth MS.

And he were kaught' it was acorded þus
 That' wiþ a swerde he shuld lese his hede
 þer nas non oþer remedye ne rede 1216
 But takeþ his leue and homward' he hym spedde (leaf 17, back)
 Lat' hym be war his nek lith to wedde
 How grete a sorowe suffreþ nowe arcite
 The deth he feleþ þorgh his herte smyte 1220
 He wepeþ and weileþ and crieþ pitously
 To aleen hym self he waiteth priuely
 He saide Allas þat day þat I was born
 Now is my prison wors than [was] beforñ 1224
 Nowe is me shape eternaly to dwelle
 Nouȝt in purgotorye. but in helle
 Allas þat euere I knewe Perotheus
 ffor ellis had I ydwalled with theseus 1228
 Yfetered in his prison euermoo
 Than had I bene in blisse and not' in woo
 Only þe sight' of her' whom þat I serue
 Thoow þat I neuere hir' grace may deserue 1232
 Wold haue ysuffised right ynowe for me
 Oo dere Coesyn Palamon quod he
 Thine is þe victorie of þis auenture
 fful blisfully in prison myȝt' þou dure 1236
 In prison certes nay but paradis
 Wel hath fortune turned þe the dys
 þat hast þe sight' of hur' and I þe absence
 ffor possible is siþ þou hast her presence 1240
 And art' a knyght an worþi and an able
 That by som caas siþ fortune is chaungeable
 Thowe maiste to þi desire somtyme atteyn
 But I þat' am exiled and bareyn 1244
 Of al[le] grace and in so gret' despeir'
 That þer nys erþe water' fuyr' ne eire
 Ne creature þat' of hem makid is
 þat' may me helpe or done comfort in þis 1248
 Wel ouȝte I sterue in wanhope and distresse

flare wele my lif my lust and my gladnesse
 Allas whi pleynten men so in comune
 Of perueaunce of god and of fortune 1252
 That zeueþ hem ful oft in mony a gyse [leaf 18]
 Wel bet[ter] þan þei can hem self devise
 Som man desireþ forto haue ricchesse
 That cause is of his mordere and gret siknesse 1256
 And som man wolde out of his prison fayn
 That in his hous is of his mayne sclayn
 Infinite harmes bene in þis matiere
 We wote not what þinge þat we preien here 1260
 We faren as he þat dronken is as mous
 A dronken man wote wele he haþ an hous
 But he ne woote which þe riȝt way is þidere
 And to a dronken man þe way is sclydere 1264
 And certes in þis world so faren wee
 We sechen fast aftere felicite
 But we goon wronge ful oft trewly
 Thus may we seie alle and namelich I 1268
 That wende and had a grete opynyōn
 That if I myȝte skapen from prison
 þan had I be in Ioie and parfite hele
 þer nowe I am exiled fro my wele 1272
 Sip þat I may not seen ȝou Emelye
 I am but dede þer nys no remedye
 Vpon þat oper side Palamon
 Whan þat he wist þat arcite was agon 1276
 Swich sorowe he makeþ þat þe grete tour
 Resounþ of his ȝellinge and clamour
 The pure fettres of his shynes grete
 Were of his bitter salte teeres wete 1280
 Allas quod he Arcita cosyn myne
 Of al our strif god wote þe fruyte is pine
 Thow walkest now in Thebes at þi large
 And of my woo. þou ȝeuest litel charge 1284
 Thow maist sip þou hast wisdom and manhede

Assemble alle þe folk of our kinrede
 And make a werre so sharpe on þis Cite
 þat by som auenture or som trete 1288
 Thow maist haue hir to lady and to wiff (leaf 18, back)
 ffor whom þat I most nedes lese my lif
 ffor as by way of possibilitie
 Siþ þou art at þi large of prison free 1292
 And art a lorde grete is þine auauntage
 More þan is myne þat sterue here in a kage
 ffor I mote wepe and weile while þat I lyue
 Wiþ al þe woo þat prison may me zeue 1296
 And eke wiþ peyn þat loue me zeueþ alsoo
 þat doubleþ al my torment and my woo
 þer wiþ þe fire of gelesie vpsterte
 Wiþ in his brest and hente hym by þe herte 1300
 So woodly þat he like was to biholde
 The box-tre or þe asshen dede and colde
 That seide he .o. cruel goddes þat gouerne
 This world wiþ byndinge of þoure worde eterne 1304
 And writen in þe table of Athamaunt
 þoure parlement and þoure eterne graunt
 What is mankinde more vnto þou holde
 þan is the shepe þat roukeþ in þe folde 1308
 ffor sclayn is man rizt as an oþer beest
 And dwelleþ eke in prison and in arest
 And haþ siknesse and grete aduersite
 And oft tymes giltles parde 1312
 What gouernaunce is in þis prescience
 That giltles tormentþ Innocence
 And encreseþ þis al my penaunce
 þat man is bounden to his obseruaunce 1316
 ffor goddes sake to letten of his wille
 Ther as a beest may al his list fulfille
 And whan a beest is dede he hath no peyn
 But aftere his deth man mote wepe and pleyne 1320
 Thogh in þis world he haue care and woo

Wiþ outen doute it may stonden soo
 The answer of þis lete I to dyuynes
 But wel I wote þat in þis world gret pyne es 1324
 ¶ Allas I se a serpent or a theef [leaf 19]
 þat mony an trewe man hap done meschief
 Goon at his large and where hym list may turne
 But I mote bene in prison þorgh Saturne 1328
 And eke þorgh Iuno Ialous and eke wode
 þat hap destroyed wel nygh al þe blode
 Of Thebes wiþ his waaste walles wide
 And Venus sleep me on þat oper side 1332
 ffor Ialousy and fere of him Arcite
 Now wil I stinte of Palamon a lite
 And lat hym in his prison stille dwelle
 And of Arcite forþ I wil ȝowe telle 1336
 The somer passeþ and þe nyȝtes longe
 Encresceþ double wise. þe peynes stronge
 Bopen of þe louer and of þe prisoner
 I not whiche hap þe woofuller myster 1340
 ffor shortely for to seyn of þis Palamōn
 Perpetuelly is dampned to prison
 In cheynes and [in] fettres to þe dede
 And Arcite is exiled vp[on] is hede 1344
 ffor euermore as out of þat cuntre
 Ne neuere ne shal his lady see
 ¶ ȝow louyers aske I now þis questiō
 Who hap þe wors Arcite or Palamōn 1348
 That oon may se his lady day by day
 But in Prison mot he dwelle alway
 That oper wher hym list may ride *and* goo
 But seen his lady shal he neuer moo 1352
 Now devyneþ as ȝou list þat ȝe can
 ffor I wil telle forþ as I byganne

¶ Whan þat Arcite to Thebes comen was
 fful often a daie he swelt' and seide alas 1356
 ffor seen his lady shal he neuere moo
 And shortely to concluden all his woo
 So mykel sorowe had neuere creature
 þat is or shal while þat þe world may dure 1360
 ¶ His slepe his mete. his drink is hym byraft' [leaf 19, back]
 þat lane he wexeþ and drye as is a shaft
 His eyen holowe and grisly to biholde
 His hwe falowe *and* pale as asshen colde 1364
 And solitarie he was and euer allone
 And waillinge al þe nyȝt making his mone
 And if he herde songe or instrument
 Than wolde he wepe he myȝt not stent 1368
 So feble eke were his spirites / and he lowe
 And chaunged so þat no man can knowe
 His speche neiþer his voys þouȝe men it herde
 And in his gere for al þe worlde he ferde 1372
 Not comly liche to louers maladye
 Of heres but rather like manye
 Engendred of humour malancolike
 Byforn his celle fantastike 1376
 And shortely turned was al vp and down
 Both habite and disposicioun
 Of him þis wooful louer Daine¹ Arcite [1 or Dame]
 What' shuld' I alday of his woo endite 1380
 Whan he endured had a ȝere or two
 This cruel torment *and* þis peyn *and* woo
 At Thebes in his courte as I seide
 Vpon a nyght' in slepe as he hym leide 1384
 Hym þouȝt' howe þat the wenged god Mercurye
 Biforn him stode and bad hym to be merye
 His slepy yeerde in honde he bare vpriȝt'
 An hatte he wered vpon his heres briȝt' 1388

Araied was þis god as he toke kepe
 As he was whan þat Argus toke his slepe
 And seide him þus to Athenes shalt þou wende
 Ther is þe shapen of þi woo an ende 1392
 And wip þat worde Arcite woke *and* stert
 Nowe trewly howe sore þat euer me smert
 Quod he to Athenes nowe wil I fare
 Ne for þe drede of deþe shal I not spare 1396
 To see my lady þat I loue and serue
 [leaf 20]
 In her presence I ne recche þough I sterue
 And wip þat word he kaught a grete myrour
 And seegh þat chaunged was al his colour 1400
 And seegh his visage al in anoþer kinde
 And right anon it ranne him in his mynde
 That siþen his face was so disfigured
 Of malady þe which he had endured 1404
 He myghte wel if þat he bare hym lowe
 Lyue in Athenes euermore vnknowe
 And seen his lady wel nye day be day
 And right anon he chaunged his aray 1408
 And clad him as a poor labore[er]
 And [al] alon sauf oonly a sqwiere
 That knewe his priuete *and* al his caas
 Whiche was disguised poorly as he waas 1412
 To Athenes is he gon þe nexte way
 And to þe courte he went vpon a day
 And at þe gate he profered his seruyse
 To drugge and drawe what so men wil deuise 1416
 And shortely of þis mater forto seyn
 He felle in office wip a chamberleyn
 The whiche þat was dwelling wip Emelye
 ffor he was wise and sone coupe aspye 1420
 Of euery seruaunte which þat serueþ here
 Wel coupe he hewen wode and water bere
 ffor he was yonge and myghty for þe nonys
 And þerto he was stronge and bigge of bonys 1424

To done þat any wigt him can deuise
 A ȝeer or two he was in þis seruyse
 Page in þe Chambre of Emely þe briȝt
 And Philostrate he seide þat he hiȝt 1428
 But half so wel biloued a man as he
 Ne was þer neuer in courte of his degre
 He was [so] gentil of Condicioun
 þat þorowe out al þe court was his renoun 1432
 Thei seide þat it was a charite [leaf 20, back]
 That theseus wolde enhaunce his degre
 And putten hym in worshipful seruyse
 þer as he myght his vertue exercise 1436
 And þus wiȝ in a while his name is spronge
 Bothen of his dedes and of his good tonge
 That Theseus haȝ taken hym so nere
 þat of his chambere he made hym a squyere 1440
 And ȝaue him gold to meyntene his degre
 And eke men brouȝt hym out of his cuntre
 ffro ȝere to ȝere ful priuely his rente
 But honestly and sleizly he it spente 1444
 That no man wondred. how þat he it hadde
 And thre ȝere in þis wise his lif he ladde
 And bare hym so in pees and eke in warre
 þer is no man þat Theseus hath derre 1448
 And in þis blisse lete I nowe Arcite
 And speke I wil of Palamon a lite
 ¶ In derknesse in horrible and strongt prison
 This vij. ȝere hath sitten Palamon 1452
 ffor-pyned what for woo and for distresse
 Who feleth double soor and hevynesse
 But Palamon þat loue destreyneȝ so
 That wode out of his wit he goȝ for woo 1456
 And eke þerto he is a prisonere
 Perpetuelly not oonly for a ȝere
 Who cowde ryme in english proprely
 His martierdome for soȝ it am not I 1460

Therfor I passe as litzly as I may
 ¶ It felle þat in þe vij. ȝere of May
 The .iiij. nyght as olde bokes seyn
 þat al þis story telleþ more pleyñ 1464
 Were it by auenture or be destynye
 As whan a þing is shape it shal be
 That sone after the mydnyȝt Palamon
 By helpinge of a frende brak prison 1468
 And fleep þe Cite fast as he may goo / leaf 21
 ffor he had ȝeue his gaylere drink so
 Of a Clerrey made of a certeyn wyne
 Wiþ vercotiks and opy of Thebes fyne 1472
 þat al þat nyȝt þough þat men wold hym shake
 þe Gailler sclepte and myȝte not awake
 ¶ And þus he fleep as fast as euer he may
 þe nyȝt was short and fast[e] by þe day 1476
 þat nedes cost he most him self hiden
 And til a groue faste ther besiden
 Wiþ dredful foote þan stalkeþ Palamon
 ffor shortely þis was his opynyon 1480
 That in þat groue he wolde hym hide alday
 And in þe nyght þan wolde he take his way
 To Thebes ward his frendes forto prey
 On theseus to helpe hym to werrey 1484
 A[nd] shortely eiper he wold lese his liff
 Or wynnem Emely to his louely wiff
 This is peffeste and his entente pleyñ
 ¶ Nowe wil I turne vnto Arcite ageyñ 1488
 That litel wist howe negh þat was his care
 Til þat fortune had kauȝt hym in his snare
 The bysy larke massagere of day
 Saluþ in her songe þe morowe gray 1492
 And ffiry Phebus riseþ vp so bryȝt
 þat al þe Orient laugheth of his sizt
 And wiþ his stremes drieþ in þe greues /
 The siluer dropes honging in þe leues 1496

44 GROUP A. § 2. KNIGHT'S TALE. Petworth MS.

¶ And Arcita þat in þe courte Royall
 With Theseus his squyer pryncipall
 Is risen and lokeþ on þe mery day
 And forto doñ his obseruauunce to Maij 1500
 Remembring þe point of his desire
 He on his coursere starting as þe fire
 Is riden into þe feeldes him to pley
 Out of þe courte were it a myle or twey 1504
 And to þe Groue of which þat I þou tolde [leaf 21, back]
 By auenture his way by-gon to holde
 And maken hym a garlond of þe greues
 Were it of wodbynde or hawthorn leues 1508
 And loude he songe azeinst þe sonne shene
 May wiþ all þi floures and þi grene
 Welcome be þowe faire freshe May
 I hope þat I somme grene gete may 1512
 And from his courser wiþ a lusty herte
 Into þe Groue ful hastely he starte
 And in a path he romeþ vp and down
 þer as by auenture of þis Palamoun 1516
 Was in a busshe þat no man myȝt hym see
 ffor soor afferd of his deþ was he
 ¶ No þinge ne knewe he þat it was Arcyte
 God wote he wold haue trowed it ful lite 1520
 But soþ is seide goon sithen mony ȝeres
 That feelde hath yen and þe wode hap eeres
 It is ful faire a man to bere hym euene
 ffor alday meten men at vnsef steuene 1524
 fful lital wote Arcite of his felawe
 þat was so nygh to harken of his sawe
 ffor in þe busshe he sitteþ now ful stille
 Whan þat Arcite had romed al his fille 1528
 And songen at the roundel lustely
 Into a stody he felle sodeynly
 As don þise louers in her queynt[e] geres
 Now in þe croppe now down in þe breres 1532

Now vp nowe doune as Boket in a welle
 Riȝt as þe friday soply forto telle
 Now it shyneþ nowe it reyneþ faste
 Riȝt so gan gery Venus euer caste 1536
 The hertes of her folk riȝt as hir day
 Is Gerful. riȝt so chaungeþ she aray
 Selde is þe friday al þe weke ylike
 ¶ Whan þat Arcite nad ysonge he gan to sike 1540
 And sette hym doune with oute[n] eny more [leaf 23]
 Allas quod he þat day þat I was bore
 Howe longe Iuno þorgh þi cruelte
 Wiltow werryen Thebes þe Citee 1544
 Allas ybrought is to confusioun
 The blood Roial of Cadme and Amphion
 Of Cadmus whiche þat was þe first man
 That Thebes bilt. or first þe toune bygan 1548
 And of þe Cite first was corowned kinge
 Of his lynage am I and of his of-springe
 By verrey lyne as of þe stok Roiaff
 And nowe I am so Catif and so thral 1552
 That he þat is my mortal enemye
 I serue him as his sqwier poorlye
 And ȝit doþ me Iuno wel more shame
 ffor I dar not be-knowe myn owne name 1556
 But þer [as] I was wonte to higt Arcite
 Now hight I Philostrate not worþe a myte
 ¶ Allas þou felle Mars allas þou Iuno
 Thus haþ ȝoure Ire our lynage alfordo 1560
 Sauf oonly me and wrecched Palamoñ
 That Theseus martereþ in prisoñ
 And ouer al þis to sleen me vtterly
 Lous haþ faire his darte so brennyngly 1564
 Istiked þorgh my trewe careful herte
 That shapen was my deþ arst þan my sherte
 ȝe sleen me wiþ ȝoure yen Emelye
 ȝe ben þe cause wherfore þat I dye 1568

Of al the remenant^t of myn *oper* care
 Ne sette I nouȝt^t the mountance of a tare
 So þat I cowde do ouȝt^t to *your* plesaunce
 And wiþ þat word he felle down in a traunce 1572
 A longe tyme and afterward he vp stert
 þis Palamon þat þouȝt^t þat porgh [his] herte
 He felte a colde swerde sodeinly glide
 ffor Ire he qwoke no lenger wold he bide
 ¶ And whan þat he had herde Arcites tale
 As he were wode wiþ face dede *and* pale
 He stert hym vp out of the buskes thikke
 And seide Arcite fals traitour quykke 1580
 Now art þou hent þat louest my lady soo
 ffor whom þat I haue al þis peyn *and* woo
 And art my blood and to my counsel sworne
 As I ful oft have tolde þe here to forn 1584
 And hast by-iaped here Duke Theseus
 And falsly chaunged hast þi name þus
 I wil be dede or ellis þou shalt dye
 Thowe shalt not loue my lady Emely 1588
 But I wil loue hir oonly and no moo
 ffor I am Palamon þi mortel ffoo
 And þouȝe þat I no wepen haue in þis place
 But out of prison am I-stert by grace 1592
 I drede nouȝt but eiper þou shalt dye
 Or þou ne shalt not loue Emelye
 Chese which þou wilt or þou shalt not asterte
 ¶ This Arcite wiþ ful dispitous herte 1596
 Whan he hym knewe and had his tale herd
 As feers as a lyon pulled out a swerd
 And seide þus by god þat sitteþ aboue
 Ne it were þat þou art seke and wode for loue 1600
 And eke þat þou no wepen hast in þis place
 Thow shuldest neuere out of þis groue pace
 þat þou ne shuldest dyen of myn honde
 ffor I defie þe swerte and þe bonde 1604

[leaf 22, back. MS. re-
 peats 'He felt a swerde
 sodeynly Glide']

Which þat þou seist I haue made to þe
 What verrey fool þenk wel þat loue is free
 And I wil loue hir mawgre al þi myzt
 But for as moche as þou art a worþi knyzt 1608
 And willest to darreyn hir by bataille
 Haue here my troupe to morwe I nyl not faille
 Wip outen witting of eny opere wight [leaf 23]
 That here I wil be founden as a knyght 1612
 And bringen harneis rizt ynough for þe
 And chese þe best and leue þe worst for me
 And mete and drink þis nyghte wil I bringe
 Ynough for þe and cloþes for þi beddyng 1616
 And if so be þat þou my lady wynne
 And sclee me in þis wode þer I am inne
 Thow maist wel haue þi lady as for me
 This Palamon answerd I graunte it þe 1620
 And þus þei bene departed til a morowe
 Whan eche of hem had leide his feþ to borowe
 ¶ O cupide out of al charite
 O regne þat wold no felawe haue wip þe 1624
 fful sop is seide þat loue ne lordship
 Wil not his þonkes haue no felawship
 We fynde þat of Arcite and Palamoun
 Arcite is riden anon into the town 1628
 And on þe morowe er it were day lizt
 fful priuely two harneys hap he dizt
 Both suffisaunt and mete to darreyn
 The bataille in þe feelde bytwix hem tweyn 1632
 And on his hors allone as he was born
 He cariep al his harneys hym biforn
 And in þe Groue at tyme and place ysette
 This Arcite and þis Palamon ben mette 1636
 To chaungen gan þe colour in her face
 Right as þe hunters in [the] reyne of trace
 That stondeþ atte gap[pe] wip a spere
 Whan hunted is þe lyon or þe bere 1640

And hereþ him come russhing' in þe Greues
 And brekeþ both [the] bowes and þe leues
 And þenkeþ here commeth my mortal enemye
 Wip oute faile he mote be dede or I 1644
 ffor eiper I moot' scleen him atte gappe
 Or he moot sclee me if þat' me myshappe
 So feerden [thei] in chaungyng' of here hwe [leaf 23, back]
 As fer as euerich of hem oper knewe 1648
 Ther nas no good day ne no saluynge
 But streiȝt wip oute worde or rehersinge
 Euerich of hem helpeþ forto arme oper'
 As frendly as he were his owne broþer' 1652
 And after þat' with sharpe speres stronge
 They foynen eche at' oper wonder longe
 Thow myȝtest' wene þat' þis Palamon
 In his fightinge were a wood lyon 1656
 And as [a] cruel tigre was Arcite
 As wilde boores gon þei to-gider' smyte
 That' frothen white as fome for yre woode
 Vp to þe Anle fought' þei in her bloode 1660
 And in þis wise I lete hem fighting' dwelle
 And forþ I wil of Theseus ȝou telle
 ¶ The destanye minister' generall
 That' executep in þe world ouer all 1664
 The purueaunce þat god hap say bfore
 So stronge it is þat' þei þe world had it swore
 þe contrarie of a þinge be ye or nay
 ȝit' som tyme it shal falle on a day 1668
 That' falleþ nouȝt' eft wip in a þousand yere
 ffor certeynly our appetites here
 Be it' of werre or pees, or hate or loue
 Al is þis rewled by þe sight aboue 1672
 This mene I nowe by myghty Theseus
 That' forto hunte is so desirous
 And namely atte grete hert' in Maij
 That' in his bed þer dawep hym no day 1676

That he nys cladde and redy forto ride
 Wip hunte and horn and houndes hym biside
 ffor in his hunting hap he swich delite
 That it is al his ioye and appetite 1680
 To bene hym self þe grete hertes bane
 ffor after Mars he serueþ nowe Dyane
 Cleer was þe day as I haue told er þis / [leaf 24]
 And Theseus wip al[le] Ioie and blis 1684
 Wip his ypolita þe faire quene
 And Emely[e] cloped al in grene
 On huntinge bene þei riden rially
 And to þe Groue þat stode ful fast by 1688
 In which þer was an herte as men hym tolde
 But Theseus þe streighte way hap holde
 And to þe launde he rideþ hym ful rizt
 ffor þider was þe hert wonte to haue his flizt 1692
 And ouer a broke and so forþ on his way
 This duke wil haue a cours at hym or tway
 Wip houndes swich as þat him list comaunde
 And whan þis duke was come vnto þe launde 1696
 Vnder þe sonne he loked anoñ
 He was ware of Arcite and Palamoñ
 That fouzten brene as it were boles two
 The brieztes awerdes wenten to and fro 1700
 So hidously þat wip þe leest[e] stroke
 It semeþ þat it wold fellen an oke
 But what þei were no þing he ne wote
 This duke his courser wip his spores smoothe 1704
 And at a stert he was atwixe hem twoo
 A pulled out a swerde and cried hoo
 No more vp peyn of lesing of þour hede
 By myghty mars he shal anon be dede 1708
 That smyteþ eny stroke þat I may sene
 But telleþ me what myster men ȝe bene
 That ben so hardy forto fizten here
 Wip oute Iugge. or oþer officers 1712

¶ As it were in litel liste ryally
 This Palamon answerde hastily
 And seide Sir' what nedep wordes moo
 We han þe deþe deserued boþ twoo 1716
 Two woful wrecched be we two catyfes
 þat bene encombred of oure owne lifes
 And as þow art' a riȝtful lorde and Iuge [leaf 24, back]
 Ne ȝeue vs neiþer mercy ne refuge 1720
 But' scle me furst' for seinte Iarite
 But' allee my felowe eke as wel as mo
 Or allee hym [first] for þough þo[u] knowest lite
 This is þi mortal ffoo þis is arcite 1724
 That' from þi londe is bashed on his hede
 ffor whiche he haþ deserued to be dede
 ffor þis is he þat' come vnto þi gate
 And saide þat' he hight' Philostrate 1728
 Thus haþ he laped þe ful mony a ȝere
 And þou hast' made him þi chief squyere
 And þis is he þat' loueþ Emelye
 ffor siþ þat' day is comen þat' I shal dye 1732
 I make pleyntyly my confession
 That' I am þilk[e] wooful Palamon
 That' haþ þi prison broken wikkedly
 I am þi mortal foo and it' am I 1736
 That' loueþ so hote Emely þe briȝt'
 That' I wil dye present' in her siȝt'
 Wherfore I axe deþ and my Iwes
 But' scle my felawe in þe same wise 1740
 ffor boþe we han deserued forto be sclayn
 This worþi duke answerd anon agayn
 And saide þis is a short' conclusion
 ȝoure owne mouþe be ȝoure confession 1744
 Haþ dampned þer ȝou and I wil it' recorde
 Hit nedep not' to pyne ȝou wiþ acorde
 He shul be dede by myȝty mars þe rede
 The quene anoon for verrey wommanhede 1748

Gan [for] to wepe and so seide Emelye
 And al þe ladis in þe companye
 Grete pite was it as it þouȝt hem alle
 That euere such a chaunce shuld byfalle 1752
 ffor gentil men þei were of grete astate
 And no þinge but for loue was þis debate
 And seegh her bloody woundes wide and sore (leaf 25)
 And alle criden boþ[e] lasse and more 1756
 Hauē mercy vpon vs wommen alle
 And on her bare knees doun þei falle
 And wold han kissed his fete þer he stooðe
 Til at þe last a-sclaked was his moode 1760
 ffor pite renneþ sone in gentile herte
 And þoughe he first for ire quoke and starte
 He haþ considered shortly in a clause
 The trespass of hem both[e] and þe cause 1764
 And al þouȝe his Ire her gilt accused
 ȝit in his reson he hem both excused
 And þus he þouȝte wel þat euery man
 Wol helpe him self in loue if þat he can 1768
 And eke delyuere him self out of prison
 And eke him self had compassion
 Of wommen for þei wepen euere in oon
 And in his gentile hert he þouȝt anōn 1772
 And soft vnto him self he seide fye
 Vpon a lord þat wil haue no mercy
 But be a lyon bope in word and dede
 To hem þat bene in repentaunce and drede 1776
 As wel as to a prowde dispitous man
 That wil mey[n]tene þat he first bygan
 That lord haþ litel in discreccion
 That in such caas can no diuision 1780
 But weieþ pride and humblenesse after oon
 And shortely whan his Ire was þus agon
 He gan to loken vp wiþ eyen light
 And spake þise same wordes al on hight 1784

The god of love. o Benedicite
 How myghty and howe grete a lord is he
 Azeinst his myght þer ȝeynep noñ obstacles
 He may be cleped a god for his myracles 1788
 ffor he can maken at is owne gyse
 Of euerich hert' as þat' hym list' devise
 Lo here þis arcite and þis Palamon [leaf 25, back]
 That quietly were out' of prison gon 1792
 And myght haue lyued in thebes Rially
 And weten I am her mortal enemye
 And þat' her dep' is in [my] myght' also /
 And ȝit' hap loue mawgre her eyen two 1796
 [I-]Brouȝt' him hidere boȝ[e] forto dye
 Now lokeþ is not' þis a grete folye
 Who may be a fool but' if he loue
 Biholde for goddes loue þat' sitteþ aboue 1800
 See howe þei blede bene þei not' wel armed
 Thus hap her lorde þe god of loue hem paied
 Her wages and her fees for her seruise
 And ȝit' þei wenene for to bene ful wise 1804
 That seruen loue for ouȝt' þat' may bifalle
 But' ȝit' is þis þe beste game of alle
 That she for whom þei haue þis folite
 Can hem as moche thonke as me 1808
 Shee wote no more of al þis hote fare
 By god þan wote an Cuckowe or an hare
 But' al most' be assaied hote and cold
 A man mote be a fool or ȝonge or old 1812
 I wote it' by my self for yore agone
 ffor in my tyme a seruante was I oone
 And perfor sith I knowe of loues peyne
 And wote howe sorte it can a man distreyne 1816
 As he þat' hap oft bene cauȝt' in his laas
 I ȝou forȝiue al holy þis trespas /
 Atte request' of þe quene þat' kneleþ here
 And eke of Emelye my suster' dere 1820

And 3e shul bope vnto me swere
 That neuermore 3e shul my cuntre dere
 Ne make werre vpon me ny3t ne day
 But bene my frendes in al þat 3e may 1824
 I nowe forȝeue þis trespass euey deit
 And þei hym swore his axing fair and weill
 And him of lordship and of merceye preide (leaf 26)
 And so hem graunteþ grace and þus he soide 1828
 To speke of Rial lynage and ricches
 Thoo þat she were a quene or a princesse
 Eche of 3ou bope is worþi doutelees
 To wedden whan tyme is but napelees 1832
 I speke as for my suster Emelye
 ffor whoom 3e haue þis strif and Ielosie
 3e wote 3oure self ze may not wedden two
 At ones þou3e 3e fixten euermoo 1836
 þat oon of 3ou be he loþ or lief
 He mot go pipen in an yve lief
 This is to say she may not nowe haue both
 Ne be 3e neuere so Ielous and so wroth 1840
 And for-þi þer nowe put in þis degre
 That eche of 3ou shal haue his destane
 As him is shape and harkenep in what wise
 Lo here 3oure ende and þat I shal devise 1844
 ¶ My wille is þis for plat conclusion
 Wiþ oute[n] eny replicacion
 3if þat 3ou likeþ take it for þe best
 That euey of 3ou shal go wher hym lest 1848
 ffirely wiþ outen raunson [or] daungere
 At þis day fifty wekes fer ne nere
 Enerich of 3ou shal bryng an .C. kny3tes
 Armed for listes vp al rightes 1852
 Al redy to darreyn hir by batayle
 And þis bihote I 3ou wiþ outen faille
 Vpon my troupe and as I am a kny3t
 þat wheder of 3ou boþ[e] þat haþ my3t 1856

This is to seyn þat whedere he or þowe
 May wiþ his hundred as I haue spoke of nowe
 Slee his contrary or out of lystes drive
 Than shal I ȝeue hym Emely to wyue 1860
 To whom þat fortune haþ ȝeue so faire a grace
 The listes shal I do maken in þis place
 And god so wisly on my soule rwe [leaf 26, back]
 As I shal euene Iuge be and trwe 1864
 ȝe shal non opere ende wiþ me make
 þat oon of ȝou shal be dede or take
 And if yow þenke þis is wel yseide
 Sey ȝoure avice and holde ȝou wel apaide 1868
 This is ȝoure ende and ȝour conclusioñ
 Who lokeþ lightly now but Palamon
 Swo springeth vp for Ioie but Arcite
 Who coude telle or who coude it endite 1872
 The Ioie þat is made in þat place
 Whan Theseus haþ doñ so faire a grace
 But doune on knees went euery manere wizt
 And thonked hym wiþ al her hert and myzt 1876
 And namely pise Thybeanes mony sith
 And þus wiþ hope and herte blith
 Thai take her leue and homward gan þei ride
 Tho Thebes-ward wiþ olde walles wide 1880
 [.

 *no gap in the MS.*]
 ¶ I trowe men wolde deme it negligence
 If I forȝete to telle þe dispence
 Of Theseus þat goþ so bisily
 To maken vp þe listes rially 1884
 That suche a noble theatre as it was
 I dar wel seyn in þis world ther nas
 The circuyte a myle was aboute
 Walled wiþ stone and dicched al wiþ oute 1888
 Rounde was þe shappe in manere of a compas /

ful of degrees þe heght of sixty paas
 That whan a man was sette on oon degre
 He letted not his felawe forto see 1892
 Estward þer stode a gate of Marbel white
 Westward right such a noþer in þe opposite
 And shortely to conclude such a place
 Was non in erþe as in so litel space 1896
 ffor in þe londe þer nas no crafty man
 That Geometrye or arismetrike can
 Ne purtraicour ne keruer of ymages (leaf 27)
 That Theseus ne ȝaue him mete and wages 1900
 The theater to make and to devise
 And forto doon his riȝt and his sacrificise
 He Estward haþ [up]on þe gate aboue
 In worship of wenus goddes of loue 1904
 Done maken an awtere and an oratorie
 And on þe westward side in memorie
 Of Mars he haþ maked riȝt such anopere
 þat cost largely of gold a fforere 1908
 And norþward in a tourett on þe wall
 Of Alabaster white and rede Coraill
 An oratorie riche forto see
 In worship of Diane of chaastite 1912
 Haþ Theseus done wrouȝt in noble wise
 But ȝit had I forȝete forto devise
 That noble kervingges and þe pourtratures
 þe shappe þe countenaunce and þe figures 1916
 þat weren in þe oratories thre
 first in þe temple of Venus maist þou see
 Wrouȝt on þe walle ful pitous to biholde
 þe broken slepes and þe sighes colde 1920
 þe sacred teeres and þe waymentynge
 þe firy strokes of þe desiringe
 þat loues seruantes in þis lif enduren
 þe Oþes þat her conauntes assuren 1924
 Plesaunce and hope. desire fool-hardynesse

56 GROUP A. § 2. KNIGHT'S TALE. Petworth MS.

Beaute and pouȝt. bawdry richesse	
Charmes and force. lesingges and flaterye	
Dispence bysynesse and Ielowsie	1928
pat' wered of ȝolowe goldes a garlonde	
And a Cukkowe sitting' on her honde	
ffeestes instrumentes Carolles daunces	
Iuste and array and al þe circumstaunces	1932
Of loue whiche I rekened <i>and</i> reken shaft	
By ordere were peynted on þe wallt	
And mo þan I con [make] of mencion	(leaf 27, back)
ffor soply al þe mōnt of Citharōn	1936
Ther Venus haþ her principal dwellinge	
Was shewed in þe walle in purtraiynge	
Wiþ al þe Gardeyne and þe lustynesse	
Not' was forȝeten þe porter ydelnesse	1940
Ne narcisus þe faire of yore agone	
Ne ȝit' þe foly of king' salamon	
Ne ȝit' þe grete strengthe of hercules	
þe enchauntementz of Medea and certes	1944
Ne of Turnus wiþ þe hardy fires corage	
þe riche Cresus catif in seruage	
Thus may ȝe sene þat wisdom ne ricchesse	
Bewte ne sleighte. strengthe hardynesse	1948
Ne may with Venus holde chaumpartie	
ffor as her list' þe world' þan may she gie	
¶ Loo alle þise folk so caught' were in her las	
To þei for woo ful often seide alas	1952
Suffiseþ here oon ensample or two	
And þoughe þer coude rekne a thousand moo	
The statue of Venus glorious to see	
Was naked fletinge in þe large see	1956
And from þe nauel down al keuered was	
Wiþ wawes grene and briȝt' as eny glas	
A Citole in hire riȝte hond had she	
And on her hede ful semely to see	1960
A Rose garlonde fresshe an wel smellinge	

About her hede her dowues flateringe
 Byfore hir stode hir sone Cupido
 Vpon his shuldres wenges had he two 1964
 And blynde he was as it is ofte sene
 A bowe he bare and arowes briȝt *and* kene
 ¶ Whi shuld I not eke as wel telle ȝou alle
 The pourtrature þat was vpon þe walle 1968
 Wiȝ in þe temple of myȝty mars þe rede
 Al peynted was þe walle in lengthe *and* brede
 Like to þe Estres of þe grisly place [leaf 28]
 þe hight þe gr[e]te temple of Mars in trace 1972
 In þilk[e] colde frosty Regyōn
 Ther as Mars haȝ his souereyn māciōn
 ¶ first on þe walle was peynted a foreste
 In which þer wonneȝ neiȝer man ne beste 1976
 Wiȝ knotty knarry bareyn trees olde
 Of stubbes sharpe and hidous to biholde
 In which þer was a rombled and a swoghe
 As þough a storme shuld breke euery bouȝe 1980
 And downward / from an hille vnder a bent
 There stode þe temple of Mars Armypotent
 Wrought of al of burnyd steel of which þe entent
 Was longe and streit *and* goostly forto sent 1984
 And þer out came a rage in such a wise
 þat it made al þe gates forto rise
 Til norȝeron liȝt in at þe doores shoōn
 for wyndowe on þe waȝ þan was þer nōn 1988
 þorowe whiche men myȝt eny light discerne
 þe door was al of Athamant eterne
 Yclenched ouertwert and endelonge
 Wiȝ Iren towe forto make it stronge 1992
 Euery piler þe temple to sustene
 Was tonne grete of yren briȝt *and* shene
 Ther seghe I first þe [derk] ymagynyng
 Of felowny and al þe compassing 1996
 The cruel Ire rede as eny gleede

þe Pikpurs and eke þe pale drede
 þe smyler wiþ þe knyf vnder þe cloke
 þe shippen brennyng wiþ þe blak[e] smoke 2000
 þe treson of þe morþering in þe bedde
 þe open werre wiþ woundes al by-bledde
 Conteckte wiþ bloody knyff *and* sharpe manace
 Al ful of chirkinge was þat sory place 2004
 þe scleer of him self 3it segþ I þere
 His herte-bloode haþ baped al his here
 The nayle ydryuen in þe shode a ny3t (leaf 28, back)
 Wiþ colde deþe wiþ mouþe gaping vp ri3t 2008
 Amyddes of þe temple satte a meschaunce
 Wiþ discomfort and sori countenaunce
 3it saughe I woodnesse laughing in his rage
 Armed compleint outhees and fires corage 2012
 þe Careyn in þe bussþ wiþ þrote ycorve
 A thousand selayne and not of qualme ystorue
 This tyraunt wiþ þe pray by force yrafte
 þe tounne destroyed þer nas no þing ylafte 2016
 3it seghe I brent þe shippes Hoppesteres
 The hunte strangled wiþ þe wilde beres
 The sowe fretinge þe childe ri3t in þe cradeþ
 The Coke yscalded for al his longe ladest 2020
 Nou3t was forgotten by þe infortune of Marte
 The Carter ouer-riden wiþ þe Carte
 Vndere þe whele ful lowe he lay adoun
 þere were also of Martes dyuysoun 2024
 þe Barbour þe bochere and þe Smyth
 þat forgeþ sharpe swerdes on þe stith
 And al aboue depeynted in a toure
 Saughe I conquest sittinge in grete honoure 2028
 Wiþ þe sharpe swerde ouer his hede
 Hanginge by a sotile twyned þrede
 Depeinted was þe the slaughtere of Iuliu
 Of grete Nero and of Anthoneus 2032
 Al be þat þilke tyme þei were vuborn

3it was her deþ depeinted þer biforn
 By manasing' of Mars riȝt' by figure
 so was it shewed in þe purtrature 2036
 As is depeinted in þe certres aboue
 Who shal be ded or slayne for loue
 Suffiseþ oon ensample in stories olde
 I may not rekne hem al[le] þouȝe I wolde 2040
 þe statue of mars vpon a carte stode
 Armed and loked grymme as he were wode
 And ouer his hode þer shyneþ two figures [leaf 20]
 Of sterres þat bene cleped in figures 2044
 That oon Puella that oper rubeus
 This god of armes was araied þus
 A wolf þer stode to forn him at his fete
 Wiþ eyen rede and of a man he ete 2048
 Wiþ sotel pensel was depeynted þis storie
 In recordinge of Mars and [of] his glorie
 ¶ Nowe to þe temple of Dyane þe chaste
 As shortely as I can I wil me haste 2052
 To telle ȝou al the descripcioun
 Depeynted was þe walle vp and down
 Of huntinge and of shamfast chastite
 þer saughe I how wooful calistope 2056
 Whan þat Dyane agreued was [with] here
 Was turned from a womman to a bere
 And after was she made þe lode-sterre
 Thus was she peynted I can say ȝou no ferre 2060
 Her sone is eke a sterre as ȝe may see
 þer saughe I dane turned to a tree
 I mene not þe goddes Dyane
 But Penneus doughter which þat hiȝte dane 2064
 þer saugh I Attheon an hert' ymaked
 ffor vengeance þat he segh diane al naked
 I saugh þat how his houndes haue hym caughte
 And freten him for þei knewe hym nauȝte 2068
 3it' ypeynted was a lital ferþermore

Howe Atthelaunt' hunted þe wilde bore
 And maleagre and mony oper moo/
 ffor whiche diane wrouȝt hym care *and* woo 2072
 Ther seghe I many anoper worþi story
 Whiche men list' not' to drowe to memory
 This goddes vpon an hert' ful wel she sette
 Wiþ smale houndes al about' her fete 2076
 And vnderneþe her fete she had a mone
 Wexing' it' was and shal wany sone
 In gaudy grene her statue cloþes was [leaf 29, back]
 Wiþ bowe in honde and arowes in a cas 2080
 Her eyen keste she ful lowe a doun
 Ther Pluto haþ his derke regioun
 A woman trauailing' was hir' biforn
 But' for her child was so longe vnborn 2084
 fful pitously lucyna can she calle
 And seide helpe for þou maist' best' of alle
 Wel coude he peynte lyvely þat it wrouȝt'
 Wiþ mony a floreyne he þe coloures bouȝt' 2088
 ¶ Now bene þise listes made and thesenaus
 That' at his grete cost' araied þus
 þe temple and þe theatre euery dele
 Whan it' was done him liked wonder' wele 2092
 But' stint' I wil of Theseus a lite
 And speke of Palamon and [of] arcite
 The [day] approcheþ of her retournynge
 þat' eueriche shuld an C. knyghtes bringe 2096
 The bataille to darrey as I you tolde
 And to Athenes her couenaunte forto holde'
 Haþ euery of hem brouȝt' an .C. knyghtes
 Wel armed for þe werre at al[le] rightes 2100
 And sikerly þer trowed many a man
 That' neuere siþ þat' þe world bygan
 That' forto speke of knyghthode of her honde
 As fer as god haþ maked see or londe 2104
 Nas of so fewe so noble a companye

ffor euery wight þat loued chivalrye
 And wold his þonkes haue a passaunte name
 Hap preide þat he myght be of þat game 2108
 And wel was him þat þerto chosen was
 ffor if þer felle to morow such a caas
 3e knowen wel þat euery lusty knyȝt
 þat loueþ paramours *and* hap [his] myȝt 2112
 Were it in engelonde or ellis where
 þei wolden fayne wilnen to be þere
 To fight for a lady O benedicite [leaf 30]
 It were a lusty sighte forto se 2116
 And right so feerden þei wiþ Palamon
 Wiþ hym þei wenten knyghtes mony oñ
 Som wol be armed in an haberiõn
 And a brest plate and a litel gippõn 2120
 And some wil haue a peire plates large
 And some wil haue a Spruse plate sheeld or targe
 Somme wil [be] armed on his legges welte
 And haue an axe and some a mace of stele 2124
 þer nas no newe gyse þat it nas olde
 Armed were þei as I haue ȝou tolde
 Euerich after his opynyõn
 Ther maist þou see commyng with Palamon 2128
 Ligurge hym self þe grete king of trace
 Blak was his visage and manly was his face
 þe Cercles of þe eyen in his hede
 þei glowden bitwix ȝelowe *and* rede 2132
 And liche a lyon loked he aboute
 With kempte heeres on his browes stoute
 His lymes grete his brawnes stronge
 His sholdres brode his armes rounde *and* longe 2136
 And as þe Gyse was in his cuntre
 fful heghe vpon a chare of gold stode he
 Wiþ .iiij. white boles in þe trais
 In stede of cote armure and his harnais 2140
 Wiþ nailles ȝelowe and briȝt as eny gold

He had a berres skyn coleblake for olde
 His longe heer was kempte behinde his bak
 As eny rauens fepere it shoon for blak 2144
 A wreþe of gold. arme briȝt of huge wiȝt
 Vpon his hede sette ful of stonys briȝt
 Of fyne Rubies and of dyamauntz
 About his chare þer went white alauntz 2148
 xxth and moo as grete as ony ster
 To hunten at þe lyon or þe deer
 And folowed hym wiþ mosel fast ybounde [leaf 30, back]
 Colers of golde and torrettes philed rounde 2152
 An C. lordes had he in his route
 Armed ful wel wiþ hertes steerne and stoute
 ¶ With Arcite in stories as men fynde
 The grete Emetreus þe king of ynde 2156
 Vpon a stede bay trapped in stele
 Couered wiþ a clope of gold diapred wele
 Come riding liche þe god of armed Mars
 His cote armure was a clope of tars 2160
 Couched wiþ peerles . white. rounde *and* grete
 His sadel was of brant gold newe ybete
 A mantel vpon his shulder hongynge
 Bretful of rubies rede as fire spar[c]linge 2164
 His Crispe here liche rynges was yronne
 And þat was ȝelowe and glitering as þe sonne
 His nose was heghe his eyen briȝt citryn
 His lippes rounde his colour was Sangwyn 2168
 A fewe frakens in his face spreynȝ
 Bitwix ȝelowe and somdele blak ymeynt
 And as a lyon he is eyen caste
 Of xxvth ȝere his age y caste 2172
 His beerd was wel bygonne forto springe
 His vois was as a trompet þondringe
 Vpon his hede he wered a laurer grene
 A garlond fresshe and lusty forto sene 2176
 Vpon his honde he bare for his delite

An Egle tame as eny lylle white
 An .C. lordes had he wiþ hym þere
 Al armed sauf her hedes in al her gere 2180
 fful richely in al[le] maner þingges
 ffor trusteþ wel þat dukes Erles kyngges
 Were gadered in þis noble companye
 ffor loue and for encrees of chyualrye 2184
 About þis knyȝt þer ranne on euery part
 fful mony a tame lyon and leopart
 And in þis wise þise lordes al and some 2188
 Bene on þe sonday to þe Cite come
 Aboute prime and in þe toun alight
 This Theseus þis duke þis worþi knyȝt
 Whan he had brouȝt hem into his Cite
 And Inned hem [ech] after her degre 2192
 He feesteth hem and doþ so gret laboure
 To esen hem and done hem al honours
 That ȝit men wenen þat no mannys witte
 Of noon astate ne cowde amenden it 2196
 The mynstralsy þe seruiþe at þe feest
 The grete ȝiftes to þe most and leest
 The riche aray of Theseus palays
 Ne who sat first and laste vpon þe dees 2200
 What ladies fairest bene or best daunsinge
 Or whiche of hem can beste daunce or singe
 Ne who most felingly spekeþ of loue
 What hawkes sitten or perche aboue 2204
 What houndes ligger on þe floor a-doun
 Of al this nowe I make no mencynoun
 But al þe effecte þat þenkeþ me þe best
 Nowe commeþ þe poynt herkneþ if ȝou lest 2208
 ¶ The sonday nyght er day gan to springe
 Whan Palamon þe larke herd singe
 Al þouȝe it ner not day by howres two
 ȝit songe þe larke and Palamon riȝt þoc 2212
 Wiþ holy hert and wiþ an highe corage

He roos vp to we[n]den on his pilgrymage
 Vnto þe blisful Cithera benygne
 I mene Venus honourable and digne 2216
 And in her houre he walkeþ forþ apaas
 Vnto þe listes þer þe tempel was
 And doune he kneleþ and wiþ humble chere
 And herte sore he seide as ȝe shal here 2220
 ¶ ffairest. o faire . o. lady myne Venus
 Douȝtere to Ioue and spouse to Vlcanus
 Thow glader of þe mounte of Citheroun (leaf 21, back.
 ffor þilk[e] loue þou haddest to a-doun 2224
 Haue pite on my bitter teeres smerte
 And take myn humble preier at þine herte
 Alas I ne haue no langage to telle
 þe effecte ne þe tourment of myn helle 2228
 Myne herte may myn armes not be-wreye
 I am so confused þat I can not seye
 But mercy lady briȝt þat woost wele
 My þouȝt and seest what harmes I fale 2232
 Considere al þis and rwe vpon my sore
 As wisly as I shal for euermore
 Hensforþ my myȝt þi trewe seruauante be
 And hole werre alwaie wiþ chaastite 2236
 That make I myne avowe so as ȝe may helpe
 I kepe not of armes for to ȝelpe
 Ne I ne axe not to morowe to haue victorie
 Ne renoun in þis caas ne veynglorie 2240
 Of price of armes blownen vp and down
 But I wold haue fully possessioun
 Of Emelye and dye in her seruise
 ffynde þou þe manere howe and in what wise 2244
 I recche not but it may better be
 To haue victorie of hem or þei of me
 So that I haue my lemman in myn armes
 ffor þouȝe so be þat mars is god of armes 2248
 ȝoure vertue is so grete in heuene aboue

þat if þe lest I shal wel haue my loue
 Thy tempel shal I worship euermoo
 And on þine awtere wher I ride or goo 2252
 I wil doon sacrificise and fires bete
 And ȝif ȝe wil not so my lady swete
 þan prey I ȝou to morowe wiþ a spere
 þat Arcita me þorghe þe herte bere 2256
 Then rekke I not whan I haue lost my lif
 þouȝe Arcita wyne her to his wif
 This is þe effecte and eende of my priere (leaf 32)
 ȝeue me my lady þou blisful lady dere 2260
 ¶ Whan þe orison was dōn of Palamōn
 His sacrificise he did and þat a-nōn
 fful pitoualy wiþ al[le] circumstaunces
 Al telle I not as nowe his obseruaunces 2264
 But atte laste þe statue of Venus shoke
 And made a signe wherby þat he toke
 þat his preier accepted was þat day
 for þouȝe þe signe shewed a delay 2268
 ȝit wist he wele þat graunted was his bone
 And wiþ glad hert he went awaie ful sone
 ¶ þe iij. houre in-equal þat Palamōn
 Byganne to venus temple forto goȝ 2272
 Vp roos þe sonne and vp roos Emelye
 And to þe temple of Dyane gan she hie
 Hir maidens þat she pider wiþ hir ladde
 fful redily wiþ hem þe fire þei hadde 2276
 þe encense þe clopes and þe remenaunte all
 þat to þe sacrificise longen shaft
 þe hornes ful of meth as was þe gise
 þer lacked nouȝt to don her sacrificise 2280
 Smoking þe temple ful of clopes faire
 This Emelie wiþ herte debonaire
 Hir lady wasshe wiþ water of a welle
 But howe she did hir riȝt I dar not telle 2284
 But it be eny þing in generall

And ȝit it were a game to here it all
 To him þat meneþ wel it were no charge
 But it is good a man be at his large 2288
 Hir briȝt heres were kempte vntressed all
 A corone of a grene oke seriaȝ
 Vpon her hede was sette ful faire and mete
 Two fires on þe awter gan she bete 2292
 And did her þingges as men may biholde
 In stace of Thebes and þise bokes olde
 Whan kindeled was þe fire wiþ pitous chere [leaf 32, back]
 Vnto Diane she spake as ȝe may here 2296
 ¶ O chaaste goddes of þe wodes grene
 To whom boþ heuene and erþe and see is sene
 Quene of [the] regne of Polute derk and lowe
 Goddes of maydenes þat myn hert hast knowe 2300
 fful mony a ȝere and woost what I desire
 As kepe me from þi vengeance and þine Ire
 That attheon aboute cruelly
 Chaast goddes wel woost þou that I 2304
 Desire to be a maiden al my liif
 Ne neuere wil I be [no] loue ne wiff
 I am þou woost ȝit of þi companye
 A maide and loue huntyng and venerye 2308
 And for to walke in þe wodes wilde
 And not to be a wiff and be wiþ childe
 Nat wil I knowe company of man
 Now helpe me lady siþ ȝe may and can 2312
 ffor þoo þre formes þat þou hast in þe
 And Palamon þat haþ such loue to me
 And eke Arcite þat loueþ me so sore
 This grace I prei þe wiþ out more 2316
 And sende loue and pees ytwyþ hem twoo
 And fro me turne away her hertes so
 That al her hote loue and her desire
 And al her bysy torment and her fire 2320
 Be queynt or turned in an opere place

And if so be þou wilt do me no grace
 Or if it be my destany be shaped soo
 That I shal nedes haue oon of hem two 2324
 As sende me him þat most desireþ me
 Biholde goddesse of clene chaastite
 The bitter teeres þat on my chekes falle
 Siþ þou art maide and keper of vs alle 2328
 My maydenhode þou kepe *and* wel conserue
 And while I lif a maiden I wil þe serue
 þe fires brenne vpon þe Auter' clere (leaf 35)
 While Emely was þus in his preiere 2332
 But sodeynly she seghe a þinge queynt
 ffor right' anon oon of þe fires queynt
 And quicked ageyn and after þat' anōn
 That' oþer fire was queynt' *and* al agōn 2336
 And as it' queint' it made a qwistelinge
 As done þise wete brondes in her brennynge
 ¶ And at' þe brondes eende out' ranne anōn
 As it' were bloody dropes mony ōn 2340
 ffor which so sore a-gaste was Emelie
 þat she was wel nyghe madde *and* gan to crye
 ffor she ne wiste what' it' signified
 But' only for þe fire þus she criede 2344
 And wepte þat it' was pite for to here
 And þer wiþ al Diane gan to apere
 Wiþ bowe on hond' right' as an huntesse
 And seide douȝtere stint' of þine heuynesse 2348
 And monge the goddes high it is affirmed
 And by eterne worde writt' *and* confermed
 þow shalt be wedded vnto oon of þoo
 þat' han for þe so moche care *and* woo 2352
 But vnto which of hem I may not' telle
 ffare wele I may no lenger dwelle
 þe fire whiche þat' on myn awter' brenne
 Shal þe declaren er þat þou go henne 2356
 Thine aventure of loue as in þis caas

And *with* þat worde þe Arowes in þe caas
 Of þe goddes clateren fast and ringe
 And forþ she went and made a vanysshinge 2360
 ffor whiche þis Emely a-stonyed was
 And seide what mounteth þis alas
 I put me in þi protectiōn
 Diane *and* in þi disposiciōn 2364
 And home she goþ þe neste way
 This is þe effecte þer is no more to say
 þe nexte houre of Mars folowing' þis [leaf 23, back]
 Arcite vnto þe temple ywalked is 2368
 Of feers mars to done his sacrificise
 Wiþ al þe myghtes of his peynymes wise
 Wiþ pitous hert and heghe deuociōn
 Riȝt þus to Mars he seide his Orisoñ 2372
 ¶ O stronge god þat in the regnes colde
 Of taars honoured art and lord yholde
 And hast in euery regne *and* euery londe
 Of armes al þe bridel in þine honde 2376
 And hem fortunest as þe list devise
 Accepte of me my pitous sacrificise
 If so be my þouȝte may deserue
 And þat my myght be worþi forto serue 2380
 Thi godhede þat I may be oon of þine
 þan preie I þe to rwe vpon my pyne
 ffor jilk peyn and þat hoots fire
 In which þou brentest whilom for desyre 2384
 Whan þou vsedist the beaute
 Of faire yonge fresshe venus free
 And haddest hure in armes at þi wille
 All þoughe þe onys on a tyme mysfelle 2388
 Whan vlcanus had kauȝt þe in his laas
 And foonde þe ligging' be his wif alaas
 ffor thilk[e] sorowe þat was in þine herte
 Haue rauthe as wel vpon my peynes smerte 2392
 I am ȝonge and vnkonyng' as þou wooste

And as I trowe wiþ loue offended moste
 þat euere was eny lyues creature
 for she þat dop me al this woo endure 2396
 Ne rechep neuere wher I sinke of flete [MS. "flete of sinke"]
 And wel I wote ere she me mercy hete
 I mote wiþ strengthe wynne her in þis place
 And wel I wote wiþ outhelpe or grace 2400
 Of þe ne may my strengthe not availe
 Than helpe me lord to morowe in my bataile
 for þilk[e] fire þat whilom brente þe [leaf 34]
 As wel as þat fire now brennep me 2404
 And do þat I to morowe haue victorie
 Myne be þe trauaile and þine be þe glorie
 þi souereyn temple wil I most honouren
 Of any place and alway most labouren 2408
 In þi plesaunce and in þi craftes stronge
 And in þi temple I wil my baner hongen
 And all þe armes in my companye
 And euermore vnto þe day I dye 2412
 Eterne fire I wil byfore þe fynde
 And eke to þis awowe I wil me bynde
 My lorde my here þat hongep lowe a dow[n]e
 þat neuere ȝit ne felt offencioʊn 2416
 Of rasoure ne of shere I wil þe ȝeue
 And bene þi trewe seruaznte while I lyue
 Now lord haue rouþe vpon my sorowes sore
 ȝif me þe victorie I axe þe no more 2420
 The preier stint of Arcita þe stronge
 The Ryngges on þe temple door ȝit hongen
 And eke the door[e]s clateren ful fast
 Of whiche Arcita somewhat hym a-gast 2424
 The fires brennen vpon þe auter bryȝt
 That it gan al the temple for to light
 And swete smelle anon þe grounde vp ȝaf
 And Arcita anon his honde vp haf 2428
 And more ensense vnto þe fire he cast

Wip oþer riȝtes moo and atte last
 The statue of Mars bygan his hauberk ryng
 And wip þat soun he herde a *murmuryng* 2432
 ful lowe and dym þat seide þus victorie
 ffor which he ȝaue to mars honour *and* glorie
 An þus wip Ioie and hope wel to fare
 Arcita is [y]brouȝt of Moche care 2436
 As fayn as foule is of þe briȝte sonne
 And riȝt anon such strif is bygonne
 ffor þilk[e] grauntyng in þe heuene aboue [leaf 34, back]
 By-twix venus þe goddes of loue 2440
 And Mars þe steerne god armypotent
 þat Iubiter was bysy it to stent
 Til at þe [last] Pale Saturnus þe colde
 þat knewe so mony of auentures olde 2444
 ffonde in his bolde experience and &¹ art
 þat he ful sone haþ plesed every part [1 so]
 And soþ is seide elde haþ grete anauntage
 And elde is boþ[e] wisdom and vsage 2448
 Men may þe olde attenne but not atrede
 Saturne anōn to stinten strif and drede
 Al be it þat it is aȝainst his kinde
 Of al his strif he can remedye fynde 2452
 My dere doughter Venus quod saturne
 My cours þat haþ so wide forto turne
 Haþ more powere þan wote eny man
 Myne is þe drenchinge in þe see so wan 2456
 Myne is þe prison in þe derke cote
 Myn is þe stranglinge and þe hanging by þe þrote
 þe murmur and þe chirles rebellinge
 þe Gonyng and the priuey enpoysenyng 2460
 I do vengeance and pleyne correction
 While I dwelle in þe signe of the lyōn
 Myne is þe Ruyne of [t]he heghe halles
 þe fallinge of þe toures and of þe walles 2464
 Vpon þe mynour or vpon þe carpentere

I slowgh Sampson shaking' þe pilere
 And myn[e] be þe maladies colde
 The derk tresounes and þe castes olde 2468
 My lokinge is þe fader of Pestilence
 Nowe wepe no more I shal do my diligence
 That Palamon þat is þine owne kny3t'
 Shal haue his lady as þou hast' [him] higt' 2472
 Thou3e Mars shal helpe his kny3t' 3it napelees
 Bytwix 3ou tweyne þer mot be somtyme pees
 Al be 3e not of oon complexiõ 2476
 That' causeþ al day such dyuysion [leaf 36]
 I am þine eile redy at þi wille
 Wepe no more I wil þi lust' fulfille
 Now wil I stinten of þise goddes aboute
 Of Mars and of venus goddes of loue 2480
 And pleyndly I wil telle 3ou as I can
 þe grete effecte for which þat I biganne
 [.

 no gap in the MS.]
 Grete was þe feest' in Athenes þat' day
 And eke þat' lusty seson in [that] may 2484
 Made euery wight' to be in suche plesaunce
 And al þat' day lusten þei and daunce
 And spenden it' in Venus high seruyse
 But by þe cause þat' þei shulden rise 2488
 Erly forto seen þe grete fight
 Vnto her reste went' þei atte nyght'
 And on þe morowe whan day gan to springe
 Of hors and harnays noyse and clateringe 2492
 þer was in hostelrye aboute
 And to þe palaies rode þer mony a route
 Of lordes vpon stedes and palfreis
 þer maist' þou see dyvising' of harneis 2496
 So vncoupe and so riche and wrou3t so weft
 Of Goldsmythrie of browding' and of steelf

72 GROUP A § 2 KNIGHT'S TALE. Petworth MS.

The sheeldes brizte teesteers and trappures	
Gold-hewen helmes hauberkes <i>and</i> cote armures	2500
Lordys in parentis on her coursers	
Knyghtes of retenue and eke swiers	
Nailinge þe speres and helmes bokelinge	
Sigyng' of sheeldes wip layvers lasinge	2504
Ther as nede is þei were no þing' ydeff	
þe ffomyngsteedes on þe golden bridest	
Snavyng' and fast' þe armurers also	
Wip file and hamure ridiŋ' to and froo	2508
þemen on foote and comons many on	
Wip shorte staues þikke as þei may goŋ	
Pipes trompettes nakerns and clariouns	[leaf 85, back]
þat' in þe bataille blewen bloody sownes	2512
þe paleis ful of puple vp <i>and</i> down	
Here þre þer ten holdinge her questioun	
Dyuynyng' of þise thibeanes knyȝtes twoo	
Some seide þus. some seide it shal be so	2516
Somme helde wip him wip þe blake berde	
Somme wip þe balled some with þe pikke hered	
Some seide he loked grymme <i>and</i> he wold fight	
He hap a sparþe of xx ⁱⁱ pounde wight	2520
þus was þe halle ful of dyuynyng	
Longe aftere þe sonne gan to springe	
þe grete Theseus of his slepe gan wake	
Wip mynstralcie and nois þat' þei make	2524
Heelde ȝit' þe chambre of his palais riche	
Til þat' þe thebeane knyghtes boþ yliche	
Honoured weren into þe place fette	
Duke Theseus is at' þe wyndowe sette	2528
Araide riȝt' as he were a god in trone	
The puple presed þidere-wart' ful sone	
Him forto seen and done him high reuerence	
And eke to harken his heest' and his sentence	2532
An herowde on a scaffold' made an oo /	
Til al þe noise of þe puple was doo	

And whan he see þe puple of noise al stille
 Thus shewed he þe myzty dukes wille 2536
 þe lord hap of his heghe discreciõ
 Considered þat it were destrucciõ
 To gentel blood to feghten in þis gise
 Of mortall bataile now in þis emprise 2540
 Wherfore to shapen þat þei shal not die
 He wille his firste purpoos modifie
 No man þerfor vp payne of losse of liff
 No maner shotte . ne pollax ne short knyff 2544
 Into þe listes sende or þidere bringe
 Ne shorter swerd forto stoke wiþ poynt bitinge
 No man ne drawe ne bere it be his side [leaf 26]
 Ne no man shal vnto his felawe ride 2548
 But oon cours wiþ a sharpe grounden spere
 ffoyn if hym list on foote hym self to were
 And he þat is at meschief shal be take
 And not sclayn but be brougt to a stake 2552
 þat shal be ordeyned on eiper side
 But þidere he shal be foorce and þer abide
 And if so falle þe Chevetayn be take
 On eiper side or ellis sclayn his make 2556
 No lenger shal þe tornamente laste
 God spede þou goo and leye on faste
 Wiþ swerdes and longe maces fizeþ þour fille
 Go nowe þoure way þis is þe lordes wille 2560
 The vois of puple touched heuene
 So loude cried þei wiþ mery steuene
 God saue suche a lord þat is so good
 He wilneþ no distruction of blood 2564
 Vp goþ þe trompes and þe melody
 And to þe listes ritt þe company
 By ordinaunce þorghe out þe cite large
 Honged wiþ clopes of gold and not wiþ sarge 2568
 fful like a lorde þis noble duc gan ride
 Thise two Thebeanes on eiper syde

And aftere rode þe quene *and* Emelye
 And after þat a nother companye 2572
 Of oon and oþer after her degre
 And þus þei passen þorgh out þe Cite
 And to the listes come þei be tyme
 It nas not of þe day zit fully pryme 2576
 Whan sette was Theseus ful riche *and* hie
 Ypolita þe quene and Emely
 And oþer ladies in degrees aboute
 Vnto þe setes preesen al þe route 2580
 And westward þorgh þe gates vnder mart /
 Arcite and eke þe hundred of his part
 With banere rede is entred riȝt anōn [leaf 38, back]
 And in þat self[e] moment Palamōn 2584
 Is vnder venus estward in þat place
 With baner white and hardy chere *and* face
 And in al þe world to seken vp and down
 So euene wiȝ out variacioun 2588
 þer nere suche company[e]s tweye
 ffor þer nas noon so wise þat coude seie
 That eny had of oþer auauntage
 Of worthynesse ne of estate ne age 2592
 So euen were þei chosen forto gesse
 And in to ringges faire þei hem dresse
 Whan þat her names redde were euerchoñ
 þat in her nombre gile were þer nōn 2596
 Tho were þe gates shette and cried was loude
 Do now ȝoure devoire yonge knyȝtes proude
 The herawdes left her priking vp and down
 Now ryngen trompes loude and claryoun 2600
 þer is no more to seyn [but] est and west
 In goon þe sharpe speres ful sadly into þarest
 In goþ þe sharpe spere into þe side
 þere seen men who can iuste *and* who can ride 2604
 þere shyueren shaftes vpon sheeldes pikke
 He fileth þorgh þe herte sponne þe prikke

Vp springen speres xxⁱⁱ fote on hight
 Out goon þe swerdes as þe siluer white 2608
 þe helmes þei to-hewen and to-shrede
 Out brestþ þe blode with sterne stremes rede
 Wiþ myzty maces þe bones þei to-brest
 And þorgh þe thikkeſt of þe throng gan threst 2612
 þere stomblen stedes stronge and doun goñ alle
 He rolleþ vnder fote as doþ a balle
 He foyneþ on his foote wiþ his tronchoun
 And he hym hurteþ wiþ his hors a-down 2616
 He þorgh þe body is born and siþ is take
 Maugre his hede and brouzt vnto þe stake
 As forward was [riȝt] þer he most abide [leaf 87] 2620
 Anoþer lad is on þat oþere side
 And somtyme doþ hem theseus forto rest
 Hem to refreshe and drink[e] ȝif hem lest
 fful of[te] a day han piſe thybeanes two
 To-gidere mette and wrouȝt eche oþer woo 2624
 Vnhorsed haþ eche oþere of hem twey
 þer was no tigre in vale of Galgopleye
 Whan hir whelpe is stole whan it is lite
 So cruel on þe hunte as is Arcite 2628
 ffor Ielous hert vpon þis Palamon
 Ne in Belmerie þer is so felle a lion
 þat hunted is or for his hunger wode
 Ne of his pray desireþ so þe bloode 2632
 As Palamon to selee his foo Arcite
 þe Ielous strokes on her helmes bite
 Out renneþ blood of boþ her sides rede
 Somtyme an ende þer is on euery dede 2636
 ffor or þe sonne vnto þe reste went
 þe Stronge king Emetrius gan hent
 This Palamon as he fauȝt wiþ Arcite
 And made his swerde depe in his flesshe bite 2640
 And by [the] force of xxⁱⁱ is he take
 Vnȝolden and drowen to þe stake

And in þe Rescowe of þis Palamon
 The stronge king' ligurge is born down 2644
 And kinge Emetrius for al his grete strength
 Is born out' of his sadel his swerdes length
 So hit' hym Palamon er he were take
 But' al for nouȝt' he was brouȝt' to þe stake 2648
 His hardy herte may hym helpe nouȝt'
 He mote abide whan þat' he is ykauȝt'
 By force and eke by composicion
 Who soroweþ now but' woful Palamon 2652
 They mote no more go ageyn to fiȝt'
 And whan þat' he had sene þat' siȝt'
 He cried Hoo no more for it' is doñ [leaf 87, back]
 Ne noon shal lenger to his felawe goñ 2656
 I wil be trewe Iuge and not' partie
 Arcite of Thebes shal haue Emelye
 That' by his fortune hap' hir' faire wonnen
 Anon þer is a vois of puple by-gonne 2660
 ffor Ioie of þis so loude and high wiȝ-alle
 It semed þat' þe listes shulden falle
 What' can nowe faire Venus do aboue
 What' seiþ she now what' doþ þis quene of loue 2664
 But wepeþ so for wanting' of her wille
 Til þat' her teeres in þe listes fille
 She seide I am ashamed doutelees
 Saturnus seide doughter' hold' þi pees 2668
 Mars hap' his wil his knyght' hap' al his bone
 And by myne hede þou shalt' be esed sone
 The trompours wiȝ þe loude mynstralsie
 The harawdes þat' ful loude ȝelle and crye 2672
 Bene in her wele for Ioie of daun arcyte
 But' harkenep me and stinte vois a lite
 Swiche a myracle þer bifelle anōn
 This ferce Arcite hap' of his helme ydoñ 2676
 And on a courcere forto shew his face
 He prikkep endelonge þe large place

Loking vpward vnto Emelye
 And she agein him cast a frendly ye 2680
 ffor women as to speken in comune
 Thei folowen al þe fauour of fortune
 And was al his [in] chere as in his herte
 Out of þe grounde a fyre Infernal sterte 2684
 from Pluto sent. at þe request of Saturne
 ffor which his hors for fere gan to turne
 And lepe a-side and foundred as he lepe
 And or þat Arcyte may taken kepe 2688
 He pight him on þe pomel of his heued
 þat in þe place he laie as he were dede
 His brest to-broste wip his sadel bowe [leaf 38]
 As blak he lay as eny cole or crowe 2692
 So was þe blood yronne in his face
 Anon he was [y]brouzt out of þe place
 Wip herte sore vnto Theseus palays
 þo was he coruen out of his harnays 2696
 And in a bedde ybrouzt ful faire *and* blyue
 ffor he was ȝit in memorie *and* on lyue
 And alway crying after emelie
 Duke Theseus wip al his companye 2700
 Is comen home to Athenes Cite
 With alle blisse and grete solempnite
 Al be it þat þis auenture is falle
 He wolde not discomforte[n] hem alle 2704
 Men seide eke þat Arcide shuld not dye
 He shal be heled of his maladye
 And of anoþer þinge þei were as fayne
 þat of hem alle þer nas no man slayne 2708
 Al were þei sore ybete and namely on
 þat wip a spere was þrelled þe brest boi
 Two oþer woundes and two broken armes
 Somme had salue and some had charmes 2712
 ffermacies of erbes and eke saue
 þei dronken for þei wold her lyues haue

ffor which þis noble duke as he wel can
 Conforteþ and honoureþ euery man 2716
 And made Reuel al þe longe nyȝt
 Vnto þe straunge lordes as it was riȝt
 Ne þere was holde no discomforture
 [.] 2720
 *no gap in the MS.*
 ffor fallinge is by an aventure
 Ne to be lad by force vnto a stake
 Vnȝolden and wiþ xxⁱⁱ knyȝtes take 2724
 A persone alon wiþ oute moo
 And haried forþ by arme fote *and* too
 And eke his stede dryven forþ *with* staues
 With fote men boþ ȝemen *and* [eke] knaues 2728
 It was aretted him no vilanye [leaf 28, back]
 þer may no man clepe[n] it cowardye
 ffor whiche a-non duke Theseus lete crye
 To stynten al rancour and [al] envie 2733
 Gree þei as wel of on side as of oþer [MS. þei "Gree."]
 And eiper side ylike as oþeres broþer
 And ȝaf hem ȝiftes after her degre
 And fulli heelde a feeste daies þree 2736
 And conueyed þe kingges worþely
 Out of his tounne a Iourne largely
 And home went euery man þe riȝt[e] way
 þer was no more but fare wel & haue good day 2740
 ¶ Of þis bataille I wil no more endite
 But speke of Palamon *and* of Arcyte
 Swelleþ þe brest of Arcyte and þe sore
 Encreseþ at his herte more *and* more 2744
 The clotered blood for eny leche craft
 Corrumpeþ and is in his body laft
 þat neiþer veyn[e] blood ne ventowsinge
 Ne drinke of herbes may be [him] helpinga 2748
 By vertue expulsif or anymaff
 ffro þilk[e] vertu cleped naturafl

Ne may þe venyme voide ne expelle
 The pipes of his longges gan to swell 2752
 And euery lacert in his hert adoun
 Is shent wip venyme *and* corrupcioun
 Hym Geyneþ neiper forto gete his lif
 Vomyte vpward ne dounward laxatif 2756
 Al is to-brosten thilk[e] regiõn
 Nature hap no *dominaciõ*
 And certainly þer nature wil not wirche
 ffarewel Phisik go bere þe man to chirche 2760
 This is aft and some þat Arcita most die
 ffor which he sendeþ after Emelie
 And Palamon his coeyne dere
 þan seide he þus as 3e shal after here 2764
 Not may my woful spirite in myn hert
 [leaf 39]
 Declare a poynt of my sorowes smert
 To 3ou my lady þat I loue moste
 But I biqueth þe seruise of my gooste 2768
 To 3ou abouen euery creature
 Sip þat my lif[e] may no lenger dure
 Allas þe woo allas þe peynes stronge
 þat I for 3ou haue suffred and so longe 2772
 Alas þe depe alas myn Emelie
 Alas departinge of our companye
 Alas my hertes quene alas my lief wif
 Myn hertes lady endere of my lif 2776
 What is þe world what axen men to haue
 Now wip his loue now in his cold[e] graue
 Allone wip oute[n] eny companye
 ffare wel my foo fare wel myn Emely 2780
 And soft take me in 3oure [armes] twey
 ffor loue of god herken þat I seie
 I haue here wip my Cosyn Palamon
 Had strif and rancoure mony day agoñ 2784
 ffor loue of 3ou and for my Ielousie
 And Iubiter so wis my soule gye

To spoken of a seruaunt *propely*
 Wip circumstaunces al trewly 2788
 þat is to seyn trouþ. honure *and* kny3thede
 Wisdom humblesse estat *and* high kynrede
 ffredom and al þat longeþ to þat art
 So Iubiter haue on my soule part 2792
 As in þis worlde riȝt now know I none
 So worþi to be biloued as Palamon
 þat serueþ ȝou and wil do. al his liff
 And if þat ȝe shal euer bene a wif 2796
 fforsete not Palamon þe gentile man
 And wip þat worde his speche faile bygan
 ffor from his fete vnto þe hert was come
 þe colde of deþ þat had him ouercome 2800
 And ȝit more ouer for in his armes twoo [leaf 80, back]
 þe v[j]tal strengþ is lost and al ago
 Only þe intellecte wip oute more
 þat dwelled in his herte sik *and* sore 2804
 Gan failen whan þe herte felte detþ
 Dusken his eyen two *and* faileþ breþe
 But on his lady ȝit cast he his ye
 His laste word was mercy Emelye 2808
 His spirit chaunged hens and went[e] þere
 As I cam neuere I can not telle where
 Therfor I stint I am no dyvynystre
 Of soules fynde I not in þis registers 2812
 Ne me ne list þilk opynyons to telle
 Of hem þouȝe þat þei writen wher þei dwelle
 Arcite is colde þat mars his soule gye
 Now wil I speken forþ of emely 2816
 Shrite Emely an halowen Palamon
 And Theseus his suster toke anōn
 Swownyng and bar hir fro his cours away
 What helpeþ it vs to tarien forþ þe day 2820
 To tellen howe she wepte boþ euen *and* morowe
 ffor in suche caas wommen han suche sorowe

Whan þat her husbondes bene fro hem a-goo
 [That] ffor þe more parte þei sorowen soo 2824
 Or ellis fallen in such Maladie
 þat at þe laste certeynly þei die
 Infinite harmes bene *and* eke þe teeres
 Of olde folk and folk of tendere ȝeres 2828
 In all þe toun for deth of þis Thebean
 ffor him þer wepen boþ[e] child *and* man
 So grete weping was þer [non] certayn
 Whan Ector was [y]brouȝt *and* fressh ysclayn 2832
 To Troy allas þe pite þat was þere
 Cracching of chekes renting eke of here
 Whi woldest þou be dede þise wommen crie
 And haddest gold ynoghe and emelye 2836
 No man myght glade Theseus
 Sauyng his olde fadere Egeus
 That knewe þis worldes transmutacioun
 As he had sene it vp and doūn 2840
 Ioie after woo and woo after gladnesse
 And shewep hem ensample and liknesse
 Riȝt as þer dyed neuer man quod he
 þat he ne lyued in erþe in som degre 2844
 Riȝt so ther lyued neuere man he seide
 In al þis world þat somtyme he ne deyed
 þis world is nouȝt but a þorȝht fare ful of woo
 And we bene pilgrymes passing to and froo 2848
 Dep is an ende of euery worldly sore
 And ouer al þis ȝit seide he mychel more
 To þis effecte ful wisely to enhorte
 þe puple þat þei . hem shul recomforte 2852
 Duke Theseus wiþ al his biay Cure
 Tastep nowe where þat þe sepulture
 Of good Arcite may best ymaked be
 And eke most honorable of degre 2856
 And atte last he toke conclusiō
 That þer as first Arcite and Palamon

Had for loue þe bataile hem bitwene
 þat in þe self groue swete and grene 2860
 þer as he had his Amerous desires
 His compleynt and for loue his hote fires
 He wold[e] make a fire in which þe office
 ffuneral he myȝt hem aft complice 2864
 He lete anon comaunde to hakke *and* hewe
 þe okes olde and leye hem on a rewe
 In colpons wel araied forto brenne
 His Officers with swift[e] fote thei renne 2868
 And riȝt anon at his comaundement
 And aftere Theseus hap ysent
 Aftere a beer and it al ouer spradde
 Wiþ cloþ of gold the ricchest þat he hadde 2872
 And of þe same sute he cloþer Arcite [leaf 40, back]
 Vpon his hondes [were] his gloues white
 Eke on his hede a croune of laurere grene
 And in his hand a swerde ful briȝt *and* kene 2876
 He laide him bare þe visage vnto þe bere
 Ther wiþ he wepte þat pite was to here
 And for þe puple shulde sene hym aft
 Whan it was daie he brouȝt hym to þe haȝt 2880
 þat rorep of þe crie and of þe sorowe sone
 þoo gan þis woful Thebean Palamón
 Wiþ flotery berd and ruggy asshy heres
 In cloþes blake dropped al wiþ teeres 2884
 And passing oþer of weping Emelie
 She rewfullest of al þe companye
 In as moche as þe seruyse shuld be
 þe more noble and riche in his degre 2888
 Duke Theseus lete forþ þe stedes bringe
 That trapped were in steel al glitteringe
 And keuered wiþ þe armes of Dame Arcite [or Daine]
 Vpon þise stedes grete and white 2892
 Ther stoden folk of which oon bare his sheelde
 Anoper his spere vpon his hondes helde

The iij. bare wiþ him bowe turkeys
 Of brent gold was þe caas *and* eke þe harneys 2896
 And riden forþ a paas wiþ sory chere
 Towardes þe groue as ȝe shul after here
 The noblest of þe Grekes þat þer were
 Vpon her shulders cariden þe bere 2900
 Wiþ sclak[e] paas and yen rede *and* wete
 þorgh out þe Cite by þe maister strete
 þat sprad was al wiþ blak and wonder hye
 Riȝt of þe same is þe strete ywrie 2904
 Vpon þe Riȝt honde went olde Egeus
 And on þat oper side Duke Theseus
 Wiþ vesselles in her hondes of gold ful fyne
 Al ful of hony. mylk. [and] blood. *and* wyne 2908
 Eke Palamon with ful grete companye [leaf 41]
 And aftere þat come wooful Emelie
 Wiþ fire in hand as was þat time þe Gyse
 To do þe office of funeral seruise 2912
 High labour / and ful grete apparaillinge
 Was at þe seruyse and at þe fire makinge
 That wiþ his grene top þe heuene raught
 And xxⁱⁱ fadmes in brede þe armes raught 2916
 This is to seine þe bowes were so brode
 Of strawe first þer was leide mony a lode
 But howe þe fire was maked vp[on] hiȝt
 Ne eke þe names howe þe trees hiȝt 2920
 As Oke. fir. birch. asp. alder. Elme. popelere.
 Wilowe. holme. playn. ass. box. Chesteyn. bynd. laure.
 Mapel. þorne. becche. ewe. hasell. wypultre.
 How þei were felled shal not be tolde for me 2924
 Ne howe þe goddes ronnen vp *and* down
 Disherites of her habitacioun
 In whiche þei wonden in rest *and* pees
 Nymphes. ffawnes *and* amadries 2928
 Ne howe þe beestes ne þe briddes alle
 ffedden for fere whan þei were falle

Ne howe þe grounde agast was of þe lizt
 That was not wonte to se þe sonne bryt 2932
 Ne how þe fire was couched first wip stre
 And þan wip drie stikkes clouen a þree
 And þan wip grene wode and spicerie
 And þan wip clope of gold and [wip] perrie 2936
 And Garlondes honging wip mony a floure
 The myrr' pensence with swete odours
 Ne how arcite lay among al þis
 Ne what richesse aboute his body is 2940
 Ne howe Emely as was þe Gise
 Put in þe fire of funeral seruise
 Ne howe she swowned whan made was þe fire
 Ne what she spak ne what was her desire 2944
 Ne what Ielous men in þe fire cast [leaf 41, back]
 Whan þat þe fire was grete and brente fast
 Nowe howe some cast her sheelde *and* some her spere
 And of her vestementes which þei were 2948
 And Coppes ful of mylke and wyne *and* blood
 Into þe fire þat brent as it were wode
 Ne howe þe greges wip an huge route
 Thrise riden al þe fire aboute 2952
 Vpon þe lift honde wip a loude shoutinge
 And thries wip her speres clateringe
 And thries how þe ladise gan crie
 Ne howe þat lad was homward Emely 2956
 Ne how arcyte is brent in asschen colde
 Ne how þe liche-wake was [y]holde
 Al þat nyght ne howe þe Grekes pleye
 The wake-plaies kepe I not to seie 2960
 Who wrastelep best naked *with* oile anynt
 Ne who [that] bare him best in no dysioynt
 I wil not tellen aft howe þei [ben] gone
 Home til Athenes whan þe play is done 2964
 But shortely to þe point þan wil I wende
 And make[n] of my longe tale an ende

By processe and by length of zeres
 Al stinte is þe mournyng and þe teeres 2968
 Of Greges by oon general assent
 Than semed me þer was a parlement
 At Athenes vpon a certeyn point *and caas*
 And amonge pointes [ther] yspoken waas 2972
 To haue wip certeyn contrees alliance
 And haue of Thebeanes fully obeisaunce
 ffor which this noble thesesus anōn
 Lete sende[n] after gentile Palamon 2976
 Vnwist of him what was þe cause *and whi*
 But in his blake clopes sorowfully
 He come at his comaundement in hie
 Tho sente Theseus for Emelye 2980
 Whan þat þei were sette and huyst was al þe place (leaf 42)
 And Theseus abiden haþ þe space
 Or eny worde come fro his wise brest
 His yen sette he þer hym lest 2984
 And such a sad visage he sighed stille
 And after þat riȝt þus he seide his wille
 The firste mouer of þe cause aboue
 Whan he first made þe faire cheyn of loue 2988
 Gret was þe effecte and high was his entent
 Wel wist he why and what þerof he ment
 ffor wip þat faire cheyne of loue he bonde
 The fuyre. þe. Eire þe water and þe londe 2992
 In certeyn boondes þat þei may not flee
 That same prince and þat same mouer quod he
 Haþ stablessed in þis wrecched world adoun
 Certeyn days and Dominacioun 2996
 To al þat is engendred in þis place
 Ouer þe whiche day þei may not pace
 Al mowe þei ȝit þe daies abregge 3000
 Ther nys noon autorite to legge
 ffor it is proued by experience
 But that me lust declare my sentence

Than may men by þis order discerne
 That þilk mouer stable is and eterne 3004
 Wel may men knowe but it be a fool
 That euery part darrayueth fro his hool
 ffor nature haþ not taken his bygynnyng
 Of no partie or of catel of no þing 3008
 But oon þinge þat þerfit is and stable
 Descendinge so til it be corruptable
 And þerfore of his wise purueaunce
 He haþ so wel bysette his ordynaunce 3012
 þat specife of þingges and progression
 Shullen endure by successiones
 And not eterne wiþ oute eny lye
 This maist þou vnderstonð and see atte ye 3016
 Lo the Oke þat hath so longe a norshinge [leaf 43, back]
 ffor þe tyme þat it bygynneþ furst to springe
 And haþ so longe a lif as ȝe may se
 ȝit at þe laste waasted is þe tree 3020
 Considereþ eke howe þat þe herde stone
 Vnder our fete on which we treden and gone
 ȝit .ȝ. wastep it as it lith in þe way
 þe Brode Ryuer somtyme wexep dray 3024
 þe grete townes so wide wane and wende
 Than þe see þat al þis þing haþ ende
 And man and womman so we wil also
 That nedep in oon of þe teermes twoo 3028
 þat is to sayn in youþe or ellis in age
 He mote be dede þe kinge as wel as page
 Some in his bed some in þe depe see
 Some in þe large felde as ȝe may see 3032
 Ther helpeþ nouȝt al goþ þat ilk waye
 þan may I seie þat al þis þing wil deye
 What makeþ þis but Iubiter þe king
 þat is prince and cause of al þing 3036
 Couerting al vnto his propre wille
 ffrom which it is darreyude soþ to telle

And here agayne no creature on lyue
 Of no degre availleþ forto stryue 3040
 Than is it wisdome as þenkeþ me
 To make vertue of necessite
 And take it wel þat we may not eschew
 And namely þat. þat to vs all is dwe 3044
 And who so gruccheþ ouzt he doþ foly
 And rebeþ is to him þat al may gye
 And certeynly a man haþ most honour
 To dyen in his excellence and flour 3048
 Whan he is siker of his good name
 þan haþ he done his frende ne hym no shame
 And gladder auzt / his frende . ben of his deth
 Whan wiþ honour yzolden is vp þe breeth 3052
 Than whan his name appalled is for age
 ffor al forȝeten is his vassalage
 Than is þe best as for a worþi fame
 To dyen whan he is best of name 3056
 The Contrarie of al þis is wilfulnesse
 Why grucche we whi haue we heuynesse
 That goode Arcite of Chyualre þe flour
 Departed is wiþ dwete and wiþ honour 3060
 Out of þe foule prison of þis liff
 Whi grucchen here his cosyn and his wiff
 Of his welfare þat loueþ hem so wel
 Can he hem þonk. nay god wote neuer a deff 3064
 That boþ his soule and eke hem [self] offende
 And ȝit þei mowe not hir lustes amende
 What may conclude of þis longe serie
 But after woo I rede vs be merie 3068
 And þanken Iubiter of al his grace
 And or we departen from þis place
 I rede we made of sorowes twoo
 Oo parfite Ioie lasting euermoo 3072
 And loke nowe wher most sorowe is her Inne
 þer at wil I furst bygynne

Suster quod he þis is my ful assent'
 Wiþ all thaues here of my parlement' 3076
 That' Gentile Palamon þour owne knyght'
 þat' serueþ þou wiþ wille herte and myght'
 And euer haþ do siþen þe first' hym knewe
 þat' þe shal of þoure grace vpon hym rewe 3080
 And taken [hym] for husbonde and for lord'
 Lene me þoure honde for þis is our accord'
 Lete se nowe of þoure womanly pite
 He is a kingges broþer sone parde 3084
 And þouþe he be a poor bachiler'
 Siþ he haþ serued þou so mony a þere
 And had for þou so grete aduersite
 It' most' be considered leueþ me 3088
 ffor gentel Mercy ouzt' to passen riȝt' [leaf 43, back]
 Than seide he þus to Palamon þe knyȝt'
 I trowe þere nede litel sermonyng
 To make þou assente to þis þinge 3092
 Commeþ nere and takeþ þoure lady by þe honde
 Bytwix hem two was made anon þe bonde
 þat' hiȝte Matrimoyne or mariage
 By all þe counsaile and [the] baronage 3096
 And þus wiþ al[le] blisse and melodye
 Haþ Palamon ywedded Emelye
 And god þat al þis world' haþ wrouȝt'
 Send hym his loue þat' haþ it' dere bouȝt' 3100
 ffor nowe is Palamon in al[le] wele
 Lyuyng in al blisse in ricches and in hele
 And Emely him loueþ so tenderly
 And he hir' serueþ so gently 3104
 Was neuer' no worde hem bitwene
 Of Ielousie or eny oþer tene
 Thus endeþ þe tale of Palamon and Emelye
 And god saue al þis faire companye 3108

¶ Here endeþ þe knyghtes tale

& here bygonne

þe Prologe of þe Milleres tale

¶ The Prologe

Whan þat þe knyght had þus his tale told
In al the companye nas þer 3onge ne olde
þat he ne seide it was a noble storie

And worpi to be drawe in memorie 3112

And namely the gentels euerchoñ

Our hooste loughe and swore so mot I goñ

This goþ a riȝt vnbokeled is þe male

Lat se nowe who shal telle anopere tale 3116

ffor trewly þe game is wel bygonne

Now telleþ 3e sir monke ȝif 3e conne

Somwhat to quyte wiþ þe knyghtes tale

The Miller þat for-dronke was al pale 3120

So þat vnneþes vppon his hors he satte

He wold auaile neiþe hode ne hatte

Ne abide no man for his curtesie [leaf 44]

But in Pilates vois he bygan to crie 3124

And swore by armes blode and bones

I can a noble tale for þe nones

Wiþ þe which I wil now quyte þe knyȝtes tale

Our [hooste] seghe þat he was dronke of ale 3128

And seide abide Robyn leue brother

Somme better man shal telle vs first anoper

Abide and [let] us wirche thriftely

By goddes soule quod he þat wil not I 3132

ffor I wil speke or ellis go my way

Our hooste answerd seye on a deuyl way

Thou arte a fool þi witt is ouercommen

Now harkenep quod þe myllere al and som 3136

¶ But first I make a protestacioun

þat I am dronke I knowe it by my soun

And þefore ȝif I myspeke or say

Wite it þe Ale of suthwerk I ȝou pray 3140

for I will telle a legend and a liff
 Bop of a Carpenter and [of] his wiff
 How þat a clerke reft the wriȝtes cappe
 The reue answerd and seide stint of þi clappe 3144
 Lat be þi lewde drunken harlotrie
 It is a synne and eke a grete folye
 To appeyren eny man or hym diffame
 And eke to bringe wives in such name 3148
 þow maist ynowe of oþer þingges seine
 þis drunken Millere spake ful sone ageyn
 And seide leue broþer oswalde
 Who hap no wif. is no kukwold 3152
 But I seie not þerfor þat þou art oon
 Ther ben ful good[e] wyues mony on
 [.
 no gap in the MS.] 3156
 Whi art þou angry wiþ my tale now
 I haue a wiff parde as wel as þou/
 3it nolde I for þe oxen in my plogh
 Take vpon me more þan ynogh 3160
 As demen of my seluen þat I were oone (last 44, back)
 I wil bylieue þat þat I am none
 An husbond shuld not be inquesitif
 Of goddes priuete ne of his wif 3164
 So he may finde goddes foyson þere
 Of þe remenant nedep nat to enquire
 What shuld I more seie but þe Millere
 He nyl his wordes for no man for-bere 3168
 But tolde his Chirles tale in his manere
 Me forþenkep þat I shal reherce it here
 And þerfore euery gentil wigt I preie
 Demep not for goddes loue þat I seie 3172
 Of euel entent but for I mote reherce
 Her tales alle be þei better or wors/
 Or ellis fals somen of my matere
 And þerfore who list it not here 3176

Torne ouer þe lief and chese anoper tale
 ffor 3e shul fynde ynow grete *and* smale
 Of historial þinge þat toucheþ gentilnesse
 And eke moralite and holynesse 3180
 Blame not me 3if þat ye chese amys
 The Millere is a cheerle 3e knowe wel þis
 So was the Reue eke and other moo
 And harlotrie þei told þoþ twoo 3184
 Avise 3ou and put me out of blame
 And eke men shal not make earnest of game
 Thus endeþ þe prologe.

[*No break in the MS.*]

And here by-

gynnep þe Millers Tale.

¶ Narracio

Whilom þer was dwelling in Oxenford
 A riche gnof þat gestes helde to bord 3188
 And of his craft he was a Carpenter
 Wip him þer was dwelling a pore scolere
 Had lerned arte but al his fantasie
 Was turned forto lere Astrologie 3192
 And cowde a certeyn of conclusions
 To demen by interrogaciōis.
 3if þat men axed him incerteyn houres [leaf 45]
 Whan þat men shuld haue drouȝte of shoures 3196
 Or 3if men axed him what shuld byfalle
 Of euery þing I may not rekne alle
 This tale was cleped hende Nicholas
 Of derne loue and priue solas 3200
 And perto he was sclegh and ful priue
 And liche to a maiden meke to see
 A chambre had he in þat ostelrie
 Allone wip-out eny companye 3204
 fful fetist dight wip herbes swote
 And he hym self as swete as is þe rote
 Of licorace or ony sytuale
 His almagist and bokes grete and smale 3208
 His aster-laboure longinge for his arte
 His awgryme stones layen ful faire aparte
 On shelues couched at his beddes heuede
 His presse ykeuened wip a falding rede 3212
 And al aboue þer lay a gay sautrie
 On which he made on nyghtes melodye
 So swetely þat al þe chambre ronge
 And angelus ad virginem he songe 3216
 And after þat he songe þe kingges note
 fful ofte blessed was his mery prote

And þus þe swete Clerk' his tyme spante
 Aftere his frendes fynding' and his rente 3220
 This Carpenterere had wedded newe a wiff
 Which þat' he loued more þan his liff
 Of xviij. ȝere she was of age
 Ielous he was and kept' hir' streit' in cage 3224
 ffor she was wily and yonge and he was olde
 And demed hym self to be like a Cukwolde
 He knewe not' Caton for his wit' is rude
 þat' bad man shuld' wedde his similitude 3228
 Men shul wedde aftere her estate
 ffor ȝouþe and elde is oft' at debate
 But sith he was fallen in þe snare [leaf 45, back]
 He most' endure as oþer folk his care 3232
 ffair was þis yonge wif and þer wip' aff
 As eny weself her body gent' and small
 A seynt' she wered barred al of silk
 A barmecloþe as white as morn[e] mylk' 3236
 Vpon her lendes ful of mony a gore
 White was hir smok' and enbrauded al byfore
 And eke be-hinde on her coler' aboute
 Of Cole-blak silk' with-Inne and eke wip'-oute 3240
 The tapes of hir' white volipere
 Were of þe same sute of hir colere
 Hir' Philett brode of silk and sette ful hie
 And sikerly she had a lykerous ye 3244
 fful smal ypullled were her browes twoo/
 And þoo were bent' and blake as eny sloo/
 She was more blisful on to se
 þan is þe newe Perient' tree 3248
 And softer þan þe wolff is of eiper'
 And by hir' girdel henge a purs of leder'
 Tasshed wip' silk and perled with latoun
 In al þis worlde to seke vp and down 3252
 Ther nys no man so wise þat' couþe þenche
 So gay a popelot' or [such] a wenche

ful bryȝt was the shynnyng of her hwe
 Than in þe toure þe noble forged newe 3256
 But of her songe it was as loude *and* ȝerne
 As eny swalowe sittinge on a beerne
 þerto she couþe skippe and make a game
 As eny kid or calf folowing his dame 3260
 Her mouþe was swete as braket or meth
 Or horde of apples leide in hay or heth
 Wynsinge she was as is a Ioly colt
 Longe as a mast and vpward as a bolt 3264
 A broche she bare on her loue coler
 As brode as is þe boos of a bokelere
 Her shoes were laised on her legges hie [leaf 46]
 She was a Primerost a Pigges nye 3268
 ffor eny lorde to ligen in his bedde
 Or ȝit for eny [good] ȝeman to wedde
 Now sir and eft sir. and so bifelle þe caas
 That on a day þis heende Nicholas / 3272
 ffelle wiþ þis yonge wif forto rage *and* play
 While pat her husbonde was at osenay
 As clerkes bene ful subtile and ful queynte
 And prively he kauȝt hur by þe queynte 3276
 And seide ywis but I haue my wille
 ffor deerne loue of þe lemman I spille
 And helde hure fast by þe haunche bonys
 And seide lemman my wiȝt at onys 3280
 Or I wil die as god me saue
 And she spronge as a colt in traue
 And wiþ her hede sche wried fast away
 She saide I wil not kisse þe by my fay 3284
 Wy labbe quod she latt be Nicholas
 Or I wil crie out harowe *and* alas
 Do way ȝoure hondes for ȝour curtesie
 This Nicholas gan mercy forto crie 3288
 And spake so faire *and* profred him ful fast
 pat she her loue graunted hym atte last

And swoor hir' ooþe by seint' Thamas of kent
 That she wolde bene at his comaundement 3292
 Whan þat she may hir' laizere wel aspie
 Myn husbonde is so ful of Ielousie
 þat but 3e waite wele *and* by prive
 I woote riȝt wel I ne am but' dede quod she 3296
 3e mote be ful deerne as in þis caas
 Nay þerof care 3ou not' quod Nicholaas
 A Clerk has likerly bysette his while
 But 3if he couþe a carpenter begile 3300
 And þus þei acorded and sworne
 To awaite a tyme as I haue seide biforȝ
 Whan Nicholas had' don þus euery dele [leaf 46, back]
 And twakked her aboute þe landes wella 3304
 He kisseþ her swete and takeþ his sautrie
 And pleieþ fast' and makeþ melodye
 þan fille it þus þat to þe parissȝ chirche
 Cristes werkes for to wirche 3308
 This good wif went' vpon an halyday
 Hir' forhede shoon as briȝt' as eny day
 So was it' wasshe whan she left' her werk'
 Now was þere of þe church a parissȝ clerk 3312
 þe which was cleped absalon
 Crulle was his heer' and as þe golde shone
 And strouted as [a] fanne large *and* brode
 fful streite and euene laie his Ioly shode 3316
 His rudde was rede his eyen grey as goos
 Wip Powles wyndowes corven in his shoos
 In hosen rede he wente fetisly
 I-clad he was ful smal and proprely 3320
 Al in a kirtel of light' wagett
 fful faire and pikke ben þe poyntes sette
 And þer-vpon he had [a] gay surplise
 As white as is þe blossom on [the] rise 3324
 A mery child' he was so god me saue
 Wel coude he late blood [and] clippe and shaue

And make a chartere of londe or a quytance
 In xxⁱⁱ maners coude he trippe *and* daunce 3328
 After the scole of Oxenforde poo
 And wip his legges casten to and froo
 And pleyen songes on a small rybibe
 Some he songe a loude quynybe 3332
 As as wel coude he pley on a gytern
 In al þe townes nas brewhous ne tauern
 þat he ne viset' wip his solas
 þer eny gailerd' tapster' was 3336
 But' soth to sayn he was somdele squeymous
 Of fartinge *and* of speche daungerous
 This Absolon þat' was Ioly *and* gay [leaf 47]
 Gop wip a sensure on þe sonday 3340
 Sensinge þe wyues of þe parissch fast'
 And mony a louely loke on hem he cast'
 And namely on þe Carpenters wiff
 To loke on hyr' him þouȝt' a mery liff 3344
 She was so propre . swete . *and* likerous
 I dar wel say and she had be a mous
 And he a Catt' he wold' hire hent' anōn
 This parissch clerk' þis Ioly absolon 3348
 Hap in his herte such a loue longynge
 That' of no wiff toke he non offringe
 For curtesie he seide he wolde none
 The mone whan it' was nyȝt' bryȝt' shone 3352
 And absolon his giteren hap [i]take
 For paramours he þouȝte forto wake
 And forþe he gop Ielous and ameraus
 Til he come to þe Carpenter[e]s hous 3356
 A litel aftere þe Cok' had ycrowe
 And dressed hym vnder a shette wyndowe
 That' was vpon þe Carpenter[e]s walle
 He singeþ in his vois gentile *and* smalle 3360
 Now dere lady ȝif þi wil be
 I prei ȝou þat' ȝe wil rewe on me

Ful wel according to his giternyng
 This Carpenter a-woke and herd hym singe 3364
 And spake vnto his wif and seide anon
 What alison herest pou not Absolon
 þat chaunteþ þus vndere our boures wait
 And she answerd her husbond þer wip all 3368
 3is god wote Iohn I here it euery dele
 þis passeþ forþ what wil 3e than but wele
 ffor day to day þis Ioly absolon
 So woweþ hire þat hym was woo-bygon 3372
 He wakeþ al þe nyȝt and al þe day
 He kembeþ his lockes brode and made hem gay
 He woweþ hir by menes and brocage (leaf 47, back)
 And swoor he wolde bene her wne page 3376
 He Syngeþ brokking as a nyghtyngale
 He sent her pyment Methe and spiced ale
 And wafres pyping hote out of þe glede
 And to hir often he profered mede 3380
 ffor some wil be wonnen for riches
 And some for strokes and some for gentilnesse
 Somtyme to shewe his lightnesse and maisstrie
 He pleieth herawdes vpon a scaffold hie 3384
 But what availleþ him as in þis caas
 So loueth she þis hende Nicholaas
 That Absolon may blawe þe buke horn
 He ne had for his labour but a scorn 3388
 And þus she makeþ absolon her Ape
 Al his eernest turneþ but to a lape
 ffor soþe þis prouerbe it is no lye
 Men seien þus alway þe nyȝte slie 3392
 Makeþ þe feer loue to be loth
 ffor þou 3e þat absolon be wode or wroth
 By cause þat he fer was from her sigt
 This Nȝte Nicholas stode in his list 3396
 Nowe bere 3ou wel thou hende Nicholas/
 ffor absolon may waille and singe allas

And so by-felle it on a Saturday
 This Carpentere was gone to Osnay 3400
 And hende Nicholas and Alison
 Accorded were to þis conclusiō
 þat Nicholas shal shapen hym a wile
 This sely Ielous husbonde to begile 3404
 And if so be þe game went a rīȝt
 She shulde slepe in his arme al þat nyȝt
 For þis [was] his desire and hers also
 And rīȝt anon wip-oute wordes moo/ 3408
 This Nicholas no lenger wold tarie
 But dop ful softe into his chamber carie
 Both mete and drinke for a daye or tweye [leaf 48]
 And to hir husbonde bad hir for to seie 3412
 If þat he asked after Nicholas
 She shulde seie she nyst not wher he was
 Of al þat day she see hym not wip ye
 She trowed þat he was in maladye 3416
 ffor no crie her maide can calle
 He nolde answepe for nouȝt that may bifalle
 This passeþ forþ al þe Saturday
 That Nicholas stille in his bed lay 3420
 And ete and slepte and [dede] what hym lest
 Til sonday þat þe sonne goþ to rest
 This sely Carpenter hap grete mervaille
 Of Nicholas or what þing myȝt hym aile 3424
 And saide I am a-drad by seynt Thomas
 It stondeth not a-rīȝt wip Nicholas
 God shilde þat he deyed sodenily
 This world is now ful tikil sikerly 3428
 I seghe to-day a coors born to chirche
 That now on monday I segȝ fast wirche
 Go vp quod he to his knaue anōȝ
 Clepe at his door or knokke wip a stoȝ 3432
 Loke howe it is and telle me boldely
 þis knaue went him vp ful sturdely

And at the Chamber door while þat he stode
 He cried an knocked as he were wode 3436
 What howe what do ȝe maister Nicholay
 Howe may ȝe sclopen al þis longe day
 But al for nouȝt he herd neuer a word
 An hool he foonde ful lowe vnder a bord 3440
 Ther as þe Catt was wonte forto crepe
 And at þe hole he loked in ful depe
 And atte last he had of him a sirt
 þis Nicholas satte euere gaping vp riȝt 3444
 As he had kiked on þe newe moone
 And doune he goȝ and told his maister sone
 In what araie he seȝh þat ilke man (leaf 48, back)
 This carpentere to blissen hym by-gan 3448
 And seide helpe vs seint ffredeswyde
 A man wote litel what shal hym betide
 This man is fallen wiȝ his astronomye
 In some woodnesse or in some Agonye 3452
 I pouȝt wel howe it shuld be
 Men shuld not knowe of goddis priuete
 ȝe blessed be alway þe lewde man
 þat nouȝt but only his bileue can 3456
 So ferde anoper clerk with astronomye
 He walked into þe feeldes for to prie
 Vpon þe sterres to wit what shal by-falle
 Til he was in a Marle pitte yfalle 3460
 He seighe nouȝt but yit by seint Thomas
 Me rueȝ soor hende Nicholas
 He schal be rated of his stodyng
 If þat I may by Ihesu¹ heuene knyge [1 MS the] 3464
 Gete me a staf þat I may vnderspore
 While þat þou Robyn heuest vp þe dore
 He shal out of his stodyng as I gesse
 And to þe Chamber dore he gan hym dresse 3468
 His knaue was a stronge Carle for þe nones
 And by þe haspe he haue it vp at ones

Into þe floor þe door fille anon
 This Nicholas sat ay stille as ston 3472
 And euere gaped vpward into þe eire
 þis carpenter wende he were in despeir
 And hent hym by þe shuldres myztely
 And shoke him hard and cried spitously 3476
 What Nicholay what loke adoun
 A-wake and þenk on cristes passiozn
 I crouche þe from evels and fro wiztes
 þer-with þe nyzt spelle he seide anon riztes 3480
 On four halues of the hous aboute
 And on þe thressshold on þe dore withoute
 Ihesu crist and seynt Benedight [leaf 49]
 Blesse þis hous from euery wicked wight 3484
 ffor þe nyghtes verye þe white pater noster
 Where wentestowe. seynt Peters suster
 And atte last þis hende Nicholas
 Gan for to sighe sore and seide allas 3488
 Shal al þe world be loste eftsones nowe
 This Carpentere answerde what seist þowe
 What þenk on god as we doñ þat swynk
 This Nicholas answerde focche me drink 3492
 And aftere I wil speke in private
 Of certeyn þing þat towcheþ þe and me
 I wille telle it noon oþer man cereteyne
 This carpenter goþ down and commeþ ageyne 3496
 And brougt of myghty ale a large quarte
 And whan þat eche of hem had dronke his parte
 þis Nicholas his door fast shette
 And doun þe Carpenter by hym he sette 3500
 And seide Iohn myn hooste lief and dere
 þow shalt vpon þi trouþ swere me heere
 That to no wight þou shalt þis counsell wrey
 ffor it is cristes counsaile þat I sey 3504
 And if þu telle it man þou art forlore
 ffor þis vengeannce þou shalt haue þerfore

þat if þow wrey me þou shalt be wode
 ¶ Nay crist forbede it for his holy blood 3508
 Quod þoo þis sely man I ne am no labbe
 Ne þough I seie it I ne am not lief to gabbe
 Sey what þowe wolt I shal it neuer telle
 To Childe ne wif by hym þat harowed helle 3512
 Nowe Iohn quod Nicholas I wil not lie
 I haue yfounden in myn astrologie
 As I haue loked in þe mone bryt
 þat nowe on monday next a quarter nyȝt 3516
 Shal falle a rayn and þat so wild and wode
 þat half so grete was never noes flode
 This world he saide in lasse þan in an houre [leaf 40, back]
 Shal al be dreint so hidous is þe showre 3520
 Thus shal mankinde drenche and lese her liff
 This Carpenterere answerd allas my wiff
 And shal she drenche allas myn alisoun
 for sorowe of þis he fille al-most adoun 3524
 And seide is no remedye in þis caas
 Wy ȝis for god quod heende Nicholas
 If þow wolte worchen aftere lore and rede
 þowe maist not worchen after þine owne hede 3528
 for þus seith salomon þat was ful trewe
 Worche al by counsaile and þou shalt not rewe
 And if þou worchen wolt by good counsaile
 I vndertake wip-outen mast or saile 3532
 ȝit shal I saue hir and þe and mee
 Hast þou not herd how saued was Noe
 Whan þat our lorde hap warned hym byform
 þat al the world wip water shuld be lorn 3536
 ȝis quod þis Carpenter ful ȝore a-goo
 Hastowe not herde quod Nicholas also
 þe sorowe of Noe wip his felawship
 Or he myȝt gete his wif to ship 3540
 Hym had leuere I dar wel vndertake
 At þilke tyme þan at his weperes blake

þat she had a ship hure self allōn
 And þerfor woostowe what is best to doñ 3544
 Thix axeth hast and of an hastif þinge
 Men may not preche or make taryinge
 Anoon go gete vs fast into þis Inne
 A knedinge trouȝh or ellis a kemelyne 3548
 ffor eche of vs but loke þat þei bene large
 In whiche men mowe swymme as in a barge
 And han her vitailles suffisaunt
 But for a day fye on þe remenaunt 3552
 þe water shal a-slake and goñ a-way
 Aboute pryme vpon þe nexte day
 But Robyne may not wit of þis þi knaue [leaf 50]
 Ne eke þi maide Giff I may not saue 3556
 Axe not why for þouze þou axe me
 I wil not tellen goddes priuete
 It suffiseþ þe but if þi wittes madde
 To haue as grete a grace as Noe hadde 3560
 þi wif shal I wel saue out of doute
 Go nowe þi way and spede þe here aboute
 But whan þou hast for hir and þe and me
 ygeten vs pise kneding treies þre 3564
 þan shalt þou honge hem in þe roof ful hie
 þat no man of oure purueaunce espie
 And whan þou þus hast doñ as I haue seide
 And hast oure vitaille faire in hem y-leide 3568
 And eke an axe to smyte þe cord a two
 Whan þat þe water commeth þat we may goo
 And broke and hole on high vpon the gable
 Vnto þe gardyne ward ouer þe stable 3572
 þat we may frely passen forþ our waye
 Whan þat þe grete shoure is passed awaye
 Than shalt þou swymme as mery I vndertake
 As doþ þe wight duk aftere þe drake 3576
 þan wol I clepe how alisoñ. howe Iohn
 Be mery for þe flood wil passe anon

And þowe wilt seyn heil Maister Nicholay
 Good morowe I see þe wele for it is day 3580
 And þan shal we be lordes al oure lif
 Of alle þe world as Noe and his wif
 But þat of oo þing I warne þe ful riȝt
 Be wel avised on þat ilk[e] nyȝt 3584
 þat we bene entred into þe shippes boord
 þat noon of vs ne speke not a word
 Ne Clepe ne crie but bene in his preire
 ffor it is goddis owe heeste dere 3588
 Thi wif and þou mote honge fer atwynne
 ffor þat bitwix ȝou shal be no synne
 No more in loking þan þer shal in dede [leaf 50, back]
 þis ordinaunce is seide so god þe spede 3592
 To morowe at nyȝt whan men bene all a-slepe
 Into our kneding trowes wil we crepe
 And sitten þer abidinge goddis grace
 Go nowe þi way I haue no lenger space 3596
 To make of þis no lenger sermonyng
 Men seyn þus sende þe wise and say no þinge
 þou art so wise it nededeþ þe not teche
 Go saue our lif and þat I þe biseche 3600
 ¶ This sely Carpenter goþ forþ his way
 fful oft he seide alas and wayleway
 And to his wif he tolde his priuete
 And she was war and knewe it bet þan he 3604
 What al þis queinte cast was for to saye
 But nathelees she feerde as she wold deye
 And saide alas go forþ þi way aȝon
 Helpe vs to scape or we bene dede echoȝ 3608
 I am þi trewe verry wedded wiff
 Go dere spouse and helpe to saue our lif
 Lo swich a grete þing is affection
 Men may dye for ymaginaciȝn 3612
 So depe may impression be take
 This sely Carpenter bygynneþ quake

Hym þenkeþ verrelly þat he may se
 Noe flood come walking as þe See 3616
 To drenchen alison his hony dere
 He wepeth weilleth and maketh sori chere
 He sigheþ wiþ mony a sory swough
 And goop and geteþ hym a knedinge trougħ 3620
 And aftere a Tubbe and a kemelyne
 And prively he sent hem to his Inne
 And henge hem in þe roof in private
 His owne honde he made eke ledders þre 3624
 To clymben by þe ronges and þe stalkes
 Vnto þe tubbes hongyng in þe balkes/
 And hem vitailled boþ[e] trouȝe and tubbe (leaf 51)
 Wiþ brede. wiþ chese wiþ good ale in a Iubbe 3628
 Suffisinge riȝt ynowe as for a day
 But er he had made al þis aray
 He sent his knaue and eke his wenche alsoo
 Vpon his nede to London for to goo 3632
 ¶ And on þe Monday whan it drouȝe to nyȝt
 He shette his door wiþ-outen candel liȝt
 And dressed al þing as it shuld be
 And shortely clumben vp al þre 3636
 þei seiten stille wel a forlonge way
 Now Pater noster Clum seide Nicholay
 And Clum quod Iohn. and clum seide Alison
 This Carpenter seide his devociōn 3640
 And stille he sitte and biddeþ his preier
 Awaitinge on þe reyne if he it here
 The depe sleep for wery bisynesse
 ffile on þis Carpenter riȝt as I gesse 3644
 Aboute Curfewe tyme or litel more
 ffor travaille of his goost he groneþ sore
 But ofte he routed for his hede myslay
 Doun of þe ledder stalkeþ Nicholay 3648
 And Alison ful softe adoune she spedde
 Wiþ-outen wordes moo þei goȝ to bedde

þer as þe Carpenter' is wonte to lye
 þer was þe reuel and þe melodye 3652
 And þus lith alison and Nicholas
 In busynes of myrth *and* of solas
 Til þat þe belle of laudes gan to ryng
 And freres in þe chaunsel gan to singe 3656
 ¶ This Pariss clerk þis amorous absolon
 þat is for loue alway so woo bygon
 Vpon þe Monday was at Oseney
 Wip Company him to disport *and* pley 3660
 And axed vpon a caas a Cloystrere
 fful prively after Iohn þe Carpentere
 And he drowe hym apart out of þe church [leaf 51, back]
 And seide I note I seghe hym here not wirch 3664
 Sip saterday I trowe þat he be went'
 ffor tymbre þer oure abbot hap hym sent'
 ffor he is wonte for tymbre forto goo
 And dwellen at þe graunge a day or twoo 3668
 Or ellis he is at his hous certeyn
 Wher þat he be I can not soply seyn
 This absolon ful Ioly was *and* list'
 And þought' now is tyme to wake al nyght' 3672
 ffor sikerly I segþ hym not stirenge
 Abouten his door sip day bygan to springe
 So mote I thrive I shal atte Cockes crowe
 fful priuely knokken at his wyndowe 3676
 þat stant' ful lowe vpon his bowres walle
 To Alison now wil I tellen alle
 My loue longyng' for þat I shal not mysse
 þat at þe leeste wey I shal hir kisse 3680
 Som manere comfort' shal I haue parfay
 My mouþe hap icched al þis longe day
 þat is a signe of kissing' atte leest
 Al nyght' me met' eek I was at a fest' 3684
 þer-for I wil goo slepe an hour or twey
 And al þe nyght' þan wil I wake *and* pley

Whan þat þe firste cok hap crowe anon
 Vp start þis Ioly loue absolou 3688
 And hym araied gay and poynt devise
 But first he sheweþ greyn *and* licorise
 To smellen swote er he had kempt his here
 Vndere his tunge a trewe loue he bere 3692
 ffor þerby wende he to be gracious
 He roomeþ to the Carpenters hous
 And stille he stant vndere þe shot wyndowe
 Vnto his brest it raught it was so lowe 3696
 And soft he kougheþ wip a semy soune
 What do 3e hony combe swete alisouin
 My faire brid my swete Synamome [leaf 58r]
 A-waikeþ lemman myne *and* spekeþ to me 3700
 fful litel þenken 3e vpon my woo
 þat for 3oure loue I swete as I goo
 No wonder is þou3e that I swelt or swete
 I mourne as doþ þe lombe after þe tete 3704
 I-wis leuman I haue such loue-longyng
 þat like a turtel trewe is my mournyng
 I may not eten no more þan a maide
 Go fro þe wyndowe Iak fool she seide 3708
 So god me spede it wil not be compame
 I loue anoþer and ellis I were to blame
 Wel bet þan þe by Ihesu absolou
 Go forþ þi waie or I wil cast a ston 3712
 And lat me slepe a twenty deuelway
 Alas quod absolou and weyloway
 That trewe loue was euere so enel bysette
 Than kisse me sip it may be no bette 3716
 ffor Ihesus¹ loue and for þe loue of me [MS. Thes]
 Wilt þou þan go þi waie þer-with quod she
 3e Certes lemman quod þis absolou
 þan make þe redy quod she I come anon 3720
 [.
 *no gap in the MS.*]
 This absolou doune sette hym on his knees

And seid I am a lord at alle degrees 3724
 ffor aftere þis I hope þer commeth more
 Lemman þi grace and swete brid þine ore
 The wyndowe she vndop and þat in haste
 Hauē doo quod she come of and spede þe faste 3728
 Lest þat our neigheboures þe espie
 þis absolon gan wipe his mouþ ful drie
 Derk was þe nyght as picch or as þe cole
 And at þe wyndowe out she putt her hole 3732
 And absolon him felle no bette ne wers
 But wiþ his mouþe he kissed her naked ers
 fful sauourly er he was ware of þis
 Abak he sterte and þought it was amys 3736
 ffor wel he wist a womman hap no berde [leaf 52, back]
 He felt a ping al roughe and longe yherede
 And seide fye alas what haue I doo
 Ti he quod she and clapt þe wyndowe to/ 3740
 And absolon goþ forþ a forþer paas
 A beard a beerd seide hende Nicholaas
 By goddes corpus þis goþ faire and weft
 This sely absolon herde it euery deff 3744
 And on his lippe he gan for anger bite
 And to him self he seide I shal þe quyte
 Who rubbeth nowē who freteth nowē his lippes
 Wiþ dust wiþ sonde wiþ strawe wiþ cloþ with chippes/
 But absolon that seiþ ful oft allas 3749
 My soule bitake I to Sathanas
 But me were leuere þan al þis toune quod he
 Of þis despite a-wroken forto be 3752
 Allas quod he allas I ne had ybleynt
 His hote love is cold and al yqueynt
 ffor fro þat tyme þat he had kist her ers
 Of paramours he sette not a kers 3756
 ffor he was heled of his malady
 fful oft paramours he gan defie
 And wepeþ as doþ a child þat is ybete
 A softe paas he went ouer þe strete 3760

Vnto a smyth men clepen dann Gervase
 That in his forge smyteþ plowh harnase
 He sharpeth share and culter bisily
 This absolon knokkeþ al Esily 3764
 And seide vnto Gervays and þat anon
 What who art þou it am I absolon
 What Absolon. what cristes swete tre
 Why rise 3e so rathe .o benedicite 3768
 What eileþ þou som gay gerle god it wote
 Haþ brouȝt þou þus [up]on þe Vyritote
 By seynt Noet 3e whote wele what I mene
 þis Absolon ne rouȝte not a bene ./ 3772
 Of al þis pley no word aȝein he gaf
 [leaf 53]
 He had more towe on his dystaf
 þan Gervais knewe and seide frende so dere
 þe hote Cultere in þe Chymeney here 3776
 As lene it me I haue þerwiþ to doñ
 I wil bringe it a-geyn ful sone
 Gervais answerð certes were it gold
 Or in a poke nobles al vntold 3780
 Thou shuldest haue as I am trewe smyth
 A cristes foo what wil 3e do þerwith
 Therof quod absolon be as be may
 I shal tellen it þe to morowe day 3784
 And caught þe Culter by þe colde stele
 fful soft out atte door he gan stele
 And went vnto þe Carpentere walle
 He koughed first and knokked þer wiþ aft 3788
 Vppon þe wyndowe right as he did eere
 þis Alison answerde who is þere
 þat knokkeþ so I waraunt it a þeef
 We nay quod he god wote my swete leef 3792
 I am þine absolon þine derlinge
 Of gold quod he I haue þe brouȝt a rynge
 My modere ȝaue it me so god me saue
 fful fyn it is and þerto wel ygraue 3796

This wil I zeuen þe if þowe me kisse
 þis Nicholas was risen forto pisse
 And þouȝt he wolde amenden al þe lape
 He shulde kisse his ers er þat he scape 3800
 And vp þe wyndowe did he hastely
 And out his ers he putteþ priuely
 Ouer þe buttoke to þe haunche boñ
 And þerwiþ spake þis clerk þis absolone 3804
 Speke swete bridde I not wher þou art
 þis Nicholas anon lete fleigh a fart
 As grete as it had bene a þonder dent
 þat wiþ þe stroke he was almost yblent 3808
 And he was redy wiþ his yren hote
 And Nicholas in þe ers he smote
 Of goþ þe skyn an honde brede aboute
 þe hote culter brenned so his toute 3812
 And for þe smerte he wende forto deye
 As he were wood for woo he gan to crye
 Help water water helpe for goddys hert
 This Carpenter out of his slomber stert 3816
 And herde oon crien water as he were wode
 And þouȝt allas now commeth noes flode
 He sette hym vp wiþout[e] wordes moo
 And wiþ an axe he smote þe cord a two 3820
 And doun goþ alle he fonde neiþer to selle
 Brede nor Ale til he com to þe selle
 Vpon þe floor and ther a swoun he lay
 Vp stert hir Alison and Nicholay 3824
 And criden out and horowe in þe strete
 þe neighbours boþ smale and grete
 Ronnen forto gawren on þis man
 þat a swonn lay boþ pale and wan 3828
 ffor wiþ þat falle he brusten hap his arme
 But stonden he most vnto his owne harme
 ffor whan he spak he was anon born doun
 Wiþ hende Nicholas and alisoun 3832

Thei tolde euery man þat he was wode
 He was agast so of þe Noes flode
 þorgh fantasie þat of his vanyte
 He had ybougþt hym kneding tubbes þre 3836
 And had hem honged in þe roof aboue
 And þat he preied hym for goddys loue
 To sitten in þe roof par companye
 þe folk gan laughen at his fantasie 3840
 And to the Roof þei kepen and þei gape
 And turned al his harme vnto a lape
 ffor what so þis Carpenter answerð
 It was for nougt no man his reson herd 3844
 Wiþ oþes grete he was so sworn a down
 (leaf 54)
 That he was holden woode in al þat town
 ffor euere clerk anoon riȝt helde wiþ oþer
 þei seide þe man is wood my leue broþer 3848
 And euere wighþ gan laughen at his strif
 Thus swyued was þe Carpenter[e]s wiff
 ffor al his keping and his Ielousie
 And Absalon haþ kissed her nethere ye 3852
 And Nicholas is scalded in his toute
 This tale is doñ and god saue al þe route.
 ¶ Here endep þe mylers tale.

[No break in the MS.]

¶ And þus bygynneþ þe Prologe of þe Reues tale ¶ Cap. 2.

Whan folk han laughen at þis nyce cas
 Of absolon and hande Nicholas 3856
 Dyuers folk dyueraly þei seide
 But for þe more parte þei louþe *and* pleide
 Ne at þis tale I seghe no man hym greue
 But it were only Oswold þe Reue 3860
 Bycause he was of Carpenter[*e*]s craft
 A litel Ire in his herte laft
 He gan to grucche and blamed it a lite
 So thick quod he ful wele quouþ I þe quyte 3864
 Wiþ blering of a proude Millers ye
 If þat me list to speke of Ribawdye
 But ik am olde me list not pley for age
 Gras tyme is done my foder is forage 3868
 This white top writeþ myn olde ȝeeres
 Myn hert is al so mowled as myn heeres
 But if I fare as doþ an open-ers
 þat ilke fruyte is euer lenger þe wers 3872
 Til it be roten in Mullok or in stre
 We olde men I drede so fare we
 Til we be roten can we not be ripe
 We hopen alway while þe hert wil pipe 3876
 ffor in our wille þer stikketh euer a naile
 To haue an hoor heer and a grene taile
 As hap a leke for þough our myȝt be goñ [leaf 54, back]
 Our wille desireþ foly euer in oon 3880
 ffor whan we may not doñ þan wil we speke
 ȝit in oure asshed olde is fire yreke
 flour gledes han we which I shal deuyse
 Auauuntinge lying. angre. and coueitise 3884
 Thise four sparkles longeþ vnto elde
 Our olde lymes may wel bene vnwelde

But wil ne shal not faille þat is soth
 And ȝit haue I alwaye a coltes toth 3888
 As mony ȝere as it is passed henne
 Siþ þat my tap of lif byganne to renne
 ffor sikerly whan I was born anōn
 Dep drough þe tappe of lif and lete it goŋ 3892
 And euere siþen haþ so þe tap yronne
 Til at almost al empty is þe tonne
 The strem of lif now droppeþ on þe chymbe
 þe sely tunge may wel rynge and chymbe 3896
 Of wrecchednesse þat passed is ful yore
 Wiþ olde folk saue dotage is no more
 ¶ Whan þat our ooste had herde þis sermonynge
 He gan to speke as lordly as a kinge 3900
 He seide what amounteþ al þis witte
 What shal we speke alday of holy writte
 The deuel made a Reue forto preche
 Or of a Souter shipman or a lecche 3904
 Say forþ þi take and tary not þe tyme
 Loo Depford and it is almost prime
 Lo Greenwich þat mony a shrewe is Inne
 It were hie tyme þi tale forto bygynne 3908
 ¶ Now Sirs quod þis Oswald þe Reue
 I prei ȝou al þat ȝe ȝou not greue
 þouȝe I answere and somdele sette hys houwe
 ffor leeful it is wiþ force . force of shouwe 3912
 This dronken Miller haþ ytolde vs here
 Hou þat bigiled was a Carpentere
 Perauenture in scorn for I am oof [leaf 55]
 And by ȝoure leue I shal hym quyte anoŋ 3916
 Riȝt in his Cheerles teermes wil I speke
 I prei to god his nekke mot alto-breke
 He can wel in myn ye seen a stalk
 But in his owne he can not seen a balk 3920
 ¶ Thus endeþ þe Prologe of þe Reue

And here bygynneþ þe Reeues tale

A t̃ Trumpington not̃ fer fro Caunterbrugē
 Ther goþ a broke and over þat̃ a brugē
 Vpon þe whiche broke þer stonde a melle
 And þis is verrey soþ þat̃ I ȝou telle 3924
 A Millere was þere dwelling mony a day
 As ony Pecok̃ he was proude and gay
 Pipen he couþe an fisshen and nettes bete
 And turne Coppes *and* wel wrastel and shete 3928
 Ny by his belt̃ he bare a longe panade
 And of a sword̃ ful trenchant̃ was þe blade
 A Ioly popper bere he in his pouche
 Ther nas no man for perile durst̃ hym touche 3932
 A Sheffield̃ thwytel bere he in his hose
 Rounde was his face and camoyse was his nose
 As pilled as an ape was his sculle
 He was a market̃ beter atte fulle 3936
 þer nas no wight̃ þat̃ durst̃ hond on hym legge
 But̃ if he swore he shuld̃ anon abegge
 A theef he was forsoþ of corn and mele
 And þat̃ a sleegh and vsaunt̃ forto stele 3940
 His name was hoten deyneȝouse Symkyn
 A wif he hadde comen of nobel kyn
 The persoñ of þe toune her fader was
 Wiþ hir he ȝaue ful mony a panne of bras 3944
 for þat̃ Symkyn shuld̃ in his blood allie
 She was yfostred in a nonrie
 for Symkyn wold[e] no wif as he seide
 But̃ she were wel ynorsched and a mayde 3948
 To Sauen his Astate of ȝemanrie [leaf 55, back]
 And she was proude and peert̃ as is a pie
 A ful feire sight̃ was it̃ vpon hem twoo/
 On holy daies byform hir̃ wold he goo/ 3952

Wip his typet bounden aboute his hede
 And she come aftere in a gite of rede
 And Symkyn had[de] hosen of þe same
 þer durst no wigt clepe hur' but' dame 3956
 Was noon so hardy þat' went' by þe way
 þat' wip hir' dorst' ones rage or play
 But' if he wold be-sclayn of Symkyn
 Wip panade and wip knyf or boydekyn 3960
 ffor Ielous folk ben perylous euer moo
 Algates þei wolde her wyues wenden soo
 And eke for she was somdeff smoterlich
 She was as digne as water in a dich 3964
 As ful of hoker and of bismare
 Hire pouzte þat' a lady shuld hir' spare
 What' for her kynrede and her nortelrie
 þat' she had lerned in þe Nonerie 3968
 A douztere had[de] þei bitwene hem twoo
 Of xxth ȝere wip-uten ony moo/
 Sauyng' a childe þat' was of half ȝere age
 In cradel it' lay and was a propre page 3972
 This wenche thik and wel ygrowe was
 Wip Camoys nose and eyen as grey as glas
 Wip buttokes brode and brestes round and hie
 But' rȝt' faire was hur' heor I wil not' lye 3976
 ¶ The person of þe toune for she was so faire
 In purpoos was to make hir' his aire
 Bop of his Catell and of his messuage
 And straunge he made it' of hur' mariage 3980
 His purpoos was to bystowe hir' hie
 Into som worpi blood of Auncetrie
 ffor holy churches good most' be despended/
 On holy chirche blood þat' is descended/ 3984
 Therefore he wold' his holy blood honoure
 (leaf 56)
 þoo þat' he holy church e shuld' devoure
 Grete soken hap þis mellere out' of doute
 With whete and malt of al þe londe aboute 3988

And namely þer was a grete colage
 Men clepen þe solere halle atte Cauntebrigge
 Ther was her whete and eke her malt ygrounde
 And on a day it happed in a stounde 3992
 Sik lay þe manciple on a maladie
 Mon wenden wishly þat he shuld[e] dye
 ffor whiche þe Millere stale boþ mele *and* corn
 An hundred tyme more þan byforñ 3996
 ffor þer byforne he stale but curteisly
 But nowe he was a þeef outrageously
 ffor which þe wardeyne chidde *and* made fare
 But þerof sette þe Millere not a tare 4000
 He craked booste and swore it was not soo/
 þan were þere yonge scolers two
 That dwelten in þe halle of which I seie
 Teestif þei were and lusty forto pleye 4004
 And only for her merth *and* reverye
 Vpon þe wardeyn bisily þei crie
 To ȝeue hem leue but a litel stounde
 To goo to melle and se her corn y-grounde 4008
 And hardely þei dorst lay her nekke
 þe Millere shuld not stale hem half a pekke
 Of corn ne by sleight ne by force hem reue
 And at þe last þe wardeyn ȝaf hem leue 4012
 Iohn hight þat oon an Aleyn hiȝt þat oþer
 Of oon tounne were þei born þat hight[e] strother
 ferre in þe norþe I can not telle where
 This Aleyn makeþ redy al his gere 4016
 And on an hors þe sak he cast anōn
 fforþ goþ Aleyn þe Clerc and also Iohn
 Wiþ good swerde and bokeler by her side
 Iohn knewe þe way hym neded no gyde 4020
 And atte Mille þe Sak a doune he laith
 Alayn spake first alhaille Symonde in faip
 How fareþ þi fare douȝtere and þi wiff
 Aleyn welcome quod Symkyn be my liff 4024

[leaf 56, back]

And Iohn also how nowe what do ȝe here
 By god quod Iohn Symond nede haþ no pere
 Hym byhoueþ serue hym self þat haþ no swayn
 Or ellis he is a fool as clerkes sayne 4028
 Our manciple I hope he wil be dede
 Swa worchen hym ay þe wanges in his hede
 And þerfore is I commen and eke Aleyn
 To Grynde our corn and carie hit hom' ageyn 4032
 We prey ȝou spede vs hepen þat ȝe may
 It shal be done quod Symkyn be my fay
 What wil ȝe done while þat it is in hande
 By God riȝt by the hoper wil I stande 4036
 Quod Iohn and see how gates þe corn goþ Inne
 ȝit sagh I neuere be my fadere kynne
 How þat þe hoper waggeþ til and fraye
 Aleyn Answerd Iohan wiltowe swaye 4040
 þan wil I be byneþe by my croune
 And se howe gate the mele falles adoun
 Into þe trough þat shal be my disport
 Quod Iohn in faath I may bene of ȝour' sorte 4044
 I is as il a Miller as is ȝe
 This Millere smyled of her nycete
 And þouȝt al þis is doñ but for a wile
 þei wene þat no man may hem bygyle 4048
 But by my þrift ȝit shal I blere her ye
 ffor al þe sleiȝt in her philosophie
 The more queynte Clerkes þat þei make
 þe more wil I stele whan I take 4052
 In stede of floure ȝit wil I ȝeue hem brenne
 The grettest clerkes ben not þe wisest men
 As whilom to þe wolf þus spake þe mare
 Of alle her arte counte I nouȝt a tare 4056
 Out at þe Dore he goþ ful priuely [leaf 57]
 Whan þat he seghe his tyme softly
 He lokeþ vp and doune til he haþ founde
 The Clerkes hors þer as he stode ybounde 4060

Behinde þe mylle vndere a leueselle
 And to þe hors he goþ hym faire and welle
 He strepeþ of þe bridel riȝt anōn
 And whan þe hors is louse he gynneþ to goñ 4064
 Toward þe fenne where wilde Mares renne
 And forþe-wiþ þorgh þikke and þorgh þenne
 This Mellere goþ ageyn no word he seide
 But doþ his note and wiþ þise clerkes pleide 4068
 Til þat her corn was faire and welle ygrounde
 And whan þe mele is sakked and ybounde
 This Iohn goþ oute and fonde her hors away
 And gan to crie harowe and walowway 4072
 Our hors is lost aleyn for goddis banes/
 Steppe on þi fete come of man / al at anes
 Allas our wardeyn haþ our palfray lorñ
 This Aleyn forgate boþ mele and corn 4076
 Al was out of his mynde his husbandrie
 What whilk way is he goñ he gan to crie
 þe wif come lepinge inward at a renne
 She seide alas ȝoure hors goþ to þe fenne 4080
 With wilde mares as fast as he may goo
 Vnþonke come on his honde þat bonde hym soo/
 And he þat better shuld haue knette þe reyñ
 Allas quod Iohn Aleyn for cistes peyñ 4084
 Lay doune þi swerde and I wil myn alswaa
 I is ful swift god wate as is a Raas
 By goddes hert he shal not scape vs bathe
 Whi ne had þou putte þe Capel in þe lathe 4088
 Ilhaile by god Aleyn þou is a fonne
 Thise sely clerkes han ful fast yronne
 Toward þe fenne boþen aleyn an eke Iohn
 And whan þe Miller' segh þat þei were goñ 4092
 He half a busshel of her floure haþ take [leaf 57, back]
 And bad his wif go knede it in a cake
 And seide I trowe þe clerkes weren a-ferde
 ȝit kan a Miller make a clerkes beerde 4096

ffor al her arte ȝit lat hem goȝ her way
 Lo wher þei gon ȝe lat þe children play
 They gete him not so lightly by my croun
 Thise sely clerkes rennen vp and doun 4100
 With kepe. kepe. stonde. stonde. Iossa warderere
 Ga qwistel ȝou I shal kepe hym here
 But shortely til it was verrey nyȝt
 þei couþe not þoughe þei did al her myȝt 4104
 þeire Capel cauche he ranne alway so fast
 Til in a dicche þei caught him at þe last
 Wery and wete as beestis in þe reyne
 Commeþ sely Iohȝ and wiþ hym commeþ aleyȝ 4108
 Allas quod Iohȝ þe day þat I was born
 Nowe are we dryuen til heþing and to scorn
 Our corn is stolle men wil vs foles calle
 Boþ þe wardeyn and our felawes alle 4112
 And namely þe Meller weylawaye
 þus pleyneþ Iohȝ as he goþ by þe waye
 Toward the Melle and baiard in his honde
 The Millere sitting by þe fire he fonde 4116
 ffor it was nyght and ferþer myght he nouȝt
 But for þe loue of god þei hym bisouȝt
 Of harborowe and of ease as for her penye
 þe Millere seide aȝein if þer be enye 4120
 Suȝ as it is ȝete shal ȝe haue ȝoure parte
 Myn hous is streite but ȝe han lerned arte
 ȝe can by arguments make a place
 A myle brode of xxth fete of space 4124
 Lat se nowe if þis place may suffice
 Or make it rowmer wiþ speche as is ȝour gise
 Now Symond seide þis Iohȝ be seynt Cutberd
 Ay is þou mery . and þat is faire answerde 4128
 I haue herde seye men shal taken of two pingges [leaf 55r]
 Suȝ as he fint or take suȝ as he bringes
 But specialy I prey þee hooste dere
 Gete vs some mete and drink and make vs chere 4132

And we wil paien trewly atte fulle
 Wip empty hondes men may not haukes tulle
 Lo here our siluer redy forto spende
 This Mellere to þe tounne his douȝter sande 4136
 ffor Ale and brede and rosted hem a goos
 And bonde her hors for he shuld no more go loos
 And in his owne chambre he made a bedde
 Wip shetes and wip chalons faire yspredde 4140
 Nouȝt from his owne bedde .x. fete or xij.
 His doughter had a bed al by hir selue
 Riȝt in þe same chambre by *and* by
 It myȝhte be no bette and cause why 4144
 þer was no rommer herborowe in þe place
 þei soupen and þei speken hem to solace
 And drynken euere stronge ale atte beste
 About mydnyȝt went þei to reste 4148
 Wel haȝ þis Mellere vernysed his hede
 fful pale he was for-dronken and not rede
 He ȝeskeȝ and he spekeȝ þorgh þe nose
 As he ware in þe quakke or on þe pose 4152
 To bedde he goȝ and wip hym goȝ his wif
 As eny laye he light was and Iolif
 So was her Ioly whistel wel ywette
 þe Cradel at her beddis fete is ysette 4156
 To Rokken and to ȝeue þe child to souke
 And whan þat dronken was al in þe crouke
 To bedde went þe doughter riȝt anōn
 To bedde goȝ Aleyn and also Iohn 4160
 þer nas no more hem neded no dwale
 This Mellere haȝ so wisly bebbed ale
 þat as an hors he snorteȝ in his slepe
 Ne of his tale behynde he toke no kepe 4164
 His wif bare him a Burdoñ a ful stronge
 Men myȝht here þe routiȝt þens a forlonge
 The wenche routeȝ eek *par* companye
 Aleyn þe Clerk þat herd þis melodye 4168

[leaf 58, back]

He pouked on Iohn and seide slepestowe
 Herde þou euere sclike a sang' or nowe
 Lo sclike a conplinge is ytwix hem alle
 A wilde fire on her bodies falle 4172
 Who herkened euere sclike a ferly þinge
 3e þei shal haue þe flour of euel endinge
 This lange nyȝt' þer tydes men no reste
 But' ȝit' na fors al shal be for þe beste 4176
 ffor Iohn seide he as euere mote I prive
 If þat' I may ȝon wenche þan wil I swyve
 Some esement' hap lawe shapen vs
 ffor Iohn þer is a lawe þat' seiþ þus 4180
 That' if a man in oon point' be agreued
 That' in anoþer he shal be releued
 Our corn is stollen soþly it' is no nay
 And we han had an euel fit to day 4184
 And syn I shal haue no amendement'
 Ageyn my losse I wil haue esement'
 By goddes saule it' sal na noþer be
 þis Iohn answerde Aleyn avise þe 4188
 The Meller is a perilous man he seide
 And if þat' he out' of his sclepe abreide
 He myghte don vs boþ a vylenye
 Aleyn answerd I counte hym not a flye 4192
 And vp he rist' and by þe wenche he crepte
 This wenche lay vpriȝt' and faste sclepte
 Til he so nygh was er she myȝte spie
 þat' it' had bene to late forto crie 4196
 And shortely for to seiþ þei were at' oñ
 Nowe pleye Alayn for I wil speke of Iohn
 This Iohn lith stille a forlonge way or two
 And to hym self he makeþ wamenting' and woo 4200
 Allas quod he þis is a wikke Iape [leaf 50]
 Now may I seiþ þat' I is but' an ape
 ȝit' hap my felawe somewhat' for his harme
 He hap þe mellers douȝter in his arme 4204

He Auntreþ hym and haþ his nedes spedde
 And I ly as a draf sak in my bedde
 And whan þis Iape is tolde anoper day
 I shal be holde a daff a cokenay 4208
 I wil arise and aunter be my fath
 Vnhardy is vnsely þus men sath
 And vp he roos and softely he went
 Vnto þe Cradel and in his arme hit hent 4212
 And bare it soft vntil his beddes fete
 Sone aftere þe wif her rowting lete
 And gan to wake and went her out to pisse
 And come agein and gan her cradel mysse 4216
 And groped here and þere but she foond noon/
 Allas quod she I had almost mysgon
 I had almost go to þe clerkes bedde
 Ey benedicite þan had I foule yspedde 4220
 And forþ she goþ til she þe cradel fonde
 She gropeþ alway forþer wip her honde
 And fond þe bed and þouzt nouzt but of good
 By cause þat þe cradel by it stode 4224
 And nyste wher she was for it was derk
 But faire and wel she crepte in to þe clerk
 And lith ful stille and wolde haue kauzt a slepe
 Wip-In a while þis Iohā þe clerk vp lepe 4228
 And on þis good[e] wif hee leip ful sore
 So mery a fitte ne had she not ful ȝore
 And prikeþ harde and depe as he ware¹ madde [1 PMS]
 þis Ioly lif han þise two clerkes ladde 4232
 To þat þe iij. coke bygan to singe
 Aleyn wexe wery. in þe daw[e]nyng
 ffor he had swonken al þe longe nyzt
 And seide fare wel malyn sweete wiȝt 4236
 The day is come I may no lenger byde [leaf 50, back]
 But euermo where so I go or ride
 I am þine owne clerk so haue I sele
 Now dere lemman quod she go fare wele 4240

But er þou goo. on þinge I wil þe telle
 Whhan þat þow wendest homward by þ' melle
 Right at þe entre of þe door be-hinde
 Thow shalt a Cake of half a busshel fynde 4244
 That was ymaked of þine owne mele
 Which þat I helpe my Sire forto stele
 And good lemman god þe saue and kepe
 And wiþ þat word almost she gan to wepe 4248
 Aleyn vprist and þouzt er þat it dawwe
 I wol go crepen in by my felawe
 And fonde þe cradel wiþ his honde anon
 By god þought he alwrong / I haue myscon 4252
 Myn hede is toty of my swynk to nyght
 þat makeþ me þat I go not aright
 I wote wele by þe cradel I haue mysgo
 Here lith þe meller and his wif also 4256
 And forþ he goþ on twenty delway
 Vnto þe bedde þer as þe meller lay
 He wende haue copen by his felawe Iohn
 And by þe Meller in he crept anon 4260
 And kaught him by þe nek and soft he spake
 And seide þou Iohn þou swyneshede awake
 Of Cristes saule and here a noble game
 ffor by þat lord þat called is seint Iame 4264
 As I haue pries in þis shorte nyzt
 Swyved þe Mellers douzter bolt vprist
 Whilst þow hast as a Coward beñ agast
 Ye fals harlot quod þe Mellers hast 4268
 A fals traitour. fals clerk quod he
 þow shalt be dede by goddes dignyte
 Who durste be so bolde to disparage
 My douzter þat is come of swich lynage 4272
 And by þe prote bolle he kauzt aleyn (leaf 60)
 And he him hent dispitously ageyn
 And on þe nose he smote hym with his fist
 Doune ranne þe bloody streme vpon his brist 4276

And in þe floor wiþ nose and mounþ to-broke
 þei walowen as don two pigges in a poke
 And vp þei goon and doun anofn
 Till þat þe Mellere spurned at a stoñ 4280
 And downe he felle bakward vpon his wif
 þat wist no þinge of þis nyce striff
 ffor she was falle a slepe a litel wiȝt
 Wiþ Iohn þe clerk þat waked had al nyȝt 4284
 And wiþ þe falle out of her slepe she braide
 Help holy crosse of bromholm she saide
 In manus tuas lorde to þe I calle
 Awake Symond þe feend is on me falle 4288
 Myn hert is broken help I ne am but dede
 þere lith vpon my wombe *and* on myn hede
 Helpe Symkyn for þise fals clerkes fiȝt
 This Iohn stert vp as fast as euere he myȝt 4292
 And grasped by þe walles to and fro
 To fynden a staf and she stert vp also
 And knewe þe Eisters bet þan did Iohn
 And by þe walle she fonde a staf anōn 4296
 And segñ a litel shymering of a liȝt
 ffor at an hole in shone þe mone briȝt
 And by þat liȝt she segñ hem boþ[e] two
 But sikerly she nyste who was who 4300
 But as she seegh a white þinge in her eye
 And whan she gan þis white þing aspie
 She wende þe Clerk had wered a volipere
 And wiþ þe staf she drough ay ner and nere 4304
 And wende han hitte þis Aleyn atte fulle
 And smote þe Mylere on þe pyled skulle
 þat doun he goth *and* cried harowe I dye
 Thise Clerkes bette hym wel and lete hym lye 4308
 And Greieþ hem and toke her hors anofn [leaf 60, back]
 And eke her/ mele and on her way þei gōn
 And at the Melle ȝit þei toke her Cake
 Of half a busschel floure ful wel ybake 4312

Thus is þe proude Mellere wel ybete	
And hath ylost' þe gryndin' of þe whete	
And paide for þe soper euery deff	
Of aleyn and of Iohn þat' bette hym well	4316
His wif is swyued and his douztere als	
Lo such it' is a Miller' to be fals	
And þerfor þis prouerbe is seide ful soth	
Hym ther not' wene wele þat' euel doth	4320
A Gilour shal hym self begiled be	
And god þat' sitteþ hegh in mageste	
Saue al þe company grete and smale	
Thus haue I quytte þe Meller in my tale	4324
¶ Thus Endeth þe Reues Tale	

[No break in the MS.]

And here bygynneþ þe Cokes tale

The Coke of london while þe Reue spak ¶ The Prologe
 ffor Ioye him þouȝt he clawed hym on þe bak'
Ha. ha. quod he for cristes passioñ
 This Millere hap a sharpe conclusioñ 4328
 Vpon his argument of harbigage
 Wel seide Salomon in his langage
 Ne bringe not euery man into þine hous
 ffor herbowringe by nyght is perilous 4332
 Wel ouȝt a man avised forto be
 Whoom þat he brouȝt into his pryvete
 I prey to god so ȝeue me sorowe and care
 If euer siþen I hight hogge of ware 4336
 Hard I Meller better ysette a werke
 He had a Iape of malice in þe derke
 And þerfor if ȝe vouche sauf to here 4340
 But god forbede þat we stynt heere 4339
 A tale of me þat am a poor man
 I wil ȝou telle as wel as euer I can
 A litel Iape þat felle in our Cite [leaf 61]
 Our hooste answerd *and* seide I graunte it þe 4344
 Now telle on Rogger and loke þat it be good
 ffor mony a paast hast þou laten blood
 And mony a Iak of Douer hast þou sold
 þat hap be twies hoothe and twies cold 4348
 Of mony a pilgryme hast þou cristes curs
 ffor of þi Persely ȝit fare þei þe wors
 þat þei han eten wiþ þi stobel goos
 ffor in þi shoppe is mony a flee loos 4352
 Now telle on gentil Rogger by þi name
 But ȝit I prei þe be not wroþ for game
 A man may say ful soþ in game *and* play
 þow seiist ful soþ quod Rogger be my fay 4356

126 GROUP A. § 7. COOK'S PROLOGUE. Petworth MS.

But soþ play quade play as þe flemmyng' saiþ
And þerfore henry balyf by þi feiþ
Be þow not wroþ er we departen here
þoughe þat my tale be of an ostylere 4360
But napelees I wil not tellen it ȝit
But er we part I-wis þou shalt be quyþ
And þerwiþ al [he] lough and made chere
And saide his tale as ȝe shal after here 4364
þus endeþ þe prologe of þe cokes tale

[*No break in the MS.*]

And here bygynneþ þe Cokes tale

¶ The Cokes Tale.

A Prentis whilom dwelled in our Cite
 And of a craft of vitalers was he
 Gailard he was as gold-fynch in þe shawe
 Broun as þe bery. a propre short felawe 4368
 Wiþ lockes blake ykempt ful fetisly
 Daunce he couþe so wel and lolily
 þat he was cleped Perkyn reveilour
 He was as ful of loue and paramour 4372
 As is þe hyve ful of hony swete
 Wel was þe wenche wiþ him myȝt mete
 And euery Bridale wold he sing and hoppe
 He loued bette þe Tauern þan þe shoppe 4376
 ffor whan þer eny ridynge was in chepe [leaf 61, back]
 Out of þe Shoppe þidere wold he lepe
 Til þat he had al þe sixt yseyñ
 And daunsed wel wold he not come ageyñ 4380
 And gader hym a mayne of his sort
 To hoppe and synge and make such disport
 And þer þei setten steuen forto mete
 To pleyn at þe dis in such a strete 4384
 ffor in þe toune nas þer no prentys
 þat fairrer couþe cast a peire of dys
 þan perkyn couþe and þerto he was free
 Of his dispence in place of pryvete 4388
 That fonde his maister wel in his chaffare
 ffor oft tymes he fonde his boxe ful bare
 ffor sikerly a prentise Reveilour
 þat haunteþ dis ryot and paramour 4392
 His maister shulde in his shop abyen
 Al haue he not part of þe mynstralcie
 ffor þeft and riot þei ben conuertible
 Al conne he play on gitern or rubible 4396

Reuel and troupe as in a lough degre
 þei ben ful wroþ alday as men may see
 þis Ioly Prentis wip his maister bode
 Til he were nygh out of his prentiseshode 4400
 Al were he snybbed erly or late
 And somtyme ladde wip revel to Newgate
 But atte last his maister hym byþouȝte
 Vpon a day whan he his paper souȝte 4404
 Of a prouerd þat seiþ þis same word
 Wel bette is roten appel out of horde
 þan þat it rote al þe remenaunte
 So fareþ it by a ryotous seruauante 4408
 It is moche lasse harme to lat hym passe
 þan he sheed alle þe seruauantes in þe place
 Therfor his maister ȝaue hym a quyttaunce
 And bad hym goo wip sorowe and meschaunce 4412
 And þus þis prentise had his leue . [leaf 62]
 Now lat him riot al þe nyȝt or leue
 And for þer is no þeef wip-out a louke
 þat helpeþ hym to waasten or to souke 4416
 Of þat he bribe can or borowe may
 Anon he sent his bedde and his aray
 Vnto a conper of his owne sort
 þat loued dys [and] reuel and disport 4420
 And had a wif þat helde for countenaunce
 A Shop and swyued for her sustenaunce

[No break in the MS.]

APPENDIX TO GROUP A.

[THE SPURIOUS TALE OF GAMELYN.]

[*Spurious Link.*]

But here-of I wil pas as nowe
And of yonge Gamelyn I wil telle 3ou. 2

[*Tale.*]

Libes *and* listneþ and harkneþ a-ryȝt ¶ þe tale of yonge Gamelyne
And 3e shul here of a doughty knyȝt
Sir Iohn of boundes was his name
He coude of Norture and of mochel game 4
Thre sones þe knyȝt had *and* wiþ his body he wan
The eldest was a moche schrewe and sone bygan
His breþer loued wel her fader *and* of him were agast
þe eldest deserved his faders curs *and* had it atte last 8
þe good knyȝt his fadere lyued so yore
þat deþ was comen to hym . and handled hym ful sore
þe Good knyȝt cared sore . sik þer he lay
How his children shuld lyuen after his day 12
He had ben wide where . but non husbonde he was
Al þe londe þat he had it was purchas/
flayn he wold it were dressed among hem alle
That eche of hem had his parte as it myȝt falle 16
þoo sente he in to contrey after wise knyȝtes
To helpen delen his londes : *and* dressen hem to ryȝtes
He sent hem word by letters : þei shul hie blyve
Yf þei wolk speke wiþ hym : whilst he was a lyve 20

Whan þe knyȝtes harden sik þat he lay
 Had þei no rest neȝer: nyȝt ne day
 Til þei come to hym: þer he lay stille
 On his deȝes bedde/ to abide goddys wille 24
 Than seide þe good knyȝht seke þer he lay (leaf 68, back)
 Lordes I ȝou warne for soȝ wiȝ-out nay
 I may no lenger lyuen here in þis stounde
 ffor þorȝh goddis wille: deȝ droueȝ me to grounde 28
 þer nas noon of hem alle: þat herd hym aȝȝt
 þat þei ne had routh: of þat ilke knyȝt
 And seide sir for goddes loue: dismay ȝou nouȝt
 God may doȝ boote of bale: þat is now ywrouȝt 32
 þan speke þe good knyȝt: sik þer he lay
 Boote of bale god may sende: I wote it is no nay
 But I biȝecche ȝoⁿ knyȝtes for þe loue of me
 Goȝ and dresseȝ my londes: among my sones þre 36
 And for þe loue of god deleȝ not amys
 And forgeteȝ not Gamelyne: my ȝong^r sone þat is/
 Takeȝ hede to þat oon as wel as to þat opere
 Seelde ȝe seen eny hier. helpen his broȝere 40
 þoo lete þei þe knyȝht lyen: þat was not in hele
 And wenten into counseil his londes forto dele
 Forto delen hem alle to oȝ: þat was her þouȝt
 And for Gamelyn was ȝongest he shuld haue nouȝt 44
 All þe londe þat þer was: þei dalten it in two
 And lete Gamelyne þe ȝonge: without londe goo
 And eche of hem seide to other ful loude
 His breȝeren myȝt ȝeue him londe whan he good cowde 48
 And whan þei had deled þe londe at her wille
 þei comen to þe knyȝht. þer he lay stille
 And tolde him anon: how þei had wrouȝt
 And þe knyȝht þere he laye liked it riȝt nouȝt 52
 ¶ Than seide þe knyȝt: be seint Martyne
 For al þat ȝe han done: ȝit is the londe myne
 ffor goddis loue neighbours. stondeȝ alle stille
 And I wil delen my londe: after myn owne wille 56

APPENDIX TO GROUP A. GAMELYN. **Petworth MS.**

Iohn myne eldest sone : shal haue plowes fyve
 þat was my faders heritage : whan he was alyve
 And my myddelest sone .v. plowes of londe
 þat I halpe forto gete with my riȝt honde 60
 And al myȝn opere purchace of londes and ledes [leaf 65]
 þat I biqueþe Gamelyȝ. and al my good stedes
 And I biseche þou good men þat lawe conne of londe
 For Gamelynes loue : þat my quest stonde 64
 Thus dalt þe knyȝt. his londe by his day
 Riȝt on his deȝ bed sik þer he lay .
 And sone afterward he lay stoon stille
 And deide whan tyme come : as it was cristes wille 68
 Anoon as he was dede and vnder gras graue
 Sone þe elder broþer : giled þe zonge knaue
 He toke into his honde his londe and his lede
 And Gamelyne him seluen to cloþe and to fede 72
 He cloþed him and fedde him/ euell and eke wrothe
 And lete his londes forfare : and his houses boþe
 His Parkes and his wodes : and did no þing welle
 And siþen he it aboute on his owne felle 76
 So longe was Gamelyne in his broþers halle
 ffor þe strengest of good will þei douted hym alle
 þer was noon þer-Inne neiþer zonge ne olde
 þat wold wrethe Gamelyȝ. were he neuer so bolde 80
 Gamelyne stood on a day : in his broþeres ȝerde
 And byganne wiþ his hond/ to handel his berde
 He þouȝt on his landes þat lay vnsowe
 And his fare okes þat doune were ydrawe 84
 His Parkes were broken/ and his deer reued
 Of alle his good stedes/ noon was hym byleued
 His hous were vnhilld/ and ful euell diȝt
 Tho þouȝt Gamelyne/ it went not ariȝt 88
 ¶ Afterward come his broþer walking þare
 And seide to Gamelyȝ. is our mete ȝare
 Tho wrathed him Gamelyȝ/ and swore by goddys boke
 þow shalt go bake þi self/ I wil not be þi coke 92

What' broþer Gamelyne howe answerst þou nowe
 þou spekest neuere such a word as þou dost nowe
 By feiþe seiðe Gamelyñ: now me þenkeþ nede
 Of al þe harmes þat I haue: I toke neuere ȝit hede. 96
 My parkes bene broken: *and* my dere reued [leaf 63, back]
 Of myn armes ne my stedes: nouȝt is byleued
 Aȝt þat my fader me byquaþe: al goþ to shame
 And þerfor haue þou goddes curs: broþere be þi name 100
 þan spake his broþer þat rape was and rees
 Stond stille Gadlynge and holde þi pees
 Thou shalt be fayn to haue: þi mete *and* þi wede
 What' spekest þow gadeling: of londe or of lede 104
 Than seiðe Gamelyñ: þe child so ȝing
 Cristes curs mote he haue: þat me clepeth Gadelinge
 I am no wors Gadeling: ne no wors wiȝt
 But' born of a lady and gete of a knyȝt 108
 Ne dorst' he not to Gamelyñ neuere a foot goo
 But' cleped to hym his men: and seiðe to hem þoo/
 Goþ and betep þis boye and reueþ hym his witte
 And lat' him lerne anoþer tyme: to answer me bette 112
 Than seiðe þe Child ȝonge Gamelyñ
 Cristes curs mote þou haue: broþer art þou myñ
 And if I shal algates be beten anōn
 Cristes curs mote þou haue: but þou be þat' oñ 116
 And anon his broþer in þat grete hete
 Made his men to fette staues Gamelyn to bete
 Whan euery of hem had a staf ynommen
 Gamelyn was werre. whan he segh hem commen 120
 Whan Gamelyne segh hem commen. he loked ouer aȝt
 And was ware of a pestel: stode vnder þe waȝt
 Gamelyn was liȝt and þider gan he lepe
 And droof alle his broþeres men riȝt sone on an hepe 124
 And loked as a wilde lyon. and leide on good wone
 And whan his broþer segh þat': he byganne to goñ
 He fley vp into a loft: and shette þe door fast
 þus Gamelyn wiþ his pestel. made hem al a-gast 128

APPENDIX TO GROUP A. GAMELYN. **Petworth MS.**

Some for Gamelyns loue. *and* some for eye
 Alle þei droughen hem to halues whan he gun to pleye
 ¶ What' now seide Gamelyñ ! euel mote 3e the
 Wil 3e bygynne contacte ! and so sone fle 132
 Gamelyñ sou3t' his broþer ! whider' he was flowe [leaf 64]
 And seghe where he loked out a wyndowe
 Broþere seide Gamelyñ. come a litel nere
 And I wil teche þe a play at þe bokelere 136
 His broþere him ansuerde. *and* seide by seint' Richere
 þe while þat' pestel is in þine honde. I wil come no nere
 Broþer I wil make þi pees ! I swer by cristes oore
 Cast away þe pestel. and wreþe þe no more 140
 I most' nede seide Gamelyn wreþ me at onys
 ffor þou wold make þi men. to breke my bonys
 Ne had I hadde mayñ *and* my3t' in myn armes
 To han hem fro me. þei wold haue doñ me harmes 144
 Gamelyn seide his broþer be þou not' wroth
 Forto sene þe han harme. me were rizt' loth
 I ne did it' not' broþer but' for a fondinge
 ffor to loken wher þou art' stronge and art' so 3enge 148
 Come a doune þan to me and graunt' me my bone
 Of oon þing' I wil þe axe and we shal sau3t' sone
 Doune þan come his broþer þat' fikel was *and* felle
 And was swiþ sore a-feerd of þe pestelle 152
 He seide broþer Gamelyn axe me þi bone
 And loke þou me blame but' I it' graunte sone
 þan seide Gamelyn broþer I-wys
 And we shul be at' oñ. þou most' graunte me this 156
 Aft' þat' my fader me by-quaþ. whilst' he was alyue
 þow most' do me it' haue. if we shul not' strive
 þat' shalt' þou haue Gamelyn I swere bi cristes oore.
 Al þat' þi fadere þe by-quaþe. þough þou wold' haue more
 Thy londe þat' lith ley. wel it' shal be sawe 161
 And þine houses reised vp þat' bene leide ful lawe
 Thus seide þe knyght. to gamelyn wiþ mouþe
 And þou3t' on falsnes as he wel couþe 164

APPENDIX TO GROUP A. GAMELYN. Petworth MS.

þe knyȝt þouȝt on treson. and gamelyn anon
 And wente *and* kissed his broþer *and* whan þei were at on
 Alas yonge Gamelyn no þing he ne wist
 Wiþ such fals treson. his broþer him kist 168
 Lypeneth and listeneþ and holdeþ *your* tonge (leaf 64, back)
 And ȝe shul here talking of Gamelyn þe ȝonge
 ¶ Ther was þere bisiden cride a wrastelinge
 And þerfore þer was sette a ramme *and* a ringe 172
 And Gamelyn was in wille to wende þerto/
 fforto preuen his myȝt what he coude doo
 Broþere seide Gamelyn by seint Richere
 þow most lene me to nyȝt a litel coursere 176
 That is fresshe fro þe spore on for to ride
 I most on an erand a litel here beside
 By god seide his broþer/ of stedes in my stalle
 Goo and chese þe the best spare non of hem alle 180
 Of stedes and of coursers þat stoden hem byside
 And telle me good broþer whider þou wilt ride
 Here beside broþer is cried a wrastelinge
 And þerfore shal be sette a ram *and* a ringe 184
 Moche worship it were broþere to vs alle
 Might I þe ram *and* þe ring bring home to þis halle
 A stede ther was sadeled smertly an skete
 Gamelyn did a peire spores fast on his fete 188
 He sette his foote in þe stirop þe stede he bistrode
 And towards þe wrasteling þe yong childe rode
 ¶ Whan Gamelyn þe ȝonge was riden out atte gate
 þe fals knyȝt his broþer loket it after þate 192
 And bysouȝt Ihesu crist þat is heuene kinge
 He myȝt breke his necke in þe wrestelinge
 As sone as Gamelyn come þer þe place was
 He light doune of his stede *and* stood on þe gras 196
 And þer he herde a frankeleyn weiloway singe
 And by-gonne bitterly his hondes for to wringe
 Good man seide Gamelyn : whi mast þou þis fare
 Is þer no man þat may. ȝou helpen out of care 200

APPENDIX TO GROUP A. GAMELYN. **Petworth MS.**

Allas seide þis frankleyn þat euere was I bore
 ffor twey stalworþ sones: I wene þat I haue lore
 A champion is in þe place. þat hap wrouȝt me sorowe
 ffor he hap sclayn my two sones. but ȝif god hem borowe
 I wil ȝeue x. li. by Ihesu crist *and* more [leaf 65]
 Wiþ þe nones I fonde a man wold handel hym sore
 Good man seide Gamelyn wilt þou wele doñ
 Holde my hors þe whiles my man: drowe of my shoñ 208
 And helpe my man to kepe/ my cloþes *and* my stede
 And I wil to place goñ. to loke if I may spede
 By god seide þe ffrankeleyn it shal be doñ
 I wil my self be þi man to drowe of þi shoñ 212
 And wende þou into place Ihesu crist þe spede
 And drede not of þi cloþes. ne of þi good stede
 Bare-foot and vngirt. Gamelyn Inne came
 Alle þat were in þe place. hede of him name 216
 Howe he durst auenture him to doñ his myȝt
 þat was so doghty a champion in wrasteling *and* in fȝt
 Vp stert þe Champion rapely anðñ
 And toward yong Gamelyn byganne to gōñ 220
 And seide who is þi fadere *and* who is þi sire
 ffor sothe þou art a grete fool þat thou come hire
 Gamelyn answerd þe Champion þo
 Thowe knewe wel my fadere while he myȝt goo 224
 þe whiles he was alyue by seynt Martyn
 Sir Iohn of Boundes was his name *and* I am Gamelyn
 ¶ flawe seide þe Champion so mote I þriue
 I knewe wel þi fadere þe whiles he was alyue 228
 And þi silf Gamelyn I wil þat þou it here
 While þou were a ȝong boy. a moçh shrewe þou were
 Than seide Gamelyn and swore by cristes ore
 Now I am older wexe þou shalt finde me a more 232
 By god seide þe Champion welcome mote þou be
 Come þow onys in my honde. þou shalt neuere the
 It was wel wiþ-in þe nyȝt *and* þe mone shone
 Whan Gamelyn and þe Champion to-gider gon gone 236

APPENDIX TO GROUP A. GAMELYN. **Petworth MS.**

The Champion cast turnes to Gamelyn þat was prest
 And Gamelyn stode and bad hym done his best
 Than seide Gamelyn to þe Champion
 þowe art fast aboute to bringe me adoun 240
 Now I haue proued mony turnes of þine [leaf 65, back]
 Thow most he seide oon or ij. of myne
 Gamelyn to þe Champion ȝede smertely anōn
 Of alle þe turnes þat he couþe he shewed hym but oñ
 And cast him on þe left side. þat þre ribbes to-brake 245
 And perto his owne arme þat ȝaf a grete crake
 Than seide Gamelyn smertly anōn
 Shal it bihold for a cast or ellis for nōn 248
 By god seide þe Champion whedere it bee
 He þat commeth ones in þi honde shal he neuere the
 ¶ Than seide þe frankeley þat had þe sones þere
 Blessed be þou Gamelyn þat euere þou bore were 252
 The ffrankleyn seide to þe Champion on hym stode hym
 This is ȝonge Gamelyn þat tauȝt/ þe þis pleye [noñ eye]
 Aȝein answerd þe Champion. þat likeþ no þing wel
 He is alþer maister and his pley is riȝt feiþ 256
 Siþen y wrasteled first it is goon ȝore
 But I was neuer in my lif handeled so sore
 Gamelyn stode in þe place anon wiþ-out serk
 And seide ȝif þer be moo lat hem come to werk 260
 The Champion þat pyned hym to worch sore
 It semeth by his countenaunce þat he wil no more
 Gamelyn in þe place stood stille as stone
 ffor to abide wrasteling but þer come nonē 264
 þer was noon wiþ gamelyn þat wold wrastel more
 ffor he handeled the Champion so wonderly sore
 Two gentile men þat ȝemed þe place
 Come to Gamelyn god ȝeue hym good grace 268
 And seide to hym do on . þi hosen and þi shoone
 ffor soþ at þis tyme þis fare is done
 And þan seide Gamelyn so mot I wel fare
 I haue not ȝete haluendele sold my ware 272

APPENDIX TO GROUP A. GAmELYN. Petworth MS.

þoo seide þe Champion! so broke I my swere
 He is a fool þat þerof bieþ þou selleþ it so dere
 Tho saide þe ffrankeleyn þat was in mochi care
 ffelawe he saide whi lackest þou þis ware 276
 By sante Iame of Gales þat mony man hap souzt [leaf 68]
 3it is it to good chepe þat þow hast bouzt
 Thoo þat wardeynes were of þat wrasteling
 Come and brouzt Gamelyn þe Ramme and þe ryng 280
 [.
 no gap in the MS.]
 And Gamelyn biþouzt him it was a faire þinge
 And went wiþ moche Ioye home in þe mornynge 284
 ¶ His broþer see wher he came! wiþ þe grete route
 And bad shitt þe gate and hold hym wiþ oute
 The Porter of his lord was soor a gaast
 And start anon to þe gate and lokked it fast 288
 ¶ Now lithenes and listneþ boþ 3onge and olde
 And 3e shul here gamen of Gamelyn þe bolde
 Gamelyn come to þe gate for to haue come Inne
 And it was shett fast wiþ a strong pynne 292
 þan seide Gamelyn Porter vndo þe 3ate
 ffor good mennys sones stonden þer-ate
 þan answerd þe porter and swore by goddys berde
 þow ne shalt Gamelyn come into þis 3erde 296
 Thow lixt seide Gamelyn/ so broke I my chyne
 He smote þe wikett wiþ his foote and breke awaie þe pynne
 The Porter seie þoo/ it myzt no better be
 He sette foote on erth and bygan to flee 300
 By my feye seide Gamelyn þat traualle is ylore
 ffor I am of fote as light as þou. if þou haddest it swore
 Gamelyn ouertoke þe porter. and his tene wrake
 And girt him in þe nek þat þe boon to-brake 304
 And toke hym by þat oon arme/ and threwe hym in a wellle
 vijc. fadme it was depe/ as I haue herd telle
 ¶ Whan Gamelyn þe yonge þus had plaied his playe
 Alle þat in þe yerde were. drowen hem awaye 308

APPENDIX TO GROUP A. GAMELYN. Petworth MS.

þei dredden him ful sore for werk þat' he wrouȝt'
 And for þe faire company þat' he þider brouȝt'
 Gamelyn ȝede to þe gate/ and lete it vp wide
 He lete Inne aft. þat' goñ wold' or ride 312
 And seide ȝe be welcome wiþ out' eny greue
 ffor we wil be maisters here and axe no man leue
 ȝusterday I left/ seide ȝonge Gamelyn (leaf 66, back)
 In my broþers seler/ v. tonne of wyñ 316
 I wil not' þis company partyn a-twynne
 And ȝe wil done after me/ while soþe is þer-Inne
 And if my broþer gruche or make foule chere
 Eþer for spence of mete and drink/ þat' we spende here
 I am oure Catour and bere our alþer purs 321
 He shal haue for his grucching' seint' Maries cure
 My broþer is a Nigon! I swere be cristes oore
 And we wil spende largely/ þat' he haþ spared yore 324
 And who þat' make grucchinge þat' we here dwelle
 He shal to þe porter in to þe drowe-welle
 .Vij. dayes and vij. nyȝtes Gamelyn helde his feest'
 Wiþ moche solace/ was þer noon cheest' 328
 In a litel torret' his broþer lay steke
 And see hem waast' his good and dorst' no word' speke
 Erly on a mornynge on þe viij. day
 The Gestes come to Gamelyn and wolde goñ her way 332
 Lordes seide Gamelyn wil ȝe so hie
 Al þe wyne is not' ȝit' dronke' so brouke I myñ ye
 Gamelyn in his hert'/ was ful woo
 Whan his gestes toke her leue. fro hym forto go 336
 He wolde þei had dwelled lenger. and þei seide nay
 But' bytaught' Gamelyn. god and good day
 Thus made Gamelyn his feest. and brouȝt' wel to ende
 And afters his gestes. toke leue to wende 340
 ¶ Lythen and listen and holde ȝour' tunge
 And ȝe shal here Game of Gamelyn þe ȝonge
 Harkeneth lordingges and listeneþ ariȝt
 Whan alle gestis were goon how gamelyn was diȝt' 344

APPENDIX TO GROUP A. GAMELYN. Petworth MS.

Alle þe while þat Gamelyn heeld his Mangerye
 His broþere þouȝt on hym be wroke/ with his trecherye
 Whan Gamylens gastes were riden and goñ
 Gamelyn stood anon allone/ frend had he non 348
 Tho aftere felle sone/ with-in a litel stounde
 Gamelyn was taken/ and ful hard ybounde
 forþ Come þe fals knyght! out of þe Solere [leaf 97]
 To Gamelyn his broþer/ he ȝede ful nere 352
 And saide to Gamelyn/ who made þe so bold
 For to stroien þe stoor of myn household
 Broþer seide Gamelyn wreþ þe riȝt nought
 ffor it is many day gon siþ it was bouȝt 356
 ffor broþer þou hast had by seint Richere
 Of xv. plowes of londe. þis xvj. ȝere
 And of alle þe beestes þou hast forþ bredde
 That my fader me byquath on his depes bedde 360
 Of al þis xvj. ȝere I ȝeue þe þe prowē
 ffor þe mete and þe drink þat we han spended nowē
 Than seide þe fals knyȝt. euē mote he þee
 Herken broþere Gamelyn what I wil ȝeue þe 364
 ffor of my body broþer! here geten haue I none
 I wil make þe myn heire I saie by seint Iohn
 Parfay seide Gamelyn! and if it so be
 And þou thenk as þou seist! god ȝeeld it þe 368
 No þinge wist Gamelyn of his broþer gile
 Therfore he hym bygiled in a litel while
 Gamelyn seide. oon þing I þe telle
 þoo þou þrewe my porter in þe drowe-welle 372
 I swore in þat wreþe and in þat grete moote
 þat þou shuldest be bounde boþe honde and fote
 [.
 no gap in the MS.] 376
 This most be fulfilled! my men to dote
 ffor to holden myn avowe as I þe bihote
 ¶ Broþer seide Gamelyn as mote I þee
 þou shalt not be forswore for þe loue of me 380

APPENDIX TO GROUP A. GAMELYN. *Petworth MS.*

Tho maden þei Gamelyn to sitte and not stonde
 To þei had hym bounde boþ fote and honde
 þe fals knyght his broþer. of Gamelyn was a-gast
 And sent' efter fetters to fetter' hym fast' 384
 His broþer made lesingges on him þer he stode
 And tolde hem þat' commen Inne þat Gamelyn was wode
 Gamelyn stode to a post. bounden in þe hall
 þoo þat' commen Inne. loked on hym all 388
 Euer stode Gamelyn euen vp-riȝt' [leaf 87, back]
 But' mete and drink had ne noun. neiþer day ne nyȝt'
 Than seide Gamelyn/ brother be myn hals
 Nowe haue I aspied þou art' a party fals 392
 Had I wist þe Treson þat' hast' yfounde
 I wold haue ȝeue strokes or I had be bounde
 Gamelyn stode bounde stille as eny stone
 Tho daies and two nyȝtes mete had he none 396
 Than seide Gamelyn: þat' stood ybound' stronge
 Adam Spencer' me þenkeþ I fast' to longe
 Adam Spencere now I biseche þe
 ffor þe moche loue my fadere loued þe 400
 If þou may come to þe keys/ lese me out' of bonde
 And I wil part' wiþ þe of my free londe
 Than seide Adam þat' was þe spencere
 I haue serued þi broþer þis xvj ȝere 404
 ȝif I lete þe gone out' of his boure
 He wold saye afterwarde I were a tratour
 Adam seide Gamelyn so brouke I myn hals
 Thow shalt' finde þi broþer at' þe last' fals 408
 Therefore broþer Adam lose me out' of boȝides
 And I will parte wiþ þe of my free londes
 Vp such' forward' seide Adam ywis
 I wil do þerto al þat' in me is 412
 Adam seide Gamelyn as mote I þe
 I wil holde þe Conaunte and þou wil me [fre]
 Anoon as Adams lord' to bed was goȝ
 Adam toke þe kayes and lete Gamelyn out' anoȝ 416

He vnlocked Gamelyn boþ hondes *and* fete
 In hope of auancement þat he hym byhete
 Than seide Gamelyn þonked be goddis sonde
 Nowe I am lose boþ fote and honde 420
 Had I nowe eten and dronken arizt
 þer is noon in þis hous shuld bynde me þis nyzt
 Adam toke Gamelyn as stille as eny stone
 And ladde him into þe spence raply anone 424
 And sette him to sopere rizt in a priuey styde [leaf 68]
 He bad hym do gladly and so he dide
 Anoon as Gamelyn had eten wel *and* fyne
 And þerto y-dronken wel of þe rede wyne 428
 Adam seide Gamelyn what is nowe þi rede
 Or I go to my broþer and Gerd of his his hede
 Gamelyn seide Adam it shal not be so
 I can teche þe a rede þat is worþ þe twoo/ 432
 I wote wel forsoþ þat þis is no nay/
 We shul haue a Mangerye rizt on sonday
 Abbotes and Priours mony here shul be
 And oþer men of holy chirch as I telle þe 436
 þou shal stonde vp by þe post as þou were bounde fast
 And I shal leue hem vnloke þat away þou may hem cast
 Whan þat þei han eten and wasshen her handes
 þow shalt biseche hem alle to bringe þe out of bondes 440
 And if þei willen borowe þe þat were good game
 þan were þou out of prison and [I] out of blame
 And if ecche of hem saye to vs nay
 I shal do anoþer I swere by þis day 444
 þow shalt haue a good staf *and* I wil haue anoþere
 And cristes curs haf þat on þat failleþ þat oþere
 þe for god seide Gamelyn I say it for me
 If I faille on my side evel mot I þee 448
 If we shul algate assoille hem of her synne
 Warne me brother/ Adam whan we shul bygynne
 Gamelyn seid Adam by seint charite
 I wil warne þe biforn whan it shal be 452

Whan I winke on þe. loke forto gone
 And caste away þi fetters and come to me anon
 Adam seide Gamelyn blessed be þi bonys
 þat is a good counseile ȝeuen for þe nonys 456
 Ȝif þei warne me þe to bring out of bondes
 I wil sette good strokes riȝt on here lendes
 Whan þe Sonday was commen and folk to þe feest
 ffaire þei were welcomed. boȝ leest *and* mest 460
 And euer as þei at þe haldore come Inne (leaf 63, back)
 They casten her yen/ on ȝonge Gamelyn
 The fals knyȝt his broȝer ful of trecherye
 Al þe gettes þat þer were at þe mangerye 464
 Of Gamelyn his broȝer he tolde hem wiȝ mouȝe
 Al þe harme *and* þe shame þat he telle couȝe
 Whan þei were yserued of messes ij. or thre
 þan seide Gamelyn howe serue ȝe me 468
 It is not wel serued by god þat aft made
 þat I sitte fastinge and oȝer men make glade
 The fals knyȝt his broȝer þer as he stode
 Told to aft þe gastes þat Gamelyn was wode 472
 And Gamelyn stode stille and answerd nouȝt
 But Adames wordes he helde in his þouȝt
 Thoo Gamelyn gan speke doolfully wiȝ aft
 To þe grete lordes þat seten in þe haȝt 476
 ¶ Lordes he seide for cristes passion
 Helpe to bringe Gamelyn out of prison
 þan seide an Abbot sorowe on his cheke
 He shal haue cristes curs and seint Maries eke 480
 That þe out of prison beggeȝ or borowe
 And euer worȝ him wel þat doȝ þe moche sorowe
 After þat Abbot þan speke anȝere
 I wold þine hede were of þough þou were my broȝere 484
 Aft þat þe borowe foule mot hem falle
 Thus þei seiden alle þat were in þe halle
 ¶ Than seide a Priour/ euel mote he preue
 It is grete sorowe and care boȝ þat þou art alyue 488

APPENDIX TO GROUP A. GAmELYN. Petworth MS.

Ow seide Gamelyn so brouke I my bone
 Now haue I spied þat frendes haue I non
 Cursed mote he worþ. boþ flessþ and blood
 þat euer doþ Priour or Abbot eny good 492
 Adam þe Spencere toke vp þe cloth
 And loked on Gamelyn and segh þat he was wroþe
 Adam on the Pantry litel he þouȝt
 And two good stanes to þe halle door he brouȝt 496
 Adam loked on Gamelyn and he was warre anoþ [leaf 60]
 And cast away þe fetters and bygan to goñ
 Whan he come to Adam he toke þat on staf
 And bygan to worch and good strokes ȝaf 500
 Gamelyn come into þe halle and þe Spencer boþe
 And loked hem aboute as þei hadden be wroþe
 Gamelyn spreyneth holy watere wiþ an oken spire
 That some þat stode vprizt felle in þe fire 504
 þer was no lewe man þat in þe halle stode
 þat wolde do Gamelyn eny þing but good
 But stoden bisides and lete hem boþ wirch
 ffor þei had no rewþe of men of holy chirch 508
 Abbot or Priour monk or chanoun
 That Gamelyn ouertoke. anoþ þei ȝeden down
 Ther was noon of alle þat wiþ his staf mette
 þat he ne made hem ouerþrowe to quyte hem his dette
 Gamelyn seide Adam for seint charite 513
 Pay good lyuere for þe lous of me
 And I wil kepe þe door so euere here I masse
 Er þei bene assoilled þer shal non passe 516
 Doute þe not seide Gamelyn whil we ben in fere
 Kepe þowe wel þe door and I wil wirche here
 Bystere þe good adam and lete non fle
 And we shul telle largely how mony þat þer be 520
 Gamelyn seide Adam do hem but goode
 þei bene men of holy church drowe of hem no blode
 Saue wel þe crowne. and do hem no harmes
 But breke boþ her logges/ and siþen her armes 524

APPENDIX TO GROUP A. GAMELYN. *Petworth MS.*

Thus Gamelyn and Adam wrouȝt ryȝt fast
 And pleide wiȝ þe monkes and made hem agast
 biðere þei come ridinge Ioly wiȝ swaynes
 And home aȝein þei were ladde in cartes *and* waynes 528
 Tho þei hadden al ydo. þan seide a grey frere
 Allas Sir' abbot' what' did we nowe here
 Whan þat' we comen hidere it' was a cold' rede
 Vs had be bet' haue be at' home. *with water and* brede 532
 While Gamelyn made orders of monke *and* frere [*leaf 69, back*]
 Euere stood his broȝer and made foule chere
 Gamelyn vp wiȝ his staf þat' he wel knewe
 And girt' hym in þe nek þat' he ouer thrwe 536
 A litel aboue þe Girdel þe Rigge-boon he brast
 And sette him in þe fetters þer he sat' arst'
 Sitte þer broȝer seide Gamelyn
 fforto colen þi body/ as I did myȝn 540
 As swiȝ as þei had wroken hem on her footȝ
 þei asked water and wasshen anoȝ
 What' some for her loue and some for her Awe
 Aȝ þe seruauȝtes serued hem on þe best' lawe 544
 þe Sherreue was þennes but .v. myle
 And aȝ was tolde him in a lytel while
 Howe Gamelyn and Adam had ydo a sorye rees
 Bounden and wounded men aȝeinste þe kingges pees/ 548
 Tho bygan sone striȝ for to wake
 And þe shereff about' Gamelyn forto take
 ¶ Now liȝen and listen so god ȝeue ȝou good fyne
 And ye shul here good game of yonge Gamelyne 552
 xxiijȝ ȝonge men þat' helde hem ful bold'
 Come to þe shiref and seide þat' þei wold'
 Gamelyn and Adam fette by her fay
 The Sheref ȝaue hem leue soȝ for to say 556
 Thei hiden fast' wold þei not lynne
 To þei come to þe gate þere Gamelyn was inne
 Thei knocked on þe gate þe porter was nyȝe
 And loked out' att' an hool as man þat' was sleȝe 560

APPENDIX TO GROUP A. GAMELYN. *Petworth MS.*

þe Porter had bihold hem a litel while
 He loued wel Gamelyn and was dradde of gyle
 And lete þe wikett stonde ful stille
 And asked hem wiþ out what was her wille 564
 ffor aþ þe grete company/ speke but oon
 Vndo þe gate porter and lat vs in goñ
 þan seide þe Porter so brouke I my chyn
 3e shul saie 3oure erand er 3e come Inne 568
 Sey to Gamelyn and Adam/ if þeire wil be [leaf 70]
 We wil speke wiþ hem two wordes or þre
 ffelawe seide þe Porter stonde þer stille
 And I wil wende to Gamelyn to wete his wille 572
 Inne went þe porter to Gamelyn anōñ
 And saide sir I warne 3ou here ben commen 3our' foon
 The Shireues men bene at þe gate
 fforto take 3ou boþ 3e shul not scape 576
 Porter seide Gamelyn so mote I þe
 I wil alowe þi wordes whan I my tyme se
 Go ageyn to þe gate and dwelle wiþ hem a while
 And þou shalt se riȝt sone porter a gile 580
 Adam seide gamelyn hast þe to goñ
 We han foo-men mony and frendes neuere oñ
 It bene þe shireues men þat hider bene commen
 þei ben swore to-gidere þat we shal be nomen 584
 Gamelyn seide Adam hye þe riȝt blyve
 And if I faile þe þis day euel mot I þriue
 And we shul so welcome þe shyreues men
 þat some of hem shal make her beddes in þe fenne 588
 At a postern gate Gamelyn out went
 And a good Cartstaf in his hondes hent
 Adam hent sone anoþer grete staff
 ffor to helpen Gamelyne and good strokes ȝaf 592
 Adam felled tweyn and Gamelyn þre
 þe oþer sette fete on erþe and bygan to flee
 What seide Adam so euere here I masse
 I haue riȝt good wyne drynk er 3e passe 596

APPENDIX TO GROUP A. GAMELYN. Petworth MS.

Nay by god seide þei þi drink is not goode
 It wolde make a mannys brayn to lyen on his hode
 Gamelyn stode stille and loked hym aboute
 And seide þe Shyref commep wiþ a grete route 600
 Adam seide Gamelyn what bene nowe þi redes
 Here commep þe sheref and wil haue our hedes
 Adam seide to Gamelyn my rede is now þis
 Abide we no lenger lest we fare amys 604
 I rede we to wode goñ/ er we be founde [leaf 70, back]
 Better is þer louse þan in þe tounne bounde
 Adam toke by þe honde yonge Gamelyn
 And euery of hem dronke a drauht of wyñ 608
 And after token he cours and wenten her way
 T[h]o fonde þe Shyrreue nyst but non aye
 ¶ The Shirreue list/ doune and went into halle
 And fonde þe lord fetred fast wiþ alle 612
 The Schirreue vnfetred hym riht sone anon
 And sent aftere a leche to hele his rigge-boñ
 Lat we nowe þe fals knyht lye in his care
 And talke we of Gamelyn . and of his fare 616
 Gamelyn into þe wode stalked stille
 And Adam Spensere liked riht ille
 Adam swore to Gamelyn by seint Richere
 Nowe I see it is mery to be a spencere 620
 3it leuer me were kayes to bere
 þan walken in þis wilde wode my cloþes to tere
 Adam seide Gamelyn dismay þe riht nouht
 Mony good mannys child in care is brouht 624
 As þei stode talkinge boþen in fere
 Adam herd talking of men. and riht nygh hem þei were
 Tho Gamelyn vnder wode loked ariht
 vij^{xx}. of zonge men he seye wel ydiht 628
 Alle satte at þe mete compas about
 Adam seide Gamelyn now haue I no dout
 Aftere bale commep bote þorgh goddis myht
 Me þink of mete and drynk I haue a siht 632

Adam loked þoo vnder wode bough
 And whan he segh mete was glad ynogh
 ffor he hoped to god to haue his dele
 And he was sore alonged after a mele 636
 As he seide þat worde þe mayster outlawe
 Saugh Adam and gamelyn vnder þe wode shawe
 3onge men seide þe maistere by þe good rode
 I am ware of gastes . god sende vs goode 640
 3one ben twoo 3onge men wel ydight' [leaf 71r]
 And paraventure þer ben mo who so loket riȝt
 A-riseþ vp 3onge men and fette hem to me
 It is good þat we weten what men þei be 644
 Vp þer sterten .viij. from þe dynere
 And metten wiþ Gamelyn and Adam Spencer
 Whan þei were nyghe hem þan seide þat oon
 3ealdeþ vp 3onge men 3our bowes and 3our fioon 648
 þan seide Gamelyn þat 3ong' was/ of// elde
 Moche sorowe mote þei haue þat to 3ou hem 3elde
 I Curs noon opere but' right my silue
 þoo 3e fette to 3ou .v. þan be 3e twelue 652
 Whan þei hard by his word þat myȝt' was in his arme
 Ther was noon of hem þat wold do hym harme
 But seide to Gamelyn myldely and stille
 Comeþ a-fore our Maister and seiþ to hym 3our wille 656
 3onge men seide Gamelyn be 3our lewte
 What man is 3our maister þat 3e wiþ be
 Alle þei answerd wiþ out lesing'
 Our maister is crowned of outlawe king' 660
 Adam seide Gamelyn go we in cristes name
 He may neiþer mete ne drink warne vs for shame
 If þat he be hende and come of gentil blood'
 He wil 3eue vs mete and drink and do us som gode 664
 By seint Iame seide Adam what harme þat I gete
 I wil auenture me þat I had mete
 Gamelyn and Adam went forth in fere
 And þei grette þe Maister þat þei fond þere 668

APPENDIX TO GROUP A. GAMELYN. Petworth MS.

Than seide þe Maister king' of outlawes
 What' seche ȝe ȝonge men vnder þe wode shawes
 Gamelyn answerd þe king' with his croun
 He most' nedes walk' in feeld þat' may not in town 672
 Sire we walk not here no harme to doo
 But ȝif we mete a dere to shete þerto
 As men þat' bene hungry *and* mow no mete fynde
 And beñ hard' bystad' vnder wode lynde 676
 Of Gamelyns wordes / þe maister had reuþe [leaf 71, back]
 And seide ȝe shul haue ynow haue god my treuth
 He bad hem sitte down forto take rest'
 And bad hem ete and drink' and þat' of þe best' 680
 As þei eten and dronken wel and fyne
 þan seide on to anoþer. þis is Gamelyn
 þo was þe Maistere outlawe into counseile nome
 And tolde howe it was Gamelyn þat' þider was come 684
 Anon as he herd' how it' was byfalle
 He made him maister' vnder hym ouer hem alle
 WithInne þe iij. weke hym come tydinge
 To þe Maistere outlawe þat' was her kinge 688
 þat' he shuld come home his pees was made
 And of þat' good tydinge he was ful glade
 þoo seide he to his ȝonge men soþ forto telle
 Me bene comen tydinges ! I may no lenger dwelle 692
 Tho was Gamelyn anon wiþ out' taryinge
 Made maister' outlawe and crowned her kinge
 Whan Gamelyn was crowned king' of outlawes
 And walked had a while vnder þe wode shawes / 696
 þe fals knyȝt' his broþer was sherif *and* sire
 And lete his broþere endite for hate *and* for ire
 þoo were his boond-men sory ! *and* no þing' glade
 Whan Gamelyn her lord / wolfes hede was *cried and made*
 And sent' out of his men wher þei myȝt' hym fynde
 ffor to go seke Gamelyn vnder þe wode lynde
 To telle hym tyding' þe wynde was wente
 And al his good reued and al his men shent' 704

APPENDIX TO GROUP A. GAMELYN. Petworth MS.

Whan þei had hym founden on knees þei hem setten
 And adoune with her hodes and her lord gretten
 Sir' wreth þou not' for þe good rode
 ffor we han brouȝt' þou tydyngges but' þei be not' gode 708
 Nowe is þi broþer Sherreue and haþ þe bayly
 And haþ endited þe / and wolfes hede doþ þe crye
 Allas seide Gamelyn þat' euere I was so esclak
 þat' I ne had broke his nek whan I his rigge brak' 712
 Goþ greteþ wel myn husbondes and wif [leaf 72]
 I wil be at' þe next' shyre haue god my lif
 Gamelyn come redy to þe next' shire
 And þer was his broþer boþ lord and sire 716
 Gamelyn boldely come into þe mote halle
 And putt' a doun his hode / amonge þo lordes alle
 God saue þou lordinggs þat' here be
 But' broke-bak sherreue euel mote þou þee 720
 Whi hast þou doñ me þat' shame and vilonye
 fforto lat' endite me / and wolfeshede do me crye
 þoo þouȝt' þe fals knyȝt' fforto bene awreke
 And lette Gamelyn most' he no þing' speke 724
 Might' þer be no grace. but' Gamelyn atte last'
 Was cast' in prison and fettred fast'
 ¶ Gamelyn haþ a broþere þat' hiȝt' sir Ote
 Als good an knyȝht' and hende as myȝt goñ on fote 728
 Anoon ȝede a massager' to þat' good knyȝt'
 And tolde him al to-gidere how gamelyn was diȝt'
 Anoon whan sir' ote herd howe Gamelyn was diȝt'
 He was riȝt' sory and no þing' liȝt' 732
 And lete sadel a stede and þe way namme
 And to his tweyne breþeren riȝt' sone he camme
 Sir' seide Sir' Ote to þe sherreue þoo
 We bene but' þre breþeren shul we neuere be mo 736
 And þou hast' prisoned þe best of vs alle
 Such' anopere broþer euel mote hym byfalle
 Sir' Ote seide þe false knyȝht' lat' be þi cors
 By god for þi wordes he shal fare þe wors 740

To þe kingges prison he is ynome
 And þer he shal abide to þe Iustise come
 Parde Seide Sir Ote better it shal be
 I bid hym to maynprise þat þou graunte me 744
 To þe next sitting of delyueraunce
 And lat þan Gamelyn stonde to his chaunce
 Broþere in such a forward I take hym to þe
 And by þ^e fader soule þat þe bigate and me 748
 But he be redy whan þe Iustice sitte [leaf 72, back]
 þou shalt bere þe Iuggement for al þi grete witte
 I graunte wel seide Sir Ote þat it so be
 Lat delyuere hym anon and take hym to me 752
 Tho was gamelyn delyuered to Sir ote his broþer
 And þat nyght dwelled þe oon wiþ þe oþer
 On the morowe seide Gamelyn to Sir Ote þe hende
 Broþer he seide I mote forsoþ from 30ⁿ wende 756
 To loke howe my 3onge men leden her lif
 Whedere þei lyuen in Ioie or ellis in striff
 By god seide Sir ote þat is a colde rede
 Nowe I se þat alle þe Carke shal fal on my hede 760
 ffor whan þe Iustise sitte and þou be not yfound
 I shal anon be take and in þi stede I-bound
 Broþer seide Gamelyn dismay 3ou nouȝt
 ffor by seint Iame in Gales þat mony men haþ souȝt 764
 ȝif that god almyȝty holde my lif and witte
 I wil be redy whan þe Iustice sitte
 Than seide sire Ote to gamelyn god shilde þ^e from shame
 Come whan þou seest tyme and bring vs out of blame 768
 ¶ Lipeneth and listeneth and holde 3ou stille
 And 3e shul here howe Gamelyn had al his wille
 Gamelyn went vnder þe wode Ris
 And fonde þer pleying 3eng^e men of pris 772
 þo was 3ong^e gamelyn riȝt glad ynouȝe
 Whan he fonde his men vnder wode bouȝe
 Gamelyn and his men talkeden in fere
 And þei had good game her maister to here 776

APPENDIX TO GROUP A. GAMELYN. Petworth MS.

His men tolde him of auentures þat þei had found
 And Gamelyn tolde hem aȝein howe he was fast bounde
 While Gamelyn was outlawe had he no cors
 þer was no man þat for him ferde þe wors 780
 But Abbottes and Priours monk and chanone
 On hem left he nouȝt whan he myȝt hem nome
 While Gamelyn and his men made merþes ryve
 þe fals knyght his broþer euel mot he thryve 784
 ffor he was fast about boþ day and oper' [leaf 78]
 ffor to hiren þe quest to hongen his broþer
 Gamelyn stode on a day and byheeld
 þe wodes and þe Shawes and þe wild feelde 788
 He þouȝt on his broþere how he hym byhette
 þat he wold be redy whan þe Iustice sette
 He þouȝt wel he wold wip-out delay
 Come to-fore þe Iustice to kepen his day 792
 And saide to his ȝonge men dighteþ ȝou ȝare
 ffor whan þe Iustice sitte we most be þare
 ffor I am vnder borowe til þat I come
 And my broþer for me to prison shal be nome 796
 Be seint lame seide his ȝonge men and þou rede þerto
 Ordeyn how it shal be and it shal be do
 While Gamelyn was commyng' þer þe Iustice satte
 þe fals knyȝt his broþer forȝate he not þat 800
 To hire þe men of þe quest to hangen his broþer
 þouȝe þei had not þat oon þei wold haue þat oper
 Tho come Gamelyn from vnder þe wode Ris
 And brouȝt with hym ȝonge men of pris 804
 I see wel seide Gamelyn þe Iustice is sette
 Go a-forȝ adam and loke how it spette
 Adam went into þe halle and loked al aboute
 He seȝh þer stonde lordes grete and stoute 808
 And Sire Ote his broþer fetred ful fast
 þoo went Adam out of halle as he were a-gast
 Adam seide to Gamelyn and to his felawes all
 Sire Ote stout fetered in þe mote haȝt 812

[.]	
. no gap in the MS.]	
If gode zeue vs grace wel forto doo	
He shal it abigge þat it brouȝt þerto /	816
þan seide Adam þat lockes had hore	
Cristes curs mote he haue þat hym bonde so sore	
And þou wilt Gamelyn do after my rede	
þer is noon in þe halle shal bere away his hede	820
Adam seide Gamelyn we wil not do soo	
We wil slee þe giltif and lat þe opere goo/	
I wil into þe halle and with þe Iustice speke	[leaf 73, back]
Of hem þat bene giltif I wil ben awreke	824
Late no skape at þe door take ȝonge men ȝeme	
ffor I wil be Iustise þis day domes to deme	
God spede me þis day at my newe werk	
Adam come with me for þou shalt be my clerk	828
His men answerde hym. and bad done his best	
And if þou to vs haue nede þou shalt finde vs prest	
We wil stonde wiþ þe while þat we may dure	
And but we worchen manly pay vs none hure	832
ȝonge men said Gamelyn so mote I wel þe	
A trusty maister ȝe shul fynde me	
Rizt þere þe Iustise satte in þe halle	
Inne went Gamelyn amonges hem alle	836
Gamelyn lete vnfetter his broþer out of bende	
þan seide Sir Ote his broþer þat was hende	
þow haddest almost Gamelyn dwelled to longe	
ffor þe quest is out on me þat I shuld honge	840
Broþer seide Gamelyn so god zeue me good rest	
þis day shul þei be honged / þat ben on þe quest	
And þe Iustise boþ þat is þe Iuge man	
And þe Sherreue also. þorgh hym it bigan	844
Than seide Gamelyn to þe Iustice	
Now is þi power done. þe most nedes rise	
þow hast ȝeuen domes þat bene euel dizt	
I wil sitten in þi sete and dressen/ hem ariȝt	848

The Iustise satte stille and roos not anone
 And Gamelyn cleued his cheke bone
 Gamelyn toke him in his armes *and* no more spake
 But threwe hym ouer þe barre and his arme brake 852
 Dorst noon to Gamelyn seie but good
 ffor feerd of þe company þat *with-out* stooode
 Gamelyn sette hym down in þe Iustise sete
 And Sire Ote his broþere by hym. and Adam at his fete
 Whan gamelyn was sette in þe Iustise sede
 Herken of a bourde þat Gamelyn dede
 He lete fetter þe Iustise and his fals broþere [leaf 74]
 And did hem come to þe barre þat on *with* þat opere 860
 Whan gamelyn had þus ydone had he no rest
 Til he had enquired who was on his quest
 fforto demen his broþer sire Ote forto honge
 Er he wist what þei were hym þouȝt ful longe 864
 But as sone as Gamelyn wist where þei were
 He did hem euerechone fetter in fere
 And bringgen hem to þe barre & setten in rewe
 By my feiþ seide þe Iustise þe sherrue is a shrewe 868
 þan seide Gamelyn to þe Iustise
 þou hast ȝone domes of þe worst assise
 And þe xij. Sesoures þat weren on þe quest
 þei shul be honged þis day so haue I good rest 872
 Than seide þe sheref to ȝonge Gamelyn
 Lord I crie þe mercie broþer art þou myn
 þerfor seide Gamelyn haue þou cristes curs
 ffor and þow were maister. I shuld haue wora 876
 fforto make short tale and not to longe
 He ordeyned hym a quest of his men stronge
 þe Iustise and þe Sirreue boþ honged hie
 To weyuen wiþ þe ropes and þe winde drye 880
 And þe xij. Sisours sorowe haue þat rekke
 Aft þei were honged fast by þe nekke
 þus endep þe fals knyȝt wiþ his trecherye
 þat euere had lad his lif in falsnesse *and* folye 884

He was honged by þe nek and not by þe purs
 þat was þe mede þat he had for his faders curs
 Sire Otes was eldest and Gamelyn was þenge
 Wenten to her frendes / and passed to þe kinge 888
 þei maden pees wiþ þe king of þe best sise
 þe king loued wel sir Ote & made hym iustise
 And after þe king made Gamelyn in est and in west
 þe cheef Iustice of his free forest 892
 Aft his wizt þonge men þe king forgaþ her gilt
 And siþen in good office þe king haþ hem pilt
 Thus warne Gamelyn his land and his lede
 And wreke him on his enemyes. and quytte hem her mede
 And Sire Ote his broþer made him his heire
 And Siþen wedded gamelyn a wif good and faire
 They lyued to-gidere þe while þat crist wold
 And siþen was Gamelyn grauen vnder mold 900
 And so shul we all : may þer no man fle
 God bring vs to þat Ioye þat euer shal be
 here endeþ þe tale of þe Coke.)

*[The Prologue and Tale of the Shipman follow, without
 any break in the MS.]*

[NOTICE—As the order of the Tales after the *Man of Law's* in the Petworth MS differs from the order adopted for the Six-Text, no further issue of the separate print of the Petworth MS will take place until the *Squire's Tale* is issued in its proper order in the Six-Text, according to the following scheme :—

<i>Six-Text</i>	<i>Petworth MS.</i>
rest of { <i>Melibeus</i>	Group F 1 <i>SQUIRE</i>
Group B { <i>Monk</i>	Group E 2 <i>Merchant</i>
{ <i>Nun's Priest</i>	
Group C { <i>Doctor</i>	Group D { <i>Wife</i>
{ <i>Pardoner</i>	{ <i>Friar</i>
	{ <i>Summoner</i>
Group D { <i>Wife of Bath</i>	Group E 1 <i>Clerk</i>
{ <i>Friar</i>	Group F 2 <i>Franklin</i>
{ <i>Summoner</i>	
Group E { <i>Clerk</i>	Group G { <i>Second Nun</i>
{ <i>Merchant</i>	{ <i>Canon's Yeoman</i>
Group F { <i>SQUIRE</i>	Group C { <i>Doctor</i>
{ <i>Franklin</i>	{ <i>Pardoner</i>
Group G { <i>Second Nun</i>	rest of { <i>Thopas</i>
{ <i>Canon's Yeoman</i>	Group B { <i>Melibeus</i>
	{ <i>Monk</i>
Group H <i>Manciple</i>	{ <i>Nun's Priest</i>
Group I <i>Parson</i>	Group H <i>Manciple</i>
	Group I <i>Parson</i>]

¶ And [on leaf 74, back]

Thus gynneþ þe prologe of þe shipman

N owe frendes seide our hoost so dere	¶ The Prologe.
How likeþ 3ou by Iohn þe pardonere	
ffor he haþ vnbokeled wel þe male	
He haþ vs tolde riȝt a thrifty tale	4
As touching of mysgouernaunce	
I prey to god 3eue hym good chaunche	
As 3e han herd of þise retoures þre	
Now gentil Marynere hertely I preye þe	8
Telle vs a good tale and þat riȝt anon	
It shal be done by god & by seint Iohn	
Seide þis marinere as wel as euer I can	
And riȝt anon his tale he bygan .	12

¶ Thus endeþ þe prologe of þe shipman.

[No gap in the MS.]

GROUP B. (β. FRAGMENT III.)

§ 4. THE SHIPMAN'S TALE.

And here bygynneþ þe shipman tale

[on leaf 74, back]

A Marchaunt whilom dwelled in seynt denys
 þat riche was for which men held hym wys
 A wif he had of excellent bewte
 And companable and reuerent was she
 Which is a ping þat causeþ more dispence
 þan worþ is al þe chere and reuerence 1196
 þat men hem done at feestes and at daunces
 such salutacions and countenaunces
 Passeþ as doþ þe shadowe vpon a wall
 But woo is hym þat payen mote for all 1200
 The Sely husbond algate he mot paye
 He mote vs cloþe and vs aray
 ffor his owne worship richely [leaf 75]
 In which aray we daunzen Iolily 1204
 And if þat he may not peraventure
 Or ellis list noon such spence endure
 But þenkeþ þat it is waast and ylost
 þan mote anoper paien for þe cost 1208
 Or lene vs gold and þat is perilous
 This noble marchaunt helde a noble hous
 ffor which he had alday grete repayre
 ffor his largesse and for his wif was faire 1212
 þat wonder is but herkenep to my tale
 Amonge all his gestis. grete and smale
 Ther was a monk a faire man and a bold
 I trowe xxx⁴. wynter he was olde 1216
 That euer in oon was drowing to þat place
 þis yonge monk þat was so faire of face

PETWORTH 156 (G-T. 168)

Aqueynted was so wiþ þat good man
 [. 1220

 *no gap in the MS.*]

And eke þis monke of which I byganne 1224

Were boþ twoo yborn in oo vilage
 þe monke hym cleymed as for cosynage
 And he aȝein seiþ not ones nay

But was as glad þerof as foule of day 1228

ffor to his hert' it was a grete plesaunce
 Thus bene þei knyut wiþ eterne aliance
 And eche of hem gan oper ensure
 Of breþerode þe whiles her lif may dure 1232

ffree was dañ Iohn and namely of dispence

As in þat hous and ful of diligence

To do plesaunce and also grete costage

He forȝate not to ȝeue þe lest page 1236

In alle þat hous but after her degre

He ȝaue þe lord and siþen his Mayne

Whan þat he came some maner honest þing

ffor which þei were as glad of his commynȝ 1240

As foule is fayne whan þe sonne vpriseth

No more herof as nowe for þis suffiseþ

But so byfelle þis marchaunt on a day

Shope hym to make redy his aray [leat 75, back]

Towarde þe toun of Brugges for to fare

To byen þer a porcioun of ware

ffor which he haþ to Paris sent anōn

A massagere and preied haþ dañ Iohn 1248

þat he shuld come to seynt denys to pleyȝ

Wiþ hym and wiþ his wif a day or tweyȝ

Or he to brugges went in al wise

This noble monk of which I ȝou devise 1252

Hap of his abbot as hym list licence

Bycause he was a man of high prudence

And eke an officere out' forto ride
 To seen her graunges and her beernes wide 1256
 And vnto seint denys he commeþ anon
 Who was so welcome as my lord' dan Iohn
 Our dere cosyn ful of curtesie
 With him brougt' he a Iubbe of Maluesie 1260
 And eke anoþer ful of fyne vernage
 As volatile as ay was his vsage
 And þus I lat' hem .ete. boþ drink' and playe
 This merchaunt' and þis monk a day or twaye 1264
 The .iiij. day þis Marchaunte vp ariseþ
 And on his nede sadly hym aviseth
 And vp into his counter hous goþ he
 To rekne wiþ him self as wel may be 1268
 Of þilk ȝere hou þat' it wiþ hym stode
 And how he despended had his good
 And ȝif þat' he encreased were or non
 His bokes and his bagges mony on 1272
 He leiþ to-fore him on his countyng' boord'
 fful riche was his tresour and his hord'
 ffor whiche ful fast' his counter door he shette
 And eke he nold' þat' no man shuld' hym lette 1276
 Of his acomptes for þe mene tyme
 And þus he sitte til it' was passed prime
 Dan Iohn was risen in þe morowe also
 And in þe Gardyne walked to and fro 1280
 And haþ his þingges seide ful curteisly [leaf 76]
 This good wif come walking' prively
 Into þe Gardyne þer he walked soft'
 And hym salueth as he haþ don' ful oft' 1284
 A mayden childe cam in her companye
 Which as hure lust' she may gouern and gye
 ffor ȝit' vndere þe ȝeerd was þe mayde
 O deer Cosyn myn dan Iohn she seide 1288
 What' eileþ ȝou so rathe to arise
 Nece quod he it' auȝt ynough suffise

V. houres forto alepe vpon a nyȝt
 But it were for an olde palled wiȝt 1292
 As ben piȝe wedded men þat lye *and* dare
 As in a forme sitte a wery hare
 Were al for-straught wiȝ houndes grete *and* smale
 But dere nece whi beȝ ȝe so pale 1296
 I trowe certes þat oure good man
 Haȝ ȝow labored siȝ þe nyȝt bygan
 That ȝou were nede to resten hastely
 And wiȝ þat word he lough ful merely 1300
 And of his owne þouȝt he wex al rede
 This faire wiȝ gan to shake her hede
 And seide þus / ȝe god wote al quod she
 Nay Cosin myne it stont not so wiȝ me 1304
 ffor by þat god þat ȝaue me saule *and* lif
 In aȝ þe rewme of fraunce is þer no wiȝ
 þat lasse lust haȝ to do þat sorie play
 for I may syngen alas and wele away 1308
 That I was born but no wiȝt quod she
 I dar not tellen how it stant wiȝ me
 werfore I þenk out of þis lond to wende
 Or ellis of my self to make an ende 1312
 So ful I am of drede and eke of care
 þis monk bygan vpon þis wiȝ to stare
 A saide alas nay nece god forbede
 þat ȝe for eny sorowe or eny drede 1316
 fforto ȝoure self but telleȝ me ȝour greef [leaf 76, back]
 Perauenture I may in ȝoure meschief
 Conseile or helpe *and* þerfor telleȝ me
 Alle ȝour avis for it shal be secre 1320
 ffor on my portooȝ I make an oȝe
 þat neuere in my lif for leef ne loȝe
 Ne shal I of no counsaile ȝou by-wrey
 þe same aȝein to ȝou quod she I seie 1324
 By god and by þis portooȝ I swere
 þei men me wold al into peces tare

Ne shal I neuer forto goo to helle
 Bywrey a word of þing' þat ȝe me telle 1328
 Nouȝt for no cosinage ne alliance
 But verrely for loue *and* affiance
 Thus bene þei sworn and here vpon kist'
 And eche of hem told' oþer what hem list' 1332
 Cosyn quod she if I had a space
 As I haue non namely in þis place
 þan wold I tellen a legend' of my lif'
 þat I suffred haue siþ I was a wif' 1336
 With myn husbond al þough he be ȝour cosyñ
 Nay quod þis monke by god & by seint Martyn
 He nys no more Cosyn vnto me
 þan is þis leef' þat' hongep on þe tree 1340
 I clepe hym so by seint' denys in ffraunce
 To haue þe more cause of a-queyntaunce
 Of ȝowe þe which I haue loued specialy
 A-bouen al wommen sikerly 1344
 þis swere I ȝou on my professioun
 Telleþ ȝour greef lest' he come adoun
 And hastep ȝou and goop ȝoure way anon
 My dere loue quod she o dañ Iohn 1348
 iful leef me were þis counsaile to hide
 But out' it' mote / it' may no lengers bide
 My husbond is to me þe worst' man
 þat' euer was siþ þis world' bygan 1352
 But' siþen I am a wif it' sitte not' to me [leaf 77]
 To telle no wight' of our priuete
 Neiper in bedde ne in noon oþer place
 God shild' I shuld telle it' for his grace 1356
 A wif ne shuld not' seye of her husbond'
 But' al honure as I can vnderstonde
 Saue vnto ȝou þus moche telle I shal
 As helpe me god he nys not' worþ at' al 1360
 In no degre þe valewe of a flee
 But' ȝit' me greueþ most' his nygarde

And wel 3e wote þat' wommen naturelly
 desiren þingges . sex as wel as I . 1364
 þei wolden þat' her husbond' shuld' be
 Hardy and wise . riche *and* þerto free
 And boxom to his wif and fressh' abedde
 But by þat' ilk lord þat' for vs bledde 1368
 ffor his honoure my self to aray
 A sonday next' I mote pay
 An C. frankes or ellis am I lorn'
 3it' were me leuere þat' I were vnborn' 1372
 þan me were done a sclaunder or vilanye
 And if myn husbonde eke my3t' espie
 I nere but' lost and þerfor I 3ou prey
 lene me þis somme and ellis mote I dey 1376
 Danne Iohn I seie lene me þise hundred frankes
 Parde I wold' not' faile þe my þonkes
 If þat' 3ou lust to do þat' I 3ou pray
 ffor a certeyn day I wil 3ow pay 1380
 And to do 3ou what' plesaunce *and* seruyse
 þat' I may do right as 3ou list' devise
 And but' I do god take on me vengeance
 As foule as had genyloñ of ffraunce 1384
 This gentil monke answerd' in þis manere
 Nowe trewly myn owne lady dere
 I haue quod he on 3ow so grete a roupe
 þat' I 3owe swere *and* plizt' 3ou my troupe 1388
 That' whan 3oure husbonde is to fflaundes fare [leaf 77, back]
 I wil delyuere 3owe out' of þis worldes care
 I wil bringen 3ou an C. frankes
 And wiþ þat' he kaught' hure by þe shankes 1392
 And hire enbrased harde and kissed oft'
 God now 3oure way quod he al stille *and* soft'
 And lat' vs dyne as sone as euere 3e may
 ffor by my children it is prime of day 1396
 God nowe and beþ as trewe as I shal be
 Nowe ellis god forbede sire quod she

162 GROUP B. § 4. SHIPMAN'S TALE. Petworth MS.

And forþ she goop as Ielous as a pye
 And had þe Cokes þat þei shuld hem hie 1400
 So þat men myȝt dyne and þat anoñ
 Vp to her husbond is þis wif goñ
 And knockeþ at his counter boldely
 Quy la quod he . Peter it am I 1404
 Quod she what howe longe wol ȝe fast
 How longe tyme wil ȝe rekken *and* cast
 ȝoure *sommes* ȝoure bokes *and* ȝoure þingges
 þe deuel haue part on al suche rekenyngges 1408
 ȝe han ynogh *parle* of goddes sonde
 Come doune to day and lat ȝoure bagge stonde
 Ne be ȝe not ashamed þat ðañ Iohñ
 Shal fasting al þis day elenge goñ 1412
 What lat vs here masse and go dyne
 Wiff quod þis man litel canst þou devyne
 þe Curious bysynes þat we haue
 ffor of vs Chapmen so god me saue 1416
 And by þat lord þat called is seint yve
 Scarcely amonges .xij. tweyn shul þriue
 Continuely lasting vnto our age
 We may wel make chere and good visage 1420
 And drive forþ þe world as it may be
 And kepen our astate in priuete
 Til we be dede or ellis þat we pleye
 A pilgrimage or gon out of þe weye 1424
 And þerfor haue I grete necessite [leaf 78]
 Vpon þis queynt world to avise me
 ffor euermore we mote stonde in drede
 Of happe and fortune in our chapmanhede 1428
 To fflaundes wil I goo to morowe at day
 And come aȝein as sone as euere I may
 ffor which my dere wif I þe biseke
 As be to euery wight buxom *and* meke 1432
 And forto kepe our good be Curious
 And honestly gouerne wel oure hous

Thow hast' nowē in euery maner wise
 þat' to a þrifty husbonde may suffice 1436
 þe lackeþ noon araye ne no vitaile
 Of siluere in þi purs þou maist' not' faile
 And wip þat' worde his counter door he shette
 And doune he goþ no lenger nold' he lette 1440
 And hastely a masse was þere saide
 And spedely þe tables were ylade
 And to þe dyner fast' þei hem spedde
 And richely þis monke þe chapman fedde 1444
 And after dynere daun Iohn soberly
 This Chapman toke a-part' al priuely
 he seide him þus Cosyn it' stondeþ soo
 þat' wel I see to brugges 3e wil goo 1448
 God and seint' Austyn speke 3ou and gide
 I prei 3ou Cosyn wisly þat' 3e ride
 Gouverneþ 3ou also of 3oure diete
 And temperaly and namely in þis hete 1452
 Bitwix vs twey nedeþ no stronge fare
 ffare wel Cosyn god kepe 3ou fro care
 3if any þinge þer be by day or by nyȝt'
 If it' ligge in my power and in my myȝt' 1456
 þat' 3e me wil commaunde in ony wise
 It' shal be doñ riȝt' as 3e wil devise
 Oon þing' er þat' 3e goñ if þat' 3it may be
 I wold' prei 3ou forto lene me 1460
 An C ffrankes for a weke or twey
 ffor certeyn beestes I mot' beye
 To store wip a place þat' is owres [leaf 78, back]
 God helpe me so I wolde it' were 3oures 1464
 I shal not' faile swerly of my day
 Nouȝt' for a Mt. frankes a myleway
 But' lat' þis þinge be secre I 3ou prey
 And god of heuene spede 3ou in 3oure weye 1468
 And fare nowē wele myn owne cosyn dere
 Graunt' mercy of 3oure cost' & of 3oure chere

This noble Merchaunt gentely anon
 Answerde and seide . O cosyn dan Iohn 1472
 Nowe sikerly pis is a smal request
 My gold is 3oures whan pat 3ou lest
 And not oonly my gold but my chaffare
 Take what 3ou lest god shilde pat 3e spare 1476
 But oo pinge is 3e knowe it wel ynogh
 Of Chapmen pat her money is her plouze
 We may creaunce while we haue a name
 But goldelees forto be is no game 1480
 Paye it azein whan it lith in 3oure ese
 Aftere 3oure myzt fayn wold I 3ou plese
 Thise hundred ffrankes he fette forþ anon
 And priuely he toke it to dan Iohn 1484
 No wist in al pis world wist of pis lone
 Sauyng pis merchaunt and dan Iohn allone
 þei dronken and romen and goñ to pleye
 Til pat dan Iohn rideþ to his abbay 1488
 þe morn come and forþ pis merchaunte rideþ
 To fflaundes ward his prentis wel hym gideþ
 Til he came into brugges merely
 Now goþ pis merchaunt fast and bisily 1492
 Aboute his nede and bieþ and creaunseþ
 He neiþer pleieþ at þe dis ne daunseþ
 But as a merchaunt shortely forto telle
 he lad his lif and þer I lete hym dwelle 1496
 ¶ The sonday next þe merchaunt was a-goñ
 To seynt Denys y-commen is dan Iohn
 Wip croune and berde fressh and newe yshaue
 In al þe hous þer nas so lite a knaue [leaf 79]
 Ne no wist ellis pat he nas fayñ
 ffor pat my lord daun Iohn was come a3ayñ
 And shortely to her poynt forto goñ
 This faire wif acordeþ to daun Iohn 1504
 And for þise hundred frankes he shuld al nyzt
 Haue her in his armes bolt vprizt

And þis acorde perfourmed was in dede
 In myrth al nyȝt a bysy lif þei lede 1508
 Til it was day þat ðaȝ Iohn went his way
 And bad þe mayne fare wele and haue good day
 ffor noon of hem ne no wiȝt in þe toun
 Han of ðaȝ Iohn none suspeciouȝ 1512
 And forþ he rideþ home to his abbaye
 Or wher hym lust no more of hym I saie
 ¶ This marchaunt whan þat ended was þe fare
 To seint Denys he gan forto repara 1516
 And wiþ his wif he makeþ feest *and* chere
 And telleþ her þat chaffare is so dere
 þat nedes most he make a cheuysance
 ffor he was bounden in a reconysaunce 1520
 To pay xxⁱⁱ. þousant sheldes aȝon
 ffor which þis marchaunt is wont to goȝ
 To borowe of certeyȝ frendes þat he hadde
 A certeyȝ ffrankes and somme with hym he laddle 1524
 And whan he was come into þe toun
 ffor greet cheerte and grete affecciouȝ
 Vnto ðaȝ Iohn him first he goþ to pley
 Nouȝt for to borowe of hym no money 1528
 But forto witt and see of his welfare
 And for to tellen him of his chaffare
 As frendes done whan þei ben mette in fere
 ðaȝ Iohn him makeþ feest *and* mery chere 1532
 And he him told aȝein ful specialy
 Howe he had bouȝt ful wel & graciously
 Thonked be god al hole his merchaundyse
 Saue þat he most in al manere wise [leaf 79, back] 1536
 Maken a chevisaunce as for his beste
 And þan shuld he be in Ioye *and* reste
 ðaȝ Iohn answerȝ Certes I am fayȝ
 þat ȝe in hele be commen home aȝeyȝ 1540
 And if þat I were riche as haue I blisse
 Of xxⁱⁱ M^l. sheldes shuldest þou not mysse

166 GROUP B. § 4. SHIPMAN'S TALE. Petworth MS.

ffor 3e so kindely þis oper day
 Lent me gold and as I can and maye 1544
 I þonke 3ou by god *and* by seint Iame
 But napeles I toke vnto our dame
 3oure wif at home þe same gold aȝein
 Vpon 3oure benche she wote it wel carteyn 1548
 By certeyne tokens þat I can her telle
 Now by 3our leue I may no lenger dwelle
 Our abbot wil out of þis toun anon
 And in his company I mot goȝ 1552
 Grete wele our dame myn owene nece swete
 And fare wele dere cosyn to we mete
 ¶ This Marchaunt wip þat was ful ware *and* wys
 Creausned hap and eke paide in Paris 1556
 To certeyn lumbardes redy in her handes
 This some of gold and gate of hem þe bandes /
 And home he goȝ mery as a popeniaye
 ffor wel he knewe he stood in such araye 1560
 þat nedes most he wyne in such a viage
 A þousand frankes aboue al his costage
 His wif ful redy mette hym at þe gate
 As she was wont of olde vsage algate 1564
 And all þat nyȝt in myrthe þei bysette
 ffor he was riche and cleerly out of dette
 ¶ Whan it was day þis merchaunt gan embrace
 His wif al newe and kissed hir on hir face 1568
 And vp he goȝe and makeȝ it wonder toogh
 No more quod she by god 3e haue ynogh
 And wātonly aȝein wip hym she pleide
 Til at þe last þat þis merchaunt seide [leaf 60] 1572
 By god quod he I am a litel wroth
 Wip 3ou my wif al-þo it be me loth
 And wote 3e why by god as þat I gesse
 ffor 3e haue made a manere straungenesse 1576
 Bytwixen me and my cosyn daun Iohn
 3e shuld haue warned me er I had goȝ

þat he had ʒou an hundred fraunkes paide
 By redy token and he hym held eual paide 1580
 ffor þat I to him spake of cheuysance
 Me semed so as by his countenance
 But nape-lees by god heuen kinge
 I þouȝt not to axe of hym no þinge 1584
 I prey þe wif ne do no more soo
 Telle me alway er þat I fro þe goo
 If any dettour haþ in myn absence
 Ypaide þe lest þorgh þine negligence 1588
 I myȝt him axe as þing þat he haþ paide
 This wif was not afferd ne affraied .
 Bot boldely sche seide *and* þat anon
 Mary I diffie þat fals monk dañ Iohn . 1592
 I kepe not of his tokens neuer a dele
 He toke me certeyn gold þis wote I wele
 What euel thedom on his monkes snoute
 ffor god it wote I went wiþ-out doute 1596
 þat he had ʒoue it me by cause of ʒowe
 To do þer-wiþ myn honure *and* my prowre
 ffor Cosynage and eke for bele chere
 þat he haþ hadde ful often tyme here 1600
 But siþen I see I stonde in such disioynt
 I wil answere ʒou shortely to þe poynt
 ʒe haue moo schlakker dettours þan am I
 for I wil pay ʒow wel *and* redely 1604
 ffro day to day *and* if so be I faile
 I am ʒoure wif score it on my taile
 And I shal paye as sone as euer I may
 ffor by my troupe I haue on myn aray [leaf 80, back] 1608
 And nouht on waast bystowed euery dele
 And for I haue bystowed it so wele
 To ʒoure honour for goddes sake I say
 As be not wroþ but lat vs laugh *and* play 1612
 ʒe shullen my Ioly body haue to wedde
 By god I nyl not paye ʒou but abedde

fforȝeue it me myn owne spouse dere	
Turne hiderward and make better chere	1616
This Marchaunte seye þer was no remedye	
And forto chide it ner but foly	
Sypens þat þe þing may not amended be	
Now wif he seide <i>and</i> I forȝeue it þe	1620
But be þi lif ne be no more so large	
kepe bette my good þis ȝeue I þe in charge	
þus enden now my tale and god vs sende	
Tailling y-nowe into our lyues ende.	1624

¶ Thus ended þe shipmannys tale

[*No break in the MS.*]

¶ *pe prologe.*

And here bygyneþ *pe prologe of þe priores.* [*on leaf 80, back*]

WEl seidþ by corpus dominus quod our hoste
 Now longe mote þou saile by þe coste
 Sire Gentile Maister gentyl maryners
 God ȝeue þe monk a Mf. last quade ȝere 1628
 A ha felowes beþ ware of such a lape
 þe Monk put in þe mannys hode an ape
 And in his wyues eke by seint Austyn
 Draweþ no mo monkes into ȝour Inne 1632
 But now passe ouer & lat vs seke aboute
 Who shal now telle first of al þe route
 Anoper tale and wiþ þat word he saide
 As curteisly as it had bene a Mayde 1636
 My lady Piores by ȝoure leue
 So þat I wist I shulde ȝou not greue
 I wolde deme þat ȝe telle shuldþ
 A tale next if so be þat ȝe woldþ 1640
 Now wil ȝe vouche sauf my lady dere
 Gladly quod she and seide in þis manere. [*leaf 81*]

Thus endeþ *pe prologe.*

[*No break in the MS.*]

And here bygynneþ
þe Prioress tale of Alma redemptoris mater.

[*The Prologue.*]

O lord our lord þi name how merveilous ¶ *Domine dominus*
Is in þis large world ysprad quod she *noster.* } cap
þe Prioress tale

ffor nouȝt only þi laude precious
Perfourmed is by men of dignite 1646

But þy þe mouþe of Children þi bounte
Perfourmed is for in our brest' soukinge
Somytyme shewen þei þine heryinge 1649

¶ Wherfor in laude as I can best' and may
Of þe and of þe white lile floure
Which þat þe bare and art' a maide alway
To telle a storie I wol do my laboure 1653
Nouȝt þat I may encrece her honoure
ffor she he[r] self is honure and þerto rote
Of bounte next' her sone of soules bote 1656

O Modere Mayden o. maiden moder' fre
O bussh vnbrēt' brennyng' in Moises siȝt'
But vanyssheþ doune fro þe deite
þorgh þine humblesse þe goost' þat in þ' liȝt' 1660
Of whos vertue whan he in þine hert' aliȝt'
Conceyued was þe faders sapience
Helpe me to telle it in þi reuerence 1663

Lady þi bounte and þine magnificence
þi vertue and þi grete humillite
þer may no þing' expresse in no science
ffor somtyme lady er men preie to þe 1667
þow gost' byforn of þi benignite
And getest' vs to liȝt' þorgh þi preire
To gyden vs vnto þi sonne so clere 1670

My Conyng' is to waike . o blesful quene
 florto declare þi grete worþinesse [leaf 81, back]
 þat I ne may þe weght' not' susteyne
 But' as a childe of xij monþe elde or lesse 1674
 þat' can vnnepes eny word' expresse
 Riȝt' so fare I and þerfore I ȝowe preye
 Gideþ my songe þat' I shal of ȝou seie 1677

[THE TALE.]

Ther was a child' in a grete Cite
 Amonges cristen folk' in Iwerye
 Susteyned by a lord of þat' cuntre
 ffor foule vsure & lucre of vilany 1681
 Hatful to Crist' and to his companye
 And þorghe þe strete men myȝt' ride & wende
 ffor it was fre and open at' euery ende 1684

A litel scole of Cristen folk þer stode
 Doune at' þe ferþer ende in which þer were
 Children an hepe ycome of cristes blode
 þat' lerned in þat' scole ȝere by ȝere 1688
 Such' manere doctrine as men vsed þere
 þis is to saie to syngen and to rede
 As smale children done in her childhede . 1691

Amonges þise children was a widowes sone
 A litel Clergioun .vij. ȝere of age
 þat' day by day to scole was his wone
 And eke also wher he segħ þe ymage 1695
 Of cristes modere had he in vsage
 As him was tauȝt to knele adoun and seie
 His Aue marye as he goþ by þe weye 1698

172 GROUP B. § 6. Prioress's TALE. Petworth MS.

Thus haþ þis widowe her litel childe tauȝt
 Our blesful lady *cristes* moder dere
 To worship ay *and* he forgate it nouȝt
 ffor sely child wil alday sone lere 1702
 But ay whan I remembre me on þis matere
 Seint Nicholas stant euere in my þresence [leaf 82]
 ffor he so ȝonge to *crist* did reuerence 1705

This childe his litel boke lernynge
 As he satte in þe scole at his prymere
 He *Alma redemptoris* / herd singe
 As Children lered her antiphonere 1709
 And as he durst he drow hym ner *and* nere
 And harkened ay þe wordes *and* þe note
 Til he þe first vers coupe al by rote 1712

Nouȝt wist he what þe latyn was to say
 ffor he so ȝonge and tender was of age
 But on a day his felawe gan he pray
 To expounne hym þe songe in his langage 1716
 Or tellen him whi þis songe was in vsage
 This preide he hym to construe *and* declare
 ful ofte tyme vpon his knees bare 1719

His felawe which þat elder was þan he
 Answerd him þus þis songe I haue herd say
 Was makid of our blisful lady fre
 Her to salue and eke her forto pray 1723
 To bene our helpe and socour whan we dey
 I Can no more expounde in þis matere
 I lerne songe I can but smal gramere 1726

And is þis songe ymade in Reuerence
 Of Cristes modere seide þis Innocent
 Now certes I wil done my diligence
 To conne it er cristmas be went 1730

þoo þat I for my primere shal be shent
 And shal be beten þries in an houre
 I wil it konne our lady to honoure 1733

His felawe tauȝt hym homward priuely
 ffro day to days til he coupe it by rote [leaf 82, back]
 And þan he songe it wel *and* boldly
 ffro word to word acording to þe note 1737
 þrise on a day it passeþ þorgh his þrote
 To scoleward and hamward whan he went
 On cristes modere sette was his entent 1740

As I haue seide þorgh-oute þe Iwerye
 þis childe as he came to and froo
 fful merely þan wold he singe *and* crye
 On *alma redemptoris* euer moo 1744
 The swetnesse hap his hert perced so
 Of cristes modere þat to hir to prey
 he can not stint of syngyng by þe wey 1747

Our furst foo þe serpent Sathanas
 þat hap in Iwes his waspes nest
 Vpswal and seide o Ebraike puple alas
 Is þis a þing to ȝou þat his honest 1751
 þat such a boy shal walken as hym lest
 In ȝoure despote and singgyng of such sentence
 Which is aȝeinst ȝoure lawes reuerence 1754

From þennes forþ þe Iwes han conspired
 This Innocent out of þis world to chace
 In homycide þerto han þei hured
 þat in a Aley had a prive place 1758
 And as þe childe gan forby forto pace
 þis cursed Iwe him hent *and* helde fast
 And kitte his þrote and in a pitte hym cast 1761

174 GROUP B. § 6. PRIORRESS'S TALE. Petworth MS.

I say þat' in a wardrobe þei hym drwe
 Wher þat' þise Iwes purgen entraile
 O cursed folk of herawdes al nwe/
 What' may þoure euel tent 30^a auaile 1765
 Mordere wil out it wil not' faile .
 And namely þer honure of god shuld' sprede [leaf ss]
 þe blood out' criep of þoure cursed dede 1768

O Matir sounded to virginite
 Now maist' þow syngen folowing' euere in on
 þe white lombe celestial quod he
 Of which þe grete euangelist' seynt' Ioħn 1772
 In Pathmos wrote which seyn þei þat' gōn
 Byfore þis lombe and singe a songe al nwe
 That' neuer fleshly wommen þei knewe 1775

This poor widowe waiteþ al þat' nyȝt'
 After this litel childe . but' home cam he nouȝt'
 ffor whom as sone as it' is daies liȝt'
 Wiþ face pale for drede and bisy þouȝt' 1779
 She haþ atte scole and ellis whe[re] him souȝt'
 Til fynaly she gan so fer espie
 þat' he was sene last' in þe Iwerye 1782

Wiþ moders pite in her brest' enclosed
 She goþ as þouȝe she were half out' of mynde
 To euery place wher she haþ supposed
 By liklihede her child' to fynde 1786
 And euere on cristes modere meke and kynde
 She cried and at þe last' þus she wrouȝt'
 Amonge þe cursed Iwes she him souȝt' 1789

She freyneþ and she preieþ pitously
 To euery Iwe þat' dwelte in þilk place
 To telle her if her child went' hem bye
 þei seiden nay but' Ihesus of his grace 1793

3aue in her þouȝt' inwiþ a hitel space
 That' in þat' place after her sone she cried/
 Ther he was cast' in a pitte beside 1796

O grete god þat' perfourmed þi lawde
 By mouþe of Innocence lo here þi myȝt' [leaf 83, back]
 This Gemme of chastite þis emeraude
 And eke of Marterdom þe rubie briȝt' 1800
 Ther he wiþ þrote y-corue lay vpriȝt'
 He *alma redemptoris* gan to singe
 So longe þat' al þe place gan to ryng 1803

The Cristen folk' þat' þorgh þe strete went'
 Inne comen forto wondren on þis þinge
 And hastely þei for þe prouost' sent'
 He come anone wiþ-out' tariyng 1807
 And herieþ crist' þat' is of heuen kyng
 And eke his modere honoure of man kynde
 And after þat' þe Iwes lete he bynde 1810

This child' wiþ pitous lamentacioñ
 Vptaken singyng' his songe alway
 And wiþ honure of grete processioñ
 þei Carien hym to þe next' abbay 1814
 His modere swownyng' by þe bere lay
 Vnneþes myȝt' þe puple þat' was þere
 þis new Racheff bring' fro his bere 1817

Wiþ torment' and with shameful deþ ilkoñ
 This prouost' doþ þise Iwes to sterue
 þat' of þis mordre wist' and þat' anōn
 He nolde none such' cursednesse obserue 1821
 Euel he shal haue þat' euel wol deserue
 þefore wiþ wilde hors he did hym drawe
 And after þat' he henge him by þe lawe 1824

176 GROUP B. § 6. PRIORESS'S TALE. **Petworth MS.**

¶ Vppon þis bere ay lith þis Innocent'
 Byforn þe chief autere whiles masse last'
 And after þat þe Abbot wip his Couent'
 had spedde hem forto bury hym fast' 1828
 And whan þei holy water on hym cast'
 3it' spake þe child' whan spreynt' was þ' holy watere [1831]
 And songe .O alma redemptoris matere 1831

This Abbot' which þat' was an holy man
 As monkes be or ellis ouzten to be
 þis 3onge childe to coniuere þei bygan
 And saide good child' I hailse þe 1835
 Be vertue of þe holy trinite
 Telle me what' is þi cause to singe
 Siþen þat' þi þrote is kitte at' my semynge 1838

My þrote is kitte vnto my nek' bone
 Saide þis child' and as be way of [k]ynde
 I shuld haue deied longe tyme a-gone
 But' Ihesu crist' as 3e in bokes fynde 1842
 Wol þat' his glorie last' and be in mynde
 And for þe worship of his moder dere
 3it' may I singe .o Alma. loude and clere 1845

This welle of me[r]cye cristes modere swete
 I loued alway as aftere my connyng
 And whan þan I my lif shuld' lete .
 To me she cam and bad me for to singe 1849
 þis Anteme verrelly in my mynd' deyinge
 As 3e han herd' . and whan þat' I had songe
 Me þougt' she leide a greyn vpon my tonge 1852

Wherfore I singe and singe mote certeyn
 In honure of þe blisful martere fre
 Til of my tunge of taken is þe greyñ
 And aftere þat' þus seide she to me 1856

My litel childe now wol I fecche þe
 Whan þat þe greyn is fro þi tunge ytake
 Be not agast I wil þe not forsake 1859

This holy monke þis abbot hym mene I
 His tunge out' kaught' and toke away þ' greyn/ [leaf 84, back]
 And he ȝaue vp þe goost' ful softely
 And whan þe abbot had þis wonder seyn 1863
 His salte teeres striked down as reyn/
 And gruf he fille al plat' to þe ground'
 And stille he lay as he had bene ybound' 1866

The Couent' eke lay vpon þe payment'
 Weping' and herying' cristes moder dere
 And after þat þei rise and forþ bene went'
 And toke away þis martere fro his bere 1870
 And in a toumebe of Marble stonys clere
 Enclosen þei his litel body swete
 Ther he is nowe god leue vs forto mete 1873

O yonge hugh of lyncoln sclayn also
 With cursed Iwes as it is notable
 ffor it' nys but a litel while agoo
 Prei eke for vs we sinful folk vnstable 1877
 þat' of his mercy god so merciabile
 On vs his grete mercy multiplie
 ffor reuerence of his modere marye . 1880

¶ Here endep þe priores tale.

[*The Man of Law's Prologue and Tale follow in the MS.*]

GROUP B. (α. FRAGMENT II.)

§ 1. MAN OF LAW'S HEAD-LINK.

PETWORTH MS.

¶ Prologus
viri legis

And here by- <sup>[on leaf 84,
back]</sup>

gynnes þe prologe of þe man of lawe

Oure hoost segh wel þat þe brizt sonne
 þe arke of þis artificial day hadde ronne
 þe feerþ part and half an houre or more
 And pough he were not depe expert in lore 4
 He wist it was þe xvij. day
 Of Aprile þat is massagere to may
 And seghe wel þat þe shadowe of euery tre
 Was as in length þe same quantite 8
 þat was þe body erecte þat caused it
 And perfore by þe shadowe he toke his witte
 þat Phebus which þat shoon so clere and brizt
 Degrees was xlv. clombe on hight 12
 And for þat day as in þat latitude ^[leaf 85]
 Hit was .x. of þe klok he gan conclude
 And sodeynly he plizt his hors about
 Lordingges quod he I warne 3ow al þis route 16
 þe feer party of þis day is goon
 Now for þe loue of god and of seint Iohn
 Leseþ no tyme as ferforþ as 3e may
 Lordingges þe tyme it wastep boþ nyȝt and day 20
 And stelep from vs what priuely slepinge
 And what þourgh neglygence in our wakinge
 As doþ þe streme þat turnep neuere agayn /
 Descending from þe mounteyn into playn 24
 Wel can Senec and many a philosopre
 Byweillen tyme more þan gold in Cofre
 ffor losse of Catel may recovered be
 But losse of tyme shendeþ vs quod he 28

PETWORTH 178 (8-T. 129)

It wil not come aȝein wiȝ-outen drede	
No more þan wil Malkyns Maidenhede	
Whan she haȝ lost it in her wantonnesse	
Lat vs nout mowlen þus in Ydelnesse	32
Sire man of lawe quod he so haue I blesse	
Telle vs a tale anon as forward es	
Ȝe bene submitted þourȝ ȝour fre assent	
To stonden in þis cas at my Iuggement	36
Aquiteȝ ȝou nowe of ȝoure biheest	
þan han Ȝe done ȝoure devoire at þe leest	
Oost quod he depardeux ich assent	
To breke forward is not myȝ entent	40
Biheest is dette and I wil holde fayne	
Al my biheest I can no better seyne	
ffor such lawe as a man ȝeueȝ anoȝer wiȝt	
He shuld hym self vsen it by riȝt	44
Thus wil our text but napeles certeyne	
I can riȝt now no trusty tale seyne	
þat chaucere þouȝt he can but lewdely	
On meters and in rymyng craftely	48
Haȝ seide hem in such englissh as he can	[leaf 86, back]
Of olde tyme as knoweȝ mony a man	
And if he haue nouȝt seide hem leue broȝer	
In oo boke he haȝ seide in a-noȝer	52
ffor he haȝ told of louers vp and down	
Moo þan Ovide made mencion	
In his Epistels þat bene ful olde	
What shuld I tellen hem siȝ þei be tolde	56
In ȝouȝe he made of Ceys and Alcione	
And siȝ haȝ he spoke of euerychone	
Thise noble wyues and þise louyers eke	
Who so þat wol his large volom seke	60
Cleped þe Seintes legende of Cupide	
þer may he see þe large woundes wide	
Of lucesse and of Babylan Tysbe	
þe swerd of Dido for þe fals ene	64

The tre of Phillis for hir demophon þe pleynte of Dyanyre <i>and</i> of Hermyon Of Andrian and of ysiphilee þe barayn Isle standing in þe see	68
þe dreynt leander for his erro The teres of Elyne and eke þe woo Of Brixseid and of þe ladomya The cruelte of quene Medea /	72
þe litel children honging by þe hals ffor þe Iason þat was of loue so fals Of ypinistra penolope Alceste þoure wivehode he commendep wiþ þe best	76
But certeynly no worde ne writeþ he Of þilk wicke ensample of canace þat luffed her oune broþere synfully Of suche cursed storis I seie fye	80
Or ellis of Tiro Appolloneus How þat þe cursed king Antiocus Biraft his douȝter of her maydenhede þat is so horrible a tale for to rede	84
Whan he her drewe þorgh-out þe pament And þerfor he of ful avisement Nold neuer write in none of his <i>sermons</i> Of such vnkinde abhomynacions.	88
Ne I ne wil none reherce if þat I may But of my tale how shal I done þis day Me were loth be likned doutlees To muses þat men clepen pieriades	92
Methanorphoseos wote what I mene But napelees I recche not a bene þouȝe I come after hym wiþ hawe bake I speke in prose and lat hym rymes make	96
And wiþ þat word he wiþ a sobre chere Bygan his tale as ȝe shal after here	98

¶ Thus endep þe prologe [*no break in the MS.*]

And here by- ¶ Incipit fabula
gynneþ þe Mannys of lawe Tale

[Prologue.]

O hateful harme condicioñ of pouert 99
Wip prust wip cold with hunger so confounded
To asken help þe shamest in þine hert

If þowe now aske wip nede art þou so wounded 102
þat verrey nede vnwrappeþ al þi wonud hed
Maugre in þine hede þou most for indigence
Or stele or begge or borowe þi dispence 105

Thow blamest crist and seist ful bitterly
He mysdeparteþ riches temporal
þi neighbour þow witest sinfully
And saist þou hast to litel and he hap aþ 109
Parfay seist þou somtyme he rekne shaþ
Whan þat his tale shal brenne in þe glede
ffor he nouȝt helpeþ nedeful in her nede 112

Herken what is þe menyng of þe wise
Bett is to dyen þan haue indigence
þi self neighboure wil þe despise
If þou be poor fare wele þi reuerence. 116
3it of þe wise man take þis sentence [leaf 86, back]
Al þe daies of poor men ben wikke
Be war þefore er þou come in þat prikke 119

3if þou be poor þi broþer hateþ þe
And alle þi freendes fleen fro þe alas
O riche marchauntes ful of wele be 3e
O noble prudent folk as in þis cas 123
3oure bagges bene not filled with ambees aas
But wip sise cynk þat renneþ for 3our chance
At Cristes mas mery may 3e daunce 126

3e seken londe and ffe for 3our wynnyngges
 As wise folk þat knowen al þe state
 Of regnes 3e bene fadere of Tithenges
 And tales boþen of pees & debate 130
 I was riȝt nowe of tales desolate
 Ner þat a marchaunt gone is mony a 3ere
 Me taught a tale which þat 3e shal here 133
 [Only the usual stanza-gap of a line in the MS.]

[As there is no room in this print for the Latin notes in the margin of the MS, they are put here, with the numbers of the lines to which they refer.]

- l. 197. ¶ *Ceptra pharonei fratrum discordia thebe*
 ¶ *flammam phetentis deatallonis aque*
 ¶ *In stellis priami. species audacia turni*
 ¶ *Sensus vlixens herculies que vigor* [MS, leaf 87, back.]

l. 295. ¶ *Vnde Philomachus libro j.º. c.º. 8º. primi motus celi duo sunt quorum vnus est qui mouet totum semper ab oriente & occidente vno modo super orbem & cetera. Ita aliter vero motus est qui mouet orbem stellarum currentium contra motum primum viz ab occidente in orientem super alios duos polos & cetera. Omnes enim concordati sunt quod electiones sint debiles nisi in diuitibus. habent enim. isti licet debilitentur eorum electiones radicem .i. natiuitates eorum que confortat omnem planetam debilem in Itinere. Hec. Philosophus.* [MS, leaf 89.]

l. 421. ¶ *Semper mundane leticie tristitia repentina succedit. Mundana ergo felicitas multis amaritudinibus est respersa. Extrema gaudii. luctus occupat. Audi ergo salubre consilium in die bonorum ne inmemor sis malorum.* [MS, leaf 91.]

l. 771. ¶ *Quid turpius ebrioso cui fetor in ore. tremor in corpore. qui promittit stulta. prodit occulta Cui mens alienatur facies transformatur nullum enim latet secretum. vbi regnat Ebrietas.* [MS, leaf 96, back.]

l. 925. ¶ *O extrema libidinis turpitudine que non solum mentem effeminat. sed et corpus enervat semper sequuntur dolor & penitencia post & cetera.* [MS, leaf 99.]

l. 1127. ¶ *A mane vespere ad vesperam mutabitur tempus. tenent tympanum & gaudent ad sonum organi.* [MS, leaf 102, back.]

l. 1134. *Quis vnquam vnicam diem totam duxit in sua delectacione locundam quem in aliqua parte die reatus consciencie vel impetus ire vel motus concupiscencie inde non turbauerit quem liuor inuidie vel ardor auaricie vel timor superbie non vexauerit. quem aliqua iactura vel offensa vel passio non commouerit & cetera.* [MS, leaf 102, back.]

[TALE. PART I.]

In Surry whilom dwelt a companye
 Of Chapmen riche *and* þerto sadde *and* trewe
 þat wide where setten her spicerie
 Cloþes of golde and saten riche of hue 137
 Her chaffare was so prifty *and* so nwe
 þat euery wight haþ deynte to chafare
 Wiþ hem and eke to sellen hem her ware 140

Nowe fille it þat þe maisters of þat sort
 Han shapen hem to Rome forto wende
 Were it for chapmanhode or for disport
 Noon oþer massage wold þei þider sende 144
 But comen hem self to Rome þis is þe ende
 And in suche place as þouȝt hem auauntage
 ffor her entent þei taken her herbergage 147

Soiourned han þise merchaundes in þat toun [leaf 87]
 A certeyn tyme as fille to her plesaunce
 But so byfelle þat þe excellen renoun
 Of þe Emperour douȝtere Dame Castaunce 151
 Reported was with euery circumstance
 Vnto þise Surryen merchauntz in such wise
 ffro day to day as I shal ȝou deuise 154

This was þe comon vois of euery man
 Our Emperour of Rome god hym see
 A doughter haþ þat siþe þe world bygan
 To rekne as wel her goodnes as bewte 158
 Nas neuere such anoþer as is she
 I prei to god in honure hir sustene
 And wolde she were of al Europe þ° quene

¶ Europa est torcia /
 pars mundi

In hure is hegh bewte wiþ-oute pride
 ȝouþe wiþ-out' grenehode or folye
 To aȝ her werkes vertue is her gide
 Humblesse haþ sclayn in hire al tyrannye 165
 She is a myrour of al Curtesie
 Hire herte is verrey chambers of holynesse
 Her hand mynystre of fredam for almesse 168

And al þis vois was soþ as god is trewe
 But' nowe to purpoos lat' vs turne ageyn
 þise Merchauntz han do fraught her shippes newe
 And whan þei han þis blisful Maiden seyn 172
 Howe to Surrey ben þei went' ageyn
 And done her nedes as þei han do ȝore
 And lyuen in wele I can say ȝou no more 175

Now fille it' þat' þise marchauntes stoden in grace
 Of hym þat' was þe Sawden of Surrye
 ffor whan þat' þei came from eny straunge place
 He wolde of his benygne Curtesie. 179
 Make hem good chere and bysillie asprie [leaf 87, back]
 Tipingges of sondry rewmes forto lere
 þe wondres þat' þei myȝt se or here 182

Amonges opere þingges specialy
 Thise marchauntes han hym tolde of dame custaunce
 So grete noblesse in earnest' ceriously
 þat' þis sowden haþ caught' so grete plesaunce 186
 To han her figure in his remembraunce
 And al his lust' and al his bysy cure
 Was forto loue her' þe whilis his lif may dure 189

Peraenture in þe pikke large book
 Which þat' cloped is heuene ywriten was
 Wiþ sterres whan þat' he his birth toke
 þat' he for loue shuld' han his deth allas 193

ffor in þe sterres clerer þan is þe glas /
 y-written god wote who coude it rede
 þe deþe of euery man *with-uten drede* 196

In Sterris mony a wynter þer byforñ
 Was writen þe deþ of Ector achilles
 Of pompe Iulius er þei were born
 þe strif of Thebes and of hercules / 200
 Of sampson turano *and* of Socrates
 þe deþ but mennys wittes beñ so dulle
 þat no wiȝt can wel rede it at þe fulle 203

[*Latin note*, p. 133.]
 182

This souden for his priue counseil sent
 And shortly of þis matere forto pase
 He hap to hem declared his entent
 And seide hem certeyn but he myȝt haue *grace* 207
 To haue custance wiþ-Inne a litel space
 He nas but dede *and* charged hem in hie
 To shapen for his lif somme remedye 210

Dyuers men dyuers pingges seiden
 þe argumentz Custen vp and Douñ 211
 Mony a sotele resoñ forþ þei leideñ
 þei speken of magik' and abusioñ 214
 But fynaly as in conclusioñ
 þei can not seen in þat noñ *auauntage*
 Ne in noon oþer way sauf mariage 217

[leaf 88]

Than segh þei þere in such difficulte
 Be way of reson forto speke al playñ
 By cause þat þer was such dyuersite 221
 Bytwene hor boþ lawes þat þei seyn
 þei trowe þat no cristen prince wold fayn
 Wedden his childe vnder oure lawes so swete
 þat vs was taught be Mahoun our prophete 224

And he answered rapier þan I lese
 Custance I wil be Cristened doutlees
 I mote bene hers I may non opere chese
 I prei þou holde þoure argumentes in pees 228
 Saueþ my lif and beþ not rechelees
 To geten hure þat haþ my lif in cure
 ffor in þis woo I may not longe endure 231

What nedep gretter dilatacion
 I saye by tretis and Embassadrye
 And by þe popes mediacion
 And alle þe cherch and all þe Chivalrye 235
 þat in destruccioñ of Mawmetrie
 And in encrees of cristes lawe dere
 þei bene acorded so as ȝe shal here 238

Now þat þe Sawden and his Baronage
 And al his lieges shuld ycristened be
 And he shal haue custance in mariage
 And certeyn gold I note what quantite 242
 And herto founden sufficient suerte
 This same accorde was sworn in eijer side [leaf 68, back]
 Now faire custaunce almyȝty god þe gyde 245

Now wold somme men waiten as I gesse
 þat I shulde tellen al þe purviaunce
 That þe Emperour of his noblesse
 haþ shapen for his douȝter dame Custaunce 249
 Wel may men knowe þat so grete ordynaunce
 May no man telle in a litel clause
 As was araied for so hie a cause 252

Bisshopes bene shapen wiþ hure forto wende
 Lordes ladys knyȝtes of renoun
 And oper folk ynow þis is þe ende
 And notified is þorgh-out þe toun 256

That euery wight with grete deuocioun
 Shulde preye crist þat he þis mariage
 Resceyue in gre and spede þis viage 259

The day is comen of her departinge
 I seie þe wooful day fatal is come
 That þer may be no lenger tarynge
 But forþward þei hem dressed al and some 263
 Custance þat with sorowe is al ouercome
 ful pale arist and dresseþ hure to wende
 ffor wel shee seep þer is noon opere ende 266

Allas what wondere is it þouze she wepte
 þat shal be sent to straunge naciōn
 ffor frendes þat so tenderly her kepte
 And to be bounden vnder subiecciōn 270
 Of oon she knowep nouȝt his condiciōn
 Husbondes bene all good and han ben ȝore
 þat knowen wives I dar seie ȝou no more 273

Fadere she seide þ' wrecched child custance
 Thi ȝonge douȝtere fostred vp so soft ¶ Cap. 9 [leaf 89]
 And ȝe my modere my souereyn plesaunce
 Ouer al þinge outaken crist aloft 277
 Custaunce ȝoure child hire recomanndeþ oft
 Vnto ȝoure grace for I shal to Surrye
 Ne shal I neuere seyn ȝow more wiþ ye 280

Allas vnto þe Barbarye naciōn
 I most anon siþ it is ȝoure wille
 But crist þat starf for oure redempciōn
 So ȝeue me grace his heestes to fulfille 284
 I wrecched womman no fors þouze I spille
 Wommen ben born to thraldom and penaunce
 And to bene vnder mannes gouernaunce 287

I trowe at Troye whan purrus brak þe waft
 Or ylyon þat brent Thebes þat Cite
 Nor Rome for þe harme þorgh Hanybaht
 þat Romaynes han venqwiſshed tymes þre 291
 Nas herd ſuch tendere weping for pite
 As in þe Chambere for her departinge
 But forþ ſhe mote wher ſhe wepe or ſinge 294

O firſt mouynge cruel firmament [Latin note, p. 183.]
 Wiþ þine dyurnal ſweigh þat crowdeſt aye 152
 And hurleſt al from eeſt to occident
 That naturelly wolde holde anoþer waye 298
 þi Crowding ſette þe heuene in ſuch araye
 At þe bygynnyng of þis feers viage
 That cruel mars haþ ſclayn þis mariage 301

Infortunat aſcendent tortuous
 Of which þe lord is helpeles falle alas
 Out of his Angle in to þe derkeſt hous
 O Mars o Atazir in this caas 305
 O feble mone vnhappy bene þi paas/
 þow knetteſt þe þer þou art not receyued [leaf 89, back]
 Ther þou were wele fro þennes now art þou weyued 308

Imprudent Emperour of Rome alas ¶ Inſpirant
 Was þer no Philisophre in al þi toun
 Is no tyme bette þan oþer in ſuch cas/
 Of viage is þer non election 312
 Namely to folk of high condicioñ
 Nat whan a roote is of a birþ yknowe
 Allas 3e bene to lewde or to ſelowe 315

The ſhippe is brougt þis woful faire mayde
 Solempnely wiþ euery circumſtaunce
 Nowe Iheſu criſt be wiþ 3ou al ſhe ſeide
 Ther is no more but fare wel faire Cuſtaunce 319

She peyneþ hure to make good countenaunce
 And forþe I lete hire saile in þis manere
 And turne I wil ageyn to my matere 322

The modere of þe Sowden welle of vices
 Espied haþ her sones playn entent
 Howe he wil lete his olde sacrifices
 And riȝt anone she for her counsel sent 326
 And þei ben commen to knowe what she ment
 And whan assembled was þis folk in fere
 She sette her doune and seide as ȝe shal here 329

Lordes quod she ȝe knowe euerichon
 Howe þat my sone in poynt is forto lete
 þe holy lawes of our akkaron
 ȝeuene by goddes massagere Makamete 333
 • But on avowe to grete god I hete
 þe lif shal raper out of my body sterte
 Or makametes lawe out of myn herte. 336

What shulð vs tyden of þis newe lawe
 But þruldome to our bodies and penaunce {leaf 90}
 And afterwarð in helle to ben drawe
 for we reveied Mahonne our creaunce 340
 But lordes wil ȝe maken assurance
 As I shal sein assenting to my lore
 And I shal make vs sauf for euermore 343

¶ Thei sworn and assenten euery man
 To lyve and dye wiþ hure and by hure stonde
 And euery in þe best wise he can
 To strengthen hure shal al his freendes fonde 347
 And she haþ þis emprise taken on honde
 Which ȝe shal here þat I shal devise
 And to hem alle she spak in þis wise 350

We shul first feyn vs cristendom to take
 Cold watere shal not greue vs but a lite
 And I shal suche a reuel and feest make
 þat as I trowe I shal þe Sowden quite 354
 ffor þouze his wif be cristned neuer so white
 She shal haue nede to wassh awaye þe rede
 þough she a font ful of water wip her lede 357

O Sawdenesse Roote of Inquite
 Virago þou Semyram þe Second
 O Serpent vnder femyninete
 Like to þe Serpent depe in helle ybound 361
 O feyned womman al þat may confound
 Vertue and Innocence þorgh þi malice
 Is bredde in þe as nest of euery vice 364

O Sathan envious siþ pilk day
 þat þou were chased fro our heritage
 Wel knewest þou to wommen þ^e old way
 þou madest Eva to bringe in seruage 368
 Thow wilt fordone cristen mariage
 Thyñ Instrument so wele away þe while
 Makestowe of wommen wham þou wilt begile [leaf 90, back]

This Sowdoneesse whom I þus blame and warye
 Lat prively her counsel gone her way
 What shuld I in þis tale lenger tarye
 She rideþ to þe Sawden on a daye 375
 And seide him þat she wold reneye her laye
 And Cristendom of preestes hondes fonge
 Repenting she heþen was so longe 378

Biseching him to done her þat honours
 þat she most han þ^e cristen folk to feest
 To plesen hem I wil do my labour
 þe Sawden seiþ I wil doñ at þour heest 382

And knelinge þonkeþ hure of þat request
 So glad he was he nyst what to seye
 She kist her sone and hom she goþ her way 385

[PART II.]

Arrived bene þise cristen folk to londe
 In Surrye wiþ a grete solempne Route
 And hastely þis Sowden sent his sonde
 ffurst to his modere and al þe regne aboute 389
 And seide his wiff was commen out of doute
 And preide hure forto riden ageyn þe quene
 The honure of his regne to sustene 392

Grete was þe prees and rich was tharray
 Of Surriens and romaynes met yfere
 The modere of þe Sowden riche and gay
 Resceyueþ her wiþ as glad a chere 396
 As eny modere myzt her douzter dere
 And to þe next Cite þer beside
 A soft paas solempnely þei ryde 399

Naught trowe I þe triumphe of Iulius
 Of which þat lucan makeþ such a boost
 Was ryallere ne more curious [enf 91]
 Than was þe asseple of þis blisful hoost 403
 But þis scorpion þis wikke goost
 þe Sawdenesse for al her flateringe
 Cast vnder þis ful mortally to stynges 406

The Sowden commep hym self sone after þis
 So Rialli þat wonder is to telle
 He welcommep hure with alle ioye and blis
 And þus in merþe and Ioie I lete hem dwelle 410

þe froyte of þis matere þat I telle
 Whan tyme come men þouȝt it for þe best
 That reueñ stint and men goñ to her rest' 413

The tyme come þis olde Sawdenesse
 Ordeyned haþ þis feest of which I told
 And to þe fest cristen folk hem dresse
 In general boþ ȝenge and old 417
 Here may men feest and rialte bihold
 And deyntes moo þan I can ȝoⁿ devise
 But al to dere þei bouȝt it er þei rise 420

O sodeyn woo þat euer art successoure [Latin note, p. 133.]
 To worldly blisse sp[r]ayned is wiþ bitternesso 184
 þe end of þe ioye of our worldely laboure
 Woo occupieþ þe fyne of our gladnesse 424
 Herk þis counsaile for þi sikernesse
 Vppon þi glade day haue in þi mynde
 þe vnwar woo or harme þat commeþ behinde 427

For shortely forto tellen at oon word
 The Sowden and þe cristen euerechone
 Bene al to-hewe and stikked at þe bord
 But it were oonly dame custance allone 431
 þis olde Sawdenes þis cursed krone
 haþ wiþ her frendes done þis cursed dede
 ffor she her self wold al þe cuntre lede [leaf 91, back]

NE þer nas Surrien noon þat was conuerted
 þat of þe counsaile of þe Sawden wote
 þat he nas al to-hewe er he asterted
 And Custaunce han þei take anof fote hoot 438
 And in a shippe al steerless god woote
 þei han hure sette and bidden her lerne saile
 Out of Surry ageynward to ytaile 441

A certeyn tresour þat she þider ladde
 And soþe to seyn vitaille grete plente
 They han her ȝeuen and cloþes eke she hadde
 And florþ she sailleþ in þe salt see 445
 O my custauce ful of benygnyte
 O Emperours ȝonge douȝtere dere
 He þat is lord of fortune be þi stere 448

She blesseþ and wiþ ful pitous voys
 Vnto þe Crois of crist þus seid she
 O cleer o. welful autere holy croys
 Rede of þe lambes blood ful of pite 452
 That wessh þe world from þe olde iniquyte
 Me from þe feende and from his clawes kepe
 þat day þat I shal drenche in þe depe 455

Victorious tree protection of trewe
 That oonly worpi were for to bere
 The king of heuene wiþ his woundys newe
 The white lombe þat hirte was wiþ a spere 459
 flemer of feendes out of hym and here
 On which þi lyues feiþfully extenden
 Me kepe and ȝeue myght my lyf tamenden 462

Yeeres and daies fleet þis Creature
 Thorgh-out þe see of Grece vnto þe strayte
 Of Marrok as it was hir aventure [leaf 92] 466
 O mony a sory mele nowe may she baite
 After her deth ful oft may she wayte
 Er þat þe wilde waves wil her dryve
 Vnto þe place þere she shal aryue 469

MEEn myghten axen whi she was not sclayn
 Eke atte feeste who myght her body saue
 I Answer to þat demannde agayn
 Who saued Danyel in þe horrible caue 473

Ther euery wight saf he maister' or knaue
 Was wip þe leon frette or a-stert'
 No wight' but' god þat' hem bare in his hert' 476

GOD list to shewe his wonderful myracle
 In hir' ? þat' shee shulde seen his myzty werkes
 Crist' which þat is to euery harme triacle 480
 By certayne meenes oft / as knowen clerkes
 Dop þing' for certeyn ende þat' ful derk es
 To mannys witt' ? þat' for our ignoraunce
 Ne kon not' knowe his prudent' puruyaunce 483

Now sip she was not' at þe feest' ysclawe
 Who kepte her from þe drenching' in þe see
 Who kepte Ionas in þe fisshes mawe 487
 Til he was spowted vp at Nynyve
 Wel may men knowe it was no wight' but' he
 What' kept' puple Ebrayk from drenchinge
 Wip drie feet' þorgh out' þe see passinge 490

Who bad þe foure spiretes of tempest'
 That' power han boþ annoyen londe *and* see
 Boþ norþe and souþe *and* also west' *and* Eest'
 Annoyep neiper See londe ne tree 494
 Soply þe Comannder' of þat' was he
 That' from þe tempest' ay þis womman kept'
 As wel whan she woke as whan she slepte [leaf 92, back]

Where myzt' þis womman mete or drynk' haue
 Thre zere or more how lastep hir' vitaille
 Who fedde þe Egipcien mary in þe Caue
 Or in desert' noon but' Crist' saunz faille 501
 V. Mt. folk it' was as grete mervaille
 Wip lounes .v. and fisshes two to fede
 God sent' his foyssen at' her grete nede 504

She dryueþ forþ into our Occiān
 Thorgh-out oure wilde See to atte last
 Vnder an hold þat nempne I ne can
 ffor in Nourth humberlonð þ° wawe hire cast 508
 And in þe sonde her shipp stiked so fast
 þat þennes wold it not of al a tyde
 The wille of Crīst was þat she shuld abide 511

The Constable of þe Castel doun is fare
 To seen þis werk and al þe ship he souzt
 And fonde þis wery womman ful of care
 He fonde also þe tresoure þat she brouzt 515
 In her langage mercy she bysouzt
 The lif out of her body forto twynne
 Hire to delyuere of woo þat she was Inne 518

A Maner latyn corrupte was her speche
 But algates þer-by was she vnderstonde
 The Constable whan he list no lengere seche
 This wooful womman brouzt he to þe londe 522
 She kneleþ doune and þonkeþ goddys sonde
 But what she was she wolde no man seye
 ffor foule ne faire þouze þat she shuld deye 525

She seide she was so mased in the See
 þat she forgate hure mynde by hure troupe
 The Constable of hire hap so grete pite [leaf 52] 529
 And eke his wiff þat þei wepen for roupe
 She was so diligent wip-uten sloupe
 To serue and plese euerech in þat place
 That al her louen þat loken on her face / 532

The Constable and dame Ermengeld his wiff
 Were paynymes and þat contray euerywhere
 But Hermengilt loued hure riȝt as hir liff
 And Constance hap so longe soiourned þere 536

In Orisons wiþ mony a bitter tere
 Til Ihesu haþe conuerted þorgh his grace
 Dame hermengild Constablesse of þat place 539

In aȝ þat londe durst none cristen route
 Alle Cristen folk ben fledð fro þat cuntre
 Thorgh paynymes þat conquered þer aboute
 þe plages of þe north by lond *and* see 543
 To wales fledde þe Cristiante
 Of olde Bretoynes dwellin in þe Ile
 Ther was hure refute for þe mene while 546

But ȝit nas neuere cristen Bretoyne so exiled
 That þer nas somme in her priuetees
 Honoured Crist and heþen folk begyled
 And nyȝe þe Castel such þer dwelled thre 550
 That oon of hem was blynde *and* myȝt not see
 But it were wiþ þilk yen of his mynde
 With which men seen after þat þei bene blynd 553

Briȝt was þe sonne as in þat somers day
 for whiche þe constable and his wif also
 And Custance han ytake þe riȝt way
 Toward þe see a forlonge way or two 557
 To pleien and to romen to *and* froo /
 And in her walk þis blynde man þei mette
 Croked and olde wiþ fast eyen yshett [leaf 93, back]

In þe name of crist cried þis blynd Bretown
 Dame hermegild ȝeue me siȝt agayn
 This lady wexe a-fraied of þe soun
 Lest þat her husbond shortly forto seyne 564
 Wold hure for Ihesu cristes loue haue slayn
 Til Custance made hure bold *and* bad hire wirche
 The wille of crist as douȝter of his chirche 567

The constable wexe abashed of þat sight
 And seide what amounteþ al þis fare
 Custance answerd Sire it is cristes myȝt
 þat helpeþ folk out of þe fendes snare 571
 And so ferforþ she can our lay declare
 þat she þe constable er it was eve
 Conuertep and on crist made hym byleue 574

This Constable nas no þing lord of þis place
 Of which I speke þer he Custaunce fonde
 But kepte it strongly mony a wynter space 578
 Vnder Alla king of aȝ Norphumberlonde
 þat was full wise and worpi of his honde
 Ageyne þe scottes as men may wel here
 But turne I wil ageyn to my matere 581

Sathan þat euere vs waiteþ to begile
 Seghe of Custance al hure perfeccioun
 And cast anone howe he myȝt quyte her while
 And made a yonge knyght þat dwelt in þe toun 585
 Lone hire so hoot of foule affeccioun
 þat verrelly hym þouȝt he shulde spille
 But he of hire ones myȝt haue his wille 588

He woweþ hure but it availleþ nouȝt
 She wolde do no synne by no weye
 And for despite he compased in his þouȝt [leaf 94] 592
 To make hure a shameful deef to dye
 He waiteþ whan þe constable was away
 And priuely vpon a nyȝt he crept
 In hermengildes Chambre while she slept 595

Wery for-waked in her Orisons
 Slepeþ Custance and hermengild also /
 This knyght þourgh Sathanas temptaciōns
 Al softly is to þe bed y-goo 599

And kitte þe prote of hermengild atwoo ,
 And laide þe blodȳ knyȳ by dame Custaunce
 And went his waye þer god ȝeue hym meschaunce 602

Sone after Commeþ þis Constable home agayn
 And Eke Alla þat kinge was of þat londe
 And segh his wiff dispitously slayn
 ffor whiche ful oft he wepte and wronge his honde 606
 And in þe bedde þe blodȳ knyȳ he fonde
 By dame Custaunce allas what myȝt she say
 ffor verry woo her witte was al away 609

So kinge Alla was tolde al þis meschaunce
 And eke þe tyme and where and in what wise
 þat in a shipp was founden þis Custaunce
 As here byforn ȝe han herde devise 613
 The kingges hert of pite gan agrise
 Whan he seye so benigne a creature
 ffallē in disese and in mysaventure 616

For as þe lombe toward þ^e deth is brouȝt
 So þis Innocent stant to-fore þe king
 þis fals knyȝt þat haþ þis treson wrouȝt
 Bereþ hure on honde þat she haþ do þis þing 620
 But napelees þer was grete mournyng
 Amonge þe puple and seie þai can not gesso
 Tha[t] she had done so grete a wickednesse [leaf 94, back]

For þei han seyn her euere so vertuous
 And louyng hermengile riȝt as her lif
 Of þis bare witnesse euerich in þat hous
 Saue he þat hermengild slowe with his knyff 627
 This gentile kinge haþ kauȝt a gret motiff
 Of þis witnesse and þouȝt he wolde enquere
 Depper in þis caas troupe forto lere 630

Allas Custaunce þow nast' no champyōn
 Ne fighte Canstowe nat' so wele away
 But' he þat' for oure redempcioñ
 And bonde Sathan and lyep' hym þer he lay 634
 So be þi strong' Champion þis daye
 ffor but' Criste on þe miracle kith
 Wip-owten gilt' þou shalt' be slayn as swiþe 637

She sette her doune on knees and þer she seide
 Immortal god þat' sauedest' Susanne
 ffro fals blame and þou merciful maide
 Marye I mene douȝter to seint' Anne 641
 Byforn whoos childe aungels sing' Osanne
 If I be giltyles of þis felonye
 My socoure be for ellis shal I dye 644

Haue ȝe not' sene somtyme a pale face
 Among' a prees of him þat' hap be ladde
 Toward' þe depe where as he gete no grace
 And swich a coloure in his face hap hadde 648
 Men myȝt' knowe his face þat' was bistadde
 Amonge alle þe faces of þat' route
 So stant Custance and lokep' hire aboute 651

O quenes lyuyng in prosperite
 Duchesses and ȝe ladies euerechone
 Haue some roupe on her aduersite [leaf 96] 655
 An Emperours douȝtere stant' allone
 She hap no wiȝt' to whom to make her mone
 O blood real þat' stondest' in þis drede
 ffer bene þi frendes at' þi grete nede 658

This Alla king' hap swich compassioun
 As Gelyte hert' is fulfilled of pite
 þat' from his eyen ranne þe water down
 Now hasteli do fecche a boke quod he 662

And if þis knyght wil swere howe þat she
 þis womman sclowe ȝit wil we vs avise
 Whom þat we wold shuld be *our* Iustise 665

A breton booke writen *with euangelies*
 Was fette and þer-on he swore anone
 She giltif was in þe mene whiles
 An honde him smote vpon þe nekke bone 669
 þat doune he felle at ones as a stone
 And boþe his eyen brast out of his face
 In sizt of euery body in þat place 672

A voys was herde in general audience
 And seide þou hast disslaundered giltelees
 þe douȝter of holy church in high presence
 Thus hastowe done and ȝit I mot hold my pees 676
 Of þis mervaille agast was all þe prees
 As mazed folk þei stoden euerchone
 ffor drede of wreche sauf Custance alone 679

Grete was þe drede and eke þe repentaunce
 Of hem þat hadden wrong' suspecioun
 Vppon þis cely Innocent' Custaunce
 And for þis miracle in conclusioun 683
 And by Custance Mediacioun
 þe kinge and mony anoper in þat place
 Conuerted were þonked be goddis grace [leaf 95, back]

This fals knyght was sclaȝn for his vntroupe
 By Iuggement of Alla hastify
 And ȝit Custance haþ of his deþ gret rouþe
 And after þis Ihesus of his mercye 690
 Made Alla wedden ful solempnely
 This holy maiden þat is so briȝt and shene
 And þus haþ crist made Custance a quene 693

But who was wooful if I shal not lye
 Of þis wedding but donegild *and* no moo /
 The kingges modere ful of Tyrannye
 Hire þouzt her cursed hert brast a two 697
 She wold not her sone had done so /
 Hire þouzt a despite þat he shulde take
 So straunge a creature vnto his make 700

ME list not of þe Chaf ne of þe stre
 Make so longe a tale as of þe corne
 What shuld I tellen of þe Rialte
 Of mariage or which cours goþ byforne 704
 Who blowep in trompe or in an horne
 þ' firwte of euery tale is forto seye
 þe[i] and drinke . þei daunce singe or pley . 707

Thei gone to bedde as it was skil *and* riȝt
 ffor þouȝe þat wifes bene ful holy pingges
 þei most take in pacience a nyght
 Such manere necessities as ben plesingges 711
 To folk þat han ywedded hem *with* ringges /
 And laye a litel her holynesse aside
 As for þe tyme it may none opere betide 714

On hire he gate a knaue child anone
 And to a bisshope and his Constable eke
 He toke his wif to kepe whan he is gone [leaf 96]
 to scotland ward his foomen for to seke 718
 Nowe faire Custance þat is so humble *and* meke
 So longe is goon wiþ child til þat stille
 She halt her chambere abiding cristes wille 721

The tyme is come a knaue child she bere
 Mauricius atte fontstone þei hym calle
 þis Constable doþ forþ come a massagere
 And wrote to his kinge þat cleped was Alle 725

Howe þat þis blisful tydyngges is byfalle
 And oper tydyngges spedeful forto seye
 He takeþ þe lettre and forþ he goþ his waye 728

This Massagere to done his auauntage
 Vnto þe kingges modere rideþ swiþe
 And salweþ hire ful faire in his langage
 Madame quod he. 3e may be glad *and* bliþe 732
 And þonkeþ god an hundred þousand siþe
 My lady quene haþ child wiþ-uten doute
 To Ioie and blisse of al þis regne aboute 735

Lo here þe lettres seled of þis þinge
 þat I mot bere wiþ al þe hast I may
 If 3e wil ouzt vnto 3oure sone þe kinge
 I am 3oure seruauante boþ nyzt *and* day 739
 Dongild answerd not not at þis tyme
 But here al nyzt I wil þou take þi rest
 To morowe wil I saye what me lest 742

This Massagere dronk sadly ale *and* wyne
 And stollen were his lettres prively
 Out of his boxe whilst he slepte as a swyn
 And counterfeted was ful subtilly 746
 A nopere lettre wrouzt ful synfully
 Vnto þe kinge directe of þis matere
 from his Constable as 3e shal after here [leaf 96, back]

The lettre spak þe Quene delyuered was
 Of so horrible a fendlich creature
 That in þe Castel noon so hardy was
 þat eny while dorst þer-Inne endure 753
 The modere was an Elf by auenture
 Ycome by Charmes or by sorcerye
 And euery wight hateþ her companye 756

WOo was pis kinge whan he pis *lettre* had seyne
 But to no wiȝt he tolde his sorowes sore
 But of his owne honde he wrote ageyne
 Welcome þe sonde of *crist* for euermoore 760
 To me þat am now lered in his lore
 Lord welcome be þi lust and þi plesaunce
 My lust is putte al in þine ordynaunce 763

Wepeþ pis child al be it foule or feire
 And eke my wiff vnto myn home *commynge*
 Crist whan him list may sende me an heire
 More a-greable þan pis is to my likinge 767
 This letter he celeþ prively wepinge
 Whiche to þe massagere was take sone
 And forþ he goþ þer nys no more to done 770

O Massagere fulfilled of dronkenesse [*Latin note, p. 188.*
188]
 Stronge is þi breeþ þi lymmes flateren ay
 And þou by-wreiest al sikernesse
 Thy mynde is lorn þou langlest as a Iaye 774
 Thi face is turned in a newe aray
 Ther dronkenesse regneþ in ony route
 Ther nys no counseil hidde wiþ-oute doute 777

O Donegild I ne haue noon englišh digne
 Vnto þi malice and þi tyrannye ¹ [*line repeated in MS, with tirannye,*
as the first line of leaf 97]
 And perfore to þe fende I þe resigne
 Lat hym enditen of þi traterye 781
 ffy mannyssh fy. o nay by god I lie
 ffy feendissh spirit. for I dar wel telle
 Thowe þou here walk þi spirit is in helle 784

This massagere commep fro þe feende agayn
 And at þe kinges moders court he liȝt
 And she was of this massagere ful fayn
 And plesed him in al þat euere she myȝt 788

He drank wel his girdel vnder piȝt'
He slepeþ and he ffronteþ in his gise
Al nyght to þe sonne gan arise 791

Ofte were his *lettres stolle euerechone*
And counterfeted *lettres* in þat wise
þe kinge *commaundeþ* his constable anone 795
Vp peyn of hongyng' on an high Iwyse
That he ne shulde suffre in no wise
Custance wiþ-Inne his regne forto abide
Thre daies and a quarter of a tyde 798

But in þe same ship as he hire fonde
Hure and her yonge sone and al her gere
He shulde putte and croude fro þ' londe
And charge hure þat she neuere eft come þere 802
O my Custaunce wel may þi goost haue fere
And sleping' in þi dreame bene in penaunce
Whan donegil cast aȝ hir ordinaunce 805

This Massagere on morowe whan he woke
Vnto þe Castel halt þe next waye
And to þe Constable he þe *lettre* toke
And whan þat he þis pitous *lettre* saye 809
fful oft he seide allas and walawaye
lord Crist' quod he howe may þis *lettre* endure [leaf 97, back]
So ful of synne is mony a creature 812

O myȝty god if þat it be þi wille
Sip þou art riȝtful Iuge how may it be
þat þou wilt suffren Innocentz to spille
And wicked folk regnen in prosperite 816
O good Custance allas so woo is me
þat I mote be þi turmentour or deye
On shames deth þer nys noon opere waye 819

Wepen boþ ȝonge and olde in al þat place
 Whan þat þe kinge þis cursed *lettre* sent
 And Custance wiþ a dedly pale face
 þe ferþe day toward her ship she went 823
 But napelees she takeþ in good entent
 þe wille of Crist and kneling in þe stronde
 She saide lorde o. welcome be þi sonde 826

He þat me kept from þe fals blame
 While I was in þe londe amonges ȝou
 He kan me kepe from harme *and* eke fro sham
 In salt See al þouȝe I se not howe 830
 As stronge as euer he was he is riȝt now
 In hym trust I and in his modere dere
 þat is to me my saille and eke my stere 833

Hire litel child lay weping in her Arme
 An kneling pitously to him she seide
 Pees litel sone I wil do þe noon harme
 Wiþ þat her keercchef of her hede she breide 837
 And ouer his smale yen she it leyde
 And in her Arme she lullep it ful fast
 And in to heuene her yen vp she cast 840

Modere quod she and maide briȝt marie
 Soþe is þat þorowe wommennys eggement [leaf 96]
 Mankinde was lorn and dampned ay to dye
 ffor which þi child was on croys yrent 844
 þi blisful eyen segȝ al his turment
 þan is þer no comparison bytwene
 þi woo and any woo man may sustene 847

Thowe seghe þi sone ȝalayn bifore þine eyen
 And ȝit now lyueþ my litel child *parfay*
 Now lady briȝt to whom al woful crien
 Thowe glory of wommanhode þou faire may 851

þow hauen of refute briȝt sterre of day
 Rewe on my child þat of þi gentilnesse
 Rewest on euery Rwefulh in distresse 854

O litel child allas wat is þi gilt
 þat neuer wrouȝtest synne as ȝit parde
 Why wil þine harde fadere haue þe spilt
 O mercye dere constable quod she 858
 As lat my litel child dwelle here with þe
 And ȝif þou darst not fauour hym for blame
 So kisse him onys in his faders name 861

Therwiþ she lokeþ backward to þe lande
 And saide fare wel husbond rewthlees
 And vp she rest and walkeþ down þe stronde
 Toward þe shippe hire foloweþ al þe prees 865
 And euere she preieþ her child to hold his pees
 And takeþ her leue and with an holy entent
 She blesseþ hire and into ship she went 868

Availed was þe ship it is no drede
 Abundantly for hire a longe space
 And oþer necessaries þat shulde nede
 She had ynowe heryed be goddes grace 872
 ffor wynde and weder almyȝty god purchase
 And bringe hure home I can no better seye [leaf 98, back]
 But in þe See she driveþ forþ her weye 875

[PART III.]

Alla þe kynge commeth home sone after þis
 Vnto his Castel of þe which I tolde
 And axeþ wher his wif and his child is
 The Constable gan about his hert cold 879

And pleynty al þe manere he hym told
 As ȝe han herde I can telle it no bettere
 And shewep þe kinge his seele *and* his letters 882

And seide lord as ȝe commaunded me
 Vp peyn of deþe so haue I done certeyne
 This massagers tormented was til he
 Most be-knownen and tellen plat *and* pleyne 886
 ffrom nyght to nyȝt in what place he had leyne
 And þus by witte and subtil enqueringe
 Ymagened was by whom þis harme can sprynge 889

The honde was knowen þat þe lettere wrote
 And al þe venyme of þis cursed dede
 But in what wise certeynly I note
 þe effecte is þis þat Alla out of drede 893
 his modere sclowe þat mony men pleynty rede
 That for she tratour was to her legeaunce
 Thus endep old donegild *with* meschaunce 896

The Sorowe þat þis Alla nyȝt *and* day
 Makeþ for his wif and for his child also
 Ther nys no tunge þat it telle may
 But now wil I vnto Custance goo 900
 That fletep in þe See in peyn *and* woo
 V. ȝere and more as liked cristes sonde
 Er þat her shippe approched vnto londe 903

Vnder an hethen Castell atte last
 Of which þe name in my tixt noȝt I fynde [leaf 99]
 Custance and eke þe child þe see vp cast
 Almyȝty god þat sauep al man kinde 907
 Haue on custauce and her childe som mynde
 þat fallen is in hethen hand eft sone
 In poynt to spille as I shal telle ȝou sone 910

Downe fro þe Castell comþe þere mony a wizt
 To gawen on þis ship and on custance
 But shortely from þe Castel on a nyzt
 The lordes steward god ȝeue hym meschaunce 914
 A theef þat had reyned our creaunce
 Come into shipp allone and seide he shuld
 Her lemman be where so she wold or nold 917

Woo was þis wrecched womman þoo bygone
 Her childe cried and she cried pitously
 But blisful mary halpe hure rizt anone
 ffor wip her strogelinge wel and myztely 921
 þe theef fille ouer bord al sodeynly
 And in þe See he dreynt for vengeance
 And þus hap crist vnwemmed kepte custance 924

O foule lust of luxurie lo þine ende [Latin note, p. 183.]
 Not only þat þou fayntest mannys mynde 183
 But verrelly þou wilt his body shende
 þe ende of þi werk or of þi lustes blynde 928
 Is compleynyng how mony one may men fynde
 þat nouzt for werk somtyme but for þentente
 To done þis synne bene eiper slayn or shente 931

How may þis weike womman han þis strength
 Hire to defend aȝeinst þis Renegat
 O Golyas vnmesurable of length
 How myzt dauid make þe so mat 935
 So yonge and of armure so desolat
 How durst he loke vpon þi dredful face [leaf 92, back]
 Wel may men seen it was but goddes grace 938

Who ȝaf Iudith corage or hardynesse
 To scleen hym Olesphernus in his tent
 And to delyuere out of wrecchednesse
 The puple of god I seye for þis entent 942

That riȝt as god spirit and vigor sent
 To hem and saued hem out of meschaunce
 So sent he myȝt and vigor to Custaunce 945

Forþ goþ þe shippe þorowe-out þe narow mouþe
 Of Iubaltar and scepte dryuyng aye
 Som tyme west and somtyme nourþe *and* souþe
 And somtyme Este ful mony a very daye 949
 Til Cristes modere blessed be ȝe aye
 haþ scapen þorgh her endelees goodnesse
 To make an ende of al her hevynesse 952

Now lat vs stynt of Custance but a throwe
 And speke we of þe Romayn Emperour
 þat out of Surry haþ by letters knowe
 þe slaughter of Cristen folk and dishonoure 956
 Doon to his douȝter by a fals tratour
 I mene þe Cursed wicked Sowdenesse
 That at þe feest lete scleen boþ more *and* lesse 959

For which þe Emperour haþ sent anon
 His Senatour wiþ real ordynaunce
 And oper lordes god wote mony on
 On Surriens to taken hie vengeance 963
 They brennen sleen *and* bringgen hem to meschaunce.
 fful mony a day but shortely þis is þende
 Homword to Rome þei shapen hem to wende 966

This senatour repaireþ wiþ victorye
 To Romeward saillinge ful Rially [leaf 100]
 And mette þe Shippe dryuyng as seiþ þe storye
 In which Custance sitte ful pitously 970
 No þing ne knewe what she was ne why
 She was in such aray. ne she nyl sey
 Of her astaaf þough þat she shulde deye 973

HE bringeþ her to Rome and to his wiff
 He ȝaue hure and her ȝonge sone also
 And wiþ þe Senatoure she lad her liff
 Thus can our lady bringen out of woo 977
 Wooful Custance and mony an oþer moo
 And longe tyme dwelled she in þat place
 In holy werkes euer as was hire grace 980

The Senatours wif her Aunte was
 But for al þat she knewe her neuere þe more
 I wil no lenger tarien in þis cas
 But to kinge Alla which I spake of yore 984
 þat for his wiff wepeþ and sigheþ sore
 I wil retorne *and* lete I wil Custance
 Vnder þe Senatours gouernaunce 987

Kynge Alla which þat had his modere sclayn
 Vpon a day felle in such repentaunce
 þat if I shortely tellen shal *and* playn
 To Rome he commeþ to resceyuen his penaunce 991
 And putte him in þe Popes ordinaunce
 In by and lowe and Ihesu crist bysouȝt
 fforȝeue his wicked werkes þat he wrouȝt 994

The fame anon þorowe Room tounne is born
 How Alla þe king shal comen in pilgrimage
 By herberious þat wenten hym biforn
 ffor which þe Senatoure as was vsage 998
 Rode hym aȝein and mony of his lynage
 As wel to shewen his hie magnificence [leaf 100, back]
 As to doon eny king a Reuerence 1001

Grete chere doþ þis noble Senatour
 To kinge Alla and he to hym also
 Euerech of hem doþ oþere grete honour
 And so byfelle þat in a day or twoo 1005

This Senatour is to king^t Alla goo /
 To feest^t and shortely if I shal not^t ly
 Custance sone in his Companye 1008

Somme men wold^t seyn atte request^t of Custance
 This Senatour hap^t ladde pis child^t to fest^t
 I may not tellen euery Circumstance
 Be as be may þer was he atte leest^t 1012
 But^t soþe is pis þat^t at his moders hest^t
 Byforn alla duringe þe metes space
 The Childe stode loking^t in þe kinges face 1015

This Alla kinge hap^t of þe child^t gret^t wonder
 And to þe Senatore he seide anon
 Whoos is þat^t faire childe þat^t stondeþ 3onder
 I noot^t quod he by god and be seynt^t Iohn 1019
 A modere he hap^t but^t fadere hap^t he non
 þat^t I of wote and shortly in a stounde
 He told^t Alla how þat^t pis child^t was founde 1022

But^t god wote quod pis Senatour also
 So vertuous a lyuere in my liff
 Ne segh I neuere as she ne herd of mo
 Of worldly wommen / mayde ne wiff 1026
 I dar wel seide she had leuer^t a knyff
 þorowe-out^t her brest^t þan bene a woman wicke
 þer is no man couþe bringe hire to þat^t prikke 1029

Now was pis Childe as like vnto custance
 As possible is a creature to be [leaf 101]
 This Alla hap^t þe face in remembrañce
 Of Dame Custance and þeron mused he 1033
 If þat^t þe childes modere were ouzt^t she
 þat^t is his wif and priuely he sizt^t
 And spedde hym fro þe table þat^t he myzt^t 1036

Perfay he pouȝt þe fantom is in myn hede
 I ouȝt demen of skilful Iugement
 That in þe salt se my wif is dede
 And afterward he made his argument 1040
 What wote I ȝif þat crist haþ hider sent
 My wif by see as wel as he her sent
 To my cuntre from pennes as she was went 1043

And aftere anon home wiþ þe Senatours
 Gop alla forto see þis wonder chance
 This Senatour doþ Alla grete honoure
 And hastify he sent aftere Custance 1047
 But trusteþ wel her lust nouȝt to dance
 Whan þat she wist wherfor was þat sonde
 Vnneþes on her fete she myȝt stonde 1050

Whan Alla segh his wif faire he her grette
 And wepte it was reuþe forto see
 ffor atte first loke he on hir sette
 He knewe wel verrely þat it was she 1054
 And for sorowe as dombe stant as a tre
 So was hert shette in her distresse
 Whan she remembred his vnkindenesse 1057

Twise she swowneþ in his owne siȝt
 He wepte and him excuseþ pitously
 Nowe god quod he and his halowes briȝt
 So wisly on my soule haue mercy 1061
 þat of ȝoure harme as giltelees am I
 As is Maurice Mi sone so lik ȝoure face [leaf 101, back]
 Ellis þe feend me fecche out of þis place 1064

Longe was þe sobbyng and þe bitter peyne
 Er þat her wooful hertes myȝten cese
 Grete was þe pite forto here hem pleyne
 þorgh whichs pleyntes gan her woo encrees 1068

I prei þou aȝ my labour to relees
 I may not tellen her woo vntil to morowe
 I am so wery to speke of her sorowe 1071

But fynaly whan þat þe soþe is wist
 That Alla giltyles was of her woo
 I trowe an C. tymes ben þei kist
 And suche a blisse is þer ytwix hem twoo 1075
 þat saue þe Ioie þat lesteþ euermoo
 þer is non like þat eny creature
 Haþ seyne or shal while þe world may dure 1078

Tho preied she her husbond mekely
 In relief of her longe pitous pyne
 þat he wolde prei hure fadere specially
 þat of his maieste he wold enclyne 1082
 To vouche sauþ with him som day to dyne
 She preied him eke he shulde by no way
 vnto her fader no word of hire say 1085

Somme men wold seyn how þat þe childe Maurice
 Dop þis massage vnto þe Emperour
 But as I gesse alla was not so nyce
 To him þat was of so souereyn honour 1089
 As he þat is of cristen folk þe flour
 Sent eny childe but it is bette to deme
 He went him self and so it may wel seme 1092

This Emperour haþ graunted gentilly
 To come to dyner as he hym bysouȝt [leaf 102]
 And wel rede I he loked bisily
 Vpon þis child and on his douȝter þouȝt 1096
 Alla goþ to his Inne and as hym ouȝt
 Arraied for þis feest in euery wise
 As ferforþ as his conyng may suffice 1099

The morowe come and Alla can hym dresse
And eke his wif þis emperour forto mete
And forþ þei ride in Ioie and in gladnesse
And whan she segh her fadere in þe strete 1103
She liȝt a-doune and falleþ hym to fete
ffadere quod she ȝoure ȝonge child Custance
Is nowe ful clene out of ȝoure remembrance 1106

I am ȝoure douȝtere Custance quod she
þat whilom ȝe sent vnto Surray
It am I fadere þat in þe salt see
Was putte allone and dampned forto dye 1110
Good fader now I yow merceye crye
Send me no more vnto noon heþenes
But þonke my lord here of his kindenes 1113

Who can þe pitous Ioye tellen alle
Bitwixe hem þre siþ þei ben þus ymette
But of my tale make an ende I shal
The day goþ fast I wil no lenger lette 1117
This glad folk to dyner þei hem sette
In Ioye and blisse at mete I lat hem dwelle
A þousand fold wel more þan I can telle 1120

This child Maurice was siþen Emperour
Made by þe pope and lyued cristenly
To cistes churche he did grete honour
But I lat al þis story passen by 1124
Of Custance is my tale specialy
In olde romayn Gestes may men fynde
Mawrices lif I bere it not in mynde

[leaf 102, back]
[Latin note, p. 158.]
1:2

This king Alla whan he his tyme say
Wiþ Custance his holy wif so swete
To Engeland ben þei come þe riȝt way
Wher as þei lyve in Ioie and in quiete 1131

But litel while it lasteþ I ȝou hete
 Ioie of þis world for tyme wil not abide
 ffrom day to nyȝt it chaungeþ as þe tyde 1134

Who lyued euere in suche delite a day [Latin note, p. 132.]
 þat ne meued eiper conscience 182

Or Ire or talent or somkyn affray
 Envie or pride. or passioñ or offence 1138

I ne seie but for þis ende þis sentence
 þat litel while in Ioye or in plesaunce
 Lasteþ þe blisse of alla wiþ Custaunce 1141

For deþ þat takeþ of high and lough his rente
 Whan passed was a ȝeer euene as I gesse
 Out of þis world þis kinge alla he hente 1145
 ffor whoom Custance haþ ful grete hevynesse
 Now lat vs preien god his saule blisse
 And Dame Custance fynally to seye
 Toward þe towne of Rome goþ her weye 1148

TO Rome is come þis holy creature
 And fyndeþ her frende hool and sound
 Now is she scaped aȝ hure auenture
 And whan she her fadere haþ yfounde 1152
 Doune on her knees falleþ she to grounde
 Weping for tendernesse in hert blith
 She herieþ God an C. thousand siþe 1155

In vertue and holy Almesdede
 þei lyuen aȝ and neuere a sondrie wende [leaf 108]
 Til deþ departe hem þis lif þei lede
 And fareþ now wel my tale is at an ende 1159
 Now Ihesu crist þat of his myȝt may sende
 Ioye after woo gouerne vs in his grace
 And kepe vs aȝ þat beñ in þis place 1162

¶ Here endeþ þe tale of þe man of lawe

[The Squire's Prologue follows in the MS.]

And here bygynneþ þe prologe of þe sqwiere [on leaf 108]

Oure hoost vpon his stiropes stood anon || þe prologe
 And seide good men herkenep euerychoñ
 This was a prifty tale for þe nones
 Sire pariss̄ preest quod he for goddes bonys 1166
 Telle vs a tale as was þi forward yore
 I se wele pat ȝe leerned men in lore
 Can moche good by goddes dignyte
 þe Parsones hym answered benedicite 1170
 What eileþ þe man so synfully to swere
 Oure hoost answerd O Iankyn be ȝe þere
 I smelle a lollard in þe wynde quod he
 Howe good men quod our hoost herkenep me 1174
 Abideþ for goddis digne passioñ
 ffor we shal haue a predicacioñ
 þis lollard here wil prechen vs somewhat
 Nay by my fader soule þat shal he nat 1178
 Seide þe Sqwier here shal he nat preche
 He shal no gospel glosen here ne teche
 He leueþ al in þe grete god he
 He wolde sowen som difficulte 1182
 Or springett Cokel in oure clene corn
 And perfore hoost I warne þe byforn
 Mi Ioly body shal a tale telle
 And I shal Clynken ȝou so mery a belle 1186
 þat I shal waken al þis companye
 But it shal not bene of Philosophie
 Ne Phislyas ne teermes queynt of lawe
 þer is but litel latyn in my mawe 1190

[*The Squire's Tale follows in the MS.*]

¶ The Sqwiers Tale.

[*Headline*]
[leaf 103, back]

And here by-

gynnep þe Sqwiers tale. /

At Sarray in þe land of Tartarye ¶ *ffabula Armigeri*
 þer dwelt a kyngt þat werried Russye
 þorgh which þer deyed mony a dughty man
 þis noble kingt was cleped Cambynskan 12
 Which in his tyme was of so grete renoun
 þat þer nas nowhere in no regioun
 So Excellent a lord in al þinge
 Hym lacked nouȝt þat longed to a kynge 16
 As of þe secte of which þat he was born
 He kepte his lay to which þat he was sworn
 And perto he was hardy wise *and* riche
 And pitous and Iustt alway ylich 20
 Soop of his worde benygne *and* honourable
 Of his corage as ony centre stable ¶ *centrum circuli*
 ȝongt fresshe and stronge in Armes desirous
 As eny bachilere in al his hous 24
 A faire persone he was and fortunat
 And keptt alway so wel rial astat
 þat þer nas nawhere such a noþer man
 This noble kinge þis tartre Cambynskan 28
 had two sones on Eltheta his wiff
 Of which þe eldestt hightt Algarsiff
 þat oper was cleped Camballo
 A doughtere had þis worþi kinge also 32
 þat ȝongestt was and hightt Canace
 Butt forto telle ȝou al her beute
 Itt liþe nott in my tunge ne in my connyng
 I dar nott vndertake so hye a þinge 36

Myn engelissn eke is insufficient
 It most bene a ritther excellent
 þat kouþe his colours longyng for þat arte
 If he shuld here discryve eny part 40
 I am noon suche I most speke as I can
 And so byfelle þat þis Cambynskan
 Hath xxⁱⁱ wyntere born his diademe [leaf 104]
 As he was wonte fro ȝere to ȝere I deme 44
 He lete þe feest of his natiuite
 Done Crien þorgh Sarray his Cite
 þe last Idus of March after þe ȝere
 Phebus þe sonne ful Iolyf was and clere 48
 ffor he was nye his exaltaciō
 In Martes face and in his mancioni
 In Aries þe Colerik þe hote signe
 fful lusty was þe weder and benigne 52
 ffor which þe fowles aȝeinst þe sonne shene
 What for the seson and þe ȝonge grene
 fful loude songe hir affeccions
 Hem semed han geten hem proteccions 56
 Aȝeinst þe swerd of wynter kene and cold
 This Cambynskan of which I haue ȝou told
 In Rial vestement sitte vpon his des
 Wip dia[de]me ful high in his paleys 60
 And halt his feest so solempne and so riche
 þat in þis world ne was þer non it liche
 Of which if I sal telle al þe araye
 Than wold it occupie a somers daye 64
 And eke it nedep nat to devise
 And euery cours þe order of her seruise
 I wil not telle of her straunge sewes
 Ne of her swannes ne her heron-sewes 68
 Eke in þat londe as tellen knyȝtes olde
 There is som mete þat is for deynte holde
 That in þis londe men recche but smalt
 þer nys no man þat may reporten aft 72

GROUP F. § 2. SQUIRE'S TALE. Petworth MS.

I wil not tary ȝou for it is pryme	
And for it is no frute but losse of tyme	
Vnto my furst I wil haue my recours	
And so byfel þat after þe þred recours	76
Whil þat þis kinge sitte þus in his nobleye	
Herkenyng' his menstralles her þingges pleye	
Byforn him at þe boord deliciously	[leaf 104, back]
Inne atte halle door so sodeynly	80
Ther come a knyght vpon a stede of bras	
And in his honde a brood myroure of glas	
Vpon his þombe he had of gold a ryng	
And by his side a naked swerd hangyng	84
And vp he rideþ to þe heigh boord	
In al þe halle ne was þer spoke no word	
ffor merueile of þis knyght hym to biholde	
ful bisily þei wayten ȝonge and olde	88
This stronge knyght þat come þus sodeynly	
Al armed saue his hede ful richely	
Salued þe king þe quene and lordes alle	
By ordere as þei seten in þe halle	92
Wip so high reuerence and obeysance	
As wel in speche as in his countenance	
þat Gawayne wip his olde curtasie	
þouȝe he come ageyn out of ffarye	96
Ne coude him nouȝt amende with no word	
• And after þis bifore þe highe boord	
He wip a manly vois saide his massage	
After þe forme vsed in his langage	100
With-out vice of sillable or of lettre	
And for his tale shulde seme þe bettere	
Accordant to his wordes was his chere	
As techep arte of speche hem þat it lere	104
Al be it þat I can not sowne his styeler	
Ne can not clymben ouer so hiȝe a styeler	
ȝit say I þis þat as to comune entente	
Thus moche amountep al þat euere he ment	108

GROUP F. § 2. SQUIRE'S TALE. Petworth MS.

If it so be þat I haue it in my mynde
 He seide þe kyng of Arabye and of ynde
 My liege lord on þis solempne day
 Salweþ þou as he best can *and* may 112
 And seendeþ þowe in honour of *þour* feste
 By me þat am redy al at þoure heeste
 This stede of bras þat esily & weþ [leaf 105]
 Can in a space of a day naturel 116
 This is to saye in *four and twenti*¹ houres [1 MS xxiij.]
 Wher so þou lust in drougt or in shoures
 Beren þoure body in to euery place
 To which þoure hertes wilneþ forto pace 120
 Wip-oute wemme of þou þorow foule or fare
 Or if þow list to flee as hie in þe Eire
 As doþ an Egle whan him list to sore
 This same stede shal bere þou euermore 124
 Wip-uten harme til þe be where þou list
 þow þat þe slepen on his bak or rest
 And turne agein wip wriþing of a pynne
 He þat it wrougt cowde ful mony a gynne 128
 He waited mony a constellaciõ
 Or he had doo þis operaciõ
 And knewe ful mony a seal *and* mony a bonde
 This myroure eke þat I haue in myn honde 132
 Hap suche a myzt þat men may in it see
 whan þer shal fallen eny aduersite
 Vnto þour regne or vnto *þour* self also
 And openly who is þoure freend or floo / 136
 And ouer al þis if eny lady brizt
 Hap sette her hert in eny maner wizt
 If he be fals she shal his treson see
 His newe loues *and* al his subtilite 140
 So openly þat þer shal no þing hide
 wherfore ageyn þis lusty somers tyde
 This myrour and þis ryng þat þe may see
 He hap sent to my lady Canacee 144

3oure excellent' dou3tere þat' is here
 þe vertue of þis ryng' if 3e wil here
 Is þis' þat' if her list' it' forto were
 Vpon her thcmbe or in her purs it bere 148
 þer nys no fowle þat' fleep vnder þ' heuene
 þat' he ne shal vnderstonð his steuene
 And knowe his menyng' openly *and* pleyne [leaf 105, back]
 And answe're him in his langage ageyne 152
 And euery gras þat' groweþ vpon rote
 She shal wel knowe *and* whome it wil do bote
 And be his woundes neuere so depe *and* wide/
 This naked swerd þat' hongeþ by my side 156
 Such' vertue hap þat' what' man so 3e smyte
 þorowe-out' his armure it' wil kerue *and* bite
 were it' as thikke as is a-braunched oke
 And what' man þat' is wounded with þe stroke 160
 Shal neuere be hool til þat' 3ou list' of grace
 To stroke him with þe plat' in pilk place
 Ther he is hirt' þis is as moche to seyn
 3e mote with þe plat' swerde ageyn 164
 Stroke hym in the wounde *and* it' wil close
 This is a verrey soþe wip-outen glose
 It' failleþ nou3t' þe whilis it' is in 3our holde
 And whan þis kny3t' hap þus þis tale tolde 168
 He rideþ out' of þe halle *and* down he lizt'
 His stede which þat' shoon as sonne bri3t'
 Stant' in þe courte stille as eny stoon
 This knyght' is to his chambre lad anoon 172
 And is vnarmed and to þe mete I-sette
 þe presentes bene ful richely fette
 This is to seyn þe swerd' and þe Mirrouer
 And born anoon vnto þe hie toure 176
 Wip' certeyn officers yordeyned þefore
 And vnto Canacee þe ryng' is bore
 Solempnely þer she sitte atte þ' table
 But' sikerly wip-oute eny fable 180

GROUP F. § 2. SQUIRE'S TALE. Petworth MS.

þe hors of bras þat may not be remewed
 It stant as it were to þe grounde yglwed /
 þer may no man out of þe place it drive
 ffor noon engyn of wyndas or polyve 184
 And cause whi for þei can not þe craft
 And perfore in þe place þei han it laft
 Tyl þat þe knyȝt hap tauȝt hem þe manere [leaf 109]
 To voyden him as ȝe shal after here 188
 Grete was þe prees þat swarmed to and froo
 To Gowren on þis hors þat stondeþ soo /
 ffor it so hegh was . and so brode and long
 So wel proporciond forto be stronge 192
 Riȝt as it were a stede of lombardy
 Ther-wiþ so horsly and so quyke of eye
 As it a ge[n]til poyleis coursere were
 ffor Certes from his tale vnto his ere 196
 Nature ne art ne koude hym nouȝt mende
 In no degre as al þe puple wende
 But euer-more hir most wonder was /
 Howe þat it cowde gon and was of bras 200
 It was of fayre as þe puple semed
 Dyuers folk dyuersly han demed
 As mony hedes as mony wittes þer bene
 þei Mormured as don a swarme of been 204
 And mede skilles after her fantasies
 Rehersinge of þe olde poetries ¶ .i. equus pedasus.
 And seide it was lik þe Pegasee
 þe hors þat had wenges forto fle 208
 Or ellis it was þe Gr[e]kes hors Synon
 That brouȝt Troy to destruction
 As men in þise olde Geestes rede
 Myne hert quod oon is euer more in drede 212
 I trowe somme men of armes bene þer-Inne
 That shapen hem þis Cite forto wyne
 It were riȝt good þat al such þing were knowe
 Anoper rowned to his felawe lowe 216

GROUP F. § 2. SQUIRE'S TALE. Petworth MS.

And seide he lieþ for it is rapier like
 An apparence ymade by som magike
 As Iogelours pleyen at þise feestes grete
 Of sondry þouȝtes þus þei langle *and* trete 220
 As lewde puple demen comonly
 Of þingges þat bene made subtilly
 Than þei can in her lewdenesse comprehende [leaf 106, back]
 þei demen gladly to þe badder ende 224
 An somme of hem wondren on þe myrour
 þat born was vp vnto þe maister tour
 How men myȝt in hit suche þingges see
 Anoper answerd *and* seide it myȝt wel be 228
 Naturelli by composiciõs
 Of Angeles and of seley reflexiõs
 And seide þat in rome was such oon
 þei speke of Alocen and Vitilioñ 232
 And of Aristote þat writ in her lyues
 Of queynt Mirours *and* of prospectyues
 As knowen þei þat han her bokes herde
 And oper folk han wondred on þe swerde 236
 þat wold perce þourȝh euery þinge
 And fille in speche of Thelophus þe kinge
 And of Achilles for his queinte spere
 ffor he kouþe wip it boþ hele *and* dere 240
 Riȝt in such wise as men may *with* þe swerde
 Of which riȝt now ȝe han ȝoure seluen herde
 þe[i] speken of sondry hardyng of Metañ
 And speken of medecynes þer-wip-añ 244
 And howe *and* whan it shuld harded be
 which is vnknowe algate vnto me
 ¶ Tho speke þei of Ganaces rynges
 And seiden aȝ þat such a wondere þinge 248
 Of craft of ryngges had þei neuere noti
 Saue þat he Moyses and kyng Salomon
 Had a nane of Conyng in swich arte
 Thus seyn þe puple and drawn hem a parte 252

GROUP F. § 2. SQUIRE'S TALE. Petworth MS.

But napelees somme seide þat it was
 wonder to maken of feerne Asshen glas
 And ȝit is glas not like asshen of feerne
 But for þei han knowen it so ȝerne 256
 Therfore Ceseþ her langelinge *and* her wonder
 As sore wondren some on cause of þondere
 On ebbe on flood on gossomer *and* on myst [leaf 107]
 And al ping' to þe cause is wist' 260
 Thus langelen þei and demen and devise
 Til þat þe kinge can from his boord' arise
 Phebus haþ laft þe angle Meredyonal
 And ȝit ascending' was þe beest' Royal 264
 þe gentil leon wiþ his Aldrean
 Whan þat þis tartre kinge Cambynskan
 Roos from his boord' þer as he satte ful hie
 Byforne him goþ þe lowde Mynstralcye 268
 Til he come to his Chambre of paramentys
 Ther as þei sownen dyuers Instrumentys
 That is like an heuene forto here
 Now daunsen lusty venus children dere 272
 ffor in þe ffish hir' lady satte ful hie
 And lokeþ on hem wiþ a frendly ye
 This noble kinge is sette vpon his trone
 þis straunge knyght is fette to hym ful sone 276
 And on the Daunce he goþ wiþ Canace
 Here is þe reuel and þe Iolite
 þat is not able a dulle man to deuyse
 He most' han knowe loue and his seruyse 280
 And be a feestlich man as fressh as may
 That shulden ȝou deuysen swich array
 Who couþe tellen ȝou þe forme of daunces
 So vncouþe and such fressh countynaunces / 284
 Such Subtile lokingges and dyssymulynges
 ffor drede of Ialowsie mennys apperceyuynges
 No man but launcelett' *and* he is dede
 þerfor I passe ouer of al þis lustihede 288

I say no more but in þis Iolynesse
 I lete hem to men to soper hem dresse
 þe Steward hit spices forto hie
 And eke the wyne in al þis melodye 292
 þe vashers and þe sqwiers ben ygoñ
 þe Spices and þe wyne is come anōn
 Thei ete and drinke and whan þis had an ende [leaf 107, b1]
 Vnto þe temple as reson was þei wende 296
 ¶ The servise done / þei soupen al by day
 whatt' nedep þou rehersen her array
 Eche man wote wel þat at a kingges feast
 Hap plente to þe mest' and to þe leest' 300
 And deyntees moo þan be in my knowinge
 And aftere soper goþ þis noble kyng
 To sene þis hors of bras with al a route
 Of lordes and ladys hym aboute 304
 Such wondring' was þer on þis hors of bras
 þat siben þe grete sege of Troye was
 þer as men wondren on an hors also
 Ne was þer such a wondering' as was þoo 308
 By fynaly þe kinge axep þe knyght
 þe vertue of þe Coursere and þe myght
 And preide hym to telle his gouernañce
 þe hors anon gan forto trippe and dañce 312
 whan þat þis knyght leide hond vpon his reyne
 And seide Sir þer is to more to seyne
 but whan þe list to ride owhere
 3e moot' trille a pynne stonde in his ere 316
 which I shal telle þou bytwene vs twoo
 3e mote nempne hym to what' place also
 Or to what' cuntre þat þou list' to ride ./
 And whan 3e come þere as þou list' to abide 320
 Bidde hym descende and trille anopere pynne
 ffor þer-Inne lith þeffecte of al þat gynne
 And [he] wol doune descende and done þoure wille
 And in þat place he wille abide stille 324

GROUP F. § 2. SQUIRE'S TALE. Petworth MS.

þough al the world had þe contrary swore
 He shal not pennys by throwe ne ybore
 Or if þou list bidde hym þennes gōōn
 Trille þis pynne and he wil vanyssh anōn 328
 Out of þe sizt of euery maner wizt
 And come agein be it day or nyght
 whan þat þou list to clepen hym ageyn [leaf 108]
 In swich a gise as I shal to þou seyn / 332
 By-twixen þou and me and þat ful sone
 Ride whan þou list þer is no more to done
 ¶ Enformed whan þe kyngt was of þe knyzt
 And haþ conceyued in his witt arizt 336
 The manere and þe forme of al þis þinge
 fful glad and bliþe þe noble douzty kyng
 Repeyryng to his reuel as byforñ
 þe bridel is into þe toure borñ 340
 And kepte amonge his Iwels leef and dere
 þe hors vanysshed I note in what manere
 Out of her sizt 3e gete no more of mee
 But þus I lete in lust and Iolite 344
 This Cambynskan is lordes feestinge
 Til wel nygh þe day bygan to springe

¶ Explicit. prima pars./

¶ The Stag of an hert

The norice of digestion is slepe
 T Gan on hem wyne and bad hem take kepe 348
 þat moch mete and labour wil haue rest
 And wiþ a galping mouþe hem albycast
 And seide þat it was tyme to lye adoune
 ffor blood was in his domynacioun 352
 Cheressheþ blood natures frende quod he
 þei þonken hym galping by two or þre
 And euery wight gan drowen hym to his rest
 As slepe hem bad þei toke it for þe best 356

PETWORTH 226 (6-T. 488)

GROUP F. § 2. SQUIRE'S TALE. Petworth MS.

Her dremes mow not be tolde for me
 fful were her hedes of ffumosite
 þat causet dreem of which þer is no charge
 þei slepen til it was pryme large 360
 þe moste parte but it were Canacee
 She was ful mesurable as wommen be
 ffor of her fadere had she take her leue
 To goo to rest sone after it was Eue 364
 Her list not appalled forto be [leaf 108, back]
 ffor on þe morowe vnfeestlich forto see
 And slepte hure first slepe and awoke
 ffor such a Ioie she in her herte toke 368
 Boþ of her queynt rynges and of her myrour
 þat xxⁱⁱ tyme she chaunged her colour
 And in her slepe riȝt for impressiõ
 Of her myrour she had a visiõ 372
 wherfore er þat þe sonne vp gan glide
 She cleped vpon her maistresse here beside
 And seide þat hir list forto arise
 þise olde wommen þat bene gladly wise 376
 As is her maistresse answerd hir anõn
 And seide Madame whidere wold þe gõn
 þus erly for folke bene al in rest
 I wil quod she arise for me lest 380
 No lenger slepen but walken aboute
 Her Maistresse clepeþ wommen a grete route
 And vp þei risen wel . ten or twelue
 Vpriseþ fresshe Canace her selue 384
 As roddey and briȝt as þei þe ȝonge sonne
 þat in þe Ram is ten degrees vp ronne
 Noon hier was he whan she redy was
 And forþ she walked esily a pas 388
 Arraied after þe lusty seson sote
 liztly forto prey and walk on fote
 Nat but .v. or .vj. of her mayne
 And in a trenche fer in þe park/ goop she 392

GROUP F. § 2. SQUIRE'S TALE. Petworth MS.

The vapour which þat fro þe erthe glode
 Makeþ þe sonne to seme rody *and* brode
 But napelees it was so faire a sizt
 þat it made all her hertes forto lizt 396
 What for þe seson and þe mowrnynge
 And for þe fowles þat she herde synge
 ffor rizt anoon she wist what þei ment
 Rizt by her songe and knewe al her entent 400
 ¶ The knotte whi þat euery tale is toldt [leaf 109]
 ȝif it be taried til lust be coldt
 Of hem þat han it herkened after ȝore
 þe Sauour passeþ euer lenger þe more 404
 ffor ffulsomnesse of prolixite
 And by þis same reson þenkeþ me
 I shuld vnto þe knotte condescende
 And maken of her walking' sone an ende 408
 ¶ Amydde a tree for-drye as white as chalke
 As Canacee was plaiyng' in her walke
 þer satte a fawcon ouer her hede ful hie
 þat wiþ a pitous vois so gan to crie 412
 þat alle in þe wode resed of her crie
 And beten had her self so pitously
 Wiþ bothe her wenges to þe rede blode
 Ranne endelonge þe tre þer as she stode 416
 And euer in oon she cried alway *and* shrigh't
 And wiþ her beke her seluen so she piȝt
 þat þer ne was Tigre ne cruel beast
 þat dwelleþ eiþer in wode or in forest 420
 þat ne wold haue wepte if þat she wepe couþe
 ffor sorowe of hir she shrigh't alway so louþe
 ffor þer nas neuere ȝit man on lyue
 If þat I coude a fawcon wel discryve 424
 þat herd of such anoper of fairnesse
 As wel of plummage as of gentilnesse
 Of shappe of al þat myȝt rekned be
 A ffawcon peregryne þan semed she . 428

Of fremde londe and eueremore as she stode
 She swowned nowe and nowe for lakke of blood
 Til wel nygh is she fallen fro þe tre
 This faire kyngges doughter þis Canace 432
 þat on her fynger bere þe queynte ryng
 þorgh which she vnderstode wel euery þinge
 þat eny foule may in his ledne seyne
 And coude answer him in his ledne ageyne 436
 Haþ vnderstonde þat þis fawcon seide [leaf 100, back]
 And wel nygh for þe roupe almeſt she deide
 And to þe tree she goþ ful hastely
 And on þis faucon lokeþ ful pitously 440
 And helde her lappe abrood for wel she wist
 þe faucon moſt falle from þe twist
 Whan þat it swowned next for lakke of blode
 A longe while to waite her she stode 444
 Til atte last she spake in þis manere
 Vnto þe hawke as ȝe ſhal after here
 ¶ What is þe cause if it be forto telle
 þat ȝe bene in þis furial peyn of helle 448
 Quod Canacee vnto þis hawke aboue
 Is þis for sorowe of deþ or losse of loue
 ffor as I trowe þise bene causes two
 þan causen moſt a gentil hert woo / 452
 Of other harme it nedep not to speke
 ffor þi ȝoure ſelf vpon youre ſelf ȝou wreke
 Which þat proueth wel þat eipere ire or drede
 Mote bene encheson of ȝoure cruel dede 456
 Siþ þat I ſee noon oþer wiȝt ȝou chace
 ffor loue of god ſo doþ ȝour ſelf grace
 Or what may be ȝoure helpe for weſt nor eſte
 Ne ſeghe I neuere er nowe ne brid ne beſte 460
 þat ferde wiþ him ſelf ſo pitouſly
 ȝe ſcllee me wiþ ȝoure ſorowe verreyly
 I haue of ȝou ſo grete compaſſioun
 ffor goddes loue come fro þe tree adoun 464

GROUP F. § 2. SQUIRE'S TALE. Petworth MS.

And as I am a kingges doughter trewe
 If þat I verrelý þe causes knewe
 Of ȝoure dis[e]se if it lay in my myȝt
 I wold amende it er þat it were nyȝt 468
 As wisly helpe me grete god of kinde
 And Erbes shal I riȝt ynow fynde
 To hele wiþ ȝoure hirtes hastely
 þoo shright þis fawcon ȝit more pitously 472
 þan euere she did and fille to grounde anōn [leaf 110]
 And lith a swowne dede as is þe stoñ
 Til Canacee hap in hure lappe her take
 Vnto þat tyme she gan of swowne awake 476
 And after þat she of swowne gan vpbreide
 Riȝt in hire hawkes leodene þus she seide
 ¶ þat pite rennep sone in gentil herte
 ffeelng his symilitude in peynes smerte 480
 Is proued alday as men may it see
 As wel be werk as be auctorite
 ffor gentil hert kepeþ gentillesse
 I se wele þat ȝe han on my distresse 484
 Compassion my faire Canacee
 Of verrey wommanly benignyte
 That nature in ȝoure principles hap sette
 But for noon hope forto fare þe bette 488
 But forto obeye vnto ȝoure herte free
 And forto maken oþer be ware by me
 As by þe whelpe chastised is the lyōn
 Riȝt for þat cause and for þat conclusiō 492
 While þat I haue a leisere and a space
 Myn harme I wil confessen er I pace
 And euere while þat she her sorowe tolt
 þat oþer wepte as she to water wold 496
 Til þat þe ffaucon bad hir to be stille
 And wiþ a sighe þus she seide hir tille
 Ther I was bredde allas þat ilk daye
 And fostred in a roche of Merbel graye 500

So tenderly þat no þing eiled me
 I ne wist not what was aduersite
 Til I coude flee ful hie vndere þe skie
 Tho dwelled a tercelet me fast by 504
 þat semed welle of al gentilnesse
 Al were he ful of treson and falsnesse
 It is wrapped vnder humble chere
 And vnder hwe of troupe & in such manere ./ 508
 Vndere plesaunce and vnder bisy peyne [leaf 110, back]
 þat no wight couþe han wende he coude feyne
 So depe in greyne he dyed his coloures /
 Riȝt as a serpent hyd hym vnder floures 512
 Til he may se his tyme forto bite
 Riȝt so þis god of loue ypocrite
 Doþ so his serymonijs and obeysances
 And kepeþ in semblaunt al his obseruaunces / 516
 That sowneþ into gentilnesse of loue
 As in a tompe is al þe faire aboute
 And vnder is þe cours which as ȝe wote
 Such was þis ypocrite boþ colde and hote 520
 And in þis wise he serued his entente
 þat saue þe feende non wist what he mente
 Til he so longe had wepte and compleyned
 And many a ȝeer his servise to hym feyned 524
 Til þat myn hert to pitous and to nyce
 Al Innocent of his crowned malice
 ffor-ferde of his deþ as þouȝt me
 Vpon his oþes and his Suerte 528
 Graunted hym loue vpon þis condicioun
 þat euer moo myn honure and my renoun
 Were saued boþ priuey and apert
 þis is to seyn þat after his dissert 532
 I ȝaue hym al myn hert and my þouȝt
 God woot and he þat oþer wise nouȝt
 And toke his hert in chaunge of myn for ay
 But soþ is seide go siþen mony a day 536

GROUP F. § 2. SQUIRE'S TALE. Petworth MS.

A trewe wight and a þeeft thenkeþ not oon
 And whan he sawe þe þing so fer ygoñ
 þat I [had] graunted hym fully my loue
 In such a gise as I haue seide aboue 540
 An ȝeuen hym my trewe hert as free
 As he swore he ȝaf his hert to me
 Anoñ þis tigre ful of doublesnesse
 ffil on his knees wiþ so deuoute humblesse 544
 Wiþ hye reuerence and as by his chere [leaf 111]
 So like a gentile louere of manere
 So rauished as it semed for þe Ioye
 þat neuere Iason ne Paris of Troye 548
 Iason certes ne noon opere man
 Siþ Lameþ was þat alþer furst biganne
 To louen two as writen folk to-forne
 Ne neuere siþ þe first man was born 552
 Ne coude man by xxⁱⁱ þousand part
 Countrefete þe sophynes of his arte
 Ne were worpi to vnbole his galoche
 þer dowblenesse or faynyng shuld approche 556
 Ne so coupe þonke a wist as he did me
 His manere was an heuene for to see
 Til eny womman were she neuere his wys
 So peynted he and kembed at poynt devis 560
 As wel his wordes as his countenaunce
 And I so loued hym for his obeysaunce
 And for þe troupe I demed in his hert
 þat if so were þat eny þinge hym smerte 564
 Al were it neuere so lite and I it wist
 Me þouȝt I felt deþ at myn herte twiste
 And shortely so ferforþ þis þinge wente
 þat my wille hap his willes Instrument 568
 þis is to seyne my wille obeied his wille
 In al þinge as ferre as reson fille
 Keping þe boundes of my worship euere
 Ne neuere had I þinge so leef ne leuere 572

As hym : god wote ne neuere shal no moo /
 þis last lenger þan a ȝere or twoo
 ¶ That I Suppose of hym no ping' but good
 But fynaly þus at the ende it stood 576
 þat fortune wold þat he most twynne
 Out of þat place which þat I was Inne
 where me were woo it is no question
 I can not make of it discrepcion 580
 ffor oon pinge dar I telle boldely [leaf 111, back]
 I knowe what is þe payne of dep þerby :
 Such harme I felt for he no wigt by-leue
 So on a day of me he toke his leue 584
 So sorowefulli eke þat I wende verrelly
 þat he had feled as moche harme as I
 Whan þat I herde hym speke and segg his hwe
 But napelees I þouȝt he was so trewe 588
 And eke þat he repeire shuld agayn/
 Wip-Inne a litel while soþ to sayn
 And reson wold eke þat he most goo
 ffor his honoure as oft happeþ soo 592
 þat I made vertue of necessite
 And toke it wel siþ þat it most be
 As I best myght I hid fro hym my sorowe
 And toke hym by þe honde seint Iohn to borowe 596
 And seide þus loo I am ȝoures all
 Beþ swich as I haue be to you and shal
 what he answerd it nedep not reherce
 who can seyn bette þan he who can do wors 600
 whan he hap al wel seide þan hap he done
 þerfore bihouep hym a ful longe sponne
 þat shal eten with a feend þus herd I seye
 So at þe last he mote forþ his weye 604
 And forþ he fleep til he come þer hym list
 whan it come hym to purpoos for to rist
 ¶ I trowe he had þilk' texte in mynde
 þat al pinge repeiryng' to his kinge
 ¶ Redditi sui sui
 gula gaudet / 608

GROUP F. § 2. SQUIRE'S TALE. Petworth MS.

Gladeþ hym self þus seyn men as I gesse
 Men louen of propre kinde newfangilnesse
 As briddes doon þat men in cages fede
 for þeiȝ þou nyȝt and day take of hym hede 612
 And strawe her cage faire and soft as silk
 And ȝeue hem sugre . hony . brede *and* mylk
 ȝit right anoon as þat his door is vppe
 He wiþ his feete wil spurne down his cuppe 616
 And to þe wode he wil and wormes ete [leaf 112]
 So newfangle bene þei of her mete
 And louen nouelries of propre kinde
 No gentilnesse of blood may hem bynde 620
 So ferde þis tercelet allas þe day
 Thowe he were gentilh born fresh and gay
 And goodly forto sene . humble *and* free
 He seȝh vpon a tyme a kite fle 624
 And sodeynly he loued þis kite soo
 That al his loue is clene fro me goo
 And hap his trowþe falsed in þis wise
 Thus hap þe kite my loue in her seruyse 628
 And I am lorn with-uten remedye
 And wiþ þat worde þis fawcon gan to crie
 And swowned eft in Canaces barme
 Grete was þe sorowe for þat haukes harme 632
 That Canacee and alle her wommen made
 þei nyȝt howe þat þei myȝt þe faucon glade
 But Canace home bereþ her in hir lappe
 And softly in plaasters gan hir wrappe 636
 þer as she with hire beek had hurt her selue
 Nowe can not Canace but herbes delue
 Out of the grounde and maken salues newe
 Of herbes precious *and* fyne of hewe 640
 To helen wiþ þe hauke from day to nyȝt
 She doþ her bysynesse and al her myȝt
 And by hire beddes hede she made a mewe
 And keuered it wiþ veluetes blewe 644

In signe of troupe þat is in wommen sene
 And AH wip-oute þe mwee is peinted grene
 In whiche were peynted all þise fals foules
 As bene þise tydifs . tercelettes and owles 648
 Riȝt for þe spite were peynted hem biside
 Pies on hem forto crie and chide
 þus lete I Canace her hauke kepinge
 I wil no more as nowe speke of her rynges 652
 Til it come eft to purpoos forto seyn (leaf 112, back)
 Howe þat þis faucon gate her loue ageyn
 Repentaunt as þe story telleþ vs
 By mediacion of Camballus 656
 þe kyngges sone of which I ȝou tolde
 But hens forþ I wil processe holde
 To speken of auentures and of batailles
 That ȝit was neuere herde so grete merveiles 660
 ffirst wil I telle ȝou of Cambynskan
 That in his tyme mony a Cite wan
 And aftere wil I speke of algarsif
 How þat he wan Theodora to his wiff 664
 ffor whan ful oft in grete perill he was
 Ne had he bene holpen by þe hors of bras
 And aftere wil I speke of Camballo
 þat faught in listes wip þe breperen two 668
 ffor Canace er þat he myȝt hir wynne
 And þer I left wil I ageyn bygynne
^{.i. col.}
 va- Apollo whirleþ vp his chare so hie
 out Til þat þe god Mercurius hous þe sclie 672
Explicit secunda pars :
¶ Here endep þe squyers tale

And here

[on leaf 112, b^a-v]

bygynneþ þe prologe of þe merchaunte.

In feiþ Squier þow hast þe wel yquytte
 And gentely I preise wel þi witte
 Quod þe merchaunt^r consideryng^r þi zouþe
 So felingly þou spekest^r sir I þe alouþe 676
 As to my dome þer is non þat is here
 Of Eloquence þat shal be þi pere
 [And if þat þow lyue god ȝif þe goode chaunce [Barlow MS 20]
 And in vertue sēde the Contynauce] 680
 ffor of þi speche I haue gret^r deynte
 I haue a sone and by þe trinite
 I had leuere þan xxⁱⁱ pounde worþ lond^r
 þough it were riȝt^r nowē fallen in my hond^r 684
 ȝe ere a man of such discreciō
 As þat^r ȝe befi fy on possession
 But ȝif a man be uertuous withal
 I haue my sone snybbed and ȝit shal / 688
 ffor he to vertue listē not^r entende [leaf 112]
 But forto pley atte dys and to dispende
 And lese al þat he haþ is his vsage
 And he haþ leuere talke wiþ a page 692
 þan to comune wiþ a gentile wiȝt^r
 where he myȝt lerne gentillesse ariȝt^r
 A strawe for ȝoure gentilnesse quod our Hoost^r
 What^r Marchaunte parde Sir wel þou woost^r 696
 That ech of ȝou mote tellen at þe leest^r
 A tale or twoo or breken his bihest^r
 That knowe I well quod þe Merchaunte certeyn
 I prey ȝou haueþ not^r me in disdeyne 700

PETWORTH 236 (6-T. 498)

GROUP F. § 3. SQUIRE-FRANKLIN LINK. Petworth MS.

þouȝe to þis man I speke a word or twoo
 Telle on þi tale wiþ-outen wordes moo /
 Gladly sir ooste quod he I wil obeye
 Vnto ȝour wille now herkenep what I seye 704
 I wil ȝou not contrarye in no wise.
 As ferre as my wittes wil suffice
 I prey to god þat it may plesen ȝou
 þan woot I wole þat it is good ynowe 708
 þus endeþ þe prologe /

And here by-
 gynnep þe *Merchauntes tale*.

[on leaf 118]

Whilom þer was dwellinge in lumbardy ¶ The tale.
 A worpi knyȝt þat born was at Pavy
 In which he lyued in grete prosperite
 And sixty ȝere a wyuelees man was he 1248
 And folowed ay his bodely delite
 On womman þer as was his Appetite
 As doon þise fooles þat bene seculers
 And whan þat he was past sixty ȝeres 1252
 Were it for holynesse or ellis for dotage
 I can not seye but suche a corage
 had þis knyght to be a wedded man
 That day and nyght he doȝ al þat he can 1256
 To aspie where he myȝt wedded be
 Preiynge our lord to graunt hym þat he /
 Might ones knowe þat blisful liff [leaf 118, back]
 þat is bytwixe an husbonde and his wif 1260
 And for to lyuen vnder þat holy band
 Wiȝ which god furste man to womman band
 Noon oȝer lif seide he is worȝ a bene
 ffor wedloke is so esi and so clene 1264
 That in þis world it is a paradys
 Thus seiȝ þis olde knyȝt þat was so wis
 And certeynly as soȝ as god is kinge
 To take a wif it is a glorious þinge 1268
 And namely whan a man is olde and hoore
 þan is a wif þe frute of his tresore
 þan shuld he take a ȝonge wif and a faire
 On which he myȝt engender him an aire 1272

And lede his lif in Ioye and solace
 Wher as þe bachilers synggen alas
 Whan þei fynde eny aduersite
 In loue which þat is but childes vanite 1276
 And trewly it sitte wel to be soo
 That bachilers han ofte peyne and woo
 On brutal grounde þei beelde brutelnesse
 þei fynde whan þei wene sikernesse 1280
 þei lyue but as a bridde or a beest
 In liberte and vnder nyce areest
 þer as a wedded man in his astate
 Lyuþ his lif blisful and ordynate 1284
 Vndere þe ȝok of mariage ybounde
 Wel may his hert in Ioye and blisse be founde
 ffor who can be so buxom as a wif
 Who is so trewe and eke so tentiff 1288
 To kepe him seke and hole as is his make
 ffor wel ne woo she wil not hym forsake
 She nys not wery hym to loue and serue
 þouȝe þat he lye bedrede til he sterue 1292
 And ȝit somme clerkes sein þat it is not soo
 Of which theofraste is oon of þoo./
 What foorce þouȝt Thophrast lusteþ lye [Deaf 114]
 Ne take no wif quod he for husbondrye 1296
 As forto spare in household þi dispence
 A trewe seruaunte doþ more diligence
 Thi good to kepe þan þine owne wif
 ffor she wil cleyme half part al her lif 1300
 And ȝif þat þou be seke so god me saue
 Thi verrey frendes or a trewe knaue
 Wil kepe þe better þan she þat waiteþ ay
 Aftere þi good and haþ do mony a day 1304
 And if þou take a wif ¹þat to þe is vntrewe
 fful ofte tyme it shal þe Rwe ¹ [1-1 ? spurious]
 This entent an hundred sipes wors
 writeþ þis man þer god his bonys curs 1308

GROUP E. § 4. MERCHANT'S TALE. **Petworth MS.**

But take no kepe of al such vanyte
 Desie Theofrast and herkenep me
 A wiff is goddys gift verreyly
 Al oper manere ȝiftes hardely 1312
 As londes. rentes pasture or comune
 Or mebles al bene ȝiftes of fortune
 þat passen as a shadowe on a wall
 But drede it nouȝt pleylny speke I shaft 1316
 A wiff wil last and in þine hous endure
 Wel more þan þe list peraventure
 Mariegge is a ful grete sacrament
 Who hap no wiff I telle hym shent 1320
 He lyueþ helplees and is al desolate
 I speke of folk in seculere astate
 And herken whi. I seie not þis for nouȝt
 þe womman is for mannes helpe ywrouȝt 1324
 þe highe god whan he had Adam maked
 And seghe him alone bely naked
 God of his grete goodnesse seide þan /
 Lat vs make an helpe vnto þis man 1328
 Like to hym self and þan he made Eue
 Here may ȝee see and herby may ȝe preue
 þat þe wiff is mannys Comfort (leaf 114, back)
 His Paradys terrestre and his disport 1332
 So buxom and so vertuuous is she
 þei moste nedes lyue in vnite
 Oo flesh þei bene and two soules as I gesse
 Hap but oon hert in hele and in distresse 1336
 A wif a seynt Mary benedicite
 How myȝt a man han eny aduersite
 þat hap a wiff certes I can not seie
 þe blisse þat is ytwixe hem tweye 1340
 þer may no tunge tellen or hert þenk
 If he be poor she helpeþ him to swynk
 She kepeþ his good and waasteþ neuer a dele
 Al þat her husbond lust she likeþ wele 1344

She seiþ not onys nay whan he seiþ 3e
 Dop þis seiþ he. al redy sire seiþ she
 O blisful ordere of wedloke precious
 þou arte so mery and eke so vertuous 1348
 And so commended and so apprened eke
 þat euery man þat halt him worþ a leke
 Vpon his bare knees auȝt al his lif
 Thanken his god þat him haþ sent a wif 1352
 Oyþer prei to god him for to sende
 A wif to last vnto his lyues ende
 ffor þan his lif is sette in sikernesse
 He may not be desceyued as I gesse 1356
 So þat he worche after his wyues rede
 þan may he boldely bere vp his hede
 þei bene so trewe and also wys
 ffor which if þou wilt worchen as þ^e wis 1360
 Do alway so as wommen wil þe rede
 Loo howe þat Iacob as þise clerkes rede
 By good counseil of his modere Rebekke
 Boonde þe kyddes skyn about his nekke 1364
 ffor which his faders benyson he wan
 Loo Iudith as þe storie telle can
 Be wise counsail she goldeþe puple kepte [leaf 115]
 And sclowe hym Olophernes while he sclepte 1368
 Lo Abygail by counseille how she
 Saued her husbonde Nabat whan þat he
 Shuld haue be sclayne and loke aster alsoo
 By good counsaile delyuered out of woo 1372
 þe puple of god and made hym marche
 Of assure enchaunced forto be
 Ther is no þinge in grete superlatif
 As seiþ seneke [above] an humble wif 1376
 Suffre þi wifes tunge as Catofn bitte
 She shal commaunde and þou shalt suffre it
 And ȝit she wil obeye of Curtesie
 A wif is keper of þine hushondrye 1380

GROUP E. § 4. MERCHANT'S TALE. Petworth MS.

wele may þe seke man by-weile *and* wepe
 þer as þer nys no wif þe hous to kepe
 I warne þe ȝif wisly þou wirche
 Loue wel þi wif as crist loueþ his chirche 1384
 If thou louest þi self wel. þou louest þi wif
 No man hateþ his flessch but in his lif
 He fostreth it and þerfore bid I þe
 Cherisshe þi wif or þou shalt neuere the 1388
 Husbonde and wif what so men lape or pleye
 Of worldly folk holde þe siker weye
 They bene so knytte þer may noon harme betide
 And namely vpon þe wives side 1392
 ffor which þis Ianuarie of which I tolde
 Considered haþ wip-in his daies olde
 þe lusty lif þe vertuous quiete
 þat is in mariage hony swete 1396
 And for his frendes on a day he sent
 To tellen hem the effecte of his entent
 wip face sadde his tale he haþ hem told
 He saide frendes I am hoor and olde 1400
 And almost god wote vpon þe pittes brinke
 Vpon my soule somewhat I most þenke
 I haue my body folily dispended / [leaf 118, back]
 Blessed be god it shal be amended 1404
 ffor I wil bene certeyn a wedded man
 And þat anon in al þe hast I can
 Vnto some maide faire and tender of age
 I prey þou shapeþ for my mariage 1408
 Al sodeynly for I wil not abide
 And I wil foonden to asprie on my side
 To whom I may be wedded hastely
 But for as moche as ȝe bene more þan I 1412
 ȝe shul rapen such a þinge espien
 þan I and þer me lust best to alien
 But of on þing I warne þou my frendes dere
 I nyl noon olde wif haue in no manere 1416

GROUP E. § 4. MERCHANT'S TALE. Petworth MS.

She shal not passe xvj ȝere in fayn
 Old ffish and ȝonge flessch þat wil I haue certayn
 Bett' is quod he a p[i]ke þan a pikereþ
 And bette þan olde beef is þe tender' veeþ 1420
 I wil no womman of xxxⁱⁱ wynter' age
 It is but bene strawe and grete forage
 And eke þise olde wyues god it wote
 Þei konnen so moche craft on wades bote 1424
 So mochel broke harme whan þat hem lest
 That wip hem shuld I neuer lyuen in rest
 ffor sondry scoles makeþ subtile clerkes
 Womman of mony scoles. half a clerk es 1428
 But certeyn a yonge þing may man gye
 Rigt as men may warme wax with handis plye
 Wherefore I seie ȝou pleyndly in a clause
 I nyl non olde wif han rigt for þis cause 1432
 ffor if so were I had some meschaunce
 þat [I] in hire ne coupe haue no plesaunce
 þan shuld I lede my lif in auenture
 And so streite to þe deuel sure 1436
 Ne children shuld I noon vpon hure geten
 ȝif had me leuere þat houndes had me eten
 Than þat myne Heritage shulde falle [leaf 114]
 In straunge honde and þus I telle ȝou all 1440
 I dote not. I not þe cause whi
 Men shuld wedde and ferthermore wote I
 Ther spekeþ mony a man of Mariage
 þat wote no more of it þan doþ my page 1444
 ffor whiche causes men shuld take a wif
 ȝif he may not chaast bene his lif
 Take him a wif wip grete deuocion
 Bycause of leefful procreacion 1448
 Of children to þe honure of god aboue
 And nouȝt only for paramour ne for loue
 And for þei shulden leccherie eschewe
 And ȝeelde her dettes while þat it is newe 1452

GROUP E. § 4. MERCHANT'S TALE. Petworth MS.

Or for þat eche man shuld helpe opere
 In meschief as sustere shal to broþere
 And lyve in chastite ful heuenly
 But sirs by þoure leue þat am not I 1456
 ffor god byþonke it. I dar make auzunte
 I fele my lymmes sterke and suffisaunt
 To done al þat a man bylongeþ to
 I wote my self best what I may do 1460
 þouȝ I be hoor I fare as doþ a tre
 þat blosmeth er þe frute ywox[e] be
 þat blossometh tre is neiþer drie ne dede
 I fele no where hoor but on my hede 1464
 Myne hert and my lymmes ben as grene
 As lauriel is þorgh þe ȝere to sene
 And sythen ȝe han herd al myn entent
 I prey þou to my wille ȝe assent 1468
 Dyuers men dyuersly hym told
 Of Mariage mony ensamples olde
 Somme blamen it somme preisen it certayn
 But at þe laste shortely forto sayn 1472
 As alday falleþ altercacion
 Bitwixen frendes in disputacion
 þer fille a strif ytwix his breþeren two · [leaf 116, back]
 Of which þat oon is cleped placebo ./ 1476
 Iustinus soply called was þat other
 Placebo seide oo I am þoure broþere
 fful litel nede han ye my lord so dere
 Counseile to aske of ony þat is here 1480
 But þat ȝe bene so ful of Sapience
 That þou ne likeþ for þoure high prudence
 To weyue from þe word of Salomon
 This word seiþ he vnto vs everechoñ 1484
 Wirk al þing by counseile þus seide
 And þan shalt þou not repent þe
 But þeiȝ þat Salomon speke such a word
 Myn owne dere broþer and my lord 1488

PETWORTH 244 (6-T. 449)

So wialy god bring' my saule at ese and rest
 I holde 3oure owe counseil is þe best
 ffor broþer myn take of me þis motif
 I haue bene nowe a courte man al my lyf 1492
 And god woot þou3e I vnworþi be
 I haue stonden in ful grete degre
 Abowen lordes of ful grete astate
 3it had I neuere wiþ none of hem debate 1496
 I neuere hem contraried trewly
 I wote wele þat my lord can more þan I
 That he seiþ I holde it forme *and* stable
 I seiþ þe same or ellis þing' semblable 1500
 A ful grete fool is eny counselour
 þat serueþ eny lord of hie honour
 þat dar presume or ones þenk' it
 That his counsaile shuld passe his lordes witte 1504
 Nay lordes bene no fooles be my fay
 3e haue 3oure self spoken here to day
 So high sentence so holy & so well
 That I consent and conferme euery dele 1508
 3our wordes al & 3oure opynyoun
 By god þer is no man in al þis toun.
 Ne in Ytaile coupe bet han seide [leaf 117]
 Criste holdeþ of þis hym ful wel apaied 1512
 And trewly it is an hie corage
 Of eny man þat stoupeþ into age
 To take a 3onge wif be my fader kynne
 3oure hert' hongep vpon a Ioly pynne 1516
 Doþ now in þis matere riȝt as 3ou leste
 ffor fynally I holde it for þe best
 ¶ Iustinus þat ay stille satte *and* herde
 Riȝt in þis wise he to placebo ansuerde 1520
 Nowe broþer myn be pacient I prey
 Siþens þat 3e han seide herken what I sey
 Senek amonges oper wordes wise
 Seiþ þat a man ouȝt hym wel awise 1524

To whom he zeueth his land or his catell
 And siþens I ought' advise me riȝt well
 To whom I zeue my [gode aweye ffrome Me [MS Reg. 17 D 16, leaf 110, back. Not in Sloane 1686, leaf 91; or Reg. 18 C ii, f^o 64; but in Addit. 5140, f^o 153; Hart. 7333's rymes corrected to me, advised be, f^o 70, col. 1.] 1528
 Welke more I aughte auysede be
 To whome I yeue my] body for alway
 I warne you wel it is no childes play
 To taken a wif wiþ-out' avisement
 Men most' enquere þis is myn assent' 1532
 Whedere she be wis. sobre or dronklewe
 Eyþer proude or oþer wise a shrewe
 A chidere eiþer a waaster' of þi good
 Or riche or poor / or ellis a man is wood' 1536
 Al be it' so þat' no man fynde shal
 Non in þis world' þat' tretet' hool in aȝt
 Ne man ne beest' such as men con devise
 But' napelees it' aught' ynowe suffise 1540
 Wiþ eny wif ȝif so were þat' ȝe hadde
 Moo good thewes þan her vices badde
 And al þis askep' leisere to enquere
 ffor god wote I haue wepte mony a tere 1544
 fful priuely siþens I had a wif
 Preise who so wil a wedded mannys lif
 Certeyn I fynde in it' but' cost' and care
 And obseruauunces of al blessed bare./ 1548
 And ȝit' god þonk' my neighbours al aboute [leaf 117, back]
 A[nd] namely of wommen a grete route
 Sein þat I haue þe most' stedefast' wiff
 And eke þe mekest oon þat' bereþ lif 1552
 But I woote best wher wriep [me] my shoo
 ȝe may for me riȝt as ȝou list' doo
 Adviseþ ȝou ȝe bene a man of age
 Howe þat' ȝe entren into mariage 1556
 And namely wiþ a ȝonge wif and a feire
 By him þat' made water erþe and Eyre
 þe ȝongest' man þat' is in al þis route
 Is bisy ynouȝe to bringe it' aboute 1560

To haue his wiff allone trestep me
 3e shullen not plesen hure 3eres þre
 This is to seyn to done her plesaunce
 A wiff axep ful mony an obseruaunce 1564
 I prey 3ou þat 3e ne be euel apaide
 Wel quod þis Ianuar' & hastowe al saide
 Strawe for þi senek & for þi prouerbis
 I count' not a panyer ful of herbes 1568
 Of scole teermes wiser men þan thou/
 As þou hast herd assentep it riȝt now
 ¶ To my purpos Placebo what say 3e
 I sey it is a cursed man quod he 1572
 That lettep Matrimoyne Sikerly
 And wiþ þat word þei risen sodeynly
 And bene assented fully þat he shuld
 Wedded be whan hym list and where he wold 1576
 Thy fantasie and þi curiosnesse
 fro day to day gan in þi soule inpresse
 Of Ianuar' about his mariage
 Mony faire shappe and mony faire visage 1580
 Ther passeþ his hert' nyȝt by nyȝt
 As who so toke a myroure' polshed bright
 And sette it in a comune Market' place
 þan shuld he seen mony a figure pace 1584
 By his Miroure and in þe same wise [leaf 118]
 Can Ianuar' in wiþ his þouȝt devise
 Of Maidens which þat dwellen [him] beside
 O. He wist' not where he myȝt abide 1588
 for þouȝe þat oon haue beute in her face
 A-noþer stant so in þe puples grace
 for her sadnesse and her benignite
 þat of þe puple grettest vois had she 1592
 And somme were riche and hadden badde name
 But na þe lees bytwixe earnest and game
 He atte last' enpoynted hym in oon
 A[nd] lete al oþer from his herte goon 1596

GROUP E. § 4. MERCHANT'S TALE. Petworth MS.

And chese hire of his owne auctorite
 ffor loue is blynde al day and may not se
 And whan þat he was in þe bedde brouȝt
 He purtreide in his hert and in his þouȝt 1600
 Her freisshe beaute and her age tendere
 Hir myddel smalle her armes longe and sclendere
 Her wise gouernaunce and her gentillesse
 Her wommanly beringe and her sadnesse 1604
 And whan þat he to her was condescended
 Hym þouȝt his chois myȝt not be amended
 ffor whan þat he him self concluded had
 Hym þouȝt eche oþer mannys witt so bad 1608
 þat impossible it were to replie
 Aȝeinst his chois þis was his fantasie
 His frendes sent he to at his instaunce
 And preieþ him to done hym þat plesaunce 1612
 That hastily þei wolde to hym come
 He wold abreggen her labour al and some
 Hit nedeþ no more to hem to goo ne ride
 He was apointed þer he wold abide 1616
 Placebo came and eke his frendes sone
 And alþer first he bad hem all a bone
 þat noon of hem noon argumentes make
 Aȝeinst his purpoos which þat he haþ take . 1620
 Which purpoos was plesaunt to god as seide he (T. 113, 114)
 And verrey grounde of his prosperite
 He saide þer was a mayden in þe toune
 Which þat of bewte haþ grete renoun 1624
 Al were it so she were of smal degre
 Suffiseth him her ȝouþe and her bewte
 Which mayde he seide he wold haue to wif
 To leden in eese and in holynesse his lif 1628
 And þonkeþ god þat he myȝt han hir all
 þat no wiȝt his blisse part shaþ
 And preieþ him to labour in þis nede
 And shapen þat he faile not to spedde 1632

GROUP E. § 4. MERCHANT'S TALE. Petworth MS.

ffor þan he seide his spirit was at eese
 þen is quod he no þing me may displese
 ¶ Saue oon þinge prikkeþ in my conscience
 þe which I wil reherce in þoure presence 1636
 I haue quod he herd saie ful þore agoo
 þer may no man han þurfit blesses twoo
 þis is to saie in erþe and eke in heuene
 ffor þei he kepte him from þe synnes seuene 1640
 And eke fro euery brannche of thilk tree
 ȝit is þere so þurfit prosperite
 And so grete eese and lust in mariage
 That euer I am a-gast nowe in myn age 1644
 þat I shal lede nowe so mery a lif
 [So delicat withouten wo or strif [MS Harl. 7385, leaf 118,
no gap in Petworth.]
 That y shal han myn heuene in erthe] here
 ffor sipens þat verrey heuene is bouȝt so dere 1648
 Wiþ tribulaciō and grete penaunce
 how shuld I such in such plesaunce
 As alle wedded men done wiþ her wives
 Come to þe bliße þere crist eterne alyue es 1652
 This is my drede and ȝe my breþere tweye
 Assoilleþ me þis question I ȝou preye
 ¶ Iustinus which þat hated his foly
 Answerd anon riȝt in his lapry 1656
 And for he wold his longe tale abregge
 He wolde noon autorite alegge
 But seide sir so þere bene noon obstacle [leaf 119]
 Oþer þan þis god of his hye myracle 1660
 And of his mercy may so for ȝou wirche
 That er ȝe han ȝoure ȝiftes of holy chirche
 ȝe may repent of wedded mannys lif
 In which ȝe seyn is neiþer woo ne strif 1664
 And ellis god forbede but ȝif he sent
 A wedded man grace hym to repent
 Wel often rapre þan a syngle man /
 And þerfor sir þe best rede I can 1668

Dispeireþ þou nouȝt haueþ in memorie
 Perauenture she may be þour' purgatorie
 She may be goddis mene *and* goddys whippe
 Than shal þoure soule vp to heuen skippe 1672
 Swifter þan doþ an arowe out' of a bowe
 I hope to god here aftere ȝe shal knowe
 þat' þer nys noon so grete felicite
 In mariage ne neuere more shal be 1676
 þat þou shal lak of þour' saluacion
 So þat' ȝe vse as skille is and reson
 þe lustes of þoure wif attemperally
 And þat' ȝe plesse hure not' to amerously 1680
 And þat' ȝe kepe þou eke fro oþer synne
 My tale is done for my witte is þinne
 Beþ not agast' her-of my broþer
 But' lat' vs wade from þis mater to an oþere 1684
 þe wif of baþe if ȝe wil vnderstonde
 Of mariage which ȝe han on honde
 Declaren can ful wel in litel space
 ffareþ nowe wel god haue þou in his grace 1688
 And wiþ þis word' þis Iustyne *and* his broþere
 Han take her leue and ech of hem of oþere
 ffor whan þei segh it' most' nedes be
 þei wrouȝten so by wise and sclegħ trete 1692
 þat' she þis maide which þat' Mayus hiȝt'
 As hastely as euere þat' she myȝt'
 Shal wedded be vnto Ianuarye [leaf 119, back]
 I trowe it' were to longe þou to tary 1696
 If I þou tolde of euery scrite or bonde
 By which þat' she was festned in his londe
 Eiper forto herken of her riche aray
 But' fynaly ycomen is þe day 1700
 þat' to þe churche boþ[e] bene þei went'
 fforto receyue þe holy sacrament'
 fforþ commeþ þe preest' wiþ stole about' his neke
 And bad hir' be ylik' sarra and rebek' 1704

GROUP E. § 4. MERCHANT'S TALE. Petworth MS.

In wisdom and [in] troupe of mariage
 And saide his orisons as is his vsage
 And crouched hem and bad god shuld hem blisse
 And made al siker ynough *with* holynesse 1708
 Thus bene þei wedded *with* solempnite
 And at þe feeste sitteþ he and she
 Wiþ oþer worþi folk vpon þe dees
 Al ful of Ioye and blisse is þe paleys 1712
 And ful of instrumentes *and* of vitaille
 þe moste deynteous of al Ytaille
 Byforn hem of instrumentis which soun
 þat Orpheus ne of phebes ampheouñ 1716
 Ne maden neuere suche a melody
 And at euery cours came loude mynstralcy
 That neuere Ioab trumped forto here
 Neiper Theodomas ȝit half so clere 1720
 And Thebes whan þe cite was in doute
 Bacus þe wyne hem shenkeþ al aboute
 And Venus laugheþ on euery wȝt
 for Ianuar was bycome her knyȝt 1724
 And wolde boþ assaien his corage
 In liberte and eke in mariage
 And wiþ hure fuyr bronde *with* her hand aboute
 Daunseth byforne þe bride al aboute 1728
 And clenly I dar wel seyn right þis
 Emyneus þat god of weddyng is /
 Segh neuere in his lif so mery a wedded man [leaf 120]
 Holde þou þi pees þou poete Marcean 1732
 þat writest vs þat ilk wedding mery
 Of hure Philologi and of Mercury
 And of þe sanges þat þe muses songe
 So smale as eke þi penne *and* eke þi tunge 1736
 forto discryuen of þis mariage
 Whan tender ȝouþe haþ wedded stouping age
 þer is suche myrþe þat it may not be writte
 Assaieþ it ȝoure self þan may ȝe wite 1740

ȝif þat I lak or noon in þis matere
 Mayus þat sitte wiþ so benygne a chere
 Hire to biholde it semed faierye
 Queen Estre loked neuere wiþ such an ye 1744
 On assure so meke a lōke as she
 I may ȝou not avise al her bewte
 But þus moche of her bewte telle I may
 þat she was like þe briȝt morowe of may 1748
 ffulfillede of beaute and of plesaunce
 This Ianuar' is rauissht in a traunce
 And at euery tyme he loked on hir' face
 But in his hert' he gan hir' to manace 1752
 þat he þat nyȝt in armes wold hir' streyn
 Harder þan euere Paris did Eleyñ
 But napelees ȝit had he grete pite
 þat ilke nyȝt offenden her most' he 1756
 And þought' alas o tender' creature
 Nowe god wold ȝe myȝt wel endure
 Al my corage it is so sharpe and kene
 I am agast ȝe shul it not sustene 1760
 But god forbede þat I did al my myȝt
 Nowe wolde god þat it were wexen nyȝt
 And þat þe nyȝt wolde lasten euere moo
 I wold þat al þis puple were a-goo 1764
 And fynaly he dop al his laboure
 As he best' myȝt sauynȝ his honoure
 To hast' hem fro þe mete in subtile wise [leaf 180, back]
 The tyme came þat reson was to rise 1768
 And after þat men daunce and drinke fast
 And spices al aboute þe hous þei cast
 And ful of ioye and blisse is euery man
 AH sauf a squyer þat hiȝt damyan . 1772
 which carf to-fore þe king' mony day
 He was so rauysshed on his lady may
 That for þe verrey peine he was nyȝe wode
 Almost' he swalte an swowned þer he stode 1776

As she him ladde daunsinge in her hand
 So fresshe she was and þerto so likand [spurious]
 And to his bedde he went hym hastely
 No more of him at this tyme speke I. 1780
 But þere I lete him wepe ynow and pleyñ
 Til fresshe may wil rewen on his peyn
 ¶ O perilous fyre þat in þe bedstrawe bredeþ
 O famulere foo þat his seruise bedep 1784
 O seruazunte traitoure fals [of] holy hewe
 Like to þe adder selegñ . & in Basom vntrewe
 God shilde vs alle from þoure iniquitaunce
 O Ianuare dronken in plesaunce 1788
 Of Mariage se howe þi damyan
 Thyne owne squyer and þi born man
 Entendeþ to done þe vilanye
 God graunte þe þine harme forto aspie 1792
 ffor in þis world nys no wors pestilence
 Than homely foo alday in þi presence
 Parfourmed haþ þis day his arke dyurne
 No lenger may þe body of hym soiourne 1796
 þe Orisonte as in þat latitude
 Riȝt wiþ his mantel þat is derk and Rude
 Gan forto sprede þe mysprey aboute
 ffor which departed is þe lusty route 1800
 ffor Ianuare wiþ þonke on euery side
 Hoom to her howses lustely þei ride .
 Ther as þei done her þingges as hem lust [leaf 121]
 And whan þei segñ her tyme to go to rest 1804
 Sone aftere þat þis hastif Ianuar'
 Wol go to bedde he wil no lenger tar'
 He drinkeþ Ypocras clerre and vernage
 Of spices hote to encresen his corage 1808
 And many a letuare had he ful fyne
 Such as þe cursed monk daune Costantyne
 Haþ writen in his boke of Coytu
 To eten hem al he nas no þing eschwe 1812

And þus to his privey frendes seide he
 ffor goddis loue as sone as it may be
 Lette voiden al þis hous in curteys wise sone 1815
 Men dronken and þe trauers drowe anōn 1817
 The bride was brouȝt to bedde as stille as eny stoñ 1818
 So hasted Ianuar' it most be dōn [spurious]
 And whan þe bedde was with þe preest yblessed
 Out of þe Chambre hap euery wiȝt hym dressed 1820
 And Ianuare hap fast in armes take
 His fresshe may his paradis his make
 He lulleth hure he kisseth hure ful oft
 Wiȝ pilke bristels of his beard vnsoft 1824
 Ylike to þe skyn of hounde fissh sharpe as brere
 ffor he was shaue al newe in his manere
 He rubbeȝ hure vpon her tendere face
 And seide þus alace I mote trespace 1828
 To ȝou my spouse and ȝou gretly offende
 Or tyme come þat I wil doune descende
 But napelees considereȝ þis quod he
 þer nys no werkman what so euer he be 1832
 þat may boȝe worche wel and hastely
 þis wil be done at leisere parfitylly
 It is no force howe longe þat we pleye
 I trowe in wedloke coupled bene we tweye 1836
 And blessed by the yokke þat we bene Inne
 ffor in our actys we may do no synne /
 A man may do no synne wiȝ his wiff [leaf 121, back]
 Ne hirt hym self wiȝ his owne knyff 1840
 Now han we leue to pley vs by þe lawe
 Thus labowreȝ he til þat þe day gan dawe
 And þan he takeȝ a soppe in fyne clerre
 And vpriȝt in his bedde þan sitteȝ he 1844
 And aftere þat he songe ful loude and clere
 And kissed his wiff and made wanton chere
 He was al coltiassh and ful of ragerye
 And ful of Girgoun as is flecked pie 1848

þe sclak skyn about his necke shakeþ
 While þat he songe so chaunteþ he *and* crakeþ
 But good woote what may þouzt in her hert
 Whan she him segh vpsitting in his shert 1852
 In his nyzt cappe and wiþ his necke lene
 She preiseth nouzt his plesinge worþ a bene
 Than seide he þus my resting wil I take
 Nowe day is come I may no lenger wake 1856
 And doun he leide his hede *and* slept til prime
 And afterward whan þat he segh his tyme
 Vp riseþ Ianuare but fresshe may
 Holdeþ her chambre vnto þe ferþe day 1860
 As vsage is of wives for þe best
 ffor euery laboure somtyme mot haue rest
 Oyþer ellis longe may he nouzt endure
 þis is to saye no lyues creature 1864
 Be it of fissh. or brid of beest or man
 Now wil I speke of woful damyan
 þat languowreþ for loue as ȝe shul here
 Therefore I speke to him in þis manere 1868
 I say o. sely damyan allas
 Answer to þis demaunde as in þis cas
 Howe shalt þou to þi lady fressh[e] May
 Telle þi woo she wil alway sey nay 1872
 Eke if þowe speke she wil þi woo bywreye
 God bene þine helpe I can no better seye
 ¶ This seke Damyan in Venus fire [leaf 122]
 So brenneþ þat he deyeþ for desire 1876
 ffor whiche he putte his lif in auenture
 No lenger myzt he in þis wise endure
 But priuely a penner gan he borowe
 And in a letter wrote he al his sorowe 1880
 In manere of a compleint oþer a lay
 Vnto þis faire and fressh[e] lady may
 And in a purs of selk hong on his shert
 He hap yputte and yleide it at his hert 1884

PETWORTH 256 (6-T. 481)

GROUP E. § 4. MERCHANT'S TALE. Petworth MS.

That at afters mete 3e wip 3oure wommen alle
 Whan 3e han bene in chambre out' of pis halle
 That alle 3e goon to se pis damyañ
 Dop him disport' he is a gentile man 1924
 And telleþ him þat I wil hym visite
 Hauē I no þinge but' rested me a lite
 [And spede 3ou faste ffor I wolþ abyde [MS Reg. 17 D 15, leaf 116;
no gap in Petworth.]
 TyHe þat ye slepe ffaste by my syde] 1928
 Now wip þat' word he gan to hym calle
 A sqwier þat' was a marshal of his halle
 And tolde him certeyn þingges what' he wolþ
 þis fresshe may haþ streight' her way yhold' 1932
 Wip aþ her wommen vnto þis Damyan
 Doune by his beddes side satte she þan
 Confortinge him as she goodly may
 This Damyan whan he his tyme say 1936
 In secrete wise his purs and eke his bille
 In whiche þat' he writen had al his wille
 Haþ putte into her honde wip-uten more
 saue þat' he sikked wondere sore 1940
 And softly to hure riȝt þus seide he
 Mercy and þat' 3e diskeuere nouȝt me
 ffor I am dede if þat' þis þinge be kidde
 þis purs haþe she in her bosom hidde 1944
 And went' her way 3e gete no more of me
 But' vnto Ianuare ycommen is she
 And on his beddys side sitte ful soft
 He takeþ hur' an kisseþ hure ful oft 1948
 And leide hym doune to slepe and þat' anōn [leaf 125]
 She feyned hure as þoo she most' gōn
 Ther as she woote þat' euery wiȝt mote nede
 And whan she of þis bille haþ taken hede 1952
 She rent' it' al to cloutes at' þe last
 And in þe priuee softly she it' cast
 Who stodieth nowē but' feire fresshe may
 And adoune by Ianuare she lay 1956

þat' sclepte to þe Coughē hap hym a-waked.
 Anon he preide hire to stripe hur' naked.
 He wold of hur he seide haue som plesaunce
 He seide hire cloþes did hym encombraunce 1960
 And she obeieþ be he leef or loth
 But lest þat' precious folk' be wiþ me wroþe
 How þat' he wrouzt I dar to ȝou not' telle
 Eiper whedere þat' he pouzt' on paradis or on helle 1964
 But I lete hem worche in her wise
 Til euensonge ringe and þat' þei most arise
 were it' be destanye eiper be auenture
 were it' by influence eiper be nature 1968
 Eiper in constellaciōn þat' in such estate
 þe heuene stood þat' tyme fortunate
 was forto putte a bille of Venus werkes/
 ffor al þing' hap tyme as seine þise clerkes 1972
 To eny womman forto gete her loue
 I can not' seie but þe grete god aboue
 That' knoweþ þat' none acte is causelees
 He demep of aȝ for I wil holde my pees 1976
 But soþ is þis howe þat' þis fresshe may
 Hap take such impressiōn þat' day
 On pite of þis sike Damyan
 That' from her hert' she ne drive can 1980
 The remembraunce forto done hym eese
 Certeine pouzt' she whom þat' þis þing' displese
 I rek not' for here I him assure
 To loue him best' of eny creature / 1984
 Though he no more nad þan his shert' [leaf 123, back]
 lo pite rennep sone in gentil hert'
 Here may ȝe se howe excellent' fraunchise
 In wommen is whan þei narowe hem avise 1988
 Somme tyraunt' þer is as bene mony oñ
 That' hap an hert' as hard' as eny ston
 Whiche wold han lete him sterue in þe place
 Wel raper þan han graunted him þat' grace 1992

GROUP E. § 4. MERCHANT'S TALE. Petworth MS.

And hem reioysen in her cruel pride
 And recched nouȝt to bene an homycide
 This gentile may fulfilled of al pite
 Riȝt so of hure honde a *lettre* made she 1996
 In whiche she graunteþ hym of hire *verrey grace*
 Ther lackeþ nouȝt only but day and space
 wher þat she myȝt to his lust suffice
 ffor it shal be riȝt as he wil devise 2000
 And whan she seeghe her tyme vpon a day
 To visite þis Damyan goþ faire May
 And subtilly þis letter doune she prest
 Vnder his pilowe rede if him lest 2004
 She takeþ him by þe hond and hard hym twist
 So secrely þat no wiȝt it wist
 And bad him be al hole and forþ she wente
 To Ianuare whan þat he for her sente 2008
 Vp riseþ Damyan the nexte morwe
 Al passed was his siknesse & his sorowe
 He kembeþ him and proynep hym and pykeþ
 He doþ al þat his lady lust and likeþ 2012
 And eke to Ianuare he goþ as lowe
 As euere did a dogge for þe bowe
 He is so plesaunt to euery man
 ffor craft is al who þat it can 2016
 þat euery wight is fayn to teche hym good
 And fully in his lady grace he stood
 Thus lete I Damyan aboute his nede
 And in my tale forþ I wil procede / 2020
 Somme Clerkes holden þat felicite
 [leaf 124]
 Stant in delite and perfor he
 This noble Ianuare wiþ al his myȝt
 In honest wise as longeþ to a knyȝt 2024
 Shope him to lyve ful deliciously
 His howsing his aray al honestly
 To his degree was maked as of kingges
 Amonges oþere as of honest þingges 2028

He had a gardyn walled al wip ston
 So faire a gardyne wote I nowhere noon
 ffor out of doute I verrelly suppose
 þat he þat wrote þe romance of þe rose 2032
 Ne coupe of hit þe bewte wel devise
 Ne priapus ne myzt not suffice
 þough he be god of gardynes forto telle
 The bewte of þe gardyne and of þe welle 2036
 That stood vndere a laurere alway grene
 fful ofte tyme king Pluto and his quene
 Preserpyna and al her fairye
 Disporten hem and maken melodye 2040
 Abouten þat welle and daunceden as men told
 This noble knyght þis Ianuare þe olde
 Such deynte hap in it to walken and to pley
 þat he wil suffre no wight to bere þe key 2044
 ssaue he him self for of þe smal wikett
 He bare alway of siluere a clikett
 Wip þe which whan þat hym lust vnshette
 And whan þat he wold pay his wiff his dette 2048
 In somer seson þidere wold he goo
 And may his wiff and no wigt but þei twoo
 And þingges which þat were not don abedde
 þei in þe gardyn perfourmed han and spedde 2052
 And in þis wise mony a mery day
 Lyued þis Ianuare and fresshe may
 But worldly Ioye may not alway endure
 To Ianuare ne to no worldely creature 2056
 O sodeyn happe . o þou fortune vnstable [leaf 124, back]
 ylike to þe scorpion variable
 þat flaterest wip þine heued whan þou wilt stinge :
 Thy tale is deþ by þine enuenemyng 2060
 O brutal ioye o swete poyson queynt
 O mystery þat subtilly canst peynt
 Thyne giftes vndere þe hwe of stidfastnesse
 þat þou desceyuedest þoþ more and lesse . 2064

GROUP E. § 4. MERCHANT'S TALE. Petworth MS.

Why hast þou Ianuare þus desceyued.
 And haddeſt hym for þi ful frende receyued.
 And now þou haſt byraſt hym boþ his eyen
 ffor sorowe of whiche deſireth he to dyen 2068
 ¶ Allas þe noble Ianuare þat is ſo fre
 Amydde his luſt and his proſperite
 Is wexen blynde and al ſodeynly
 His deep þerfore deſireþ he vtterly 2072
 And þer-wip-aþ þe fuyre of Ieſolie
 Leſt þat his wif ſhuld falle in ſome foly
 So brent in his hert þat he wold fayn
 That ſomme man boþe hur and hym had ſlayn 2076
 ffor neuere aftere his deþe ne in his liff
 Ne wolde he þat ſhe were loue ne wiff
 But euere lyue as a widowe in cloþes blake
 Sool as þe turtel doþ þat haþ loſt her make 2080
 But at þe laſt after a monþe or tweye
 His ſorowe gan to ſwage ſoþ to ſeya
 ffor whan he wiſt it may noon oþer be
 He paciently toke his aduerſite 2084
 Sauſ out of doute may he not forgoñ
 þat he naſ Ialouſe euermore in ooñ
 Which Ialouſie waſ ſo outrageous
 That neiþer in halle ne in noon oþer hous / 2088
 He nolde ſuffre hure ferto ride ne goo
 Ne in noon oþer place neuer þe moo
 But ȝif þat he [had] hande on hir alway
 ffor which ful ofte weþeþ freche may 2092
 Thal loueþ Damyan ſo benygneſly :
 That ſhe mote eiþer dey ſodeynly
 Or ellis ſhe mote han him at her liſt [leaf 125]
 She waiteþ whan [her] hert wold al to-breſt 2096
 Vpon þat oþer ſide DAMyan
 Bycommen is þe ſorowfulleſt man/
 þat euer waſ for neiþere nyȝt ne day
 Ne myght he ſpeke a word to freſſhe may 2100

As to his purpos of no suche matere
 But ȝif þat Ianuare most it here
 þat had oon honde vpon hir euere moo .
 And napelees by writing to and froo 2104
 And priueys signes wist he what she ment
 And she knewe of þe sygnes of his entent
 ¶ O Ianuare what myȝt þe auaille
 Thowe myȝtest se as ferre as shippes saile 2108
 ffor as good is a blynde deceyued be
 As to be disceyued whan a man may see
 Loo Arguys whiche þat had an C. eyen
 ffor al þat euere he couþe powre eyþere prien 2112
 ȝit was he blent and god woot so bene moo /
 That wenen wisly þat it nys nat soo
 Passe ouer is an eese & say no more
 þis fresshe May of which I speke of ȝore 2116
 In warme wexe hap enprinted þis clikett
 þat Ianuare bere of þat smal wikett
 By which vnto his gardyne of[t] he went
 And Damyan þat knewe her entent 2120
 þe Cliket countrefeted prively
 þer nys no more to say but hastely
 Somme wondere by þis cliket shal betide
 Which ye shal here if ȝe wil abide 2124
 O noble Ovide soþe seist þou god wote
 What sleȝt is it þow it be longe & hote
 þat he nyl fynde it out in somme manere
 By Piramus and Tisbe may men lere 2128
 þough þei were kepte ful longe streit oueraft
 þei ben acorded rownyng þorgh a wall
 Ther nys no wiȝt couþe han founde out such a sleȝt ^[125] _{bx}
 But nowe to purpos er þat daies viij. 2132
 were passed er the monþe of Iuyl byfille
 That Ianuare hap caught so grete a wille
 þorowe eggyng of his wiff him forto pley
 In his gardyne and no þing but þei tweye 2136

GROUP E. § 4. MERCHANT'S TALE. Petworth MS.

þat in a morwe vnto his may seide he
 Rise vp my wif my loue my lady free
 The turtels vois is herd my douve swete
 The wynter is goon with al his reynes wete 2140
 Come forþ nowe with þine eyen columbyne
 How feirer bene þi brestes þan bene wyne
 The gardyne is enclosed al aboute
 Come forþ my white spouse out of doute 2144
 þow hast me wounded in myn hert o wiff
 No spotte in þe nas in al þi liff
 Come forþ and lat vs take our disport
 I Cheese þe for my wiff and my comfort 2148
 Suche olde loude wordes vsed he
 On damyan a signe made shee
 That he shulde goo byforn wip his clikett
 This damyan haþ opned þe wikett 2152
 And in he stert and þat in such manere
 That no wifþ myþt it see ne here
 And stille he sitte vnder a bussþ anofn
 This Ianuare so blynde as is a ston 2156
 Wip Maius in his honde and no wifþ moo
 Into his fresshe gardyne is he goo
 And crapte to þe wiket sodeynly
 Now wif quod he here nys but þou and I 2160
 That arte þe creature þat I best loue
 ffor by þat lorde þat sitte vs al aboute
 I had leuere dyen on a knyff
 þan 3e offended dere trewe wiff 2164
 ffor goddes sake þenk how I þe chees
 Nouþt for no coueityse doutelees /
 But only for þe loue I had to þe [leaf 126r]
 And pough þat I be olde and may not see 2168
 Be to me trewe and I wil telle 3ou why
 Certes iij. þingges shul 3e wynnyn þerby
 first loue of Crist and to 3oure self honour
 And al myne heritage toune and toure 2172

I zeue it^t 3ou makeþ Cher[tr]es as 3ou lest^t
 This shal be doo to morowe er sonne¹ rest^t [*1st sonnesse*]
 So wisly god my soule bringe in blisse
 I prey 3ou in couenant^t þat 3e me kisse 2176
 And þou3e þat^t I be Ialous wite me nou3t^t
 3e ben so depe enprented in my pou3t^t
 That^t whan I considere 3oure bewte
 And þerwipal þe vnlikly elde of me 2180
 I may not^t certes þou3e I shulde deie
 fforbere to bene out^t of 3our^t companye
 ffor verrey loue þis is wip^t-oute doute
 Now kisse me wiff and lat^t vs rome aboute 2184
 ¶ This freesshe may whan she þise wordes herd^t
 Benignely to Ianuare she answerd^t
 But^t first^t and foremost^t she bygan to wepe
 I haue quod she a soule to kepe 2188
 As wel as she and also myn honoure
 And of my wifhede þilke tendere floure
 whiche I haue assured in 3oure hand^t
 whan þat^t þe preest^t to 3ou my body band^t 2192
 wherfore I wil answeere in þis manere
 with þe leue of 3ou my lord^t so dere
 I prey god þat^t neuere dawe þat^t day
 þat^t I ne sterue as foule as womman may 2196
 If euer I do vnto my kyune þat^t shame
 Eip^ter ellis I enpeire so my name
 þat^t I be fals And if I do þat^t lakke
 To stripe me *and* putte me in a sakke 2200
 And in þe next^t ryuere do me drenche
 I am a gentil womman *and* no wenche.
 whi speke 3e þus but^t men bene euere vntrewe [*leaf 126, back*]
 And wommen ha reproof of 3ou ay newe 2204
 3e can noon oþer countynancē I leue
 But^t speke to vs as vntrest^t and in repreue
 And wip^t þat^t worde she segg^t wher damyan
 Satte in þe busshe and knele he bygan 2208

GROUP E. § 4. MERCHANT'S TALE. Petworth MS.

And wip her fynger signes made she
 þat Damyan shuld clymbe vpon a tree
 þat charged was wip frwte and vp he went
 For verreily he knewe al her entent 2212
 And euery signe þat she coupe make
 wel bette þan Ianuare her owne make
 ffor in a *lettre* she had tolde him aft
 Of þis matere howe he worchen shaft 2216
 And þus I lat hym sitte in þe pirry
 & Ianuare and Mayus regnyng ful mery
 ¶ Briȝt was þe day *and* blewe þe firmament
 Phebus of gold doune hap his stremes sent 2220
 To gladen euery floure wip his warmnesse
 He was þat tyme in Gemynys as I gesse
 But litel fro his declinacion
 Of Canser, Iouis exaltacion 2224
 And so bifelle þat in a briȝt morowtide
 þat in þe Gardyne on þat ferþer side
 Pluto þat is þe kyng of ffairye
 And mony a lady in his companye 2228
 ffolowinge his wiff þe qwene *proserpina*
 Whiche þat he rauyssshed out of *proserpina*
 whilis þat she gadered floures in a mede
 In Claudyan ȝe may þe stories rede 2232
 How in his Grisly carte he her fette
 This kinge of fairye adoune hym sette
 Vpon a benche of Turves fressh *and* grene
 And riȝt anon seide he þus to his quene 2236
 My wif quod he þat may no wiȝt say nay
 The experience proueth it euery day
 The treson which þat womman dop to man [leaf 157]
 x^e thousand telle I can 2240
 Notable of ȝoure vntroupe *and* britolnesse
 O salamon richest of alle rychesse
 ffulfilled of sapience and of worldely glorie
 fful worpi bene þi wordes to memorie 2244.

To euery wight þat witte and resoñ can/
 Thus preiseþ he ȝit þe bounte of man
 Among a M̃ men ȝit fonde I oñ
 But of alle wommen fonde I neuere noon 2248
 Thus seiþ þis knyght þat knoweþ ȝoure wickednesse
 And *Ihesus filius C[i]rak* as I gesse
 Ne spekeþ of ȝou but seelden reuerence
 A wilde fuyr a corrupte pestilence 2252
 So falle vpon ȝoure bodies ȝit to nyȝt
 Ne Se ȝe not þis honorable knyght
 By cause alas þat he is blynde *and* olde
 His owne man shal make him kokewold 2256
 Lo where he sitte þe *leccheour* in þe tree
 Nowe wil I graunte of my maieste
 Vnto þis olde blynde worþi knyȝt
 That he shal han aȝein his eyen siȝt 2260
 whan þat his wiff wold do him vilanye
 þan shal he knowe al her harlotrie
 Boop in repreef of hure and oþer moo/
 ¶ ȝe Sire quod proserpyne and wil ȝe soo 2264
 Nowe by my moders sire soule I swere
 þat I shal ȝeuen hire suffisant answer
 And alle wommen aftere for ȝoure sake
 That þouȝe þei bene in eny gilt ytake 2268
 Wip face bolde þei shullen hem self excuse
 And beren hem doune þat wolden hem accuse
 ffor lacke of answer noon of hem shul dyen
 Alȝ hadde ȝe seið a þinge wip boþ ȝoure yen 2272
 ȝit shullen we so visage it hardely
 And wepe and swere and chide subtily
 þat ȝe shullen bene as lewde as bene goes [leaf 127, back]
 what recketh me of such autoritees/ 2276
 I wote wel þis Iwe this salomon
 ffoonde of vs wymmen foles mony oñ
 But þouȝe þat he ne fonde no good womman
 þer haþ yfounded mony anoþer man 2280-

GROUP E. § 4. MERCHANT'S TALE. Petworth MS.

wommen ful trewe ful good ful vertuous
 witnesse of hem þat dwellen in cristes hous
 wiþ martirdome þei proued her constance
 þe Romayn geestes maken remembraunce 2284
 Of mony a verrey trewe wif also /
 But sir ne be not wroþ as be it soo /
 þough þat he seide he foonde no good womman
 I prei þou take þe sentence of þe man 2288
 He ment þus þat in souereyn bounte
 Nis noon but god but neipere he ne she
 Eye for verrey god þat nys but oon
 what make þe so moche of Salomōn 2292
 what þouȝe he made a temple goddys hous
 what þouȝe he were riche and glorious
 So made he a temple of fals goddes ./
 Who myȝt do a þinge þat more forbode es 2296
 Parde as faire as þe his name enplasters
 He was a lecchoure and an ydolastre
 And in his elde he verrey god forsoke
 And ȝif þat god nad as seiþ þe booke 2300
 ȝspared him for his faders sake he sholde
 haue lost his regne souner þan he wolde
 I sette nouȝt of alle þe vyleynye
 þat þe of wommen write a botterflie 2304
 I am a womman nede mote I speke
 Eiper ellis swelle to myn hert breke
 ffor siþen he seide þat we bene Iangler[ess]es
 As euer mote I brouke boþ my tresses 2308
 I shal not spare for no curtesye
 To speke him harme þat wold vs vilanye
 Dame quod þis Pluto be no lenger wroþe [leaf 128]
 I ȝeue it vp but siþens I swore myn oþe 2312
 þat I wolde graunten him his siȝt aȝeyn
 My word shal stonde þat warne I þe certeyn
 I am a kinge it sitte me not to lye
 And I quod she a quene of fairye 2316

Her Answer she shal haue I vndertake
 Lat vs no moo wordes make
 ¶ fforsoþ I wil no lenger 3ou contrarie
 Now lat vs turne a3ein to Ianuarye 2320
 That in þis Gardyn wiþ þis faire Maye
 Syngeþ wel merier þan þe popeniay
 3ou loue I best and shal and oþer noñ
 So longe aboute þe alaies is he goñ 2324
 TiH he was come a3einst þilk' piry
 where as þis damyan sitteþ ful mery
 On hegh amonge þe fresshe leues grene
 This fresshe May þat is so bri3t an shene 2328
 Gan forto sigh and seide alas my side
 Now sire quod she for ou3te þat may bytide
 I moost haue of þe peeres þat I see
 Or I mote dye so soore longeþ me 2332
 To eten of þe smale peres grene
 Helpe for her loue þat is of heuene quene
 I telle 3ou wel a womman in my plite
 May haue to fructe so grete an appetite 2336
 þat she may dyen but she it haue
 Allas quod he þat I nad here a knaue
 That couþe clymbe alas alas quod he
 ffor I am blinde 3e sire no fors quod she 2340
 But wold 3e vouchesauf for goddis sake
 þe piry in wiþ 3oure armes forto take
 ffor wel I wote þat 3e mystrest me
 Ellis shuld I clymbe wel ynowe quod she 2344
 So I my fote my3t sette vpon 3oure bak'
 ffor soþe seide he in me shal be no lak'
 Might I 3ou helpe wiþ myn herte blood [leaf 128, back]
 He stoupeþ doune and on his bak' she stood 2348
 And cauzt hure by a twist and vp she goop
 Ladyes I preie 3ou þat ye be nat wroop
 I can not glose I am a rude man
 And sodeynly anoon þis damyan 2352

GROUP E. § 4. MERCHANT'S TALE. Petworth MS.

Gan pullen vp þe smokke and in he þronge
 And whan þat Pluto segþ þis grete wronge
 To Ianuarie he ȝaue his sizt ageyn
 [And made him se / as wel as evir he myht
 And whan he hadde / cauht his syht ageyn]
 ne was þer neuer man of þinge so feyn
 But on his wiff his þouȝt was euermoo
 Vp to þe tree he cast his eyen twoo / 2360
 And segþ þat Damyant his wif had dressed.
 In which manere it may not be expressed
 But [ȝif] I wolde speke vncurteysly
 And vp he ȝaue a roringe and a crye 2364
 As doþe þe modere whan þe childe shal dye
 oute helpe alas harowe I gan to crye
 O stronge lady stoor what doostowe
 And she answerþ sire what eileth ȝowe 2368
 Haue pacience and reson in ȝoure mynde
 I haue ȝou hulpen of boþ ȝoure eyen blynde
 Vp perile of my soule I shal not lyen
 As me was tauȝte to hele wiþ ȝoure eien 2372
 Was no þinge bette forto make ȝou see
 Than stroge wiþ a man vpon a tree
 God wote I did it in ful good entent
 Stroggel quod he. ȝe algate in it went 2376
 God ȝeue ȝou boþe a shames deþ to dyen
 He swyued þe I segþ it wiþ myne eyen
 And ellis be I honged by þe hals
 Than is quod she þe medecyne fals 2380
 ffor certeynly if ȝe myȝten see
 ȝe wold not saye no wordes vnto me
 ȝe han some glymysing and no parfit sizt
 I see quod he as wel as euere I myȝt 2384
 Thonked be god wiþ boþ myn eyen twoo [leaf 129]
 And by my trouþe me þought he did þ^e soo
 ȝe mase mase good sir quod she
 This þonk I haue for I haue made ȝou see 2388

[Addit. 5140, leaf
 167, bk., leaf 168.
 In Reg. 17 D 20,
 ff 122, bk., ff 123;
 not in Reg. 18 C 2,
 leaf 104.]

Allas quod she þat euere I was so kinde
 Now dame quod he lat al passe out of mynde
 Come doun my leef and if I haue myssayd
 God helpe me so as I am euel apayd 2392
 But by my faders soule I wend haue seyn
 How þat þis Damyan had by þe leyn
 And þat þi smok had leye vpon þi brest
 3e sir quod she 3e may wene as 3ou lest 2396
 But sir a man þat wakeþ out of slepe
 He may not sodeynly wel take kepe
 Vpon a þinge ne seen it parfitely
 To þat he be adawed verrely 2400
 Ri3t so a man þat long haþ blynde ybe
 Ne may not sodeynly so wel yse
 first whan þ^e sizt is newe commen ageyn
 As he þat haþ a day or tweyen yseyn 2404
 Til þat 3oure sizt ystabled be a while
 Ther may ful mony a sizt 3ou begile
 Beþ ware I preye 3ou for by heuene kinge
 fful mony a man wenep forto se a þinge 2408
 And it is al anoþer þan it semeþ
 He þat mysconceyueþ mysdameþ
 And wiþ þat word she lepe down fro þe tre
 This Ianuarie who is glad but he 2412
 He clippeþ hire and kisseþ hure ful oft
 And on hire wombe he strokeþ hure ful soft
 And to his Palays home he haþ hire lad
 Nowe good men I prey 3ou to be glad 2416
 Thus endeþ here my tale of Ianuarie
 God blesse vs and his modere seynt Marie . 2418

¶ Here endeþ þe tale of þe marchaunt

GROUP D. FRAGMENT V.

§ 1. WIFE OF BATH'S PREAMBLE.

PETWORTH MS.

And here bygynneþ þe prologe of þe wif of Bathe [leaf 129]

Experience thouȝ noon autorite [leaf 129, back]
were in þis world riȝt ynouȝe for me
To speke of woo þat is in mariage
ffor lordingges siþ I twelue ȝere was of age 4
Thonked be god þat is eterne alyue
Husbondes atte church door haue I had fyve
ȝif I so often myȝt han wedded be
But alle were worþi men in her degre 8
But me was tolde certeyn not longe agoȝ is
That siþen crist ne want neuer but onys
To wedden in þe cane of galile
þat by þilk ensample tauȝte he me 12
That I ne shuld wedded be but onys
Herk eek. loo such a sharpe word for þe nones
Beside a welle Ihesu god and man
Spake in repreef of þe Samaritan 16
Thow hast yhad .v. husbondes quod he
And þat ilk man þat nouȝ hap þe
Is not thyne husbond þus seide he certeyn
What he ment þer-by I can not seyn 20
Wele! But þat I aske whi the fift man
Was now husbond to þe Samaritan
How mony myȝt she han in mariage
ȝit herd I neuere telle in myn age 24

PETWORTH 271 (S-T. 334)

vpon þis nombre diffinioun
 Men may devise and glosen vp *and* doun
 But wel I wote expresse wiþ-uten lye
 God bad us forto wexe and multiplie 28
 That ge[n]tile text can I wel vnderstond
 Eke wel I wote he seide myn husbond
 Shuld lete fadere *and* modere *and* take to me
 But of no nombre mencio[n] made he
 Of bygamy or of octogamye 32
 Whi shuld men þan of it han vilanye
 loke here the wise man . kyng Salomon
 I trowe he had wyues moo þan oð[n] ¶ *Genesis ijº quam-obrem* 36
 Now wold god it lieful were to me [leaf 130]
 To be refreshed half so oft as he
 Which gift of god had he for a[n] his wyues
 No man haþ such þat in þis world alyue es / 40
 God wote þis noble kinge as to my witte
 þe furst nyzt had mony a mery fitte
 Wiþ eche of hem so wel was hym alyve
 Blessed be god . þat I haue wedded fyve 44
 Welcome þe .vi. whan þat euer he shal
 ffor siþ I wil not kepe me chaast in a[n]
 Whan myn husbond is fro þe world ygo[n]
 Somme cristen man shal wedde me ano[n] 48
 ffor þan the apostel seiþ þat I am fre
 To wedde a goddes half where it likeþ me
 He seiþ þat to be wedded is no synne
 Better is to be wedded þan to brenne
 What rekkeþ me þoo folk sey vylanye
 Of shrewde lameþe and his Bygamye 53
 I woot wel Abraham was an holy man
 And Iacob eke as fer as euer I can 56
 And eche of hem had wyues moo þan twoo
 And mony anoþer holy man also
 Where can þe say in eny maner age
 That vs god defended mariage 60

¶ Relinquet homo
patrem & matrem
& adheret uxori
sue & cetera.

¶ Melius est nubere
quam vri. //

GROUP D. § 1. WIFE'S PREAMBLE. Petworth MS.

By expresse woord I prei þou telleþ me
 Or where commaunded he virginite
 I wote as wel as þe it is no drede
 þe Apostel whan he spekeþ of maydenhede 64
 He seide þerof precept had he non
 Men may counsaile a womman to be off
 But counseilling nys non comaundement
 He putte it in oure owne Iuggement 68
 ffor had god commaunded maidenhede
 þan had he dampned weddyng wip þe dede
 And certes gif þer were no sede ysowe
 Virginite þan wherof shuld it growe. 72
 Paule durst not commaunde at þe leest [leaf 120, back]
 A þing of which his maister 3af hym no heest
 þe darte is sette vp for virgynite
 Chace who so may who so renneþ best lat se 76
 But þis word is not take of every wight
 But þer as god wold 3ene it of his myght
 I wote wel þat þe apostel was a mayde
 But napelees þough þat he wrote or seide 80
 He wold þat euery wight were such as he
 All nys but counsaile to virgynite
 And forto be a wif he 3af me leue
 Of Indulgence so is it no repreue 84
 To wedde me gif þat my make dye
 With-oute excepcion of Bygamy
 Al were it good no womman forto touche
 He ment as his body or in his couche 88
 ffor perile is boþ fire and towe to assemble
 3e knowe what þis ensample may resemble
 þis is al and somme he helde virginite
 More parfit þan wedded in freelte 92
 Freelte clepe I not but þat he and she
 Wolde lede her lif al in chaastite
 I graunte it wel I haue non envie
 þoo Maidenhede preferre bygamy 96

It likeþ hem to be clene in body and goost.
 Of myn estaat I wil make no boost
 ffor wel 3e knowe a lord in his houshold
 Hap not euery vessel of gold 100
 Somme bene of tree and doñ her lord seruise
 God clepeþ folk to him in sondry wise
 And euery hap of god a propre 3ift
 Somme þis somme þat as hym likeþ shift 104
 Virginite ys grete perfecciõ
 And continence eke wiþ deuociõ
 But crist þat of perfecciõ is wells
 Bad not euery wize he shulde selle 108
 Al þat he had and 3eue it to þe poore [leaf 131]
 And in such wise folowe hym and his lore
 He spake to hem þat wold lyue parfityly
 And lordingges by 3oure leue þat am not I
 I wil bystowe þe floure of al myn age
 In charite and fruyte of mariage
 Telle me also to what conclusiõ
 Were membres made of generaciõ 116
 And of so parfit wise and whi ywrouzt
 Trestep rize wel þei were not made for nouzt
 Glose who so wil I say boþ vp and down
 þat þei were made for purgacioun 120
 Of vryne and oure boþe þingges smale
 were eke to knowe a female from a male
 And for noon oþer cause. what seye 3e no
 þe experience woot þat it is so / 124
 So þat þe clerkes ben not wiþ me wroop
 I seie þis þat þei maked be² fore both [2 over a y rubd out.]
 This is to seyne for office and for eese
 Of engendrings ther we not god displese 128
 whi shuld men ellis in her bokes sette
 þat man shal 3elde to his wif his dette
 Nowe wherwiþ shuld he paye his payment
 3if þat he ne vsed his sely instrument 132

¶ M^o xix.¹ Dixit
 autem Iherus
 vade & vende
 omnia que habes
 & da pauperibus
 [1 Matth. xix. 21]

Than were þei made vpon a creature
 To purge vryne and eke for engendrure
 But I seye not þat euery wight is holde
 þat haþ such harneys as I to ȝou haue tolde 136
 To goon and vsen hem in engendrure
 þan shuld men take of chastite no cure
 Crist was a mayde and shapen as a man
 And mony a seint siþ þat þe world bygan 140
 ȝit lyued þei euere in parfit chaastite
 I nyl envie wiþ no virginite
 Lat hem ete brede of pured whete sede
 And lat vs wyues ete Barle brede. 144
 And ȝit wiþ barle brede Mark' telle can [leaf 151, back]
 Oure lord Ihesu refreshed mony a man
 In such astate as god haþ cleped vs /
 I wil perseuere I ne am not precious 148
 In wifhode wil I vse myn Instrument
 As frely as my maker haþ it sent
 If I be daungerous god ȝeue me sorowe
 Myn husbonde shal it haue boþ eue *and* morowe 152
 Whan þat him list come forþ *and* paye his dette
 An husbond I wil han I nyl not lette
 Which shal be boþ my dettoure *and* my þral
 And han his tribulaciō wiþ-aȝ 156
 Vpon his flessch while þat I am his wiff
 I haue the power during al my liff
 vpon his propre body and not he
 Riȝt þus þe apostel told [it] vnto me 160
 And bad oure husbondes forto loue hym weȝ
 Al þis sentence me likeþ euery deȝ
Vp start the pardonere and þat anon
 Now dame quod he by god *and* by seynt Iohn 164
 ȝe bene a noble precheour in þis caas
 I was about to wedde a wiff alas
 What shuld I by it on my flessch so dere
 ȝit had I leuer wedde non to ȝere 168

¶ Ad corinthios viij.
 vir sui corporis poten-
 tiam non habet. nec
 mulier.

Ibyde quod she my tale is not bygonne
 Nay pou shalt drinke a noþer tonne
 Er þat I goo shal sauour wors þan ale
 And whan þat I haue told forþ my tale 172
 Of tribulacion in mariage
 Of whiche I am expert in myn age
 þis is to seye my silf haþ bene þe whippe
 þan maist þowe chese whider þou wilt scippe 176
 þilk tonne þat I shal abroche
 Be war of it or þou to nye aproche
 ffor I shal telle ensamples moo þan ten
 who that wil not be war by opere men./ 180
 By hym shul opere men corrected be
 [leaf 132]
 Thise same wordes writeþ ptholome
 Rede in his almagest and take it þere
 Dame I woldþ prey þou if þour wille were 184
 Seide þis pardonere as 3e bygan
 Telle forþ þoure tale spare for no man
 And teche vs jenge men of þoure practyke
 Gladly quod she siþ it may þou like 188
 But þat I prey to al þis companye
 If þat I speke after my fantasie
 As takeþ nat a greef of þat I seye
 For myñ entent is not but to pleye 192
 ¶ Now sirs þan shal I telle þou my tale
 As euere mote I drinke wyne or ale
 I shal seie soþ þoo husbondes þat I hadde
 As iij. of hem were good *and* two were badde 196
 þe iij. were good men riche *and* olde
 Vnneþes myzten þei þe statute holde
 In which þei were bounden vnto me
 3e wote wele what I mene of þis parde 200
 As god me helpe I laugh whan I þenke
 How pitously a nyzt I made hem swynke
 But by my faye I tolde of it no store
 þei had me þoue her londe *and* her tresore 204

GROUP D. § 1. WIFE'S PREAMBLE. Petworth MS.

Me neded not' do lenger diligence
 To wynne her loue and do hem reuerence
 þei loued me so wel by god aboute
 þat I ne told' no deynte of her loue 208
 A wise womman wil bysy hure euere in oñ
 To gete her loue 3e þer as she hap' noñ
 But siþe I had hem holy in myn honde
 And siþ þat þei hadde 3oue me al her londe 212
 what' shuld I take kepe hem forto plesse
 But 3if it' were my profite & myñ ease
 But sette hem so a werke by my faye
 þat mony a nyȝt þei songen weleaway 216
 The bacon was not' fette for hem I trowe [leaf 133, back]
 þat somme men han in Essex at donmowe
 I gouerned hem so wel after my lawe
 þat eche of hem ful blisful was and fawe 220
 To bringe me gay þingges fro þe feire
 knyves and ryngges & purses wel faire
 ffor god it' woot I chide hem spitously
 Now herkenep how I bere me proprely 224
 3e wise wyues þat can vnderstonð
 þus shuld 3e speke and bere hem wrongt on hond'
 ffor half so boldely þer can no man
 Swere and lye as womman can 228
 I say not þis by wyues þat bene wise
 But it' be whan þat þei hem mysavise
 A wise wif shal if þat she can her goode
 Bere him an honde þat þe kowe is wode 232
 And take witnesse of hire owne mayde
 Of hure assent' but' harkenep how I seide
 ¶ Sire olde keynard' is þis þine aray
 whi is my neighboures wif so gay 236
 She is honoured oueral wher she goþe
 I sitte at home I haue no þrifty cloþe
 what' dostowe at myn neighbours hous
 Is she so faire art' þou so amerous 240

GROUP D. § 1. WIFE'S PREAMBLE. Petworth MS.

what' rounne 3e wip our mayde . benedicite
 Sire olde lecchoure lat' pi lapes be
 And if I haue a gossipe or a frende
 wip-oute gilt' 3e chide as a fende 244
 3if pat' I walk' or play vnto his hous
 pou comcest home as dronken as a mous
 An prechest' on pi benche wip euel preef'
 pou seist' to me it' is a grete meschief' 248
 To wedde a poor womman for costage
 And if pat' she be riche of grete parage
 þan seist pou pat' it' is a turmentrie
 To suffre her pride and her malencolie . 252
 And if pat' she be faire þowe verrey knaue [leaf 133]
 þowe seist pat' euery holoure wol hure haue
 She may no while in chaastite abide
 That' is assaied vpon eche side 256
 Thowe seist' somme folk' desire vs for richesse
 Somme for our shap and some for our fairnesse
 And somme for she can eiper sing' or dañce
 Thus seistowe wernard' god 3eue þ' meschafice 260
 Somme for hure hondes and her armes smale
 Thus goþ al to þe deueþ by pi tale
 Thow seyst men may not' kepe a castell walle
 It' may so longe assailed be ouerall 264
 And if pat' she be foule pou saist' pat' she
 Coveiteþ euery man pat' she may se
 ffor as a spaynel she wil on hym lepe
 Til pat' she fynde somme man pat' wil hire chepe 268
 Ne noon so grey goos gos þer in the lake
 As seist pou pat' wil be wip-uten make
 And seist' it' is an harde þinge forto welde
 A wizt' pat' no man wil his þonkes helde 272
 Thus seist' pou lorel whan pou goost' to bedde
 And pat' no wise man nedep forto wedde
 And no man pat' entendeþ to þe heuene
 with wilde þonder' dynt' and fire leuene 276

GROUP D. § 1. WIFE'S PREAMBLE. Petworth MS.

Mote pi welked nek' be to-broke
 pou seist' þat dropping' houses and eke smoke
 And chidinge wyues maken men to fle
 Out' of hir owne house. A benedicite 280
 What' eileþ such an old man forto chide
 pou seist' we wyues wil oure vices hide
 Til we be fast' *and* þan we wil hem schewe
 Wele may þis be a prouerbe of a schrewe 284
 pou seist' þat Oxen. assen. hors. *and* houndes
 þei ben assaide at' dyuers stoundes
 Basyns lauoyrs er þat' men hem bye
 Spones. stooles. *and* such husbandrye. 288
 And so bene pottes clopes and oþer araies [leaf 133, back]
 But' of wommen are makid none assaies
 Til þei ben wedded old dotard' shrewe
 And seist' howe þen we wil our vices shewe 292
 Thowe seist' also þat' it displeseþ me
 But' ȝif þou wilt' preise my bewte
 And but' þou poure alway vpon my face
 And clepe me faire dame in euery place 296
 And but' þou make a feest' on þat' ilk' day
 þat' I was born and make fressh *and* gay
 And but' þou do to myn norys honoure
 And to my chambere withInne my bour 300
 And to my faders folkes *and* his alyes
 Thus seist' þou olde barett' ful of lyes
 And ȝit' of oure apprentise lankyn
 ffor his crispe here shynynge as gold' fyne 304
 And for he sqwiers me boþ vp *and* down
 ȝit' hast' þou þouȝt' a fals suspecioun
 I wil hym not' þei þou were dede to-morowe
 But' telle me þis whi hidest' þou wiþ sorowe 308
 pi keyes of pi chest' away fro me
 It is my good as wel as pine parde
 what' wenest' þou make an ydyote of *our* dame
 Now by þat' lord þat' called is seint' Iame 312

GROUP D. § 1. WIFE'S PREAMBLE. *Petworth MS.*

þou shalt not boþ þouze þou were woode
 Be maister of my body and my goode
 þat oon þou shalt forgoen magre þine eizen
 what helpeþ it of me to quere *and* apien 316
 I trowe þoo þou woldest lokke me in þi chest
 þou shuldest seie wif go where þe lest
 Take þoure disport I wil leue no talis
 I knowe þou for a good wiff dame Alys 320
 we loue no man þat takeþ kepe ne charge
 where þat we go we wil be at our large
 Of alle men blessed mot he be
 þe wise astrologen daun ptholome 324
 That seiþ þis prouerbe in his almagest
 Of alle men his wisdom is hiest
 þat rekkeþ not who haþ þe world in hond
 By þis prouerbe þou shalt wel vnderstond 328
 Haue þou ynowe what ther þe rekke *and* care
 Howe merely þat opere folk fare
 ffor certes olde dotarde be þoure leue
 þe shul haue queynt right ynowe at eue 332
 He is to grete a nygard þat wil warne
 A man to lizt a candel at his lantarne
 He shal haue neuere þe lasse lizt parde
 Haue þou ynowe þe ther not pleyn þe 336
 Thou seiþ also þat ȝif þou make vs gay
 with clopinge or wip precious aray
 That it is perile of our chaastie
 And ȝit wip wordes þou mote enforce me 340
 And say þise wordes in þe apostels name
 In abite made wip chastite and shame
 þe wommen shuld apparaile þou quod he
 And not in tressed here and gay perre 344
 As perle ne wip gold *and* clopes riche
 Aftere þi text ne aftere þi rubriche
 I nyl not worche as mochel as a gnatte
 Thowe seidest als þat I was like a catte 348

But who so wolde senge a cattis skyn
 þan wold þe catte wel dwellen in his Inn
 And if þe cattes skyn be sclyke *and* gay
 She nyl not dwel in hous half a day 352
 But forþ she wil er eny day be dawed
 To shewe her skyn and go a caterwawed /
 þis to seie if I be gay sir schrewe
 I wil renne out my burel for to shewe 356
 Sir olde foole what helpeþ þe to spien
 þei þowe prey argus wiþ his Mt. eyen
 To be my warde corps as he can best
 In feiþ he shal not kepe me but if me lest 360
 3it coupe I make his beerde so mote I þee
 þou seist eke þat þer bene pinges þre
 þe which pingges trowblen al þis erþe
 And þat no wizt ne may endure þe ferþe 364
 O leue sir schrewe Ihesu short þi liff
 3it prechestowe and seist an hatful wiff
 Yreckned is for oon of þise meschaunces
 Ben þere non oþer manere ressemblaunces 368
 þat 3e may likne 3oure parables too
 But 3if a cely wif be oon of þoo
 þow . liknest wommannys loue to helle
 To barayn londe þer water may not dwelle 372
 Thou liknest it also to wilde fire
 þe more it brenneþ þe more it haþ desire
 To consume eny þing þat brent wold be
 Thow seist þat riȝt a[*s*] wormes sheende a tre 376
 Riȝt so a wiff distroieþ her husbonde
 þis knowe þei þat bene to wyues bonde
 ¶ Lordingges riȝt þus as 3e han hunderstand
 Bare I stify myn olde husbondes on hand 380
 That þus þei seiden in her dronkenesse
 And eke þat þei had suspencion of Ialousnesse
 On Iankin and on myn neef also
 O lord þe peyn I did hem *and* þe woo / 384

GROUP D. § 1. WIFE'S PREAMBLE. Petworth MS.

ful gyltelees by goddis swete pyne
 ffor as an hors I coupe boþ bite *and* whyne
 I coupe pleyn *and* I was in þe gilt
 Or ellis often tyme I had be spilt 388
 Who so þat first to mylle commeth first grynt
 I pleyned furst so was oure werre stint
 ¶ þei were ful glad to excusen hem ful blyue
 Of þinge of which þei agilt neuer her lyue 392
 Of wenchis wold I beren hem on honde
 Whan þat for seke þei myȝt vnneþ stonde
 ȝit tied I his hert for þat he
 wende I had of hym so grete chierte 396
 I swore þat al my walking by nyȝt [leaf 136]
 Was forto aspie wenchis þat he diȝt
 Vnder þat colour had I mony a myrþe
 ffor al such witte is ȝeuen vs in our birþe 400
 Deceyte. weping. spyunnyng god haþ ȝeue ¶ *fallere. here. here*
 To womman kindly while þat þei lyue *a. stult down in muliere*
 And þus oft on þing I auaunte me
 At þe ende I had þe best in eche degre 404
 By sleiȝt or force. or by somme maner þinge
 As by contynuel murmur or grucchinge
 Namely abed had þei meschaunce
 þer wold I chide and do hem no plesaunce 408
 I wolde no lenger in þe bedde abide
 ȝif þat I felt his arme ouere my side
 Til he had made his raunson vnto me
 þan wolde I suffre hym doo his nicete 412
 And þefore euery man þis tale I telle
 Wine who so may al are for to selle
 With empty hond men may noȝ hauke lure
 ffor wyunnyng wold I al his lust endure 416
 And make me a feyned appetite
 And ȝit in bacon had I neuere delite
 That maked me þat euer I wold hym chide
 ffor þouȝe þe pope had sitte hym beside 420

GROUP D. § 1. WIFE'S PREAMBLE. **Petworth MS.**

I wolde not spare hym at his owne bord
 ffor be my troupe I quytte hym worde for word
 As helpe me verrey god omnipotent
 þow I riȝt now shuld make my testament 424
 I ne owe hym a word þat it nys quytte
 I brouȝt it so aboute by my witte
 þat he must ȝeue it vp as for þe best
 Or ellis had we neuer be in rest 428
 ffor þough he loked as a lyon
 ȝit shuld he faile of his conclusiō
 Than wold I seie nowe goode leef take kepe
 Howe mekely lokeþ wilkin our shepe. / 433
 Come nere my spouse lat me ba þi cheke [leaf 125, back]
 ȝe shul be al pacient *and* meke
 And han a swete spiced conscience
 Sip ȝe so prech of Iobes pacience 436
 Suffreþ alway sip ȝe so wel can preche
 And but ȝe doo certeyn we shul ȝou teche
 þat it is faire to haue a wif in pees
 Oon of vs mote bowen doutelees 440
 And sip a man is more resonable
 þan womman is. sir ȝe moste be suffrable
 what eileth ȝou to grucche þus *and* grone
 Is it for ȝe wold han my queynt alone 444
 Wy take it alle lo haue it euery dett
 Peter I schrewe ȝou but ȝe loue me well
 ffor ȝif I wolde selle my bele chose
 I coupe walk as frecch as eny rose 448
 But I wil kepe it for ȝour owne toth
 ȝe be to blame be god I seie ȝou soth
 Such manere wordes had we on hond
 Now wil I speke of my ferþe husbonde 452
 ¶ Mi ferþe husbonde was a reueloure
 þis is to seie he had a paramour
 And I was ȝenge and ful of ragerye
 Stiborn and stronge and Ioly as a pie 456

GROUP D. § 1. WIFE'S PREAMBLE. Petworth MS.

lord I coupe daunce to an harpe smale
 And synge ywis as eny nyȝtingale
 whan I hadde dronke a draught of swete wyñ
 Metelyus þe foule cheerle þo swyñ 460
 þat wiþ a staft byraft his wif her lif
 ffor she dronk wyne pouze I had ben his wif
 Ne shuld he not han daunted me fro drinke
 And aftere wyne on venus most I þenke 464
 ffor as siker as colde engendreþ haile
 A likerous mouþ most han a lykerous tale
 In womman vinolent is no defence
 þis knowe lecchours by experience 468
 But lord crist whan þat it remembreþ me [leaf 136]
 Vpon my zouþe and [on] my Iolite
 It ticleþ me aboute myn herte rote
 Vnto þis day It doþ myn herte bote 472
 þat I haue had my world as in my tyme
 But age alas þat al wil enuename
 Hap me byraft my bewte and my pith
 Lat it go fare wel þe deucl goo þerwith 476
 The floure is goñ þer nys no more to telle
 þe bren as I best can now mote I selle
 But ȝit to be riȝt mery wil I foonde
 Now forþe to telle of my ferþe husbonde 480
 I seie I had in hert gret despite
 þat he of eny oþer had delite
 But he was quytte by god and by seynt Iose
 I made hym of þe same wode a crose 484
 Nat of my body in no foule manere
 But certeynly I made folk such chere
 þat in his owne grece I made hym frye
 ffor Anger and for verrey Ialowsie 488
 By god in erþe I was his purgatorie
 ffor which I hope his saule be in glorie
 ffor god it woote he satte ful oft and songe
 whan þat his shoghñ ful bitterly hym wronge 492

GROUP D. § 1. WIFE'S PREAMBLE. *Petworth MS.*

for þer nas noon sauf god and he þat wist'
 In mony wise where I hym twist'
 He deyed whan I come fro Ierusalem
 And liþe in a graue vnder þe rode-beem 496
 All nys his tombe not' so curious
 As was þe sepulture of hym darius
 which þat appelles wrouȝt' subtily
 It' nys but' waast' to bury hym preciously 500
 Lat' hym fare wel god ȝeue his soule rest'
 He is nowē in his graue *and* in his chest'
 ¶ Nowe of my .v. husbond' wil I telle
 God lat' neuere his soule come in helle 504
 And ȝit' was he to me þe moost' shrewe
 [leaf 136, back]
 þat fele I on my ribbes al by rewe
 And euere shal unto myn ending' daye
 But in oure bed he was so fressh and gaye 508
 And þer wiþ al so wel couþe he me glose
 whan þat' he wold' han my bele chose
 þat þouȝe he had me bete on euery boñ
 He couþe wynne ageyn my loue anofñ 512
 I trowe I loued him þe bette for he
 Was of his loue daungerous to me
 We women han if þat' I shal not' lye
 In þis manere a queynte fantasie 516
 waite what þinge we may not' liztly haue
 Theraftere wil we crie al day and craue
 fforbede vs þinge *and* þat' desiren we
 Prees on vs fast' and þan wil we fle 520
 with daungere oute we al oure chaffare
 Greet' prees atte Market' makeþ dere ware
 And to grete chepe is yholde atte litel pris
 This knoweþ euery womman þat' is wise 524
 ¶ My fift' husbonde god his soule blisse
 which þat' I toke for loue and no richesse
 he some tyme was a clerk' of oxenford'
 And had left' scole and went' at home to boord' 528

GROUP D. § 1. WIFE'S PREAMBLE. *Petworth MS.*

wip my gossip dwelling' in our toūn
 God haue her soule her name was alisoun
 She knewe myn hert' and al my priuyte
 Better þan oure parissā preest' so mot' I the 532
 To hure bywried I my counseil aȝt
 ffor had myn husbonde pissed on a walle
 Or doon a þinge þat' shuld' have cost' his liff'
 To hure and to anoþer worþi wiff' 536
 And to my nece which I loue well
 I wold han tolde his counseile euerideȝ
 And so I did ful often god it' wote
 þat' made his face often rede *and* hote. 540
 ffor verrey shame and blamed hym self for he [leaf 137]
 had tolde to me so grete a privyte
 And so byfelle þat' ones in a lente
 So ofte tyme I to my gosype wente 544
 ffor euer ȝit' I loued to be gay /
 And forto walke in marche Averil and may
 ffrom hous to hous to harken sonday tailles/
 þat' Iankin clerk *and* my gossip dame alys 548
 And I my self into þe feeldes wente
 Myn husbonde was at london al þat' lente
 I had þe bettre leisere forto pley
 And forto see and eke forto be seye 552
 Of lusty folk what' wist' I wher my grace
 Was shapen forto be or in what place
 Therefore made I my visitacions
 To vigiles and to processions 556
 To preching' eke and to þise pilgrimages
 To plaies of miracles and of mariages
 And wered vpon my gay scarlet gites
 Thise wormes ne þise mothes ne þise mytes 560
 Vpon my perile frete hem neuer a dele
 And woostowe whi for þei were vsed wele
 Now wil I tellen forþ what' happed me
 I seie þat' in þe feeldes walked we 564

GROUP D. § 1. WIFE'S PREAMBLE. Petworth MS.

Til trewely we had such daliañce
 þis clerk' and I þat' of my purviañce
 I spake to hym and seide how þat he
 3if I were widowe shuld wedde me 568
 ffor certeynly I seye for no bobañce
 þat' I was neuere 3it' withoute purveañce
 Of mariage ne of oper þingges eke
 I hold' a monnys witte nat worþ a leke 572
 þat' haþ but' oon hool forto stirten too
 And 3if þat faile þan is al ydoo /
 [I bare hym on) hande he hadde enchauntede me [MS Reg. 17
D xv, on leaf
13a, back]
 My dame taughte me þat subtylte
 And eke I sayde I Mete of hym) aþ nyghte 577
 He wolde haue slayne Me As I laye vprighte
 And aþ my bedde was ffulte of vereye blode
 Butte yette I hope þat ye schult do me gode 580
 ffor blode bitokeneþe golde As me was taughte
 And aþ was ffalse I dremede of hitt' righte noughte
 Butte as I ffollowede Ay My dames lore
 Asweþe of that as of oper þynge more] [MS Reg. extract stope]
 But' nowe Sir' lat' me se what' shal I seyn
 A A. by god I haue my tale ageyn.
 whan þat' my ferþ husbond' was on bere [leaf 137, back]
 I wepte algates and made sory chere 588
 As wyues moten for it' is þe vsage
 And with my keercheef keuered my visage
 But' for þat' I was purueide of a make
 I wepte but' smale and þat' I vndertake 592
 To church was myn husbond yborn on morowe
 wiþ neighbours þat' for hym made sorowe
 And Iankyn our clerk' was on of þoo
 As helpe me god whan þat' I segh hym goo 596
 Aftere þe bere me pou3t' he had a peire
 Of legges and of fete so clene and feire
 þat' al my hert' I 3aue vnto his holde
 He was I trowe xxⁱⁱ wynter' olde 600

And I was xlith ȝif I shal scie soþe
 But ȝit I had alway a Coltiſsh toþe
 Gat toþed I was *and* þat by-cam me weþ
 I had þe printe of seynt venus seeh 604
 As helpe me god I was a lusty oñ
 ffaire and riche. ȝonge *and* welbygoñ
 And trewly as myn husbond tolde me
 I had þe best quoniam þat myȝt be. 608
 [ffor sertes I Am) aþ veneryen] [MS Reg. 17 D xv,
on leaf 133]
 In) ffelenges And my herte is Mercyen
 Venus me yafe My luste my lykerousnesse
 And Mars yafe me my sturdye hardynesse] 612
 Myn ascendent was taure *and* mars þer-inne
 Allas alas þat euer loue was synne
 I folowed aye myn Inclinaciõ
 By vertue of my constellaciõ 616
 That made me I couþe not wiþdrawe
 My chambere of venus from a good felawe
 [Yette haue I Mars is Marke vppon) my fface] [MS Reg. 17 D xv,
on leaf 133]
 And allso in Anopere preuye place 620
 ffor god so wysse be My saluacion)
 I louede neuer by no discrecion)
 I ffolowede euer Myne Appetyte
 AH were he longe schorte blacke or whyte 624
 I toke no kepe so þat he lykede me
 How poure he was And eke of whatte degre] [MS Reg.
abstract stope]
 What shuld I sei but at þe monþes ende
 This Ioly clerk Iankyn þat was so hende 628
 Hap wedded me wiþ grete solempnite
 And to hym ȝaue [I] al þe londe and ffee
 þat euere was me ȝeuen þerbifore
 But aftere[ward] repented me ful sore 632
 He nolde suffre no þinge of my lest
 by god he smote me onys on þe lest
 ffor þat I rent out of his boke a leef [leaf 138]
 That of þat stroke myn eeren wexen deef 636

Stiborn I was as is a leonesse
 And of my tunge a verrey Iangeleresse
 And walk I wold as I had doñ to-forñ
 ffrom hous to hous al þouȝe he had it sworn 640
 fforþwip ful often tyme he wolde preche
 And me [of] olde Romaynes geestes teche
 How he · symplcius gallus laft his wiff
 And hure for-soke for terme of his lif 644
 Nat but for open hede he hure say
 Lokinge out at his door on a day
 Anoper romayn tolde he me by name
 þat for his wiff was at a somers game 648
 Wip-oute his wittyng he forsok her eke
 And þan wolde he vpon his bible seke
 þat ilk prouerbe of Ecclesiast
 Where he commaundeþ and forbedeþ fast 652
 Man shal not suffre his wif to rome aboute
 Than wolde he seie riȝt þus wip-uten doute
 Who-so þat beeldeþ his hous all of salous ¶ Nota bene
 And prickeþ his blynde hors ouere þe falous 656
 And suffereþ his wif forto seken halowes
 Is worpi forto be honged on þe galowes /
 ¶ But al for nouȝt I sette not an hawe
 Of his prouerbes ne of his olde lawe 660
 Ne I wold not of hym corrected be
 I hate hym þat my vice telleþ me
 And so doñ moo god wote of vs þan I
 þis made him wip me wode al vtterly 664
 I nold forbere hym in no cas
 Now wil I seye ȝou soþ by seint Thomas
 Whi þat I rent out of his booke a leef
 ffor which he smote me þat I was deef 668
 He had a boke þat gladly nyȝt and daye
 ffor his disport he wolde rede alway
 He cleped Valerye and theofraste
 Atte whiche boke he lowȝh alway ful fast 672

[leaf 128, back]

GROUP D. § 1. WIFE'S PREAMBLE. Petworth MS.

And eke þer was somtyme a clerk' in Rome
 A Cardynal þat' hight' seint' Ierome
 þat' made a boke aȝein Iouean
 In which boke eke þer was Terculan 676
 Crisippus . Trocula . and holowys
 That' was Abbas not' fer fro Paris/
 And eke þe parables of Salomon
 Ovydes art' and bokes mony on 680
 And alle þise were bounden in oo volom
 And euery nyȝt' and day was his custom
 Whan he had leisere and vacacioñ
 ffrom opere worldly occupacioñ 684
 To reden in þis boke of wicked wyues
 He knewe of hem mo legendys þan lyues
 þan bene of good wyues in þe bible
 ffor trusteþ wel it' is an impossible 688
 þat' eny clerk' wil spoken good of wyues
 But' ȝif it' be of holy seyntes lyues
 Ne of noon opere womman neuere þe moo /
 who peinted þe lyon telle me who / 692
 By god ȝif' women had ywriten stories
 As clerkes han wiþ-In her oratories
 Thei wold han writen of men more wickednesse
 Than al þe Mark' of Adam may redresse 696
 The Children of mercury and Venus
 Ben in her worchinge contrarious /
 Mercury loueþ wisdom and science
 And Venus loueþ riote and dispence 700
 And for her dyuers disposicioñ
 Ech falleþ in oper exaltacioñ
 As þus god wote mercure is disolate
 In pisces wher Venus is exaltate 704
 And Venus falleþ þer mercurye is reysed
 þerfor no womman of no man is preised .
 The clerk' whan he is olde and may not' do [leaf 139]
 Of Venus werkes worþ his olde shoo 708

þan sitte he doun *and* writte in his dotage
 þat' wommen can not kepe her mariage
 But' nowe to purpos whi I told þe
 þat' I was beten for a boke parde. 712
 Vpon a nyzt Iankin þat' was our sire
 Redde on his boke as he satte by þe fire
 Of Eua first' þat' for her wickednesse
 Was al mankinde brouzt to wrecchednesse 716
 [ffor' whiche þat' Ihesu Crist' hym selfe was slayne ^[MS Reg. 17 D xv, on leaf 134, back]
 That boughte vs with his herte blode agayne
 Lo here expresse of women) Maye ye ffynde
 That women) was the losse of Að Mankynde] 720
 Tho redde he me howe sampson lost' his heres
 Slepinge his lemman kitt' it' wip her sheres
 þourgh whiche treson lost' he boþ his eyen /
 Tho redde he me if I shal not' lyen. 724
 Of Ercules and of his dyanyre
 þat' caused hym to sette hym self a fyre
 No þinge forgate he þe penaunce *and* woo
 þat' Socrates had wip his wyues twoo 728
 Howe þat' Ancipa cast' pisse on his hede
 þe Sely man satte stille as he were dede
 He wiped his hede no more durst' he seyn
 But' er þat' thonder' stint' commeþ a reyn 732
 Of ¹pasipa þat' was þe quene of grete ^[1 at first ph]
 ffor schrewdenesse hym þouzt' þ' tale swete
 ffye speke no more it' is a grisly þinge
 Of hure horrible lust' and [hure] lykyng 736
 Of Clitermistra for her lecherye
 þat' falsly made her husbond' forto dye
 He redde it' wip ful good deuocion
 He tolde me for what occasion 740
 Amphiorax at' thebes lost' his lif
 Myn husbonde had a legende of his wif
 Eriphilem. þat' for an ouch of gold
 hap' prively vnto þe grekes told 744

GROUP D. § 1. WIFE'S PREAMBLE. Petworth MS.

wher þat her husbond hidde hym in a place
 for which he had at Thebes sory grace
 Of lyma tolde he mee and of luye [leaf 139, back]
 þei boþ made her husbondes forto dye 748
 Thatt on for loue þat oþer was for hate
 lyma her husbonde on euene late
 Enpoysened had for þat she was his foo
 Lucia lykerous loued her husbond soo / 752
 þat for he shuld vpon her alway pinke
 She ȝaue hym such a loue manere drinke
 That he was dede or it was by þ^e morowe
 And þus algates husbondes han sorowe 756
 ¶ Than tolde he me howe on latumys
 Compleyned to his felawe arius
 That in his gardyne growed such a tre
 On which he seide þat his wyues þre 760
 Hangged hem selue for hertes despitous
 O leue broþer quod þis arius
 ȝeue me a plant of þat blisful tre
 And in my gardyne planted shal he be 764
 Of latter date of wyues hap he redde
 þat han sclayn her husbondes in þe bedde
 But lat hure lecchoure digt hur al þe nyȝt
 Whan þat þe corps lay in þe floore vpriȝt 768
 And some han dryuen nayles in her brayn
 While þat þei slepe and þus þei han hem sclayn
 Somme han ȝeuen poysen in her drinke
 He spak more harme þan hert may þenk' 772
 And þer-with-aȝ he knewe of moo prouerbes ¶ *Solo melius est habitare.*
 þan in þis world þer growen grasse or herbes /
 Bett' is quod he þine habitacioȝ
 Be wiþ a leon or a foule dragon 776
 þan wiþ a womman vsing' forto chide
 Bet' is quod he high in þe roof abide
 þan wiþ an angry wif down in an hous
 þey bene so wicked and contrarious / 780

GROUP D. § 1. WIFE'S PREAMBLE. Petworth MS.

þei haten þat her husbondes louen ay
 He seide a womman cast her shame away
 whan she cast of her smokke *and ferþermo* [leaf 140]
 A faire womman but she be chaast also / 784
 Is lich a gold ryng on a sowes nose
 who wold wene or wold suppose
 The woo þat in myn herte was *and pyne*
 And whan I segh he wolde neuere fyne 788
 To reden on þis cursed boke al nyzt
 Al sodeynly þre leues haue I plizt
 Out of his boke rizt as he redde *and eke*
 I wip my fist so toke him on þe cheke 792
 That in our fire he fille bakward adoun
 And he vp stert as dop a wood lyoun
 And wip his fist he smote me on þe hede
 þat in þe flore I laie as I were dede 796
 And whan he seegh how stille þat I lay
 He was agast and wold han fledde away
 Til at þe laste out of my swowe I breide
 O hastowe sclaينه me fals þeef I seide 800
 And for my londe þus hastowe mordred me
 Or I be dede zit wil I kisse þee
 And nere he come and kneled faire adoun
 And saide dere sustere Alisoun 804
 As helpe me god I shal þe neuere smyte
 That I haue done it is þi self to wite
 fforgeue it me *and þat* I þe biseke
 And zit eftsones I hit hym on þe cheke 808
 And seide þeef þus moche am I wreke
 Nowe wil I dye I may no lenger speke
 But at þe last wip mochel care *and woo*
 We fille acorded by vs seluen twoo 812
 He 3aue me al þe bridel in myn honde
 To haue þe gouernaunce of hous *and londe*
 And of his tunge and his hand also
 And made him brenne his boke anon rizt þoo 816

GROUP D. § 1. WIFE'S PREAMBLE. *Petworth MS.*

And whan þat I had gotten vnto me
 By maistery al þe souereynthe.
 Than he seide myn owne trewe wif [leaf 140, back]
 Do as þou lest þe terme of al þoure lif 820
 kepe þoure honure and kepe eke myn astate
 Aftere þat day we had neuere debate.
 God helpe me so I was to him as kinde
 As eny wif from denmarke into Ynde 824
 And also trewe / and so was he to me
 I prey to god þat sitte in mageste
 So blesse his soule for his mercy dere
 Now wil I seie my tale if þe wil here 828
 ¶ Thus endep þe prologe of þe wif of bath

And here bygynnep þe Tale.¹

[¹ that is, *The Wrangle between
the Summoner and the Friar.*]

¶ The tale./

The frere lowe whan he had herd al þis
 Now dame quod he so haue I ioye or blis
 þis is a longe preamble of a tale
 And whan þis somnour herd þe frere gale 832
 Lo quod þe somnour goddis armes two
 A frere wil entremete hym euermoo
 Loo good men a flie and eke a frere
 wollen falle in euery dissh and eke matere 836
 what spekest þou of preambulacioun
 what amble or trotte or pees or go sitte down
 Thou lettest oure disport in þis manere
 þe wilt þou so somnour quod þe frere 840
 Now by my fay I shal er þat I goo
 Telle a somnour such a tale or twoo
 That alle þe folk shul laughen in þis place
 Now ellis frere I bishrewe þi face 844
 Quod þis somnour and I bishrewe me
 But þif I telle þe tales two or þre
 Of freres er I come to sidyngburne
 þat I shal make þine hert for to mourne 848

GROUP D. § 1. WIFE'S PREAMBLE. Petworth MS.

ffor wel I wote þi pacience is goñ
 Our hoost' cried pees and þat' anoñ
 And seide lat' þe womman telle her tale
 3e faren as folk' þat' dronken beñ of ale ./ 852
 Do dame telle forth 3our tale þat' is þe best' [leaf 141]
 Al redy sire quod she ri3t' as 3ou lest'
 If I haue licence of þis worþi frere
 3is dame quod he telle forþ 3oure tale we wil here 856

[No break in the MS.]

[THE WIFE OF BATH'S TALE]

[on leaf 141]

IN þe olde dayes of þe king' arthour' ¶ *fabula*
 Of which þat bretons speken grete honour
 Al was þis land fulfilled of fayry
 þe Elfe quene wip her Ioly companye 860
 Daunced wip out in mony a grene mede
 þis was þe olde opynyon as I rede
 I speke of mony an .C. 3ere a-goo
 But' nowe can no man se noon elues moo 864
 ffor nowe þe grete charite and preiers
 Of lymytoures and oþer poor freres
 That' serchen euery londe and euery streme
 As pikke as motes in þe sonne beme 868
 Blessinge halles chambers and boures
 Citiees burghes castels hize toures
 Thropes . beernys . shipnes . dayrys
 This makeþ þat þer bene no fayrys 872
 ffor þer as wonte to walke was an elf
 Ther walkeþ nowe þe lymytour hym self
 In vnder meles and in mornynnges
 And seiþ his matyns and his hoþy þingges 876
 As he goþ in his lymitacioun
 Wommen may go nowe sauf vp and down
 In euery bussh or vnder euery tre
 þer nys noñ oþer Incubus but' he 880
 And he wil do hem but' dishonour
 And so felle it þat þis king' Arthour
 Had in his hous a lusty bachilere
 That' on a day come riding' fro ryvere 884

And happed alone as she was born
 He seegh a maiden walking' hym byforñ
 Of which mayde Mangre her hede
 By verrey force he raft hure maydenhede 888
 ffor which oppression was such clamour [leaf 141, back]
 And such pursute vnto þe king' arthour
 That dampned was þis knyzt forto be dede
 Be cours of lawe *and* shuld haue lost his hede 892
 Perauenture such was þe statute poo /
 But þat þe quene and oþer ladiis moo
 So longe preide þe kinge of grace
 Til he his lif him graunted in þat place 896
 And ȝaue hym to þe quene al at her wille
 To chese whedere she wold hym saue or spille
 The quene þonkeþ þe kinge wiþ al her myzt
 And after þis þus speke she to þe knyght 900
 Whan þat she seegh her tyme on a day
 Thou stondest ȝit quod she in such aray
 That of þi lif ȝit hastowe no suerte
 I graunte þe lif if þou canst telle me 904
 ¶ What þing is it þat wommen most desiren
 Be ware and kepe þi nekbone fro yren
 And if þou canst not telle it me anofñ
 ȝit wil I ȝeue þe leue forto goñ 908
 A xij. monþe *and* a daye. to seke *and* lere
 An answer suffisaunt in þis matere
 And suerte wil I han er þat þou passe
 þi body forto ȝelde in þis place 912
 woo was þis knyzt and sorowfully he sikeþ
 But what? he may not do al as hym likeþ
 And at þe last he chese hym forto wende
 And to come aȝein riȝt at þe ȝeres ende 916
 With suche answer as god wold hym purveye
 And takeþ his leue and wendeþ forþ his weye
 He sekeþ euery hous and euery place
 Where as he hopeþ forto fynde grace 920

GROUP D. § 2. WIFE'S TALE. Petworth MS.

To lere what þing' wommen louen most
 But he nowe koude aryuen in no cost
 where as he myȝte fynde in þis matere
 Twoo creatures acordyng' in fere 924
 Somme seiden wommen louen best' ricchesse [leaf 143]
 Somme seide honour' somme seiden Iolynesse
 Somme riche aray. some seiden lust a bedde
 And oft tyme to be wydowe *and* wedde 928
 Somme seiden þat' we bene most' yessed
 Whan þat' we bene yflatered *and* yplesed.
 He goþ ful ny þe soþ I wil nat' lye
 A man shal wynne vs best wip' flaterye 932
 And wip' attendaunce and wip' bisynesse
 bene we alyned boþ more *and* lesse
 And somme men seyn howe þat' we louen best'
 ffor to be free and do riȝt' as vs lest' 936
 And þat' no man repreue vs of our vice
 But say þat' we bene wise and no þinge nice
 ffor trewly þer nys noon of vs alle
 ȝif eny wiȝt' wil clawe vs on þe galle 940
 þat' we nyl loke or he saye vs soth
 Assaie and he shal fynde it' þat' he doþ.
 ffor be we neuer' so vicious wip-Inne
 We wil be holden wise and clene of synne 944
 And somme seyn þat' grete delit' haue we
 ffor to be holden stable and eke secree
 And in oo purpos stedfastly to dwelle
 And not' bewrey þing' þat' men vs telle 948
 But þat' tale is not' worþ a rake stele
 Parde we wommen comen no þing' hele
 Witnesse on myda wil ȝe here þe tale
 Ovide amonges oþer þingges smale 952
 Seip Mida had vnder his longe heres
 Growinge vpon his hede two asses eres
 The whiche vice he hidde as he best' myȝt'
 fful subtilly from euery mannys siȝt' 956

þat saue his wif þer wist it no moo
 He loued her most and trested to her also
 He preide hir most þat vnto no creature
 She shuld not tellen of his disfigure 960
 She swore hym nay for al þis world to wyne [leaf 148, back]
 She wold do þat vilanye or þat synne
 To make her husbond han so foule a name
 ffor reprevynge of hym and foule shame 964
 But napeles her þouzt þat she dide
 þat she so longe shuld a counseile hide
 Her þouzt it satte so sore about her herte
 þat nedely som word her mote a-sterne 968
 And siþe she durst [nat] tellen it no man
 Doune to a marise fast she ranne
 Til she came þere her herte was a fire
 And as a bitor bumlep in þe myre 972
 She laide her mouþ vnto þe water down
 Bewrey me not þou watere wiþ þi souþ
 Qoþ she to þe I telle it and no moo
 Myñ husbonde haþ longe asses eren two 976
 Now is my hert al hole now is it oute
 I myzt no lenger kepe it out of doute
 Here may ȝe se þouȝe we a tyme abide
 ȝete oute it moot we mowe no counseil hide 980
 The remenaunte of þe tale if ȝe wil here
 Redep ovide and ȝe mowe it lere
 ¶ This knyzt of which my tale is specialy
 Whan þat he seegh he myzt not come þerby 984
 This is to seyn. what women louen most
 Wiþ-in his hert soryful was þe goost
 But home he goþe he myzt not sojourne
 þe day was come þat homward most he tourne 988
 And in his way it happed hym to ride
 In al his care vndere a forest side
 Where he segh in oon daunce goo /
 Of ladis foure and twenti¹ and ȝit moo [1 MS. xxiiij. u.] 992

GROUP D. § 2. WIFE'S TALE. *Petworth MS.*

Toward þe daunce he drowe hym 3erne
 In hope þat somme wisdom shuld he lerne
 But certeynly er he cam fully þere
 Vanysshed was þe daunce he nyst not where 996
 No creature seye he þat bare lif [leaf 143]
 Saue in þe grene he sey sitting a wif
 A fouler wight þer may no man deuise
 Ageyn þe knyght þe old wif gan arise 1000
 And seide sir knyght here forþ ne lieþ no way
 Telle me what þat 3e seken be 3oure fay
 Perauenture it may þe better be
 Thise olde folk konne moche þing quod she 1004
 My leue modere quod þis knyght certayn
 I am but dede but gif þat I can sayn
 Whatt þinge it is þat wommen most desire
 Cowde 3e me wisse I coude wel quyte 3our hire 1008
 Plite me þi troupe here in my hand quod she
 The nexte þinge þat I require þe
 Thow shalt it doo if it lye in þi myght
 And I wille telle it 3ou er it be nyght 1012
 Hauē here my troupe quod þe knyght I graunte
 Than quoth she I may me wel auaunte
 þi lif is sauf for I wil stonde þer-by
 Vpon my lif þe quene wil say as I 1016
 Lat se which is þe proddest of hem alle
 þat wereth on a kerchif or a calle
 þat dar seie nay of þat I shal 3ou teche
 lat vs goo forþ wiþ-oute lenger speche 1020
 Tho rowned she a pistel in his eere
 And bad hym to be glad and han no fere
 Whan þei be commen to þe courte þis knyght
 Seide he had holde his day as he had hight 1024
 And redy was his answeere as he seide
 fful mony a noble wif and mony a maide
 And mony a widowe for þat þei be wise
 þe quene her silf sitting as a Iustise 1028

Assembled ben þis answere forto here
 And aftere þis knyȝt was bode apere
 And þat þe knyȝt shuld telle in audience
 To euery wȝt commmaunded was silence 1032
 what þing þat worldly wommen louen mest' [leaf 143, back]
 This knyȝt ne stode not stille as doþ a beest
 But to his question anofn answerd
 wip manly vois þat al þe courte it herde 1036
 My lege lady generally quod he
 wommen desiren to han souereynste
 As wel ouer hir husbond *and* her loue
 And forto be in maistrie hym aboue 1040
 This is ȝoure most desire þouȝe ȝe me kille
 Doþ as ȝou list I am here at ȝoure wille
 In al þe courte ne was þer wif ne mayde
 Ne wydowe þat contraried what he saide . 1044
 But seiden he was worpi han his lif
 And wip þat word vp stert þat olde wif
 which þat þe knyȝt sey sitting on þe grene
 Mercy quod she my souereyn lady quene 1048
 Er þat ȝoure courte departe do me riȝt
 I taught þis answere vnto þis knyȝt
 ffor which he plizte me his troythe þere
 þe first þinge I wolde of him requere 1052
 He wold it doo ȝif it lay in his myȝt
 Bifore þe court þan prey I þe sir knyȝt
 Quod she þat þou me take vnto þi wiff
 ffor wel þou woost þat I. haue kepte þi liff 1056
 If I sey fals seye nay vpon þi faye
 þis knyȝt answerd allas *and* weleaway
 I woot riȝt wel þat such was my bihest
 ffor goddis loue chese a newe request 1060
 Take al my good *and* lat my body goo
 Nay þan quod she I schrewe vs boþe twoo
 ffor þouȝe þat I be foule *and* olde *and* poor
 I nold for al þe metal ne for ore 1064

þat vnder erþe is graue or lith aboue
 But ȝif þat I þi wif were *and* þi loue
 My loue quod he nay my dampnacioun
 Allas þat any of my nacioun 1068
 Shuld euere so foule ydisparaged be [leaf 146]
 But al for nouȝt þe enȝe is þis þat he
 Constreynd was he nedes most her wedde
 And takeþ þis olde wif and goþ to bedde 1072
 Nowe wolden somme men seyn peraventure
 þat for my necligence I do no cure
 To telle ȝou þe Ioie and þe araye
 þat at þe feest was þat ilk day 1076
 To which þinge shortly answerē I shal
 I seie þer nas no Ioye ne feest at all
 þer nas but hevynesse and mochel sorowe
 ffor priuely he wedded hure on a morowe 1080
 And alday aftere hid hym as an owle
 So woo was him his wif loked so foule
 Grete was þe sorowe þe knyȝt had in his pouȝt
 Whan he was wiþ his wiff a bedde brouȝt 1084
 He waloweþ and turneþ to and froo
 His olde wiff laye amyling euermoo
 And seide .o dere husbond o benedicite
 fareþ euery knyȝt þus wiþ his wif as ȝe 1088
 Is þis þe lawe of king Arthures hous
 Is euery knyȝt of his loue þus dañgerous
 I am ȝoure owne loue and eke ȝoure wiff
 I am she which þat saued hap ȝoure lif 1092
 And certes ȝit did I ȝou neuere vnriȝt
 whi fare ȝe þus wiþ me þe firste nyȝt
 ȝe faren lich a man had lost his witte
 ffy what is my gilt for goddes loue telle it 1096
 And it shal ben amended if I may
 Amended quod þis knyȝt nay nay
 That wil not bene amended neuere moo
 þou art so loply and so old also 1100

And þerto commen of so lowe a kinde
 þat no wonder is þouȝe I walowe & wynde
 So wolde god my herte wolde bres
 Is þis quod she þe cause of ȝoure vnrest 1104
 ȝe certainly quop he no wonder is [leaf 144, back]
 Now sire quod she I couþe amende al þis
 If þat me list er it were daies þre
 So wel ȝe myȝt bere ȝou vnto me. 1108
 ¶ But for ȝe speken of such gentillesse ¶ *Wefa bene de nobilibus*
 As is descended out of alle richesse
 þat þerfore shulden ȝe be gentile men
 Such errogance nys not worþ an heñ 1112
 Loke who so is moost vertuous alway
 Privey and aperte and best endeþ ay
 To do þe beste dedis þat he can
 And take him for þ[e] grettest gentile man 1116
 Of criste cleyme we our gentylesse
 Not of oure elders for our old richesse
 ffor þouȝe þei ȝeue vs al our heritage
 ffor which we cleyme to be of hie parage 1120
 ȝit may þei not byqueþ for no þing
 To noon of vs her vertuous lyuyng
 þat made hem gentile men ycalled be
 And bad vs folowen in such degre 1124
 wel can þe wise poete of florence
 þat hight dant speke in þis sentence
 Lo in such manere Ryme is dantes tale
 fful seelde vpriseþ by his braunches smale 1128
 Prowesse of man for god of his prouesse
 wil þat of hym we clayme our gentilnesse
 ffor of oure elders may we no þing clayme
 But temporel þing þat man may hirt and mayme 1132
 Eke euery wiȝt wote þis as wel as I
 þo gentellesse were planted naturally
 Vnto a certeyn lynage down þe lyne
 Prive and apert þan wold he neuere fyne 1136

GROUP D. § 2. WIFE'S TALE. Petworth MS.

To doñ of gentelesse þe fair' office
 þei myȝten do no vileny or vice
 Take fire and bere it' in þe derkest' hous
 By-twix þis *and* the mount' of Caucasous. 1140
 And lat' men shette þe doores and go þenne [leaf 148]
 ȝit' wol þe fire as faire lye and brenne
 A[s] thowsand men myȝt' it' biholde
 His office naturel ay wil it' holde 1144
 Vp perile of liff til þat' it' die
 Here may ȝe se wel how þat' gentrie
 Is nat' annexed to possession
 Siȝ folk do not' her operacion 1148
 Al waie as doþ þe fire lo in his kinde
 ffor god it' wote men may ful often fynde
 A lordes sone doo shame and vilenye
 And he þat' wil haue price of his gentrie 1152
 ffor he was born of a gentile hous
 And had his elders noble *and* vertuous
 And nyl him-seluen do no gentile dedys
 Ne folow his gentile Auncestre þat' dede is 1156
 He nys nat' gentile be he duke or erle
 ffor vileyns sinful dedes make a cheerle
 ffor gentilnesse nys but' reuent' renome
 Of þine ancestres for hir bewte bounte 1160
 Whiche is a strong' þing' for þi persone
 The gentilesse commeþ from god alone
 Than commeth our verrey gentilesse of grace
 It' was no þing' byqueþe' vs *with* our place 1164
 Thankeþ howe noble as seiþ valerius
 Was þilk Tullius Hostilius
 þat' out' of pouerte roos to hie noblesse
 Redeþ Senek and redeþ eke Boesse 1168
 þer shul ȝe sene expresse þat' it' no drede is
 þat' he is gentile þat' doþ gentile dedys
 And þerfore dere husbonde I þus conclude
 Al were it' þat' myn ancestres were rude 1172

3it may þat hie god an so hope I
 Graunt me grace to lyue vertuously
 Than am I gentile whan þat I bygynne
 To lyuen vertuously and leuen synne 1176
 And þer as ȝe of pouert me repreue [leaf 145, back]
 The hie god on whom þat we byleue
 In wilful pouerte. chas to lede his lif ¶ nota de paupertate.
 And certes enery man boþ maide & wiff 1180
 May vnderstonde Ihesu heuen kinge
 Ne wold not chese a vicious lyuynge
 Glad pouerte is an honest þing certayn
 This wil senek and opere clerkes seyn 1184
 Who þat holte him paide of his pouerte
 I holde him riche al had he nouȝt serte
 He þat coueiteþ is a poor wif
 ffor he wold han þat is not in his myȝt 1188
 But he þat nouȝt haþ ne keuiteþ to haue
 Is riche al þough men hold him but a knaue
 Verrey pouerte is signe proprely
 Iuuenal [saþ] of pouert merily 1192
 The poor man whan he goþ by þe way
 Biforn þe þeues he may singe and play
 Pouerte is hatel good and as y gesse
 A ful grete bringer out of bysynesse 1196
 A grete amender eke of sapience
 To him þat lackeþ it in pacience
 Pouerte is þis al þough it seme alenge
 Possession þat no wif wil chalenge 1200
 Pouerte ful often whan a man is lowe
 Makeþ his god and eke him self to knowe
 Pouerte in spectacle is as þenkeþ me
 þorowe which he may his verrey frendes see 1204
 And þerfor siþ þat I ȝou not greue
 Of my pouerte no more me repreue
 Now sire of elde ȝe repreue me ¶ Nota de senectute.
 And certes sire þorowe non auctorite 1208

GROUP D. § 2. WIFE'S TALE. Petworth MS.

Where in no boke 3e gentile in honour
 Seyn þat mon shuld an olde wif do fauour
 And clepe hur modere for 3oure gentilnesse
 And auctours shal I fynde as I gesse 1212
 Now þere 3e seyn þat I am foule *and* olde [leaf 146]
 Than drede 3ou not to bene a kokewold
 ffor filþe and helde¹ also mote I thes [1 at first helþe]
 Bene grete wardeyns vpon chastite 1216
 But napeles siþ I knowe 3oure delite
 I shal fulfille 3oure worldly appetite
 Chese nowe quod she oon of þise þingges twey
 To han me foule *and* olde til þat I dye 1220
 And be to 3ou a trewe humble wiff
 And neuere 3ou displese in al my lif
 Or ellis 3e wil haue me 3onge *and* faire
 And take 3oure auenture of þe repaire 1224
 That shal come to 3oure hous bycause of me
 Or in some opere place wel may be
 Nowe chese 3oure seluen wheþer 3ou likeþ
 This knyght avised him and sor sikeþ 1228
 But at þe last he seide in þis manere
 My lady. *and* my loue. *and* wif so dere
 I putte me in 3oure wise gouernaunce
 Geueþ 3oure self which may be most plesaunce 1232
 And most honour to 3ou *and* me also
 I do no force þe wheþere of þe two
 ffor as 3ou likeþ it suffiseþ me
 Than haue I gote of 3ou þ^e maistrie quod she 1236
 Siþ I may chese and gouern as me list
 3e certes wif quod he I holde it for þe best
 Kisse me quod she we be no lenger wroþe
 ffor by my troupe I wil be to 3ou boþe 1240
 þis is to seine boþ faire and goode
 I prei to god þat I mot steruen woode
 But I to 3ou be as sadde and trewe
 As euere was wiff syþ þat þ^e world was newe 1244

And but I be to morow as fair to sene	
As eny lady Emperesse or quene	
þat is by-twene þe Est and eke þ ^e west	
doþ wiþ my liff and deþe riȝt as ȝou leaſt	1248
Caſt vp þe Curtyne loke how it is	[leaf 146, back]
And whan þe knyȝt ſawe al þis	
þat ſhe ſo faire was and ſo yonge þerto	
ffor ioie he hent her in his armes twoo	1252
His herte bathed in a bath of bliſſe	
A <i>thouſand</i> ¹ tyme a rowe hire gan he kiſſe	[MS M.]
And ſhe obeied him in euery þinge	
That myȝht done hym pleaſaunce or likinge	1256
And þus þei lyued vnto her lyues ende	
In parfiſt Ioye and Iheſus criſt vs ſende	
Husbonde . yonge . meke <i>and</i> freſſh abedde	
And grace to ouerlede hem þat we wedde	1260
And eke I prei to Iheſu ſhort her lyues	
That wil not be gouerned by her wyues	
And olde and angry nygard <i>and</i> diſpence	
God ſende hem ſone a verrey peſtilence	1264

¶ Thus endep þe tale of þe wif of bath /

And here bygyanneþ þe prologe of þe frere [on leaf 146, back]

This worpi lymitour þis noble frere ¶ þe prologe
 He made alway louring chere
 Vpon þe somnour . but for honeste 1268
 No vyleyns word as ȝit speke he
 But at þe last he seide vnto þe wif
 Dame good god ȝeue ȝou riȝt good lyf
 ȝe han touched here also mote I the
 In scole matere grete difficulte 1272
 ȝe han seide mochel þing riȝt wel I seie
 But dame here as we riden by þe weie
 Vs nedeþ not to speken but of game
 And late auctoritees a goddes name 1276
 To prechen and to scole eke of clergie
 But ȝif it like vnto þis companye
 I wil ȝou of a somnour telle a game
 Parde I may wel knowe by þi name 1280
 That of no somnour may no good be seid
 I prey þat noon of ȝou be euel apeid
 A somnour is a romere vp and down [leaf 147]
 Wiþ a mendement of fornicacioun 1284
 And is ibete at euery townes ende
 Our hoost þoo spak a . sire ȝe shuld beñ hende
 And Curteis as man of ȝour astat
 In company we wil no debate 1288
 Telleþ ȝoure tale and lat þe somnour be
 Nay quod þe somnour lat him say to me
 What so him lest . whan it commep to my lott
 Be god I shal hym quyte euery grott 1292
 I shal him telle swich a grete honour
 It is to be a flater yng lymytour
 And eke of ful mony an oþer crime
 Which nedeþ not rehersen at þis tyme 1296
 And his office I shal hym telle ywis
 Our hooste answerd pees no more of þis
 And afterward he seide vnto þe frere
 Telle forþ ȝoure tale my owen maister dere 1300
 ¶ Thus endeþ þe prologe of þe frere.

And

here begynneþ þe ffreres tale.

Whilom þer was dwelling in my contre ¶ The tale./
 An Archedeken a man of hie degre
 That boldely did execusioñ
 In punysshing of fornicacioñ 1304
 Of which craft and eke of baudry
 Of diffamacioñ and avoutrye
 Of chirche reues and of testamentes
 Of contractes and of lak of sacramentes 1308
 Of vsure and symonye also
 But certes lecchours did he grettest woo
 þei shulden syngen if þei were hent
 And Smale Tythers weren foule shent 1312
 If eny person wold vpon hem pleyne
 þer myȝt astert him no pecunyal peyne
 ffor smale tythes and eke smale offrings
 He made þe puple spitously to singe 1316
 ffor er the bisshope kauȝt hem wiþ his hoke [leaf 147, back]
 þei weren in þe Archedekens boke
 And þan had he þorowe his Iurisdiction
 Pouer to don on hem correccioñ 1320
 he had a somnour redy to his hand
 A sclyer boye was non in engelond
 ffor sotilly he had his especiale
 That tauȝt hym where þat hym myȝt auale 1324
 He coude spare of lecchours on or twoo
 To techen hym to *four and twenty*¹ moo [1 MS xxiij]
 ffor þouȝe this somnour wode were as an hare
 To telle his harlotry I wil not spare 1328

PETWORTH 309 (6-T. 372)

ffor we bene out of her corrección
 þei han of vs non Iurisdiction
 Ne neuere shullen teerme of al her lyues
 Peter' so bene þe wommen of þe stewes 1332
 Quod this somnour yput out of our cure
 Pees wip meschaunce *and* wip misauenture
 Thus seide our hoost *and* lat hym telle his tale
 Now telleþ forþ and lat þe somnour gale 1336
 Ne spareth nouȝt myn owne Maister' dere
 This fals þeef þis somnour quod þe frere
 Had alway baudes redy to his honde
 As eny hauke to lure in Engelonde 1340
 That telle him al þe secre þat thei knewe
 ffor hure a-queyntance was nat come of newe
 þei weren his aprouers prively
 He toke hym silf a grete prophete þerby 1344
 His maistere knewe not al way what he wan
 wip-uten maundement of a lewde man
 He coude sommon vpeyn of cristes curs
 And þei were inly glad to fille his purs 1348
 And made hym grete festes atte nale
 And riȝt as Iudas had purses *swale*
 And was a þeef riȝt such a þeef was he
 His maister' had but half his dwete 1352
 He was ȝif I shal ȝeuene hym his laude
 A theef and eke a somnour *and* a bawde
 He had eke wenches of his retenue
 That whedere þat sir Roberde or sir hwe 1356
 Or Iohn or rauf or who þat it were
 þat lay by hem þei tolde it in his eere
 Thus was þe wenche and he of on assent
 And he wolde focche a feyned maundement 1360
 And somne hem to þe chapitre boþ twoo
 And pille þe man and lat þe wenche goo
 Than wold he sei frend I shal for þi sake
 To strike þe out of oure letters blake 1364

GROUP D. § 4. FRIAR'S TALE. Petworth MS.

þe ther no more as in þis caas travaile
 I am þi frende þer I þe may availe
 Certeyn he knewe of bribers moo
 þan possible is to telle þou vnto to/ 1368
 ffor in þis world is no dogge for no bowe
 þat knoweþ and hert' deer'. from an olde bete kowe
 þan þat þis somnour knewe a sly lecchour
 Or auouter' or ellis a paramour' 1372
 And for þat was þe fruyte of al þe rent'
 Therefore on hit he sette al his entent'
 And so byfelle þat ones on a day
 This somnour euer wayting' on his pray 1376
 Rode forto somne an old wif a ribibe
 ffeynynge a cause for he wold haue a bribe
 And happed þat he sawe to-fore hym ride
 A gey zeman vnder a forest side 1380
 A bowe he bare and Arowes bryt' and kene
 He had vpon a courtesie of grene
 An hatte vpon his hede wip stringges blake
 Sire quod þis somnour. haile and wel ytake 1384
 welcome quod he and enery good felawe
 whider' ridest þowe vnder þis grene wood shawe
 Seide þis zeman wilt thou fer to-day
 This somnour hym answerd and seide nay 1388
 Here fast by quod he is myne entent' [leaf 146, back]
 To riden for to reisen vp a rent'
 It longeþ to my lordes dewte
 Art þou þan a baillif. 3e quod he 1392
 He durste not for verrey filþe and shame
 Say þat he was a somnour for þe name
 Depar-dieux quod þis zeman dere broþer'
 þou art a baillif and I am anoper' 1396
 I am vnknowen as in þis contre
 Of þine aqueyntance I wil prey þe
 And eke of breþerhede if þat þou lest'
 I haue gold and siluer in my chest' 1400

GROUP D. § 4. FRIAR'S TALE. Petworth MS.

3if þat þe happed come into our shire
 Al shal be þine riȝt as þou woldst desire
 Graunte mercy quod þis somnour by my feiþe
 Euerech in opeser honde his troupe leiþe 1404
 ffor to be swore breþeren to þei dye
 And wiþ þat word þei ride forþ her wey
 This somnour wiþ þat was as ful of langles
 As ful of venyme beñ þise waryangles 1408
 And euer enquiring vpon euery þinge
 Broþer quod he wher is ȝour dwellinge
 Anoper day if I shuldȝ ȝou seche
 þis ȝeman him answerd in softe spech 1412
 Broþer quod he ferre in þe north contre
 Wher as I hope somtyme I shal þe See
 Or we departe I shal þe so wel wisse
 þat of myn hous shaltȝ þou neuere mysse 1416
 Now broþere quod þis somnour I ȝou pray
 Teche me while we riden by þe weye
 Siþ þat ȝe bene a balif as am I
 Somme subtilite telle me feiþfully 1420
 In myn office howe þat I may most wynne
 And spareȝ not for conscience ne synne
 But as my broþere telle me howe doo ȝe.
 Nowe by my treuþe broþere dere seide he 1424
 As I shal tellen þe a feiþful tale [leaf 140]
 My wages be ful streit and smale
 My lorde is hardȝ to me and daungerous
 Andȝ myn office ful laborous 1428
 And perfore by extorcions y lyue
 ffor soþ I [take] al þat men wil me ȝeue
 Algate by scleyght or violence
 ffrom ȝeer to ȝeer I wynne al my dispence 1432
 I can no better tellen feiþfully
 Now certes quod þis somnour so fare I
 I spare not to take god it wote
 Butȝ ȝif it be to hevy or to hote 1436

What I may gete in counseile prively
 No maner conscience of þat haue I
 Ner myn extorcion I myȝt not lyuen
 Of suche lapes nyl I not be shryuen 1440
 Stomake . ne for conscience ne knowe I noȝ
 I schrewe þise shrift faders euerechoȝ
 Wel ben we mette by god and by seint Iame
 But leue broþer telle me þan þi name 1444
 Quop þis somnour in þis mene while
 þis ȝeman gan a litel forto smyle
 Broþer quod he wiltow þat I þe telle
 I am a feende my dwellyng is in helle 1448
 And here I ride aboute my purchasing
 To wete where men wollen ȝeue me eny þing
 My purchace is to fette of all my rent
 Loke how þou ridest for þe same entent 1452
 To wynne good þou recchest not howe
 Riȝt so fare I for ride wold I nowe
 Vnto þe worldes eende for a preye .
 A quod þis somnour benedicite what ȝe seie 1456
 I wende ȝe were a ȝeman trewly
 ȝe han a mannes shappe as wel as I
 Han ȝe a figure þan determynate
 In helle þer ȝe bene in ȝour estate 1460
 Nay certeynly quop he þere haue we noon [leaf 149, back]
 But whan vs likeþ we can take vs oon
 Or ellis make ȝou seme we bene shape
 Somtyme a man or like an ape 1464
 Or like an aungel can I ride or goo
 It is no wonder þing þouȝe it be so
 A lousy fogelour can desceyue þe
 And parde ȝit can I more craft þan he 1468
 Why quop þis somnour ride ȝe þan or goȝ
 In sondry shappe and not alway in oon
 for we quod he wil vs in such forme make
 As most able is our praies forto take 1472

What makeþ þou to han al þis labour
 fful mony a cause leue sir' somnour
 Seide þis feende but al þing' hap tyme
 The day is short' and it is passed prime 1476
 And ȝit ne wanne I no þinge in þis day
 I wil entende to wynnyng' ȝif I may
 And nat' entende our wittes to declare
 ffor broþer myne þi witte is alto bare 1480
 To vnderstonde þouȝe I tolde hem þe
 But for þowe askest' whi labouren we
 ffor somtyme be we goddes instrumentes
 And menes to do his comaundementes 1484
 Whan þat' him list' vpon his creatures
 In dyuers actes and in dyuers figures
 With-uten hym we han no myȝt' certeyn
 ȝif þat' him list' to stonden þer aȝein 1488
 And some tyme at' our' pray han we leue
 Only þe body and nat' þe soule greue
 Witnesse on Iob whom þat' we diden woo
 And somtyme han we myȝt' of boþ[e] two 1492
 þis is to seyn of soule and body eke
 And somtyme we bene suffered forto seke
 Vpon a man and do his soule vnrest'
 And nat' his body and al is for þe best' 1496
 Whan he withstondeþ our temptacion [leaf 150r]
 It is a cause of [his] saluacion
 Al be it' þat' it' was not' our entent'
 He shulde be sauf but' þat' we wold' hym hent' 1500
 And somtyme be we seruauantes vnto man
 As þe erchbisshope seint' dunstan
 And to þe appostels seruauante was I
 ȝit' telleþ me quod þe somnour feiþfully 1504
 Make ȝe þou newe bodies þus alway
 Of elementz þe feende answerd' nay
 Somme tyme we feyne and somtyme we arise
 Wiþ dede bodies in ful sondry wise 1508

GROUP D. § 4. FRIAR'S TALE. Petworth MS.

And speke as resonably and faire weht
 As to þe Phitonessa . did samueht
 And ȝit wil somme men say it was not he
 I doo no fors of ȝoure dyvynite 1512
 But oon þing warne I þe I wil not lape
 Thow wilt algates witte howe we be shape
 þou shalt here afterward my broþer dere
 Come þer þe nedep nat of me to lere 1516
 ffor þou shalt be þine owne experience
 Come into þe Chaiere rede þis sentence
 Bette þan virgil while he was a lyue
 Or Dante also now lat vs ride blyue 1520
 ffor I wil hold company wiþ þe
 Til it be so þat þou forsake me
 Nay quod þis somnour þat shal not betide
 I am a ȝeman knowe is ful wide 1524
 Mi troupe wil I holde to þe as in þis cas
 ffor þei þou were þe deuel Sathanas
 My troupe wil I holde to my broþer
 As I am sworn and eche of vs to oþer 1528
 ffor to be trewe broþer in þis caas
 And broþer we goon to our purchas
 Take þou þi parte what men wil þe ȝeue
 And I shal myne þus may we boþ[e] lyue 1532
 And ȝif þat eny of vs haue more þan oþere [leaf 150, back]
 Lat him be trewe and part it with his broþer
 I graunte quod þe deuel be my fay
 And wiþ þat word þei ryden forth her way 1536
 And riȝt at þe enteringe of þe townes ende
 To which þe sompnour shope hym for to wende
 þei sey a cart þat charged was wiþ hay
 Which þat a carter droof forþ on his way 1540
 Depe was þe way for which þe carte stooode
 This Carter smote and stroof as he were woode
 Haite broke haite scotte what spare we for þe stonys
 þe feande quod he ȝou fecche boþ body and bcny 1544

As ferforþly as euere were ȝe foled/
 So moche woo as I haue for ȝou tholed
 þe deuēl haue aȝ þoþ hors and carte *and* hay
 þouȝt this somnour here shul we haue a play 1548
 And nere þe feende he drouȝe as nauȝt ne were
 fful priueyly and rouned in his eere
 Harken my broþer herken be þi feiþ
 Herestow nat howe þe carter seiþ 1552
 Hent it anon for he haþ ȝeuen þe
 Boþ hey and carte and eke his caples þre
 Nay quod þe deuēl god wote neuer a dele
 It is not his entent trust me wele 1556
 Aske hym þi silf ȝif þou not trestest me
 Or ellis stint a while and þou shalt Se
 This Carter thakked his hors on þe croupe
 And þei bygonne to drowe and to stoupe 1560
 Haite nowe quod he þat Ihesu crist ȝou blisse
 And al his hond werk boþ more and lesse
 That was wel twite myn owne lyarde boy
 I prey god saue þe and seint loye 1564
 Now is my carte out of þe sclough parde
 lo broþer quod þe feend. *and* what told I þe
 Here may ȝe se myne owne dere broþere
 þe Carle spak oo þinge but he þouȝt anoper 1568
 lat vs go forþ abouten our viage [leaf 151]
 Here wyne I no þinge vpon cariage
 Whan þat þei commen somewhat out of þ^e toun
 This somnour to his broþer gan to roun 1572
 Broþer quod he here wonneþ an olde rebeke
 þat had almost as leef to lese her nekke
 As forto ȝeue a peny of hire good
 I wil haue xij. pans þouȝe þat she be wode 1576
 Or I wil somne hure to our office
 And ȝit good woote of hure knowe I no vice
 But for þou canst nat as in pis contree
 Wynne þi cost take here ensample of me 1580

This somnour knockeþ at þe wydous gate
 Come out he seide þou olde viritate
 I trowe þou hast somme frere or preest with þe
 Who clappeth þer seide þis wif benedicite 1584
 God saue þou sir what is þoure swete wille
 I haue quod he to somne þe here a bille
 Vp peyne of cursinge loke þat þou be
 To-morowe by-forn our Archedeken kne 1588
 To answeare to þe courte of certeyn þingges
 Now lord quod she crist Ihesu king of kingges
 So wisly helpe me as I ne may
 I haue be sik and þat ful mony a day 1592
 I may not goo so ferre quod she ne ride
 But I be dede so prickeþ it in my side
 May I not axe a libeþ Sir somnour
 And answeare þere by my procuratour 1596
 To suche a þinge as men wolden opposen me
 3is quop this somnour pay anon late See
 xij penys to me and I wil þe aquite
 I shal no profit han þerby but lite 1600
 My maister hap þe prophete and nat I
 Come and lat me riden hastely
 3eue me .xij pans I may no lenger tarye
 xij. quod she lady seinte Marye 1604
 So wisly helpe [me] out of care and synne [leaf 151, back]
 þis wide world þouze I shuld it wyne
 Ne haue I not xij pens wip-in my holde
 3e knowe wel þat I am poor and olde 1608
 Kithe þoure almesse on me poor wrecche
 nay þan quop he þe foule fende me fecche
 3if I þe excuse þouze þou shulde be spilt
 Allas quod she god wote I haue no gilt 1612
 Pay me quod he or by the swete Anne
 As I wil bere away þi newe panne
 ffor dette which þou owest me of olde
 Whan þat þou made þine husbond kukwold 1616

I paide at home for þi correction
 þou lixe quod she be my saluacion
 Ne was I neuere or nowe widowe ne wiff
 Somned vnto þoure courte in al my liff 1620
 Ne neuere I nas but of my body trewe
 Vnto þe deuel blake & rowe of hwe
 ȝeue I þi body and my panne also
 And whan þe deuel herd her curse soo / 1624
 Vpon her knees he seide in þis manere
 Now mabely myñ owne modere dere
 Is þis ȝou[r] with in earnest þat ȝe seye
 þe deuel quod she fette hym er he deye 1628
 And pan and al but he wil hym repent
 Nay olde stott þat is not myn entent
 Quod þis somnour for to repente me
 for eny þing þat I haue had of þe 1632
 I wold I had þi smokke and euery cloþe
 Nowe broþer quod þe deuel be not wroth
 þi body and þis panne is myñ by riȝt
 þou shalt wiþ me to helle ȝit to-nyȝt 1636
 Where þou shalt knowe of our priueta
 More þan a maister of diuinite
 And wiþ þat word þis foule fende hym hent
 Body and soule he with þe deuel went 1640
 Wher þat somnours han her heritage [leaf 153]
 And god þat made after his ymage
 Man-kinde saue and gyde vs al and some
 And lene þis somnour good man to bycome 1644
 Lordingges I coupe han told ȝou quod þis frere
 Had I had leisere for þis somnour here
 Aftere þe text . crist . paule and Ioñ
 And of oure opere doctours mony on 1648
 Which peynes þat ȝour hertes myȝt agrise
 Al be it so no tunge may deuise
 þouȝe þat I myȝt a .Ml. wynter telle
 þe peynes of þilk cursed hous of helle 1652

GROUP D. § 4. FRIAR'S TALE. Petworth MS.

But forto kepe vs from þat cursed place
 Wakeþ and preieth Ihesu for his grace
 So kepe vs fro þe temptour sathanas
 Herkenþ þis word beþ ware as in þis cas 1656
 þe lyon sitte in his awaite alway
 To sclee þe Innocent 3if þat he may.
 Disposeþ ay 3oure hertes to wiþstond
 þe fende þat 3ou wold make þral and bond 1660
 He may not tempten 3ou ouer 3our myzt
 for crist wil be 3oure champion and knyzt
 And preieþ þat þis somnour hym repent
 Of his mysdede er þat þe fende hym hent 1664

¶ Thus endep þe frere his tale.

¶ And here bygynneþ þe prologe of þe somnour [on 152]

T his somnour in his stirop hiȝe stode	¶ þe prologe	
Vpon þis frere his herte was so wode		
þat like an aspen leef he quoke for Ire		
Lordingges quod he but oo þinge I desire		1668
I ȝou biseche þat of ȝour curtesie		
Sipens ȝe han herde this fals frere lye		
As suffre me I may a tale telle		
þis frere boosteth þat he knoweþ helle		1672
And god woote it is lital wondere		
ffreres and feendes bene but lite asonre		
ffor parde ȝe han oft tyme herd telle	[leaf 152, back]	
How þat a frere rauysshed was in helle		1676
In spirit ones by A visioun		
And as an aungel lad him vp & down		
To shewen him the peynes þat þer were		
In aȝ þe place segh he not a frere		1680
Of oþer folk he segh ynow in woo		
Vnto þis aungel speke þe frere þoo		
Nowe sirs quod he han freres suche grace		
þat noon of hem shal come to þis place		1684
ȝis quop þis aungel mony a mylioun		
And vnto Sathanas he lad hym down		
And now haþ sathanas seiþ he a tale		
Bradder þan of þe Carike is a saile		1688
hold vp þi taile þou sathanas quod he		
Showe forþ þine ers and lat þe frere see		
Wher is þe nest of freres in þis place		
And er þan half a forlonge wey of space		1692

GROUP D. § 5. FRIAR-SUMMONER LINK. Petworth MS.

Ryȝt as been swermen out of an hyve
 Out of þe deuels ers þei gon drive
 xxⁱⁱ. thousand freres on a route
 And þought helle swarme al aboute 1696
 And comen aȝein as fast as þei mowe goȝ
 And in his ers þei crepten euerechoȝ
 He clapte his taile aȝein and lay stille
 This frere whan he loked had his fille 1700
 Vpon þise turmentz of þis sory place
 His spiret god restored of his grace
 Vnto his body aȝein and he awoke
 But napeles for fere ȝit he quoke 1704
 So was þe deueles ers ay in his mynde
 which is his heritage of verrey kinde
 God saue you alle saue þis cursed frere
 My prologe wil I ende in þis manere 1708

¶ Thus endep þe prologe of þe somnour

And here bygynneþ þe somnour tale

L Ordyngges þer/ is in york-shire as I gesse [leaf 156]
 A mershy contray called holdernesse
 In which þere went a lymytour aboute
 To preche and eke to begge it is no doute 1712
 And so byfelle þat on a day þis frere
 Had preched atte chirch in þis manere
 And specially abouen euery þinge
 Excited he þe puple in his prechinge 1716
 To trentales and [to 3eue] for goddis sake
 Therwiþ men myȝte holy howses make
 Ther as dyuyne seruyse is honoured
 Nouȝt þere as it is waasted and deuoured 1720
 Ne þere it nedep not forto be 3eue
 As to possessoures þat may ellis lyue
 Thonked be god in wele *and* habundaunce
 Trentales seide he delyuereþ fro penaunce 1724
 Her frendes soules as wel olde as yonge
 ȝif þat þei bene hastely ysonge
 Nouȝt forto holde a preest Ioly *and* gay
 He syngeþ not but oon masse on a day 1728
 Delyuereþ out quod he anon þe soules
 ful hard it is wiþ flessshhoke eiper with oulys
 Nul spede ȝou hastely for cristes sake 1732
 To kepe ȝou from peynes of fendes blake 1731
 And whan þe frere had seide al his entente
 With qui cum patre forþ he wente
 Whan folk in chirche had 3eue hym what hem lest
 He went his way no lenger wold he rest 1736

Wip scrippe and tipped staf tukked ful hie
 In euery hous he gan to pore and prie
 And beggē mele or chese or ellis corn
 His felawe had a staf tipped wip horn 1740
 A paire of tables of yuorie
 And a poyntel polashed fetisly
 And w[r]ote alway þe names þer he stode
 And alle folk þat ȝaue hym eny goode 1744
 Ascaunce as he wolde for hem preye [leaf 156, back]
 ȝif vs a busschel whete. malt' or reye
 A goddys kechil or a trippe of chese
 A bosschel malt' or ellis of peese 1748
 A goddys half peny or a masse penye
 Or ȝeue vs of ȝoure [bran] ȝif ye haue enye
 A dagon of ȝour blanket' leue dame
 Our suster deer loo here I write ȝour' name 1752
 Bacon or beef or such þinge as ȝe finde
 A sturdy harlot' went' alway behinde
 þat was her hoostes man and bere a sak'
 And what' men ȝaue hym leide it' on his bak' 1756
 And whan he was out' of þe door anon
 He pleyned away [þe] names euerechofi
 þat he biforn had writen in his tables
 He serued [hem] wip nyfels and wip fables 1760
 Nay þer-In þu lixt' somnour quod þe frere
 Pes quod oure hoost' for cristes modere dere
 Telle forþ þi tale and spare it' not' at all
 ffor hym ne for noon opere what so falth 1764
 So longe he went' hous by hous til he
 Come to an hous þer he was wont' to be
 Refresshed more þan in an .C. places
 Seke lay þe good man þat' of the place es / 1768
 Bedred vpon a couche lowe he lay
 Deus hic quod he. o thomas frende good day
 Seide þis frere curtesly and soft'
 Thomas god ȝeeld' ȝou wel oft 1772

Haue I vpon þis benche faren ful wele
 Here haue I eten mony a mery mele
 And from þe benche he droof away þ^e catt'
 And leide a doune his potent' *and* his hatt' 1776
 And eke his scripture and sette hym soft adoun
 His felawe was go walked in to þe toun
 fforþ wip his knaue into þat' hostelerye
 Where as he shope hym þilke nyȝt' to lye 1780
 O dere Maister quod þis sike man [leaf 154]
 How haue ȝe farn siþ þat' march bygan
 I segh ȝou nouȝt' þis fourtenyȝt' day *and* more
 God wote quod he labowred haue I ful sore 1784
 And specialy for þi saluacioñ
 Haue I seide mony a precious orison
 And for our oper frendes god hem blesse
 I haue þis day ben at ȝour chirch at messe 1788
 And seide a sermon after my symple witte
 Not al aftere þe text' of holy writte
 ffor it' is hard to ȝou as I suppose
 And perfore I wil teche ȝou al þe glose 1792
 Glosinge is glorious þing' certeyñ
 ffor letters sleþ so as we clerkes seyñ
 There haue I taught' hem to be charitable
 And spende her good þer it' is resonable 1796
 And þer I seghe our dame a where is she
 ȝondere in þe ȝerde I trowe she be
 Saide þis man and she wil come anoñ
 Ey maister' welcome be ȝe be seint' Iohñ 1800
 Seide þis wiff how fare ȝe hertely
 This frere riseþ vp wel curteisly
 And hure enbraseþ in his armes narowe
 And kisseþ hure swetely *and* chirkeþ as a sparowe 1804
 Wip his lippes. dame quod he riȝt' wel
 As he þat' is ȝour seruauante euery deñ
 Thonked be god þat' ȝou ȝaf soule *and* liff
 ȝit' sey I not' þis day so faire a wiff 1808

In al þe churche god so saue me
 3e god amende aȝ fautes sir' quod she
 Algates welcome be 3e by my fay
 Graunt' mercy dame þis haue I fonde alway 1812
 But' of 3oure grete goodnesse be 3our leue
 I wold prey 3ou þat' 3e nold' not' greue
 I wil wiþ thomas speke a litel throwe
 Thise Curatours bene ful necligent' and sclowe 1816
 To grope tenderly a conscience (leaf 154, back)
 In shrift' in preching' is my diligence
 And stody in peter wordes and poules
 I walke and fissahe cristen mennys soules 1820
 To 3eelde Ihesu his propre rent'
 To speke his wordes is al myn entent'
 Nowe by 3oure feiþ dere maister' quod she
 Chideþ him wel for seinte trinite 1824
 He is as angry as a pisse myre
 þou3e þat' he haue al þat' he can desire
 þou3e I wrie hym on nyȝt' and make hym warme
 And on hym lay my legges or myn arme 1828
 He groneþ lich oure boor þat' lieþ in þe stie
 Oþer disport' of him non haue I
 I may not' plesse him in no manere cas
 O Thomas Ieo vous dye. thomas thomas 1832
 This makeþ þe fende this wil be amended.
 Ire is a þinge þat/ hie god haþ defended
 And þerof wil I speke a word' or twoo
 Now maister quop þe wif er þat' I goo 1836
 What' wil 3e dyne I wil goo þeraboute
 Now dame quod he Ieo vous dye sanz doute
 haue I of a Capon nouȝt' but þe lyuere
 And of 3oure softe brede but' a shyuere 1840
 And aftere þat' a rosted pigges hede
 But' þat' I nolde for me no beest' were dede
 þan had I wiþ 3ou homely suffisaunce
 I am a man of litel sustynaunce 1844

GROUP D. § 6. SUMMONER'S TALE. Petworth MS.

My spirit hap [his] fostrinȝ in þe bible
 þe body is ay so redy *and* so penyble
 To wake þat my stomak is destroyed
 I prei þou dame be ȝe nouȝt anoyed 1848
 þouȝe I frendly to þou my counsail shewe
 By god I nold not telle it it but a fewe
 Nowe sire quod she but oo word er ȝe goo
 My childe is dede with-in þise wekes twoo 1852
 Sone after þat ȝe wenten out of þis toun
 [leaf 156]
 His deþ I segh by reuelacioun
 Seide þis frere at home in our dortour
 I dar wel seyñ er þat half an houre 1856
 Aftere his deþ I segh hym born to blisse
 In myn avisiõ god me so wis
 So dyd our Sexten *and* our fermerere
 þat han bene trewe freres .l. ȝere 1860
 þei may now god byþonke of his lone
 Maken hir Iuble and walken alone
 And vp I aroos and all our couent eke
 Wiþ mony a tere trilling vpon our cheke 1864
 Wiþ-oute noys of clateryng of bellys
 Te deum. was our songe *and* no þing ellys
 Sane þat to crist I seide an orison
 Thonkinge hym of my reuelaciõ 1868
 for sir and dame trestep me riȝt wel
 Our orisons bene more effectuell
 And more we seen of cristes secre þingges
 þan borel folk or þouȝe þei were kingges 1872
 We lyue in pouerte and in abstinence
 And burel folk in richesse *and* in dispence
 In mete and drink and her foule delite
 We han þis worldly lust al in dispite 1876
 ¶ Lazarus and Diues. liveden dyuersly
 And dyuers guardon had þei þerby
 Who so wil prey most fast *and* be clene
 And fat his soule and make his body lene 1880

We faren as seiþ þe apostel . cloþe <i>and</i> fode	
Suffiseþ vs þouȝe þei be not ful goode	
The clannes and þe fasting of vs freres	
Makeþ þat criste accepteþ our preieres	1884
Loo Moysees fourty daies <i>and</i> fourty nyȝt	
fast or þe hie god of myȝt	
Spak wiþ him in þe Mount synay	
Wiþ empty woombe of fasting mony a day	1888
Resceyued he þe law þat was writen/	[leaf 155, back]
wiþ goddys fyngere and hely wil ȝe witen	
In mount Oreb er he had eny speche	
Wiþ hie god þat is our saules leche	1892
he fast longe and was in contemplançe	
Aaron þat had þe temple in gouernaunce	
And eke þe oþer preestes euerechoñ	
Into þe temple whan þei shuld goñ	1896
To prey for þe puple <i>and</i> to do seruise	
þei nold drinke in no manere wise	
No drink which þat hem dronke myȝt make	
But þer in abstinence prey and wake	1900
lest þat þei didnen take hede what I saye	
But þei be sobre þat for þe puple praye	
war þat I seië no more for it suffiseþ /	
Our lorde Ihesu as holy writte deuyseþ	1904
ȝaf vs ensample of fastinge <i>and</i> preiers	
Therefore we mendenauntz we sely freres	
Be wedde to pouerte <i>and</i> contynence	
To charite humbleneße and abstinence	1908
To persecucion for riȝtwisnesse	
To wepinge misericord <i>and</i> clenness	
And þerfore may ȝe see þat our preiers	
I speke of vs we mendenauntz we freres	1912
Bene to þe hie god more acceptable	
þan ȝoures wiþ þe fest at þe table	
fior paradys first if I shal not lye	
was man outchased for his glotenye	1916

And chaast' man was in paradis certeyn
 But' harken nowe Thomas wha[t] I wil seyn
 I haue no tixte perof as I suppose
 But' I shal fynde it in a manere glose 1920
 That' specialy our lorde swete Ihesus
 Spake by freres whan he seide þus
 Blessed be þei þat' poor in spirite be
 And so forþ al þe gospel may ȝe se 1924
 Wher' it' be like our professiō
 [leaf 156]
 Or her þat' swymmen in possessiō
 ffe on her' pompe and on her glotenye
 And on her lewdenesse I ham defie 1928
 Me þenkeþ þei ben like Iouynyan
 ffatte as a whale and walking' as a swan
 Al vinolent' as þe betel in þe spence
 Her preier is of ful grete reuerence 1932
 Whan þei for soules seyn þe Psalme of davyd
 lo boþ þei seyn Cor meum eructauit
 Who foloweþ cristes gospel and his lore
 But' we þat' humyle ben and chast' and pore 1936
 Worchers of goddis word [not] auditours
 þefore riȝt' as an hawke vp at' a sours
 Vp springeþ into þe eire. so preiers
 And charitable chastite of bysy freres 1940
 Making' her soures to goddes eren too
 Thomas riȝt' so as mote I ride or goo
 And by þat' lord þat' cleped was seynt yve
 Ner þowe our broþer þou shuldest not thryve 1944
 In oure Chapitle prey we day and nyȝt
 To crist' þat' he þe sende hele and myȝt
 Thi body forto welden hastely
 God wote quop he no þing' perof fele I 1948
 As helpe crist' as I haue in fewe ȝeres
 Spended vpon mony dyuers freres
 Wel mony a pounde ȝit' fare I ne þe bette
 Certeyn my good is almost' be-sette 1952

ffare wele my good for it is almost agoo	
þe frere answerd o Thomas dost þou so	
What nedep þou diuers freres seche	
What nedep hym þat haþ a perfit leche	1956
To sechen oþer leches in þe town	
þour inconstaunce is þour confusioñ	
Holde ȝe me þan or ellis our couent	
To prey for þou ben insufficient	1960
Thomas þat lape is not worþ a myte	[leaf 156, back]
þoure Maladie is for we haue to lite	
A ȝeue þat Couent half a quarter otys	
A ȝeue þat Couent <i>four and twenti</i> ¹ grotys [MS xxiij ^o]	1964
A ȝeue þat frere a peny and lat hym goo	
Nay nay thomas it may no þing be so	
What is a ferþing parted in twelve	
Lo eche þing is counted in hym selue	1968
Is more stronge whan it is so sclatered.	
Thomas of me þou shalt not be flatered /	
þou woldest haue our labour al for nouȝt	
þe hie god þat al þis world haþ wrouȝt	1972
Seiþ þat þe werkman is worþi his hire	
Thomas nouȝt for þoure tresour I desire	
As for my silf but þat al our Couent	
To prey for þou is al our diligent	1976
And forto beelden cristes owne chirche	
Thomas if ȝe wil lerne forto wirche	
Of beeldinge vp of churches may ȝe finde	
If it be good in Thomas lif of ynde	1980
ȝe ligge here ful of anger and of yre	
wiþ which þe deuel sette þour hert on fire	
And chiden here þis holy Innocent	
þour wif þat is so meke and pacient	1984
And perfore trow me ȝif þou list	
Ne strive not wiþ þi wif as for þe best	
And bere þis word away now by þi seiþ	
Touchinge such þing lo what þe wise man seiþ	1988

GROUP D. § 6. SUMMONER'S TALE. Petworth MS.

Wip-Inne þi hous ne be þou no lyof
 To þi sogettes do þou noon oppressiō
 Ne make þou nat þine aqueyntaunce forto fle
 And ȝit Thomas eftsones charge I þe 1992
 Be ware of yre þat in þi bosom slepeþ
 ware þe for the serpent þat so schily crepeþ
 vnder þe gras and styngþ sotilly
 Be war my sone and harken paciently 1996
 That xxⁱⁱ þousand men han lost her lyues [leaf 157]
 ffor struyng with her lemmanes and her wyues
 Now siþ ȝe han so holy meke a wif
 What nedþ ȝou thomas to make strif 2000
 Ther nys iwis no serpent so cruel
 Whan men treden on his tale ne half so fell
 As a womman is whan she haþ kauȝt an Ire
 Vengeaunce is þan al þat þei desire 2004
 Ire is an synne oon þe grete of seuene
 Abhominable vnto god in heuene
 And to hym self it is distruccioñ
 Thus euery lewde vicar or parson 2008
 Can seie how Ire engendres homi[ci]de
 Ire is in soþ executour of pride
 I coude of Ire seie so mochel sorowe
 My tale shuld last vnto to-morowe 2012
 And þerfore I prei god boþ day and nyȝt
 An yrous man god sent hym litel myȝt
 It is grete harme and eke gret pite
 To sette an yrous man in hie degre 2016
 ¶ Whilom þer was an yrous potestate
 As seiþ senek þat during his estate
 Vpon a day oute riden knyȝtes twoo
 And as fortune wolde it shuld be so/ 2020
 þat oon of hem come home þat opere nouȝt
 Anon þe knyȝt byfore þe Iuge was brouȝt
 þat saide þus þou hast þi felawe sclayn
 ffor which I deme þe to deþ certeyn 2024

And to an oþer knyȝt commaunded he
 Go lede him to depe I charge þe
 And happed as þei went by þe way
 Toward þe place þer he shuldȝ day 2028
 þe knyȝt come which men wende had ben dede
 þan þouȝt þei it was þe bestȝ rede
 To lede hem boþ to þe Iuge agayn
 þei seiden lordȝ þe knyȝt nys notȝ slayn 2032
 His felawe here he stantȝ hool a lyue [leaf 187, back]
 He shal be dede quod he so motȝ I thryue
 þatȝ is to seyn boþ on two *and* þre
 And þoo to þe firstȝ knyȝt riȝtȝ þus spoke he 2036
 I dampne þe þe mostȝ algate be dede
 And þou also mostȝ nedes lese þine hede
 ffor þou artȝ cause of þi felawes depe
 And to þe *thridde*¹ knyȝte þus he seiþe ¶ MS H. J. 2040
 Thou hastȝ notȝ done þatȝ I commaunded þe
 And þus he didȝ hem aleen al þre
 ¶ Irous Cambises was eke dronkenlewe
 And ay delited him to bene a shrewe 2044
 And so byfelle a lorde and his mayne
 Thatȝ loued vertuous moralite
 Seide vpon a day bitwix hem two riȝtȝ þus
 A lorde is lostȝ if he be vicius 2048
 And dronkenesse eke is a foule recordȝ
 Of eny man and namely in a lordȝ
 þer is wel mony an yre and mony an ere
 In waytinge and he note where 2052
 ffor goddes [loue] drynkeþ more attemperaly
 Wyne makeþ a man to lesen wrecchedly
 his mynde and his lymes euerechoȝ
 þe reuerce shaltȝ þou see quod he anonȝ 2056
 And preue itȝ by þine [owne].experience
 Thatȝ wyne ne doþ to folk nonȝ such offence
 þer nys no wyne byreueþ me my myȝtȝ
 of honde ne of foote ne of myn eye sightȝ 2060

And for despite he dronke mochel more
 An .C. part þan he had doñ byfore
 And riȝt anon þis yrous cursed wreche
 lete þise knyȝtes sones to-fore hym fecche 2064
 Comaundyng hem þei shuld to-fore hym stonde
 And sodeynly he toke his bowe on honde
 And vp the strengre he pulled to his ere
 And wiþ an arowe he sclowe þ^e childe riȝt þere. 2068
 Nowe wheper haue I a siker hond or non [leaf 158]
 Quod he is al my myȝt and mynde agoñ
 Haþ wyne byreued me myn eye siȝt
 What shuld I telle answeze of þe knyȝt 2072
 His sone was sclayn þer nys no more to say
 Be ware þerfor wiþ lordes howe ȝe play
 • Syng Placebo and I shal ȝif I can
 But if it be to a poor man 2076
 To poor man shuld he his vices telle
 But not to a lord þough he shuld goo to helle
 Lo Irous Arus pilk Percian
 how he distroied þe Ryuer of gysan 2080
 ffor þat an hors of his was dreynt þer Inne
 Whan he went babilonye to wynne
 He made þat þe Ryuer was so smal
 þat as men myȝt passed ouer al 2084
 lo þat he so wel teche can
 Ne be ȝe no felawe to non yrous man
 Ne wiþ no woode man þat walkeþ by þe way
 lasse þe repent I wil no ferþere say 2088
 Now Thomas leue broþer leue þine Ire
 þou shalt me fynde as Iuste as is a squyere
 Hold not þe deuels knyf ay in þine herte
 Thyne anger doþ þe al to sore smerte 2092
 But shewe it me al þi confession
 Nay quod þe sik man by seint Symeon
 I haue be shrive þis day at my curate
 I haue tolde hym alholy myne astate 2096

It nedep no more to speke of it seid he
 But if me list of myne humilite
 3eue me þan of 3oure gold to make our cloister
 Quod he for mony a muscle and mony an oyster 2100
 Whan oper men han bene ful wel at ese
 Hap bene our fode our cloister forto rese
 And god wote vnneþ þe foundement
 Perfourmed is and of our payvement 2104
 Is nouȝt a tyle wip-Inne our wonys [leaf 158, back]
 By god we owen xl pounde for stonys
 Now helpe Thomas for hym þat harowed helle
 ffor ellis mote we our bokes selle 2108
 And ȝif ȝou lakke our predicacioñ
 Than goþ þis world al to distruccioñ
 ffor who so wold from þis world vs byreue
 So god me saue thomas by ȝoure leue 2112
 He wolde byreue out of þe world þe sonne
 ffor who can techen and worchen as we konne
 And þat is nouȝt of litel tyme quod he
 But siþ Elie was or Elise 2116
 Han freres be þat fynde I of record
 In charite þon-kidde be our lord
 Now thomas [helpe vs] for seint charite
 Hauē done anōn he sette hym on his kne 2120
 This sik man wex nye woode for Ire
 He wolde þat þe frere had be a fire
 Wip his fals dissimulacioñ
 Such þing as is in my possession 2124
 Quop he þat may I ȝeue and non opere
 ȝe sein me thus hou þat I am ȝour broþere
 ȝe certes quop þis frere trustep wel
 I toke our dame þe letter of our seel 2128
 Nowe quop he wel and somewhat shal I ȝeue
 Vnto ȝoure holy Couent while I lyve
 And in þine honde þou shalt it haue anōn
 Vp þis condicioñ and oper noñ 2132

GROUP D. § 6. SUMMONER'S TALE. Petworth MS.

That þou departe it so my dere broþer
 þat euery frere haue as moch as oþer
 This shalt þou swere on þi profession
 Wip-uten fraude or cauellacion 2136
 I swere it quod þe frere by my faip
 And þerwipal his honde in his he laip
 lo here my feip in me shal be no lak
 Now þan put þine honde down by my bak 2140
 Seide þis man and grope wel behinde [leaf 159]
 Byneþ my buttoke þer þou shalt fynde
 A þinge þat I haue hidde in priuete
 A þouȝt þe frere þat shal go wip me 2144
 A-doune his honde he launseþ to þe clift
 I hope for to fynde þer a ȝift
 And whan þis sik man felt þis frere
 About his trwel grope her *and* þere 2148
 A myddes his honde he lete þe frere a fart
 þer nys no capel drawing in a cart
 þat myȝt han lete a fart of such a soun
 þe frere vp stert as doþ a [wood] lyoun 2152
 A fals cherle quod þe frere for goddis bonys
 This despite þou hast done for þe nonys
 þowe shal aby þis fart if I may
 His mayne þat harde þis affray 2156
 Come lepinge Inne *and* chased out þe frere
 And forþe he goþ *with* a ful angry chere
¹He ne had nat ellis for his sermoñ [*2159]
 To parten amonge his breþeren whan he come home [*2160]
 And þus is þis tale ydoñ } 2294
 for we were almost at þe toñ }

¶ Thus endeþ þe somnours tale.

[¹ *Spurious ending in the Petworth MS. For the genuine ending of the Tale, see the Appendix.*]

GROUP E. FRAGMENT VI.

§ 1. THE CLERK'S HEAD-LINK.

PETWORTH MS.

Ande here

bygynneþ þe prologe of þ^e clerk' of Oxenford [on leaf 150]

Sir Clerk' of Oxenford our' oost' saide ¶ The prologe: /

þe ride as stille as Coy as doþ a maide

Were newe spoused sitting' at þe borde

This day ne herd I of þoure mouþ a word' 4

I trowe þat þe stodye about' som sophyme

But' Salomon seiþ al þinge haþ tyme

ffor goddes sake beþ of better' chere

It' is no tyme nowe to stody here 8

Telle vs some mery tale by þour' fay

ffor what' man is entred into a play

he nedes mote into þat' play assent'

But' pr[e]cheþ not' as freres doñ in lent' 12

To make vs for our' olde synnes to wepe [leaf 150, back]

Ne þat' þi tale ne make vs not' to sclepe

Telle vs somme mery þing' of auentures

þoure termes. þoure colours *and* figures 16

kepe hem in store til þe hem endite

hiþe stele as whan men to kyngges write

Spekeþ so pleyn at' þis tyme I þou prey

That' we may vnder-sonde what' þe sey 20

This worþi clerk' benygneþ answered

Hoost' quod he I am vndere þour' 3eerde

þe han as nowe of vs þe gouernaunce

And þerfor wil I do þou obeysaunce 24

PETWORTH 835 (6-T. 408)

GROUP E. § 1. CLERK'S HEAD-LINK. Petworth MS.

As fer as reson askep hardely
 I wil þou tel a tale which þat I
 lerned at Padowe of a worþi clerke
 As preued by his wordys and his werk 28
 He is nowe dede and nailed in his chest
 I prei to god so send his soule good rest
 ffraunceys Petrak þe laureol poete
 Hight/ þis clerke whoos retorike swete 32
 Enlumyneþ al Itaile þorgh poetrie
 As lynyan did of Philosophye
 Or lawe or oþer art particulere
 But deþe þat nyl suffre no þing here 36
 But as it were a twynkelinge of an ye
 Boþ hap he slayn and al shal we dye.
 But forto tellen of þis worþi man
 þat tauȝt me þis tale as I first bygan 40
 I sey þat he first wip hyȝh steel enditeþ
 Or he þe body of his tale writeþ
 A procheyn in þe which disseuereþ he
 þe Mounde and of Saluse þe contree 44
 And spekeþ of Appenyn þe hilles hye
 þat ben þe bondes of west lombardye
 And of Mount Resulus in special
 Wher as þe Poo out of a welle smal 48
 Takeþ his furst spryngginge *and* his sours [leaf 160]
 Wher as he holt euen streijt way his cours
 To Emel ward to ferrare *and* to venyse
 The which a longe þinge were to devise 52
 And trewely as to my Iugement
 Mee thenkeþ it a þing unpertinent
 Saue he wil conuey his matere
 But þis is þe tale which þat ȝe shal here 56
 ¶ Thus endeþe þe prologe of þis tale

And here bygynneþ þe clerk his tale

[on leaf 100]

Ther is at þe west side of ytaille
Doune at þe rote of vesulus þe cold

¶ The tale :/

A lusty pleyne abundant of vitaille
wher mony a toune & tour¹ þou maist bihold
þat founded were in tyme of elders olde
And mony anoper delectable sizt
And saluce þis noble cuntre hiȝt

[1 & tour interlined by perhaps a later hand]

63

A Marquis whilom [lord] was in þat lond

64

As were his worpi elders hym bfore

And Obeisaunt and redy to his hond

Were alle his leeges boþ lasse and more

67

þus in delite he lyued and hap do ȝore

Be-loued and drad þourgh fauour of fortune

Boþ of his lordys and of his comune

70

Therwiþ he was as to speke of lynage

71

The gentlest y-born of al lumbarly

A faire persone . stronge and ȝenge of age

And ful of honure and curteisie

74

Discrete ynouȝe his cuntrey forto gye

Saue in some þingges he was to blame

And Water was þis yonge lordes name

77

I blame him þus þat he considered nouȝt

78

In tyme commynge what myȝt betide

But on his lust present was al his þouȝt

[leaf 100, back]

And forto hauke and hunte on euery side

81

Wel nye al oper cures lete he slide

And eke he ne wold þat was worst of all

Wedde no wif for ouȝt þat myȝt byfalle

84

GROUP E. § 2. CLERK'S TALE. Petworth MS.

Only þat pointe his puple bere so sore 85
 þat flok-mele on a day þei [to him] went
 And oon of hem þat wisest was of lore
 Or ellis þat þe lorde wold best assent 88
 þat he shulde telle hym what his puple ment
 Or ellis coude he wel shewe such matere
 He to þe Marquis seide as ȝe mowe here 91

(6)

O Noble Marquis ȝoure humanitee 92
 Assureþ vs *and* ȝeueþ vs hardynesse
 As ofte tyme as it is necessite
 That we ȝou mow telle our heuynesse 95
 Accepteþ lord of ȝour gentilnesse
 þat we to ȝowe wiþ pitous hert compleyne
 And lat ȝoure eeres not my vois disdeyne 98

(7)

Al haue I nouȝt to done in þis matere 99
 More þan anoper hap in þis place
 ȝit for as moche as ȝe my lord so dere
 Haue alway shewed [me] fauour *and* grace 102
 I dare þe better aske of ȝou a space
 Of audience to shewen our request
 And ȝe my lord to done riȝt as ȝou lest 105

(8)

For certes lord so wel vs likeþ ȝou 106
 And alle ȝoure werkes *and* euer han do þat we
 Ne cowde nat our owne silf devisen howe
 We myȝt more lyve in felicite 109
 Saue oo þinge lord if it ȝour wille be
 That to be a wedded man if ȝou list
 Than were our puple in souereyn hertes rest [Conf 161] 112

(9)

Boweþ ȝoure nek vndere þat blisful ȝok 113
 Of souereynte nouȝt of *seruise*
 Which men clepe spousale or wedlok
 And þenkeþ lord among ȝoure þouȝtes wise 116

That of wedloke commeþ grete emprise
 ffor þouȝe we slepe or wake ronne or ride
 Ay fleep þe tyme it wil no man abide. 119

(10)

And þouȝe ȝour grene ȝouþe growe as ȝit 120
 In crepeþ age alway as stille as stone
 And deþe manaseþ euery age and smyt
 In eche astate for þer ascapeþ noon 123
 And also certeyn as we knowe euerichon
 þat we shul dye as vncerteyn we aȝ
 Ben of þat day þat deþ shal on vs falle 126

(11)

Accepteth þan of vs þe trewe entent 127
 That neuere ȝit refused your heest
 And we wil al lord ȝif ȝe wil assent
 Chese ȝou a wif in short tyme at the lest 130
 Born of þe gentelest and of þe mest
 Of al þis londe so þat it out seme
 Honure to god and ȝou. so as we con deme 133

(12)

Delyuere vs of al þis bysy drede 134
 And take a wif for hiȝe goddis sake
 ffor ȝif it byfelle so as god forbede
 þat þourȝ deþ ȝour lynage shuld sclake 137
 And a straunge lynage shuld take
 ȝour heritage. oo woo were vs alyue
 Wherfore we prey ȝou hastely to wif 140

(13)

Her make preier & her pitous chere 141
 Made þ Marquis haue such pite
 Wil ȝe quod he myne owne puple dere [leaf 161, back]
 To þat I neuer erst þouȝt constreyne me 144
 I me reioyse not of my liberte
 þat seelden tyme is found in mariage
 Ther I was free I mot bene in seruage 147

GROUP E. § 2. CLERK'S TALE. Petworth MS.

But napeles I se 3oure trewe entent	148
And trust vpon 3ou and haue doñ ay	
Wherefore of my fre wille I assent	
To wedde me as sone as euer I may	151
But þer as 3e han profered me to day	
To chese me a wif I 3ou relese	
That chois ! & prei 3ou of 3our propher cese	154
(15)	
For god it wote þat children oft beñ	155
Vnlike her worpi eldres hem bifore	
Bounte commeþ al of god not of þ ^e strenge	
Of which þei ben engendred and ybore	158
I Trust in goddys bounte and þerfore	
My mariage and my astate and rest	
I hym bitake he may do as hym lest	161
(16)	
Lat me allone in chesing of my wiff	162
That charge vpon my bak I wil endure	
But I 3ou prey and charge vpon 3our lif	
þat wif þat I take 3e me ensure	165
To worship hur whil our lyf endure	
In worde and werke boþ here and ellys where	
As she an emperours douȝter were	168
(17)	
And ferþermore þis shullen 3e swere þat 3e	169
Aȝeinst my chose shul neiþer grucche ne stryue	
ffor siþ I shal forgo my liberte	
At 3oure request as euer mot I thryue	172
Ther as myn hert is sette þer wil I wyue	
And but 3e wollen assent in such manere	
I prey 3ou spekeþ no more of þis matere	[leat 102] 175
(18)	
Wiþ harty wille þei sweren and assenten	176
To al þis þinge þer seide no wiȝt nay	
Bisechinge hym of grace er þei wenten	
That he hem wold graunten a certeyn day	179

GROUP E. § 2. CLERK'S TALE. *Petworth MS.*

Of his spousale as sone as euer he may ffor ȝit' alway þe puple somewhat dredde Lesse þis Marquis wol no wif wedde	182
He <i>graunted</i> hem a day such as hym lest' On which he wolde be wedded sikerly And seide he did al þis at' her request' And þei wiþ humble entent' ful buxomly Knelinge vpon her knees ful reuerently Hym þonken alle and þus þei han an ende Of her entent' and home aȝein þei wende	183 186 189
And here vpon he toke his officers Commaundinge for þe fest' to purueye And to his priuey knyȝtes and sqwiers Such charge ȝaf hem . as hym lust' on hem to leye And þei his comaundementz to obeye And ech of hem dop his diligence To done vnto þe fest reuerence	190 193 196

[PART THE SECOND.]

N ouȝt' fer from pilk' place honorable wher as þis Marquis shope his mariage þer stode a Thrope of siȝt' delectable In which poor folk' of þat' vilage Hadden her beestes and her harbigage And of her labour toke her sustinaunce After þe erþe hem ȝaue abundaunce	197 200 203
Among' þise poor folk þer dwelled a man which þat' was holden poreȝt' of hem all But' heȝh god somtyme sende can His grace vnto a litel oxes staȝh Ianicula men of þat' thrope hym calle A doughter' had he faire and ȝonge' of siȝt' And Grisild' þis ȝonge maiden hiȝt'	204 [leaf 162, back] 207 210

GROUP E. § 2. CLERK'S TALE. Petworth MS.

But forto speke of vertuous bewte	211
þan was she oon þe fairest vnder sonne	
fful poorly yfostred was she	
No licorousnesse was on her lust yronne	214
Wel offer of þe well þan of þe tunne	
She drank' / <i>and</i> for she wole vertue plesse	
She knewe wel labour but' noñ ydel ese	217
(24)	
But þouȝe þis maide were tender' of age	218
ȝit in þe brest' of her virginite	
þere was enclosed ripe <i>and</i> sad corage	
And in grete reuerence <i>and</i> in grete charite	221
Her olde poor fadere fostred shee	
A fewe shepe spynnyng' on þe felde she kept'	
She wolde not' ben ydel til she sclepte	224
(25)	
And whan she homward' come she wolde bringe	225
wortes and herbes tymes ful oft'	
which she shradde <i>and</i> siþ for her lyuyng'	
And made her bedde ful hard' <i>and</i> no þing' soft	228
And euere she kept' her faders lif on loft	
wiþ euery obeisaunce <i>and</i> diligence	
That' childe may do to faders reuerence	231
(26)	
Vpon Grisilde þe poor creature	232
fful oft' hap Marquis sette hys eye	
As he on hundyng'e rode perauenture	
And whan it' felle þat' he myȝt' hir espye	235
he not' wiþ wa[n]toñ lokinge of foly	
his eyen cast' vpon hur' but' in sad wise	
Vpon her chere he wold' hym oft' avise	[leaf 163] 238
(27)	
Commending' in his hert' her wommanhede	239
And eke her vertue passing' eny wiȝt'	
Of so ȝonge age as wel in chere as in dede	
ffor þouȝe þe puple haue no gret' insizt'	242

In vertue he considered ful riȝt
 Her bewte and disposed þat he wold
 Hir wedde if euer he wedde shuld 245

(28)

The day of weddyng come but no wiȝt can 246
 Telle what womman it shuld be
 ffor which mervaille wondred mony man
 And seiden whan þei weren in priuete 249
 wil not our lorde leue his vanyte
 wil he not wedde alas alas þe while
 whi wil he hym self and vs þus begile 252

(29)

But na-þe-lees þis marquis hap do make 253
 Of Gemmes sette in gold and in asure
 Broches and ryngges for grisild sake
 And of her cloþyng toke he þe mesure 256
 Of a maide like to her stature
 And eke of oþer ornamentes aȝ
 þat to such a wedding shul faȝ 259

(30)

The tyme of vndern þe same day 260
 Approcheþ þat þis wedding shulde be
 And all þe paleys putt was in aray
 Both halle and chambres ech in his degre 263
 Houses of office. stuffed wiþ grete plente
 þer maist þou see of deynteuous vitaile
 þat may be found as fer as lasteþ ytaile 266

(31)

This rial Marquis rially araied. 267
 lordys and ladys in his companye
 þe which to þe feest were preied / [leaf 163, back]
 And of his retenwe þe bachelerye 270
 wiþ mony a soun of sondry melodye
 vnto þe vilage [of þe] which I told
 In þis aray þe riȝte way hap hold 273

Griseld^d god wote of þis ful Innocent^t 274
 þat^t for hure was shape al þis aray
 To fecchen watere at þe welle is went^t
 And commep home as sone as euer she may 277
 ffor wel she herd say þat ilk^t day
 þat Marquis shuld^t wedde *and* if she myȝt^t
 She wold^t fayn see somme of þat^t sizt^t 280

(33)

She pouȝt^t I wil wiþ oþer maidens stond^t 281
 þat^t bene my felawes in oure door *and* see
 The Marquis and perfor wil I fonde
 To done at home as sone as it may be 284
 þe laboure which þat longeþ vnto me
 And þan may I at leisere it byhold^t
 If she þis way to þe castel holde 287

(34)

And as she wolde ouer þe thresshold goñ 288
 The Marquis come and can hur^t forto calle
 And she sette doune her water pot^t anon
 beside þe thresshold of þe oxes stalle 291
 And doun vpon her knees she gan to falle
 And wiþ saddle countenaunce kneled stille
 Til she had herde what was þe lordes wille 294

(35)

This pouȝtful Marquys spake vnto þis maide 295
 wel soberly and seide in þis manere
 where is ȝoure fader Griseld^t he seide
 And she wiþ reuerence and meke chere 298
 Answered lord he is al redy here
 And Inne she goop wiþ-out lenger lette
 And to þe Marquis she her fadere fette. [leaf 164] 301

(36)

He by þe honde þan toke þis olde man 302
 And seide him þus whan he hym had a side
 Ianicula I neiper may ne can
 lenger þe plesaunce of myn herte hide 305

GROUP E. § 2. CLERK'S TALE. Petworth MS.

If þat ȝe vouchesauf what so be-tide
 þi douȝter wil I take er þat I wende
 As for my wif to my lyues end 308

(37)

Thow louest me I woot wel certeyn 309
 And art my feiþ-ful liege man ybore
 And al þat likeþ me I dar wel seyñ
 It likeþ þe and specialy þefore 312
 Tel me þat poynt þat I haue seide byfore
 If þat þowe wolde vnto þat purpoos drawe
 To take me as for þine sone in lawe 315

(38)

The sodeyn caas þe man astonyed soo / 316
 þat rede he wexe al basshed and al quakinge
 He stood and vnneþes seide wordes moo
 But only þus lord quod he my willinge 319
 Is as ȝe wol not aȝeinst ȝour likinge
 I wil no þinge ȝe be my lorde so dære
 Riȝt as ȝou leet gouerneþ þis matere 322

(39)

Than wil I do þus quod Marquis softly 323
 þat in to þe chambre I and þou. and she
 haue a collacion and woost þou why
 ffor I wil aske hur ȝif hir wil be 326
 To be my wif and rewle hir after me
 And al þis she shal done in þi presence
 I wil not speke out of þine audience 329

(40)

And in þe Chambers while þei were aboute 330
 Her tretis which ȝe shul after here
 þe puple come into þe hous withoute
 And wondred hem in howe honest manere [leaf 164, back] 333
 And tentify she kepte hur fadere dære
 But vtterly grisild wonder myȝt
 ffor neuere erst sey she shuch a siȝt 336

No wonder is þouȝe she be astonyed 337
 To se so grete a gest' come in þat' place
 She was neuere to suche gestys wouned
 ffor which she loked wiþ ful pale face 340
 But' shortly fro þis matere forto pace
 Thise were þe wordes þat' þis marquis saide
 To þis benygne verrey feiþful mayde 343

(42)

Grisyle he seide ȝe wol wel vnderstonde 344
 It likeþ vnto ȝoure fadere *and* me
 þat' I ȝou wedde *and* eke it' may so stonde
 As I suppose þat' ȝe wil it' so be 347
 But' þis demaunde I axe furst' quod' he
 That' siþen it' shal be doñ on hastif wise
 Wol ȝe assent' or ellis ȝowe avise 350

(43)

I seye þis be ȝe redy with good hert' 351
 To al my lust' *and* þat' I frely may
 As me best' þenkeþ do ȝou lawgh or smert
 And ȝe neuer gruch' nyȝt' ne day 354
 And eke whan I seie ȝe say ȝe not' nay
 Neiþer be word' ne fraward countenance
 Swere þis and here I swere *our* aliañce 357

(44)

Wondringe vpon þis worde quaking' for drede 358
 She seide Indigne and vnworþi
 Am I to þat' [honour] þat' ȝe me bede
 But' riȝt' as ye wil ȝour self riȝt' so wil I 361
 And [here] I swere þat' neuer willingly
 In word' ne þouȝt' I neuere ȝou disobeye
 ffor to be dede þouȝe me were loþe to deye 364

(45)

This is ynowe Grisile myn' quod he [leaf 165] 365
 And forþ he goþ wiþ a sobre chere
 Out' at þe door after cam she
 And to þe puple he seide in þis manere 368

GROUP E. § 2. CLERK'S TALE. Petworth MS.

This is my wif quod he þat stondeþ here
 Honoureþ hir' and loueth [hire] I prey
 Who so loueþ me þer nys no more to seye 371

(46)

And for no ping' of hure olde gere 372
 She shuld bring' to his hous he bade
 þat wommen shulden spulen hir' riȝt þere
 Of which þe ladies were not riȝt glade 375
 To handel her cloþes in which she was clad
 But napeles þis maiden briȝt of hwe
 ffrom fote to hede ycloþed han al newe 378

(47)

Her heres han þei kembed þat lay vntressed 379
 wel rwdely with her fyngeres smale
 And a crowne on her hede þei han dressed
 Isette ful of owches grete and smal 382
 Of hir' aray what shuld I make a tale
 Vnneþes þe puple hir' knewe for her fairnesse
 Whan she transformed was in such richesse 385

(48)

¶ This Marquis haþ hure spoused wiþ a ryng 386
 Bouȝt for þe same cause an þan hir' sette
 vpon an hors snowe white and wel amblynge
 And to his palaies er he lenger lette 389
 Wiþ Ioiful puple þat he lad and mette
 Conveied hir' and þus þe day þei spende
 In reuel to þe sonne canne descende 392

(49)

And shortely forþ þis tale forto chace 393
 I sey þat to þis newe Marquissesse
 God haþ ysent such favour of his grace
 þat it semed not as by liknesse 396
 That she was born and fedde in rudenesse [leaf 165, back]
 As in a Cote ar in an oxes stalle
 But norshed in an Emperours halle 399

To euery wízt she woxen is so dere 400
 And worshipful þat folk' þer she was bore
 And from her birth knewe her fro 3ere to 3ere
 Vnneþ trowed þei but durst' haue swore 403
 þat to Ianicle of which I speke byfore
 She douȝtere ne were for as by coniecture
 hem þouȝt' she was a noþer creature 406

(51)

ffor [þouȝe] þat euere vertuous was she 407
 She was encesed in such excellence
 Of thewe sette in high bounte
 And so discrete and faire of eloquence 410
 So benygne and digne of reuerence
 And coude þe puples hertes so embrace
 þat ech her loued þat loked on her face 413

(52)

Nouȝt' only of saluce in þe toun 414
 Publiſshed was þe bounte of her name
 And eke be-side in mony a regioun
 If oon seide wel anoþer seide þe same 417
 So spradde of hure bounte þe fame
 That' men and wommen boþ ȝonge and olde
 Goon to saluse hær to be-holde 420

(53)

This walter. lowly nay but' ryally 421
 weddeþ wiþ fortune honeste
 In goddes pees lyuen wel esely
 At' hoom and outward grace ynoȝe had he 424
 And for he sawe vnder lowe degre
 was oft' vertue hid þe puple hym helde
 A prudent' man and þat' is sene wel selde 427

(54)

Nouȝt' only Grisile þus þorgh her witte 428
 Couþe al þe feta of wively humblenesse [100. 100]
 But' eke whan þe cas required it
 The comon profite coude she redresse 431

Ther nas no discord^t rancour ne heuynesse
 In al þe londe þat she ne coude it cese
 And bring^t hem al wisely in rest *and* ese 434
 Though þat hur husbond^t present were anon 435
 3if Gentil men or oþer of her contre
 were wroop she cowde bringe hem at oñ
 So wise and rype wordes had she 438
 And Iuggement^t of so grete equite
 That she fro heuene was as men wende¹ [*this line is re-*
 Puple to saue and euery wrong tamende *peated in the MS.* 441
 Not longe tyme aftere þat þis grisild 442
 Was wedded she a douȝter haȝ ybore
 Al had she leuer born a knaue child^t
 Glad was þe Marquis *and* his folk perfore 445
 for þouȝe a mayde childe come al byfore
 She may to a knaue childe atteyne
 By liklihede siȝens she is not bareyne 448

[THE THIRD PART.]

Therfor as it falleȝ tymes moo 449
 That þis childe haȝ sowked but a thrawe
 This marquis in his hert longeȝ so
 To tempte his wif her sadnesse to knowe 452
 þat he ne myȝt fro his hert throwe
 þis mervailous desire his wif tassay
 Naȝe-lees god wote he þouȝt hir to affray 455
 He had assaied hir ynouȝe to-fore 456
 And fonde hur euer good what nedeȝ It
 Hir forto torment^t and alway more *and* more
 þouȝe somme preise it for a subtile witte 459
 But as for me I saie þat euel it sitte [leaf 106, back]
 To assaie a wif whan it is no nede
 And putten hure in angwissh *and* in drede 462.

- For which þis Marquis wrouȝt in þis ma[n]re 463
 He came a nyght alon þer as she lay
 wiþ steerne face and trouble chere
 And seide þoo Griseld quop he þat day 466
 þat I ȝou toke out of ȝoure poor aray
 And putte ȝou in estate of hie noblesse
 ȝe han not ȝit forȝeten as I gesse 469
 (60)
 I seye Griseld þis present dignite 470
 In which I haue put ȝou as I trowe
 Makeþ not ȝou forȝetful forto be
 þat I ȝou toke in poor estate ful lowe 473
 ffor eny þinge ȝe mote ȝoure seluen knowe
 Take hede of euery word þat I ȝou seie
 ther is no wiȝt þat hereþ þis but we tweye 476
 (61)
 ȝe wote ȝour self wele howe þat ȝe come here 477
 Into þis hous it is not long ago
 And þouȝe to me ȝe be leef *and* dere
 vnto my gentiles ȝe be no þing so 480
 þei seyn to hem it is grete shame *and* woo
 ffor to be sogette and in seruage
 To þe þat art born of so lowe lynage 483
 (62)
 And namely siþ þi douȝter was bore 484
 þise wordes han þei spoke doutlees
 But I desire as I haue don byfore
 To lyve my lif wiþ hem in rest *and* pees 487
 I may not in þis cas bene rechelees
 I most doñ wiþ [þi] douȝtere for þe best
 nouȝt as I wold but as my gentils lest 490
 (63)
 And ȝit god woot þis is ful loþ to me 491
 But naþeles wiþ outen ȝour wetynge [leaf 167]
 I nyl not doo but þis I wil quod he
 þat ȝe to me assent as in þis þinge 494

GROUP E. § 2. CLERK'S TALE. Petworth MS.

Shewep now 3oure pacience in 3our worchinge
 That 3e me byhiȝt *and* swore in 3our vilage
 That day þat maked was our mariage 497

(64)

Whan she had herde al þis she was not amoued 498
 Neiper in word or chere or countenaunce
 ffor as it semed she was not agreued
 She seid lorde all lith in 3oure plesaunce 501
 My childe and I wiþ hertely obeisance
 Bene 3oures all *and* 3e may saue *and* spille
 3oure owne þing wheder þat 3e wille 504

(65)

Ther may no þinge so god my saule saue 505
 likinge to 3ou þat may displese me
 Ne I desire no þinge to haue
 Ne drede to lese saue only 3e 508
 This wille is my hert *and* ay shal be
 No length of tyme or dep it may deface
 Neiþe chaunge my corage into oþer place 511

(66)

Glad was þe Marquis of hur' answering 512
 But ȝit he feyned as he were not so .
 Al drery was his chere *and* his lokinge
 whan she shuld out of þe chamber goo 515
 Sone after þis a forlong way or twoo
 he pleynly hap told his entent
 Vnto a man which he to his wif sent 518

(67)

A maner sergeaunt was þis privey man 519
 þe which þat feithful fond yhad
 In þingges grete *and* eke such folk wel can
 Don execucioñ of þingges bad 522
 þe lord knewe wel þat he hym loued *and* drad .
 And whan þis sergeaunt wist his lordes wiþ [leaf 167, back]
 Into þe chambere he stalked hym ful stiþ 525

GROUP E. § 2. CLERK'S TALE. Petworth MS.

Madame he seide 3e mote forȝene it me 526

pough I do þinge to which I am constreyned /

3e bene so wise þat wel knowe 3e

þat lordes heestes may not be feyned 529

þei mowen wel be wailed or compleyned

But men mote nede vnto her lust obeye

And so wil I þer nys no more to seye 532

(69)

That childe I am commaunded to take 533

And spake no more but out þ' child he hent

Despitously and gan a chere make

As he wold han slayn it þer he went 536

Griseld mot al suffre and al consent

And as a lombe she sitteþ meke and stille

And lete þis cruel Seriaunt haue his witte 539

(70)

Suspecte was þe name of þis man 540

Suspecte his face. suspecte his world also

Suspecte þe tyme þat he þis bygan/

ffor his douȝter þat she loued soo 543

She wende he wold haue slayn it riȝt þoo

But napeles she neiþer wepte ne seide

Confeermyng hur to þat þe Marquis seide 546

(71)

And at þe last speke she bygan 547

And nekely to þe sergeant preide

So as he was a worþi gentil man

þat she myȝt kisse her childe er þat it deide 550

And in her harme þis litel childe she leide

wiþ ful sadde face and gan þe childe to blisse

And lulled it and after gan it kisse 553

(72)

And þus she seide in her benigne voys 554

fare wele my child I shal þe neuere see

But siþ I haue Marked þe wiþ croys

Of þilk fadere yblessed mot þou be 557

[leaf 168]

GROUP E. § 2. CLERK'S TALE. Petworth MS.

pat for vs deyed vpon þe rood tre.
 þi soule litel childe I hym bytake
 ffor þis nyȝt shalt þou dyen for my sake 560

(73)

I trowe pat to a norice in þis caas / 561

It had ben hard þis rewpe forto see

Wel myȝt a modere þan cry alas /

But napeles so sadde *and* stedfast was she 564

pat she endured al hur aduersite

And to þe Sergeant meke she seide

Haue here aȝein my litel ȝonge maide 567

(74)

And goþ now quod she *and* doþ my lordes heest 568

And oon þinge wolð I prei of ȝoure grace

That but my lorde forbede ȝou at lest

Burieþ þis litel body in som place 571

pat no beestes no briddes it to-race

But he no word to þo purpoos wolð saye

But toke þe childe *and* went vpon his way 574

(75)

This Sergeant come to þe lord ageyn 575

And of Griseldes wordes *and* of her chere

He tolde hym poynt by poynt in short *and* pleyñ

And hym presented wiþ his douȝter dere 578

Somwhat þis lord had rawpe in his manere

But napeles his purpoos helde he stille

As lordes doñ whan þei wil han her wille 581

(76)

And bad þis Sergeant ful priveily 582

he shuld ful soft þis child welde *and* wrappe

with al þe circumstance tenderly

And carie it in a coffre or in a lappe 585

But vp peyn his hede of for to swappe

pat no man shuld knowe of his entent

Ne whens he come ne whidere he went 588

PETWORTH 353 (G-T. 421)

GROUP E. § 2. CLERK'S TALE. Petworth MS.

¶ But at Boloyne to his suster' dere	[leaf 166, back]	589
pat' þoo of Pavie was countesse		
He shuld her take <i>and</i> shew hir' þis matere		
Bisechinge hure to doñ her bysynesse		592
This childe to fostere in al gladnesse		
And whoos childe þat' it' was he bad hir' hide		
ffrom euery wight' for ouzt' þat' myzt' betide		595
This Sergeaunt' goþ and hap' fulfilled þis pinge		596
But to þis marquis nowe retourne we		
ffor nowe goþ he wel oft ymagynyng		
If by his wif' [chere] he myght' See		599
And by hir wordes perceyue þat' she		
Were chaunged but' he coude neuere fynde .		
But' euere in oon ylik' sad <i>and</i> kinde		602
As glad as humble as bysy in seruise		603
<i>and</i> Eke in loue as she was wont' to be		
Was she to hym in euery manere wise		
Ne of her douzter' oon worde speke she		606
Noon accident' for noon aduersite		
Was seen in hir' ne neuere her douzter' name		
Nempned she for earnest' ne for game		609

[THE FOURTH PART.]

In þis estate passed ben foure ȝere	610
Er she wiþ child' was but' as god wold	
A knaue childe she bere by þis waltere	
fful gracious <i>and</i> faire to biholde	613
And whan folk' it' to hir fadere tolde	
Not' oonly he But' al þe contree mery	
Was for þe child' <i>and</i> god þei ponke <i>and</i> herye	616
Whan it' was two ȝere olde <i>and</i> from þe brest'	617
Departed from his norce vpon a day	
þis Marquis kaught' ȝit' anoth[er] lest'	

To tempten his wif ofter if he may	620
O nedeles was she tempted in assay	[leaf 100]
But wedded men knowen no mesure	
Whan þei fynde a pacient creature	623
(82)	
Wyf quod þis Marquis 3e herd er þis	624
My puple sekely bereþ our mariage	
And namely siþen my sone born is	
Now it is wors þan euer in our age	627
þe murmur sleep myn. her[te] and my corage	
ffor to myn eres comeþ þe vois so smerte	
þat it wel nye destroieþ al my herte	630
(83)	
Now seye men þus · whan walter is a goon.	631
þan shal þe blood of Ianicle succede	
And bene our lord for oþer haue we nōn	
Such wordes seyn my puple it is no drede	634
Wel ouȝte I of such murmur taken hede	
ffor certeynly I drede such sentence	
þouȝe þei not pleynly speke in myn audience	637
(84)	
I wold lyue in pees if þat I myȝt	638
Wherefore I am disposed vtterly	
As I his susteres serued by nyȝt	
Riȝt so I þenke to serue hym prively	641
þus warne I ȝou þat ȝe not sodeynly	
Out of ȝoure self for no woo shuld outray	
Beþ patient and þerof I ȝou pray	644
(85)	
I haue quod she seide [þus] and euere shaft	645
I wil desire no þing certeyn	
But as ȝou lust not greueth me at all	
þouȝe þat my douȝtere and my sone be sclayn	648
At ȝoure comaundement þis is to sayn	
I haue had no parte of children tweyn	
But furst siknesse and after woo and peyn	651

GROUP E. § 2. CLERK'S TALE. Petworth MS.

- 3e be our lord doo with 3our owe þinge. 652
 Riȝt as 3ou lust and askep no rede of me [leaf 169, back]
 ffor as I left at home al my cloþinge
 whan I come first to 3ou riȝt so quod she 655
 left I my wif and al my liberte
 And toke 3oure cloþing wherfore I 3ou prey
 Do 3oure wille I wille to it obeye 658
 (87)
 And certes ȝif I had prescience 659
 3oure wif to knowe. or ȝe 3oure lust me told
 I wold it done wiþ oute neeligence
 But now I wote 3oure lust and what ȝe wolde 662
 Al 3oure plesaunce feerme and stable I hold
 ffor wist I þat my deþ wold do 3ou ese
 Gladly wil I suffre it 3ou to plesse 665
 (88)
 Deth may make non comparisoun 666
 Vnto 3oure loue and whan þis Marquis say
 þe constance of his wif he cast his hede adoun
 And his eyen two and wondred how she may 669
 In such penaunce suffre al þis array
 And forþ he goþ wiþ drery countenance
 But to his hert it was ful grete plesannc / 672
 (89)
 This ege sergeant in þe same wise 673
 þat he her douȝtere kaught riȝt so he
 Or wors if he coude wors devise
 Hap kaught hire childe þat was ful of bewte 676
 And euere in oon so pacient was she
 þat she no chere made of hevynesse
 But kiseþ her sone and after can hym blesse 679
 (90)
 Saue þis she preide him if þat he myȝt 680
 hir litel sone he wold on erþe graue
 his tendere lymmes delicat to siȝt
 firo fowles and beestes forto saue 683

GROUP E. § 2. CLERK'S TALE. Petworth MS.

But she noon answer of hym myȝt haue
 He went his way as he no þing wrouȝt [leaf 170]
 But into holoyn tendrely it brouȝt 686

(91)

This Marquis wondreþ euere lenger þe more 687
 Vpon her pacience *and* if þat he
 Ne had soþly knowe þefore
 þat partitly her children loued she 690
 He wold haue wende þat of some sotilte
 And of malice or cruel corage
 That she had suffred þis with sad visage 693

(92)

Wut he knewe þat next hym self certayn 694
 She loued her children best in euery wise
 But nowe of women wold I aske fayn
 ȝif þise assaies myȝt not suffise 697
 what cowde a stordy husbond [more] devise
 To preue her wifhode *and* her stedfastnesse
 And be contynuyng in stordynesse 700

(93)

But þer ben folk of such condiciõ 701
 þat whan þei han a certeyn purpoos take
 þey con not stinte of her entencion
 But as þei were bounden to a stake 704
 þei wil not of þat purpoos sclake
 Riȝt so þis marquis haþ fully purposed
 To tempten his wif as he was first disposed 707

(94)

He waiteþ if by woordes or countenance 708
 ȝif she to hym was chaunged of corage
 But neuere coude he fynde variance
 She was euere in hert & in visage 711
 And euer þe ferþer þat he was in age
 þe more trewer if it were possible
 She was to hym in lone *and* more penyble 714

GROUP E. § 2. CLERK'S TALE. Petworth MS.

For which it semep þus þat of hem twoo	715
Ther was but oon wiþ for as walter lust	
The same lust was her plesaunce also	[leaf 170, back]
And god be þonked al felle for þe best	718
She shewed wel for no worldly vnrest	
A wif as of her self no þinge shuld	
Willen in effecte but as her husbond wold	721
(96)	
The sclaudere of waltere oft wide sprad	722
That a cruel hert wickedly	
fior he a poor womman wedded had .	
Hap morþered boþ his children priuely	725
which murmur was amonge heme comonly	
No wonder was for to þe puples eere	
þer come no worde but þat þei murþered were	728
(97)	
For swich as of his puple þerbifore	729 .
had loued hym wel desclaundred of his name	
Made hem þat þei hated hym therfore	
To bene a murdrere is an hatful name	732
But napelees for ernest ne for game	
He of his cruelte wold not stynte	
To tempte his wif was al his entente .	735
(98)	
Whan þis douȝtere xij ȝere was of age	736
he to þe courte of Rome in sotile wise	
Enformed of his wille sent his massage	
Comaunding hem such billes to devise	739
As to his cruel purpoos may suffice	
howe þat þe pope for his puples rest	
Bad hym wedde anoþer wif if þat hym lest	742
(99)	
I sey he bad þat þei shuld counterfete	743
þe popes billes making mencion	
þat he hap leue his first wif to lete	
As by þe popes dispensacioñ	746

GROUP E. § 2. CLERK'S TALE. Petworth MS.

To stinte rancoure *and* dissencion
 Bitwix þe puple *and* hym þus speke þe bulle
 The which þei han publisshed at þe fulle (leaf 171) 749

(100)

The rude puple as no wonder is 750
 Wende ful wel it had be riȝt soo
 But þise tydyngges commen to griseld is
 I deme þat her hert was ful woo 753
 But she was ylike sad euermoo
 Disposed was þis humble creature/
 þe aduersite of fortune al to endure 756

(101)

Abydinge euer his lust *and* his plesance 757
 To whom she was ȝeuene hert *and* all
 As to her worldely suffisaunce
 ffor certeynly for his story telle I shaft 760
 This Marquis ywriten hap in speciaht
 A lettre in which he shewep his entent
 And sikerly he it to bolyne sent 763

(102)

To þe Erle of Pavie which þat he had so, 764
 wedded his sustere he preide specialy
 To bringen him aȝein his children two
 In honourable estaat al openly 767
 Bot of on þing he hym preide al vtterly
 That he to [no] wiȝt þough men wold enquere
 Shuld not telle whoos children þei were 770

(103)

But seide þat þe mayde shuld wedded be 771
 Vnto þe Marquis of Saluce anon
 And as þe erle was preide so did he
 ffor at a day Isette he on his way is goȝ 774
 Toward Saluce *and* lordes mony on
 In riche aray þis maide forto gyde
 Hir yonge broþer ridyng by hir side 777

PETWORTH 359 (6-T. 427)

Araied was towards þis mariage	778
This mayde fressh ful of gemmys clere	
Hir' broþer that' vij. ȝere was of age.	
Araied eke was fresshly on his manere	[leaf 171, back] 781
And in grete noblesse <i>and</i> glad chere	
Toward Saluce shapinge her iournay	
ffrom day to day þei riden forþ her way	784

[THE FIFTH PART.]

Amonge al þis aftere his wikked vsage	785
This Marquys ȝit' his wif to tempten more	
To þe vttest' preef of his corage	
ffully to haue experience <i>and</i> lore	788
ȝif þat' she were as stedfast' as bfore	
he on a day in open audience	
wel boistounly haþ seide hir' þis sentence	791
Certes Griseld' I had ynowe plesaunce	792
To han ȝou to my wif for ȝoure goodnesse	
And for ȝoure treuth <i>and</i> ȝour obeysaunce	
Nouȝt' for ȝoure lynage ne for ȝoure richesse	795
But it is now knowen in verray soþnesse	
þat' in grete lordship if I wil avise	
Ther is grete souereynte in sondry wise	798
I may not' done as euery plowe man may	799
My puple me constreynten forto take	
A noþer wiff and crien day by day	
And eke þe pope rancour forto sclake	802
Consenteþ it' þat' dar I vndertake	
And trewly þus mochi wil I ȝou say	
My newe wif is comyng' by þe way	805
Be stronge of hert' and voide anon her' place	806
And pilk' dowary þat' ȝe brouȝt' to me	
Take it' aȝein I graunte it' of my grace	

GROUP E. § 2. CLERK'S TALE. Petworth MS.

Retourneþ to þoure faders hous quod he 809
 No man may alway haue prosperite
 wiþ euene hert I rede þou to endure
 þe stroke of fortune or of auenture 812

(109)

And she aȝein answerde in pacience [leaf 172] 813
 My lord quod she I wote and wist alway
 howe þat I swore þou magnificence
 And my pouert no man can ne may 816
 Maken noon comparison it is no nay
 I helde me neuere digne in no manere
 To be þoure wif ne ȝit your chambrere 819

(110)

And in þis hous þer ȝe me lady made 820
 þe high god take I for my witnesse
 So wisly as he my soule glade
 I helde me neiþer lady ne maistresse 823
 But humble *seruaunte* to þoure worþinesse
 And euere shal while my lif may endure
 Abouen euery worþi creature 826

(111)

That ȝe so longe of *your* benygnyte 827
 haue holde me in honure and in nobleye
 where I was not worþi forto be
 þat þonk I god and þou [to] whom I prey 830
 for-ȝeelde it þou þer nys no more to sey
 Vnto my fadere gladly wil I wende
 And wiþ hym dwelle to my lyves ende 833

(112)

Ther as I was fostred a child ful smaȝ 834
 Til I be dede my lif [þer] wil I lede
 A widowe clene in hert body and aȝ
 for siþen I ȝaf to þou my maydenhede 837
 And am þoure trewe wif it is no drede
 God shild such a lordes wif to take
 Anoper man to husbonde or to make 840

GROUP E. § 2. CLERK'S TALE. Petworth MS.

And of your newe wif god of his grace 841

So graunte you welpe and prosperite

ffor I wil gladly ȝeeld hir my place

In which I was blisful wont to be 844

ffor Sipeu it likeþ you my lord quod she [leaf 172, back]

That whilom weren al my hertes rest

That I shal goon I wil goon when you lest 847

(114).

But þer ȝe me profre such dowarie 848

As I furst brouȝt it is wel in my mynde

It were my wrecched cloþes no þing faire

þe which to me nowe were ful hard to fynde 851

How god howe gentile *and* how kinde

ȝe semed by ȝoure spech *and* your visage

þe day þat maked was oure mariage 854

(115)

But soþ is seide algate I finde it trewe 855

ffor in effecte is proued nowe on me

Loue is not olde as whan it is newe

ffor certes lord for non aduersite 858

To dyen in þis cas it shal not be

That in wordes or werk I shal repent

þat I you ȝaue myn hert in good entent 861

(116)

My lorde ȝe wote þat in my faders place 862

ȝe diden me stripen out of my poor wede

And richely ȝe cladden me of ȝoure grace

To you brouȝt I not ellis out of drede 865

But fait nakednesse *and* maidenhede

But here aȝein ȝoure cloþing I restore

And eke my weddyng ringe for euermore 868

(117)

The remenaunte of your Iwels redy be 869

wip in your chambre dare I it seyueli seye

Naked out of my faders hous quod she

I come/ and naked I mote turne ageyne 872

PETWORTH 862 (S-T. 430)

GROUP E. § 2. CLERK'S TALE. Petworth MS.

Al þoure plessaunce wil I folowe feyne
 But if I hope it be not þoure entente
 þat I smoklees out of þoure paleis went' 875

(118)

þe cowde not do so dishonest a þinge 876
 That ilk wombe in which our children lay [leaf 173]
 Shuld byfore þe puple in my walkinge
 Be seyn al bare wherfor I þou pray 879
 lat me not like a worm gon by þe way
 Remembre þou myn / owne lorde so dere
 I was þoure wif þouze I vnworþi were 882

(119)

Wherfore in guerdon of my maidenhede 883
 Which þat I wrouzt and not aȝein bere
 As voucheþ sauf to ȝeue me to my mede
 But such a smokke as I was wont to were 886
 þat I þerwiþ may hille þe wombe of here
 þat was þoure wif *and* here I take my leue
 Of þowe myn owne lord lest I þou greue 889

(120)

The smok' quod he þat þou hast on þi bak' 890
 Lat it be stille and bere it forþ wiþ þe
 But wel vnneþ þat word he spak'
 But went his way for reuthe *and* pite 893
 Byfore þe folk' hure self stripeþ she
 And in her smok' wiþ hede *and* fete al bare
 Toward her fadres hous forþ is she fare 896

(121)

The folk' folowed weping' in hir' way 897
 And fortune euere þei cursed as þei gon
 But she from weping' kept her eyen day
 Ne in þis tyme word spak' she non 900
 Her fader þat here of herd anon
 Cursed þe day *and* tyme þat nature
 Shope him to be a lyues creature 903

PETWORTH 363 (6-T. 431)

- For out of doute þis olde poor man 904
 was euer' suspects of her mariage
 ffor euer he damed sipen it bygan
 þat whan þe lord yfyllad had his corage 907
 hym wold þenk' it was a desparage
 To his astate so lowe to a list' [leaf 173, back]
 And voiden hir' as sone as euere he myȝt' 910
 (123)
 Aȝeinst his douȝtere hastely goþ he 911
 ffor he by þe noys of folk' knewe her commyng'
 And wiþ her olde cote as it myȝt be
 He keuereþ hir' ful sorowfully wepinge 914
 But on hur' body myȝt' he it not bringe
 ffor rude was þe cloþ and more of age
 By dayes fele þan hur' mariage 917
 (124)
 Thus with her fadere for a certeyn space 918
 dwelleþ þis floure of wively pacience
 That neuer by her wordes ne be her face
 Bifore þe folk' ne in her absence 921
 Ne shewed she þat to hir' was doñ offence
 Ne of his astate in remembraunce
 Ne had she as by her countenaunce 924
 (125)
 No wonder is for in [her] grete estate 925
 Her goost' was euere in pleyn humilite
 No tender mouþe ne hert' delicate
 Ne pompe ne semblant' of Rialte 928
 But ful of pacience and benygñite
 Discrete and pruydeles and euere honourable
 And to her husbonde euere meke and stable 931
 (126)
 Men speke of Iob and most' of his humblesse 932
 As clerkes whan hem lust' can wel endite
 Namely of men but in soþfastnesse
 þouȝe clerkes preise wommen but a lite 935

GROUP E. § 2. CLERK'S TALE. Petworth MS.

per can no man in humblesse hem aquite
 As wommen can ne ben half so trewe
 As wommen bene but it be fallen newe 938

[THE SIXTH PART.]

Fro babyloyne is *pis* Erle of Pavie come 939
 Of which *pe* word spronge to more *and* lesse
 And to *pe* pules eeres al *and* somme
 was coupe eke a newe Marquyssesse [leaf 174] 942
 He wip hym brouzt in pompe *and* such riccheesse
pat was neuere sey wip mannys eye
 So noble aray in Westlombardye 945

The Marquis *pat* Shope an knewe al *pis* 946
 Er *pat* *pis* erle was commen sent his massage
 ffor cely poor Gryseldys
 And she wip humble hert *and* glad visage 949
 Nouzt wip swollen hert in her corage
 Come at his heest and on here knees her sette
 And reuerently and wisely she hym grette 952

Griseld quod he my wil is vtterly 953
pis maide *pat* shal wedded be vnto me
 Resceyued be to morowe as Really
 As it is possible in my hous to be 956
 And eke *pat* euery wizt in his degre
 Haue his estate in sittynge and seruise
 And also plesaunce as *ze* can best deuise 959

I haue no womman suffisant certayn 960
pe Chambres to aray in ordynaunce
 After my lust *and* *perfor* wil I fayn
pat pine were al such gouernaunce 963
 pou knowest eke of olde al my plesaunce
 pouze pine aray be bad and euel ysey
 Do pou *pi* deuoyre at *pe* lest wey 966

Nouȝt only lord þat I am glad quod̃ she 967

To do ȝoure lust̃ but I desire also

ȝoure forto ples̃ and serue in my degre

Without fayntise and shal euermoo 970

Ne neuer for no wele ne for no woo

Ne shal þe goost̃ within my hert̃ stynt̃

To loue ȝou best̃ with al my trewe entent̃ 973

(132)

And wiþ þat word she gan þe hous to diȝt̃ [leaf 174, back]

And tables to sette and beddys to make

And peyned hure to doo al þat she myȝt̃

Preying̃ þe chambreres for goddis sake 977

To hasten hem and fast̃ swope and shake

And she þe most̃ seruisable at all

Hap̃ euery ychambre araied and his halle 980

(133)

About̃ vndern gan þis Erle aliȝt̃ 981

That̃ wiþ him brouȝt̃ þise noble childre tweie

ffor which þe puple ranne to se þat siȝt̃

And hure araye so richely beseye 984

And þan at̃ arst̃ amonges hem þei gofi seye

That̃ walter was no foole þough̃ hym lest̃

To chaunge his wiff for it̃ was for þe best̃ 987

(134)

For she is fairrer̃ as þei demen alle 988

Than is GriseH and more tender̃ of age

And fairrer̃ fruyte bytwene hem shuld̃ falle

And more plesaunt̃ for hir̃ hiȝe lynage 991

Hir̃ broþer̃ so faire was of his age

þat̃ hym to seen þe puple had kauȝt̃ plesaunce

Commendying̃ now̃ ȝe Marquis gouernaunce 994

(135)

O sterne puple vnsad and [vn]trewe 995

Euere vndiscrete and chaungyng̃ as a fane

Delitinge euere in Rumour þat̃ is newe

ffor like þe mone euere wexe ȝe and wane 998

GROUP E. § 2. CLERK'S TALE. *Petworth MS.*

Euere ful of clapping^t dere ynowe a lare
 3our^t dome is fals 3our constance euel preueþ
 A wel grete fool is he þat^t on 3ou leueþ 1001

(136)

Thus seiden sadde folk in þat Cite 1002
 Whan þat þe puple gased vp *and* down
 for þei were glad riȝt for þe nouelte
 To make a newe lady of her toun 1005
 No more of þis make I mencoun [*leaf 175*]
 But to griseld aȝein wil I me dresse
 And telle her constance *and* her bysynesse 1008

(137)

Wel bysy was gryseld in euery thinge 1009
 þat to þe feest^t was pertinent^t
 Riȝt naught^t was she abasshed of her cloþinge
 þouȝe þei were Rude and eke somdel to-rent^t 1012
 But wiþ glad chere to þe gate is went^t
 wiþ oþer folk to greten þe Marquisesse
 And after doþ she forþ her bysynesse 1015

(138)

Wiþ ful glad chere þe gestes she receyueþ 1016
 And Boxomly euerich in his degre
 That no man defawte þer perceyueþ
 But euere þei wondren what she myȝt be 1019
 That in so poor aray was forto se
 And cowde such honure & reuerence
 And worþely þei preisen her prudence 1022

(139)

In al þis me[ne] while she ne stynte 1023
 This maiden and eke her broþer to commend^t
 Wiþ al her hert^t and benigne entente
 So wel þat no man koude her prise amende 1026
 But at þe last whan at þise lordes wende
 To sitten a down he gan to calle
 Griseld as she was bysy in þe halle 1029

PETWORTH 367 (6-T. 435)

Griseld quod he as it were in play	1030
How likeþ þe my wif in her bewte	
Riȝt wel quod she my lorde for in good fay	
A fairrer sawe I neuere non quod she	1033
I prey to god so ȝeue ȝou prosperite	
And so hope I he wil to ȝou sende	
Plesaunce ynouȝe to ȝoure lyues ende	1036
(141)	
Sut oon þing I biseche <i>and</i> warne also ./	1037
þat ȝe prikt wiþ no tormentyng	[leaf 175, back]
þis tendere mayden as ȝe han doñ moo	
ffor she is fostred in her norshyng	1040
fful tenderly in her ȝong' pleyng	
She coude not aduersite endure	
As coude a poor fostred creature	1043
(142)	
And whan þis Walter' segh her pacience	1044
her glad chere and no malice at all	
And he so oft haþ done hir' offence	
And she euer constant' and sad as a wall	1047
Contynuyng' euer her innocence ouerall	
This stordy marquis gan his herte dresse	
To Rwe vpon hur' wifly stidfastnesse	1050
(143)	
This is ynouȝe Griseld' myn quod he	1051
Be no more agast' ne euel apayde	
I haue þi feiþ and þi benignyte	
As wel as euer womman was asaied	1054
In gr[e]te astate and poorly araied	
Now knowe I dere wif þi stedfastnesse	
And hure in armes toke <i>and</i> gan to kesse	1057
(144)	
And she for wonder toke þerof no kepe	1058
She herd not what þing' þat he seide	
She ferde as she had stert' out' of her slepe	
Til she out' of þe maisednesse abreide	1061

GROUP E. § 2. OLIVER'S TALE. Petworth MS.

Griseld quod he by god þat for vs deyde.
 þou art my wif *and* noon oper I haue
 Ne neuere had as god my soule saue 1064

(145)

This is þi douȝter which þou hast supposed 1065
 To bene my wif and noon oper feiþfully
 shal bene myn heir as I haue euere disposed
 Thowe bere hem in þi body trewly 1068
 At boyled haue I kepte hem sikerly
 Take hem aȝein for þou myȝt not seyn [leaf 176]
 þat þow hast lorn any of þi children tweyn 1071

(146)

And folk þat operwise han seide of me 1072
 I warne hem wel þat I haue done þis dede
 for no malice ne for no cruelte
 But forto assay þi wommanhede. 1075
 And not forto sele my children god forbede
 But forto kepen hem prively *and* stille
 Til I þi purpoos knewe and al þi wille 1078

(147)

And whan she þis herd adoun in swowe she falleþ 1079
 for pitous ioying and after hire swowinge
 She boþ her yonge children to hure calleþ
 And in hure armes pitously wepinge 1082
 Enbrased boþ tenderly kissynge
 Wel like a modere wip her salt teeres
 She baped boþ her visage *and* her heeres 1085

(148)

O such a pitous þinge it was to see 1086
 Her sownynge *and* her pitous vois to here/
 Gramercy my lord god y thanke þou quod she
 þat ȝe han saued me my children dere 1089
 Now rech I neuere to be dede riȝt here
 Siþ I stonde in ȝour loue *and* in ȝour grace
 No force of dep ne whan my spirit pace 1092

PETWORTH 369 (6-T. 437)

- A** tender' o dere .o. ȝenge children myn 1093
 ȝoure wooful modere wande stedfastly
 þat' cruel houndes or some vermyñ
 Had eten ȝou but' god of his mercy 1096
 And ȝoure benigne fader' tenderly
 Haȝ done ȝou kepte *and* þat' same stounde
 Al soðeynly she swapte down to þe grounde 1099
 (150)
 And hin her swowne so sadly holdeþ she 1100
 her children two whan she gan hem brace
 That' wiþ grete scleight' and difficulte [leaf 176, back]
 The children from her armes gan þei to rase 1103
 O mony a tere .o mony a pitous face
 Doun ranne of hem þat' stoden hyr beside
 Vnneþ aboute hur' myȝt' þei abide 1106
 (151)
 Walter hir' vptakeþ *and* her' sorowe gladeþ 1107
 She ariseþ vp al abasshed from her trance
 And euery wiȝt' hir' Ioye and feest' makeþ
 To she haue kauȝt' aȝein her countenance 1110
 Walter her doþ so feiþfully plesaunce
 þat' it' was deynte for to se þe chere
 Bitwixe hem two nowe þei bene mette in fere 1113
 (152)
 Thise ladys whan þei her tyme say 1114
 han taken hur' and into chambre gone
 And stripen hir' out' of her rude aray
 And in a cloþe of gold' þat' brighte shone 1117
 wiþ a crowne of mony a riche stone
 vpon hur' hede þei hir' into halle brouȝt'
 And þer she was honoured as she ouȝt' 1120
 (153)
 Thus haȝ þis pitous day a blisful ende 1121
 ffor euery man and womman doþ his myȝt'
 This day in myrþe and reuel to dispende
 Til on þe welken shoon þe sterres briȝt' 1124

GROUP E. § 2. CLERK'S TALE. Petworth MS.

ffor more solempne in euery mannys sizt
 This fest was and gretter of costage
 þan was þe reuel of þe mariage 1127

(154)

fful mony a ȝeer in high prosperite 1128
 lyuen þise two in concord and in rest
 And richely his douȝter maried he
 Vnto a lord on of þe worþiest 1131
 Of all ytaile and þan in pees and rest
 His wifes fader in his courte he kepeþ
 Til þat his soule out of his body crepeth [leaf 177] 1134

(155)

His sone entreþ into his heritage 1135
 In rest and pees aftere his faders day
 And fortunate was eke in mariage
 Al putte he not his wif in assay 1138
 This world is not [so] stronge it is no nay
 As it haþ bene in olde tymes ȝore
 And harkenep what þe auctour seiþ þefore 1141

(156)

þis storie is seide not þat wifes shuld 1142
 ffolowe Gryself as in humilite
 ffor it were importable þouȝe þei wold
 But þat euery wiȝt in his degre 1145
 Shulde be constant in aduersite.
 This storie which he wiþ high stile enditeþ
 Wiþ pacience Griseld he qwriteþ 1148

(157)

ffor siþens a womman was so pacient 1149
 Vnto a mortall man moch more we ouȝt
 Resceyue alle in gree þat god vs sent
 ffor grete scelys he preueþ þat he bouȝt 1152
 Mankynde þe which þat he wrouȝt
 As seiþ seint Iame if ȝe his pistel rede
 He preueþ folk al day it is no drede 1155

PETWORTH 371 (6-T. 439)

GROUP E. § 2. CLERK'S TALE. Petworth MS.

And suffreþ vs as for our exercise 1156
 Wip sharpe shoures of aduersite
 Wel ofte to be leten in sondry wise
 Nowe forto knowe vs for certys he 1159
 Er we were born knewe al our freelte
 And for our best is al our gouernaunce
 Lat vs it haue þan in vertuous suffrance 1162

[Chaucer's addition to the Tale.]

But oo witte harkenþ lordyngges er 3e goo / 1163
 It were ful harde nowe adayes
 In al a toune fynde Griseldys þre or two
 ffor if þei were putte in such assaies 1166
 þe gold of hem haþ nowe so hard alaies
 Wip bras þat þouze þe kynde be faire atte ye
 It wot raper brast a two þan plye 1169

(160)

[ffor whiche hiere . for the wifes love of bath [MS Reg. 17 D xv, leaf 176, back: not in Reg. 18 O II, Sloane 1686, or Harl. 1758.]
 whos lyf and al hirs . swete god maynteigne¹
 In high maistrie . and ellis were it skath
 I wil with lusty hert . fressh and grene 1173
 Say now a song^r . to gladde yow I wene
 And late vs stynt^r . of Ernestful matiere
 Herknyth my song^r . that saith in this manere] 1176

[¹ 1-line gap in the MS, after l. 1171.]

¶ Le Voy De Chancere / [headline]

(161)

GRiseld is dede and eke her pacience [leaf 177, back]
 And boþ at onys yburied in Ytalie
 ffor which I cry in open audience 1179
 No wedded man be hardy to assaile
 His wyves pacience in trust to fynde
 Griseldes for in certeyn he shal faile 1182

PETWORTH 373 (6-T. 440)

O noble wyues ful of hegh prudence	
lat' none humilite ȝoure tonge nayle	
Ne lat' no clerk' haue cause ne diligence	1185
To write of ȝou a storie of such mervaille	
As of griselde pacient <i>and</i> kynde	
lest' Chychyuache ȝou swelowe in hir entraile	1188
Folowep ekko þat holdep no silence	
But euere answerep at þe countretale	
Beþ not bydaffed for our Innocence	1191
But sharply take on ȝou þe gouernaille	
Emprintep wel þis lessoñ in ȝoure mynde	
fior Comon profit' sith it may availe	1194
NE drede hem nouȝt doth hem no reuerence	1201
fior þouȝe þine husbonde araied be in maile	
þe arrowes of þi crabbed eloquence	1203
Shal perce his brest <i>and</i> eke his aduentale	
In Ialowsie I rede eke þou hym bynde	
And þat þou shalt make hym couche as doþ a quale	1206
If þou be faire þere folk bene in present'	
Shewe þou þi visage and þine apparaile	
If þowe be fowle be free of þi dispence	1209
To gete þe freendes ay do þi travaille	
Be aye of chere as liȝt as leef on lynde	
And lat' hym care and wepe <i>and</i> wryngt <i>and</i> waille	1212
Ȝe Arche wiffes stondeþ at ȝour' defence	1195
Sip Ȝe bene stronge as is a grete camaile	
Ne Suffreþ not' þat man do ȝou offence	1197
And sclendere wyves feble as in bataile	
Beth egre as a tygre ȝende in Ynde	
Ay Clappeþ as a mylle I ȝou counsaile.	1200

[For the Squire's Prologue of the Petworth MS see the Man-of-Law-Shipman Link.]

¶ The prologe of þe fraunkeleyn. [headline of leaf
178, front]

<p>EY goddis mercy seide oure hoost þoo / Alle euel wyues god kepe vs fro ffor mony sleiȝtes and sub[t]ilites Bene in wommen þat bene euere biȝ as bees Vs foly men forto desceyue ffor from þe soþ euere wil þei weive By mony ensamples it prouep weht But doutelees as trewe as eny stele I haue a wiff þough she poor be But of her tunge a labbyng shrew is she And she haþ an hepe of vices moo þerof no force lat al such þingges goo But wete ȝe what in counsaile be it saide Me rewep sore þat I am to her teide ffor and I shuld rekne eue[r]y vice Which þat she haþ ywis I were not wis And cause whi for it shuld reported be And tolde to hure of somme of þis mayne Of whom it nedep not to declare Siþ wommen kon out such chaffare And eke my witte suffiseþ not þerto To telle alle þefore my tale is doo</p>	<p>2420</p> <p>2424</p> <p>2428</p> <p>2432</p> <p>2436</p> <p>2440</p>
--	---

[No break in the MS.]

GROUP F. FRAGMENT VII.

§ 1. THE SQUIRE'S HEAD-LINK.

PETWORTH MS.

Sir ffrankeleyne come ner' if it *your* wille be [on leaf 178]

And say vs a tale for sertys 3e

Can þeron as moch as eny man

Nay sir' quod he I wil say as I can 4

With hartely wille for I nyl be rebelle

Aȝeinst ȝoure wille . a tale nowe wil I telle

HAue me excused ȝif I sey amys .

My wille is good *and* loo my tale is þis ./ 8

¶ Here endep þe prologe of þe ffrankeleyn

And here bygynneþ þe ffrankeleyns tale [on leaf 178]

[THE PROEM.]

Thise olde gentile bretoynes in her daies
 Of dyuers auentures maden laies
 Rymeden in her furst bretoyne tonge
 Which layes wiþ her instrumentes þei songe 712
 Oþer ellis radden hem for her plesaunce [leaf 178, back]
 And oon of hem haue I in remembrance
 Which I shal seie wiþ as good wille as I can/
 But sirs by cause þat I am but a burif man 716
 At my bygynnyng furst I ȝou biseche
 Haue me excused of my rwde speche
 I lered neuere rethorike certeyne
 þinge þat I speke it mot be bare *and* pleyne 720
 I slepte neuere on þe mounte of parnaso
 Ne I neuer lered. Marchus Tullius ne Cithero
 Colours of rethorike knewe I none *with-out* drede
 But such coloures as growen in þe mede 724
 Or ellis such as men dye or peynt
 Colours of rethorike bene to me queynt
 Mi spirit feleþ not of such matiere
 But if ȝou lust my tale shul ȝe here 728

[No break in the MS.]

[THE TALE.]

Ther was a knyght þat loued *and* did his peyne 730
 In armorike þat cleped is breteyne 729
 To seruen a lady in his best wise
 And mony a laboure & mony a grete emprise 732

PETWORTH 376 (6-T. 500)

He for his lady wrouȝt er she were womne
 ffor she was oon þe fairest vndere sonne
 And eke þerto come of so high kynrede
 þat wel vnneþes durst þis knyght for drede 736
 Telle hure his woo his peyne *and* his distresse
 But at þe last she for his worþinesse
 And namely for his meke obeysaunce
 Haþ suche a pite kauȝt of his penaunce 740
 That prively she felle of his acorde
 To take hym for hure husbond *and* her lord
 Of suche lordship as men han ouer her wyves
 And forto lede þe more in blisse her lyves 744
 Of his fre wille he swore hure as a knyȝt
 þat neuere in his wille by day ne nyȝt
 Ne shuld vpon hym take no maistrie
 Aȝeinst her wille ne kith hure Ialousie 748
 But hure obeye and folowe her wille in all
 [leaf 179]
 As eny louyere to his lady shaft
 Saue þat þe name of souereynthe
 That wolde he han for shame of his degre 752
 She þonkeþ hym and wiþ ful grete humblesse
 She seide sir siþ of ȝoure gentylnesse
 ȝe profre me to han as large a reyne
 Ne wolde neuere god betwix vs tweyne 756
 As in my gilt were eiþer werre or striff
 Sir I wil be ȝoure owne humble & trewe wiff
 Haue here my troupe til þat my hert brest
 Thus bene þei boþ in quiete *and* in rest 760
 ffor oon þinge sires sauȝly dar I seie
 That frendes euerich oþer most obeie
 ȝif þei wil longe holde companye
 loue wil not bene constreyned be maistrye 764
 whan maistrie commep þe god of loue anōn
 Betep on his wengges and fare-wele he is goȝ
 loue is a þinge as eny spirite free
 Wommen of kynde desiren liberte 768

And nouȝt to be constreyned as a þraht
 And so done man ȝif I þe soþe seie shaft
 Loke who þat is most pacient in loue
 He is at his avauntage aboute 772
 Pacience is an hie vertue certeyn
 ffor it venquysseþ as clerkes seyne
 Thingges þat rigoure schulde neuere ateyne
 ffor euery worde men may not chide ne pleyne 776
 Lerneþ to suffre or ellis so mote I go
 ȝe Shul it lerne wheder ȝe wil or no
 ffor in þis world certeyne no wiȝt nys
 þat he ne doþ or seiþ some tyme amys 780
 Or oþer siknesse oþer constellaciō
 Wyne. woo. or chaunchynge of complexiō
 Causeþ ful oft to do amys eiper speken
 On euery wronge men may not be a-wreken 784
 Aftere þe tyme most be temperaunce [leaf 179, back]
 To euery wiȝt þat can no gouernaunce
 And þerfore haþ þis worþi wise knyȝte
 To lyue in ease suffraunce hure bihiȝte 788
 And she to hym ful wisely gan to swere
 þat neuere shuld þer be defaute in here
 Here may men seen an humble wif acord
 Thus haþ she take her seruauante and her lord 792
 Seruauante nyl oñ and lord in mariage
 þan was he boþ in lordship and seruage
 Seruage nay but in lordship alloue
 Syþens he haþ boþ his lady and his loue 796
 His lady certys and his wif also
 The which þat lawe of loue accordeþ þerto
 And whan he was in þis prosperite
 Home wiþ his wif he goþ to his cuntre 800
 Not fer fro Pedmarke þer as his dwelling was
 Where as he lyueþ in blisse and in solas
 Who couthe telle but he had wedded be
 The Ioie þe ease and þe prosperite 804

That is bitwix an husbond and his wiff
 A ȝere and more lasted þis blisful lif.
 Til þat þis knyȝt of which I spake of þus
 That of kynrede was cleped Arueragus 808
 Shope hym to goon and dwelle a ȝere or tweyn
 In engelond þat cleped was breteyn) /
 To seche in armes worship and eke honour
 For aȝ hit lust he sette in such labour 812
 And dwelleþ þere þe boke seiþ þus
 Now wil I stint of þis Arueragus
 And speken I wil of dorygen his wiff
 That loueþ her husbonde as his hertes lif 816
 And for his absence wepeþ she and sikeþe
 As done þise noble wyues whan hem likeþ.
 She mournep. wakeþ. walleþ. fastep & playnep
 Desire of his presence hure so destreynep 820
 That aȝ þis wide world she sette at nouȝt
 (leaf 180)
 Her frendes which þat knewe her hevy þouȝt
 In al þat euere þei myȝt or may
 Þei prechen hur þei tellen hur nyȝt and day 824
 þat causelees she sleep her self alis
 And euery comfort possible in þis cas
 They doon to hure wiþ al her bysynesse
 And al forto make hure late her heuynesse 828
 By processe as ȝe knowe wel euerechoȝ
 Men may so longe grauen in þe ston
 Til some figure þer-Inne emprinted be
 So longe han þei comforted hure þat she 832
 Resceyued haþ by hope and by reson
 The empringtynȝ of hure constellacioȝ
 Thorgh which here grete sorowe gan aswage
 She may not alway endure in such a rage 836
 And eke arueragus in al þis care
 Haþ sent her lettres home in al þis fare
 And þat he wold come hastely aȝein
 Oȝþer ellis had þis sorowe hure hert sclayn 840

GROUP F. § 4. FRANKLIN'S TALE. Petworth MS.

Her frendes segȝ hure hert' gan to sclake
 And preiden hure on knees for goddys sake
 To come and to Rome hure in companye
 Away to dryve hure derk fantasie 844
 And fynaly she graunted þat request
 ffor wel she seghe it was for þe best
 Nowe stooðe hure castel fast by þe see
 And oft wiþ hure frendes walked she 848
 Hire to disporte on þe See bank' on hegh
 Where as she mony shippe *and* barge segȝ
 Seilynge her cours where hem lust to goo
 But ~~þis~~ was þer a parcelle of her woo. 852
 ffor to hure self ful ofte seide she
 Is þer no shippe of so mony as I see
 wil bringe home my lord' þan wold' my herte
 Al warissh of þise bittere peynes smerte. 856
 A-noþer tyme þer wil she sitte *and* þenke [leaf 180, back]
 And cast her yen downward fro þe brinke
 But whan she segȝ þe grissly rokkes blake
 ffor verrey fere wold hure hert' quake 860
 þat on her fete she myȝt not hure sustene
 þan wold she sitte doune on þe grene
 And pitously into þe see she wolde biholde
 And seyn riȝt þus with soroweful hert' cold 864
 Eterne god þat þourȝ þi purueaunce
 Ledest þe worlde by certeyn gouernaunce
 In ydelnesse as men sayne ye no þinge make
 But lorde þise grisly feendly rokkes blake 868
 That semen raper a foule confusiō
 Of werk' þan any faire creaciō
 Of which a parfit god *and* a stable
 why han ȝe wrouȝt þis werk vnreasonable 872
 ffor by þis werk' souþe. norþ. east & west
 Ther nis yfostred man ne bridde ne beest
 It doþ no good to my witte but anoyeþ
 Se ȝe not lorde how man-kynde it destroieþ 876

An C. thousand bodies of man-kynde
 Han rokkes sclayn al be þei nouȝt in mynde
 Which mankynde is so faire part of þi werke
 þat þow it maideſt like to þine honde werke 880
 þan ſemed it ȝe had a grete cheerte
 Toward mankynde but how þan may it be
 þat ȝe ſuche menes make it to deſtroien ./
 Which menes done no good but euer anoyen 884
 I wote wel clerkys wollen ſeyn as hem leſt
 By argument þat al þing is for þe beſt
 þough I ne can þe cauſeſſe forſop knowe
 But þilk god þat made wynde to blowe 888
 As kepe my lorde þis is my concluſion
 To clerkes lete I al diſputacion
 But wolde god þat aȝ þe rokkes blake
 Were ſonken into helle for his ſake 892
 Theſe rokkes ſcleen myn hert for fere [leaf 181]
 Thus wold ſhe ſayn wiþ mony a pitous tere
 Hire frendes ſegh þat [it] was no diſport
 To Romen by þe ſee but diſcomfort 896
 And ſhopen for to pleyen ſomwher ellis
 They leden hure by ryuers *and* by wellys
 And eke in oþer places delitable
 Thei daunſen *and* pley atte cheſſe *and* tableſ 900
 So on a day riȝt on þe morowe tyde
 Vnto a gardyne þat was þer beſide
 In whiche þat þei had made her ordinaunce
 Of vitaille and of oþere purueaunce 904
 They goon *and* pleien hem al þe longe day
 And þis was on þe ſext morowe of may
 Which may had peinted wiþ hiſ ſofte ſhoures
 This gardeyn ful of leues *and* of floures 908
 And wiþ craft of mannyſ honde ſo curioſly
 Araied had þis gardyne trailly
 That neuere naſ þer gardyne of ſuch priſe
 But ȝif it were þe verrey paradyſe 912

The odour of floures and þe fresshe sizt
 Wold haue made eny pensif hert lizt
 That euere was born but if to grete siknesse
 Oþer to grete sorowe helde it in distresse 916
 And aftere dynere gan þei to daunce 918
 So ful it was of bewte wiþ plesaunce 917
 And syngen also but dirigen song allone
 And made alway her compleinte and her mone 920
 ffor she ne segh him in þe daunce goo
 þat was her husbonde and her loue also
 But napelees she most a tyme abide
 And wiþ good hope lete she her sorowe glide 924
 ¶ Vpon þis daunce amonges oþer men
 Daunsed a squier afore Dorigen
 þat fressher was and Iolier of araye
 As to my dome þan is þe monþe of may 928
 He synged and dounsed passinge eny man [leaf 181, back]
 þat is or was siþens þis world bygan
 þer-wiþ he was if men shuld hym discriue
 On þe best faring man alyue 932
 Jongr. strongr rizt vertuous riche and wis
 And wel byloued and holden in grete pris
 And shortely if þe soþ tellen I shal
 Vnwittyng of þis Dorigen at all 936
 This lusty squyere seruazante to Venus
 Which þat icleped was aurelius
 Had loued hure best of eny creature
 Two ȝere and more as was his auenture 940
 But neuere durst he telle of his greuaunce
 Wiþ-out cuppe he dronke al his penaunce
 He was despeired no þing durst he saye
 Sauf in his sawe somewhat wold he wreye 944
 His woo as in generall compleynyng
 He saide he loued and was byloued no þing
 Of suche matere made he mony laies
 Songges compleyntes roundelletes virrelaies 948

How þat he durst not his sorowe telle
 þat languysshēþ as a fuyre dōþ in helle
 And deye he seide most I as did Ekko
 ffor Narsisus þat durst not telle hure woo 952
 In opere manere þan ȝe here me saye
 Ne durst he not to hure his woo bywrey
 Saus peraventure somtyme at daunces
 þere ȝonge men kepen her obseruaunces 956
 It may wel be he loked on hure face
 In such a wise as man þat askep grace
 But no þinge wiste she of his entent
 Napeles it happed er þei þens went 960
 Bycause þat he was hure neighbour
 And was a mon of worship *and* honour
 And had yknowe hym oft tymes ȝore
 þei fylle in speche more *and* more 964
 Vnto his purpos drowe aurelius
 [leaf 188]
 And whan he segȝ his tyme he saide þus
 Madame quod he by god þat þis world made
 So þat I wist it myȝt ȝoure herte glade 968
 I wold þat day þat ȝoure arueragus
 Went to þe see þat I Aurelius
 Had went þat I shuld neuere come aȝein
 ffor wel I wote my seruise is in veyȝ 972
 My gwerdon is but brestyng of myȝ herte
 Madame reweþ vpon my peynes smerte
 ffor as wiþ a swerde ȝe may me sle or saue
 Here at ȝoure fote god wolde I were in graue 976
 I haue as nowe no leisere forto seie
 Haue mercy on me swete or ȝe wil do me die
 She gan to loke vpon Aurelius
 Is þis ȝoure wille quod she and saye ȝe þus 980
 Neuer erst quod she ne wist I what ȝe ment
 But nowe Aurely I knowe ȝoure entent
 By pilke god þat ȝaf me soule *and* liff
 Ne shal I neuere be an vntrewe wiff 984

In worde ne werk as fer as I haue witte
 I wil bene his to whom þat I am knytte
 But aftere þat in pleyn þus seide she 988
 Take þis for fynal answer as for me 987
 Aurely quod she by hiȝe god aboue
 ȝit wil I graunte ȝou to be ȝoure loue
 Sippe I see ȝou so pitously compleyne
 Loke what day þat euenlong breteyne 992
 ȝe remeue alle þe Rokkes stoon by stoon
 þat þei lat shippe ne bote none
 I saye whan ȝe han made þise costes so clene
 Of Rokkes þat þer be no stone sene 996
 þan wil I loue ȝou best of eny man
 Haue here my troupe in al þat euere I can
 Is þere noon oþer grace quod he
 No by þat lorde quod she þat made me . 1000
 ffor wel I wote þat shal neuere betide [leaf 183, back]
 Lat such foly out of ȝoure hert glide
 What deynte shuld man haue be his lif
 fforto loue anopere mannys wiff 1004
 þat hap hure body whan þat hym likeþ
 Aurelius ful ofte sore sikeþ
 Woo was Aurelius whan he þis herde
 And wip a sorowful hert þus answerde 1008
 Madame quod he þis were an impossible
 þan mote I deye a sodeyne deþe horrible
 And wip þat worde he turned hym anōn
 Tho come hire oþer frendes mony oñ 1012
 And in the aleis romed vp and down
 And no þing wist of þis conclusioun
 But sodeynly bygonne to reuel newe
 Til þat þe briȝte sonne lost his hwe 1016
 ffor þorisonth hap raft þe sonne his liȝt
 This is as moche to say as it was nyȝt
 And home þei gone in Ioie and in solace
 Saue only wrecched Aurelius allas 1020

he to his hous is gone wiþ sorowful herte
 he seiþ he may not from his dep asterte
 Hym semeþ he felep his hert colde
 Vp to þe heuene his hondys gan he holde 1024
 And on his knees bare he sette hym down
 And in his raving seide þis Orisoun
 ffor verrey woo out of his witte he breide
 He nyst not what he spake but þus he seide 1028
 Wiþ pitous hert hap he compleynt bygoñ
 Vnto þe goddesse and first vnto þe sonne
 He seide Appollo god and gouernour
 Of euery planete . herbe . tree *and* flour 1032
 þat ȝeuest aftere þi declinacioñ
 To ech of hem his tyme *and* his sesoñ
 And þine harborowe chaungeþ lowe *and* hie
 Lord Phebus cast þi merciable ye 1036
 On wrecched Aurely which þat am but lorne [leaf 188]
 loo lord my lady hap my dep sworne
 Wiþ-oute gilt but þi benignite
 Vpon my dedly herte haue somme pite 1040
 But wel I wote lorde phebus if ȝou lest
 ȝe may me helpe to haue my lady best
 Now vouchep sauf þat I may ȝou devise
 How þat I may be hulpe and in what wise 1044
 ȝoure blisful sustre lucyna þe Shene
 þat of the see is cheef goddes *and* quene
 þouȝe Neptynus haue deite in þe See
 ȝit Emperesse abouen hem is she 1048
 ȝe knowen wel lord riȝt as hure desire
 Is to be qwykkened and liȝtned of ȝour fire
 ffor which she folweþ ȝou fu[l] bisily
 Riȝt soo þe See desireþ naturelly 1052
 To folowen hure as she þat is goddesse
 Boþe in þe See and in þe Ryuere more *and* lesse
 Wherfore lorde phebus þis is my requeste
 Do þis myracle or do myn herte to-brest 1056

That nowe next at þis opposicion
 Whiche in þe signe shal be of þe lyon
 As preie hure so grete a floode to brynge
 þat .v. fathme at þe leest it ouere sprynge 1060
 þe hiest rokke in harmorike Bretaigne
 And lat þis flode endure 3eres tweyne
 Than certis to my lady may I saye
 Holdeþ 3oure heeste þe rokkes ben awaye 1064
 Lord Phebus do þis miracle for me
 Preie hure she goo no faster cours þan 3e
 I seie þowe þus preie 3oure sustre þat she go.
 No fastere cours þan 3e þise 3eres two 1068
 þan shal she be euere at þe ful alway
 And springe floode lasteþ boþ nyȝt and day
 And but she vouche-sauf in such manere
 To graunte me my lady souereyn dere 1072
 Preie hure to synken euery rokke adoun [leaf 183, back]
 Into hure owne derk regiouȝ
 Vndere þe grounde þer Pluto dwelleþ Inne
 Oþere neuere more shal I my lady wyne 1076
 Thi temple in Delphos wil I barefote seke
 Lorde Phebus biholde 3e þe teeres of my cheke
 And of my peyne haue compassioun
 And wiþ þat worde in swoune he fille adoun. 1080
 And longe tyme he lay in a traunce
 his broþer which þat knewe of his penaunce
 Vp kauȝt hym and to bed hym brouȝt
 Despeired in his torment and his pouȝt 1084
 Loo I þis wooful creature lye
 May chese whedere to lyve or dye
 ¶ Arueragus wiþ hool and grete honour
 As he [that] was of chyualrie þe floure 1088
 Is commen home and oþer worþi men
 O blisful art þou Doregen
 þat hast þine lusty husbond in þine armes
 þat fresshe knyght þat worþi man of armes 1092

þat loueþ þe as his owne hertys lif
 No þing lest he to be ymagynatiff
 þouze eny wize had spoke while he was oute
 To hure of loue he made þerof no doute 1096
 He nouȝt entendeþ to no such matere
 But daunseþ . Iusteþ . and makeþ good chere
 And þus in Ioye and blisse I lat hem dwelle
 And of þe swete Aurelius ¹ wil I telle [*1. Brut, Aurelius, in the MS.*]
 In langour and in furious torment þus
 Two ȝere and more lay wrecched aurelius .
 Or eny foote on erþe he myȝte goñ
 No comfort in þis tyme nad he noñ 1104
 Sauf of his broþere which þat was a clerke
 he knewe of all þis woo and al þis werke
 ffor to noñ oþer creature certeyñ
 Of þis matere ne durste he no worde seyn 1108
 Vndere his brest he bere it more secree [*leaf 184*]
 Than euere did phamphilus for galathe
 His brest was hoole wip-uten for to sene
 But in his herte was ay þe arowe kene 1112
 And wel to knowe þat afore Sanure
 In Surgery ful perilous is þe cure
 But men myȝt not touche þe arowe þouze he come þerby
 His broþer wepeþ and weilleth prively 1116
 Til at þe last hym felle in remembrañce
 That whiles he was at orliañce in france
 As ȝonge clerkes þat bene likerous
 To reden artes þat bene curious 1120
 Seken in euery halke and euery herne
 Particulere sciences forto lerne
 He him remembreþ vpon a day
 At Orliaunce in stody a boke he saie 1124
 Of magike naturel which his felawe
 þat was þat tyme a bachilere of lawe
 Al were he þere to lerne an oþer craft
 And priuely vpon his desk he laft 1128

This boke which speke mochel of operaciōs
 Touchinge þe *eight and twenty*¹ mancions [MS xxviii]
 þat' longen to þe mone and such foly
 As in our daies nys nat' worþ a flye 1132
 ffor holy churchs seiþ in our bileue
 Ne suffreþ noon illusion vs to greue
 And whan þis booke was in remembraunce
 Anone for ioy he gan to daunce 1136
 And to hym self saide priuely
 My broþer shal be warisshed hastely
 ffor I am siker þat' þer bene sciēces
 By which men make dyuers apparences 1140
 whiche as þise subtil tregetours pleien
 ffor oft at feestes haue I herde seyen
 That tregetours wiþ-in an halle large
 Han maden come water' in a barge. 1144
 And in the halle rowe vp and dōune [leaf 184, back]
 Somtyme haþ semed [come] a grete lyoun
 [And somtyme flours spryng as in a mede
 Somtyme a vyne/ and grapes whyt and reede] [Add. MS 5140,
 leaf 190, back] 1148
 Somtyme a castel al of lyme *and* stoñ
 And whan hen liked voide it' anoñ
 Thus semed it' to euery mannys siȝt'
 Now þan conclude I þus if þat' I myȝt' 1152
 At Orliaunce some olde felawe finde
 þat' had þe moons mancions in mynde
 Oiper magike naturel aboue
 He shuld wel make my broþer han his loue 1156
 ffor wiþ apparens a man may make
 To mannys siȝt' þat' alle þe Rokkes blake
 Of Bretoyne were ywent' euerechoñ
 And þat' shippes by þe brinkes myȝt' *commen and* goñ 1160
 And in such forme enduren a ȝere or twoo
 þan were my broþer warsshed of his woo
 þan moste she nedis knowe hure byhest'
 Or ellis he shal shamen hure at' þe lest' 1164

What shuld I make a lenger tale of þis
 Vnto his broþer bedde comen he is
 And suche comferte he ȝane hym forto goȝ
 To orliaunce þat he vpetert' anon 1168
 And on his way forþward is he fare
 In hope to bene yliased of his care
 Whan þei were come almost to þat cite
 But if it were a two forlonge or þree 1172
 A ȝonge clerk' romyng' by hemself þei mette
 Whiche þat in latyn thriftely hym grette
 And aftere þat he seide a wonder' þinge
 I knowe quod he þe cause of ȝoure commynges 1176
 And er þei forþer eny foote went'
 He tolde hem all þat was in her entent'
 þis bretoyne clerke hym asked of felawes
 þe whiche þat he had knowe in olde daies 1180
 And he answered hym þat þei dede were
 ffor whiche he wept ful mony a tere
 Doune of his hors Aurelius liȝt' anon [leaf 185v]
 And forþ wiþ þis Magicien is he gōn 1184
 Home to his hous and made hem wel at eese
 Ham lackeþ no vitaile þat hem myȝt plesse
 So wel an araied hous as ther was on
 Aurelius in his lif ne segȝ none 1188
 He shewed hem ere [þei] went to sopere
 fforestis and parkes ful of wilde dere
 [Ther sauhe he hertis / with ther hornys hihe [Addit. MS 5140,
 The grettest / that evir wer seyne with eye leaf 191] 1192
 He sauhe of hem an hundred / slayne wyth houndes
 And som with arwes / bleede of bytter woundes
 He sauhe whanne wyde were the wylde deer
 The fauconers vpon a fayr ryver] 1196
 And howe facouns han þe herowne sclayn
 þat segȝ he knyghtes iusten in a playn
 And aftere þis he did hym such plesaunce
 þat he hym shewed his lady in a daunce 1200

On which him self daunsed as hym þouȝt
 And whan þis maistere þat þis magike wrouȝt
 Segh it was tyme and clapped his hondys twoo
 A fare wele al oure reuel is ydoo 1204
 But ȝit remene þei neuere out of þis hous
 whiles þei seghe al þis siȝt merveilous
 But in his stody þere as his bokes be
 þei sitten stille and no wiȝt but þei þre 1208
 To him þis maastere called þan a squiere
 And seide him þus is it redy oure sopere
 Almost an houre it is I vndertake
 Siþens I ȝou bad oure sopere to make 1212
 Whan þat þise worþi men wenten with me
 Vnto my stody þer as my bokes be
 Sir quod þis squiere whan it likeþ ȝou .
 It is al redy þouȝe ȝe with riȝt now 1216
 Go we þan soupe quod he & for þe best
 þise Amerous folk somtyme mote haue rest
 And after sopere fille þei in trete
 What somme shulde þis maisters guerdon be 1220
 To rem[u]e alle þe Rokkes of breteynes
 And eke from geroon to þe moupe of Seyn
 He made it straunge & swore so god hym saue
 Lasse þan a þousand pounde he nolde not haue 1224
 Ne gladly for þat somme he nold not goon [leaf 185, back]
 Aurelius wiþ blisful hert anon
 Answered þus . fle on a thousand pounde
 This wide world þat men seyn is rounde 1228
 þat wold I ȝeue if I were lord of it
 This bargayn is ful drive for we bene knyȝt
 ȝe shullen be paide trewly be my troupe
 But lokeþ now for no negligence ne aloupe 1232
 ȝe tary vs here no lenger þan to morowe
 Nay quod this clerke haue here my troupe to borowe
 To bedde is gone Aurelius whan hym list
 And welnygh al þat nyȝt he had his rest 1236

þat for his laboure and for his hope of blisse
 His wooful herte of penaunce had a lisse
 Vpon þis morowe whan þat it was day
 To breteigne toke þei þe right way 1240
 Aurelius and þis magicien be side
 And bene descended þer þei willen abide
 And þis was as þe bokes me remembre
 þe colde frosty seson of decembre 1244
 Phebus wexe olde and hwed like latoñ
 That in his hote declinaciō
 Shoone as þe byrned cold with stremes brizt
 But nowe in scorpion a-doune he lizt 1248
 Where as he shone ful pale I dar wel seyn
 þe bitter frostes with þe sclete and reyn
 Destroyed hap þe grene in euery 3erde
 Ianus sitte by þe fuyr with double berde 1252
 And drynkeþ of his bugle horn þe wyne
 Byforn hym stant þe brawne of þe tusked swyne
 And a nowelt criep euery lusty man
 Aurelius in al þat euere he can. 1256
 Doth to his maister chere and reuerence
 And preieþ him to doñ his diligence
 To bringgen him out of his peynes smerte
 Oipere wip a swerde þat he wold sclitte his herte 1260
 That subtile clerk which þat roupe had of þis man [leaf 188]
 þat nyght and day he him spedde þat he ne lan
 To waite a tyme of his conclusiō
 This to say to make illusion 1264
 I ne can no termes of Astrologie 1266
 By whiche an apparence of Iogelrie 1265
 þat she and euery wizt shuld wene and seie
 That of Breteyn þe rokkes bene away 1268
 Oipere ellis þei were sonken vnder grounde
 So at þe last whan he his tyme founde
 To make his iapes and his wrecchednesse
 Of which a superstitious cursednesse 1272

His tables colletanes forþ he brouȝt
 fful wel corrected for þer lacked nouȝt
 Ne his collectis ne his expans ȝeres
 Ne his rotes ne his oþer geres 1276
 As bene his Centrys *and* his argumentz
 And his proporcions conuenientz
 ffor his equaciõs and euery þinge
 And by his viiiȝ spere in his wirkinge 1280
 He knewe howe fer alnape was yshoue
 ffrom þe hede of þilk fixe ariseþ aboue
 þat in þe *ninthe*¹ spere considered is [1 MS ix]
 fful subtilly he cal[cu]leþ al þis / 1284
 And whan he had founde his first manciõn
 He knewe þe remynaunte by proporciõn
 And knewe þe arising of þe mone well
 And in whoos face and terme euery delt 1288
 And knewe ful wel þe monys manciõn
 Accordant to his operaciõn
 And knewe also his oþer obseruaunces
 ffor such illusions and such meschaunces 1292
 As heþen folk vsed þilk daies
 ffor which no lenger maked he delaies
 But þorgh his magike for a weke or tway
 It semed as al the Rockes were away 1296
 Aurelius which þat despeired is [leaf 126, back]
 whedere he shal han his loue or fare amys
 Awaiteþ nyȝt and day of þis myracle
 And whan he knewe þer was noñ obstacle 1300
 þat voiden were þise rokkes euerchoñ
 Doune to þis maisters fete he fille anon
 And seide I woful wreche Aurelius
 Thonke ȝou lorde and lady myne Venus 1304
 That me han hulpe from my carys cold
 And to þe temple forþ his way haþ hold
 Where he knewe he shuld þis lady se
 And whan he seȝh his tyme anon riȝt he 1308

With dredful herte and humble chere
 Salwed hap his souereyn lady dere
 My riȝtful lady quod þis wooful man .
 Whom I most drede and loue as I best can . 1312
 And lopest were of al þis world displese
 Nere it þat I for ȝou haue suche dissesē
 That I most dye here at ȝoure fote anon
 ¶ But not wolde . I telle howe me is woo byȝon 1316
 But certes eȝer most I deye or pleien
 ȝe slee me gilteles for verrey peyne
 But of my deȝ þou ȝe haue no rouȝe
 Avise ȝou er þat ȝe lese ȝoure trouȝe 1320
 Repentē ȝou for þilke god aboue
 Er ȝe me sleen by cause þat I ȝou loue
 ffor madame wel ȝe wote þat ȝe han hiȝt
 Not þat I chalence eny þing of riȝt 1324
 Of ȝou souereyn lady but ȝour grace
 But in a gardyne ȝonde in such a place
 ȝe wote riȝt wel þat ȝe bihote me
 And in myn honde ȝoure trouȝe bliȝt ȝe 1328
 To loue me best god wote ȝe saide so
 Al be þat I vnworȝi am þerto .
 Madame I seie it for þe honure of ȝou
 More þan to saue myn hertes lif riȝt nowē . 1332
 I haue done as ȝe comaunded me [leaf 187]
 And if ȝe vouchesauf ȝe may go see
 And as ȝou lust haue ȝoure bihest in mynde
 ffor qwikke or dede riȝt þus ȝe shullen me finde 1336
 In ȝou lif aȝ to do me lyve or deye
 But wel I woote þe rockes bene aweye
 He toke his leue and she astonyed stode
 In al her face þer nas on drope of blood 1340
 She wende neuere han comen in such a trappe
 Allas quod she þat this euere shuld happe
 ffor wende I neuere by possibilite
 þat such a meschaunce shuld euere be 1344

It is ageinst þe processe of nature¹ [These lines are trans-
posed in the MS.]
 And home she goþ a soriful creature¹
 ffor verrey fere vnneþes may she goo /
 She wepeþ and weilleþ a day or twoo 1348
 And swowneþ þat it rauthe was to see
 But whi it was to no wiȝt tolde she
 ffor out of tounne was goon Arueragus
 But to hure self she seide and speke þus. 1352
 In hure compleynte as ȝe shul afters here
 With face pale and wiþ soriful chere
 Allas quod she on þe fortune I playn
 þat vnware hast' wrapped me in þi chayn 1356
 ffor which þe eskaþe wote I no socour'
 Saue only deþ eiper dishonour'
 Oon of þise two bihoueth me to chese
 But napelees ȝit' had I leuer lese 1360
 My lif þan of my body to haue a shame
 Eiper knowe my self fals eiper lese my name
 And wiþ my deþ I may be quytte I-wis
 Han þer nat' mony a wif er þis 1364
 And mony a maiden sclayn her self allas
 Raper þan wiþ her bodies done trespas
 And certes loo þise stories beren witnesse
 Whan xxx.⁴ tirauntz ful of cursednesse. 1368
 Had sclayn Phidon in Athenes at þe lest' [Conf 187, back]
 They commaunded his douȝters to arest'
 And bringgen [hem] byform hym in despit
 Al naked to fulfille her foule delite 1372
 And in her faders bloode þei made hem daunce
 Vppon þe pauement' god ȝeue hem meschaunce
 ffor which þise woeful maidens ful of drede
 Raper þan þei wolde lese her maidenhede 1376
 þei priuely bene sterte into a welle
 And dreinte hem self as þe bokes telle
 Thei of mesue lete enquire and seke
 Of lacedemye .l. maidens eke 1380

On which þei wolden doñ her lecherie
 But was þer none of al þat companye
 þat she nas sclayn and wiþ a glad entent
 Chese þe rapere to die þan to assent 1384
 To bene enpressed of her maidenhede
 Whi shuld I þan to dye bene in drede
 Lo eke þe tiraunte Austocliides
 þat loued a maiden which hiȝt Symphalides 1388
 Whan þat hure fadere sclayn was on a nyȝt
 Vnto Dianas temple goþ she anofñ riȝt
 And hent þe ymage wiþ hure armes twoo /
 from which ymage she nolde neuer goo 1392
 No wiȝt myȝt fro hit hure handis race
 Til she was sclayn in þe self place
 Nowe siþens þat maidens had such despit
 To bene defouled wiþ mannys foule delite 1396
 Wel ouȝte a wiff rapere hure self slee
 þan ben defouled as þenkeþ me
 What shal I sayn of hasdrubaldys wif
 þat at Cartage hiraft herself hur lif 1400
 ffor whan she segh þat Romayns wan þe toun
 She toke her chuldren alle and swept adoun
 Into þe fuyre and ches rather to dye
 þan eny Romayn did hure vilenye 1404
 Hap not lucres ysclayn hure self allas
 [leaf 186]
 At Rome þere she oppressed was
 Of Tarquyne for hure þouȝt it was a shame
 To live whan þat she had lost her name 1408
 The .viij. maidens of Melesie also /
 Han sclayn hem self for drede and woo /
 Raper þan folk of gaule shuld hem oppresse
 Moo þan a M^r stories as I gesse 1412
 Couþe I nowe telle as touching þis matere
 Whan habradas was sclayn his wif so dere
 Her self sclowe and lete her blood to glide
 In Habradas woundes brood and wide 1416

And saide my body at þe leeste waye
 Ther shal no wight defoile if þat I may
 What shuld I moo ensamples herof sayn
 Sipeþ þat so many han hem self sclayn 1420
 Wel raper þan þei wolde defowled be
 I wil conclude what is best for me
 [Tho sleen my self. than be defowled thus [MS Reg. 17 D 15,
leaf 188]
 I wilbe trewe. vnto Arueragus] 1424
 Eiper raper slee my self in some manere
 As did Demonycions douȝtere dere
 By cause þat she nolde defoiled be
 O Cedasus it is ful grete pite 1428
 To reden how þi douȝters deiden allas
 þat sclowe hem self for suche manere cas
 As grete appetit was it or more
 The theban maiden þat for Nichasore 1432
 [Hir selfen slough right for suche a maner woo [MS Reg. 17 D 15,
leaf 188]
 Another theban mayden dide right so]
 Hure had wedded and sore dressed. [spuriou.]
 For oon of Masidoigne had hure oppressed. 1435
 What shal I seyn of Nicharatyfs wiff
 þat for such caas biraft her self her lif
 Howe trewe was eke to Alcebiades
 His loue þat forto dyen [raper] ches 1440
 þan forto suffre his body vmbreided be
 Loo which a wif was alcesteyn quod she
 What Emore of good Penelope
 Alle Grece knowep of her chaastite 1444
 Parde of leodomya is written þus [leaf 188, back]
 That whan a Troy was sclayn protheselayus
 No lenger nold she lyf after his day
 þe same of noble porcia telle I maye 1448
 Wip-outen brutus quod she not lyve
 To whom [s]he had alhole hure herte ȝeue
 The parfit wifhode of Archemesie
 Honoured is þorgh alle þe barberye 1452

GROUP F. § 4. FRANKLIN'S TALE. Petworth MS.

- O teuta quene in pi wifly chastite
 To alle wives may þou a myrour be
 [. . . no gap in the MS: these lines
 . . . known only in Ellesmere MS.] 1456
- Thus playned Dorigen a day or tweye
 Purposinge euere þat she wolde deye
 But napeles vpon þe þred.nyȝt
 Home came Arueragus þe worthi knyȝt 1460
- And asked hure whi þat she wepte so sore
 And she gan wepen euere þe lenger more
 Allas quod she þat euere was I borne
 Thus haue I seide quod she þus haue I sworn 1464
- I tolde hyȝn alle as ȝe han herde bifore
 It nedep not rehersen it here-of no more.
 This husbonde wiȝ glad chere in sondry wise
 Answerde and seide as I shal [ȝou] devise 1468
- Is þer ouȝt ellis Dorigen but þis
 Nay nay quod she god helpe me so as wisse
 þis is to moche if it were goddes wille
 ȝe wiff quod he lat slepe þat is stille 1472
- It may be wel ȝit perauenture to saye
 ȝe shullen ȝoure troupe holden be my fay
 ffor god so wialy helpe me
 I had wel leuere ystikked forto be 1476
- ffor verrey loue which I to ȝou haue
 But ȝif ȝe shuldȝ ȝoure trouthe Saue
 Troupe is þe hiest þing þat man may kepe
 But wiȝ þat word he brast anōn to wepe 1480
- And seide I ȝou forbede in peyn of deth
 That neuer whiles ȝou lastep lif & breth
 To no wizȝ telle of þis cure [leaf 129v]
 As I may I most my lif endure 1484
- Ne make no countenaunce of heuynesse
 þat folk of ȝou may deme harme or gesse
 And forþ he clepeȝ a sqwiere and a mayde
 Gop forþ anōn with Dorigen he saide 1488

GROUP F. § 4. FRANKLIN'S TALE. Petworth MS.

And bringeþ hure to such a place anon
 Thei toke her leue and on her way þei goñ
 But þei ne wiste whi she thider went
 He nolde no wiȝt telle hure entent 1492
 [. [These lines known only
 in the Ellesmere MS.]

 1496

 no gap in the MS.]
 This Sqwier which þat hiȝt Aurelius
 On dorigen which þat was so amorous 1500
 Of auenture happed hure to mete
 Amydde þe toune riȝt in þe qwikke strete
 As she was boune to goo þe way forþ riȝt
 Toward the gardeyn þer as she had hiȝt 1504
 And he was to þe gardeyn ward also
 ffor wel he aspied whan she wolde goo
 Out of her hous to eny manere place
 But þus þei mette by auenture or grace 1508
 And he saluēþ her wiȝ glad entent
 And axed of hure whidere þat she went
 And she answerd half as she were madde
 Vnto þe Gardyne as myn husbond badde 1512
 My troupe forto hold allas allas
 Aurelius gan wondere of þis cas.
 And in his hert had grete compassion
 Of hure and of her lamentacion 1516
 And of Arueragus þe worþi knyȝt
 þat bad hure holde al þat she hight
 So loþe he was hys wif sholde breke her troupe
 And in his hert he cast of þis grete routhe 1520
 Consideringe þe best on euery side
 þat from his lust hym were better abide
 Than done so high a cherles wrecchednesse
 Aȝeinst fraunches and al gentilnesse 1524

for which in fewe wordes seide he þus [leaf 189, back]
 Madame seiþ to þoure lorde Arueragus.
 þat siþen I se his grete gentilnesse
 To þou and eke I see wel þoure distresse 1528
 If ȝe by me shulde breke þoure troupe 1530
 Certes me þenkep it were grete roupe [spurious 1529]
 I haue wel leuer euere to suffre woo
 þan I departe þe loue ytwix þou twoo 1532
 I þou relese madame into þoure honde
 Quite euery surement and euery bonde
 That ȝe han made to me as here biforn
 ¶ Siþens þilk tyme þat ȝe were born 1536
 My troupe I pliȝt I shal þou neuer repreef. . /
 Of no biheest and here I take my leue
 As of þe trewest & þe beste wif
 þat euere ȝit I knewe in al my lif 1540
 And euery wiȝt be ware of hure biheest
 On Dorygen remembreȝ at þe leste
 Thus can a squyere doȝn a gentile dede
 As wel as can a knyȝt wiȝoute drede 1544
 She þonked hym vpon hure knees al bare
 And home vnto hure husbonde is she fare
 And tolde hym alle as ȝe han herd me seide
 And be ȝe siker he was ful wel apaide 1548
 It were impossible to write
 What nedep lenger in þis cas endite
 ¶ Arueragus and Dorigen his wif
 In souereyn blisse leden forþ her lif 1552
 Neuer aftere was þer anger hem bitwene
 He Shershed hure as þouȝe she were a quene
 And she was to hym trewe for euermore
 Of þise two folk ȝe gete of me no more 1556
 ¶ Aurelius þat his cost hap forlorȝ
 Curseȝ þe tyme þat euere he was born
 Allas quod he alas þat I bihiȝt
 Of pured gold a thousand pounde of wiȝt 1560

Vnto þis philosople how shal I doo [leaf 190]
 I se no more but þat I am fordoo
 Mine heritage most I selle
 And bene a begger here I may not dwelle 1564
 And shamen al my kynrede in þis place
 But I of him may gete better grace
 But napelees I wil of hym assaie
 At certeyn dayes ȝere by ȝere to paie 1568
 And þonke him of his grete curtesie
 My troupe wil I kepe I wil not lie
 Wip herte sore he goþ vnto his cofre
 And brouȝte golde vnto þis philysophre 1572
 þe value of .v. C. pounde I gesse
 And hym bisechep of his gentilnesse
 To graunte hym daies of þe remenaunte
 And saide maistere I dar wel make anaunte 1576
 I failled neuere of my troupe ȝit
 ffor sikerly my dette shal be quytt
 Towardes ȝou how þat euere I fare
 To goon a begger in my kirtel bare 1580
 But wolde ȝe vouche sauf vpon swerte
 Two ȝere or þre forto respite me
 þan were I welle for ellis mote I selle
 ¶ Myn heritage þer nys no more to telle 1584
 This Philisophre soberly answerde
 And seide þus whan he þis word herde
 Hauē I not holde conaunte vnto þe
 ȝis certes wel and trewly quod he 1588
 hast þou not had þi lady as þe likeþ
 No no quod he and sorily he sikeþ
 What was þe cause telle me ȝif þou can
 Aurelius his tale anof bygan 1592
 And tolde hym alle as ȝe han herd bifore
 It nedep not to rehercen it no more
 He saide Arueragus of gentilnesse
 Had leuere dey in sorowe and distresse 1596

GROUP F. § 4. FRANKLIN'S TALE. Petworth MS.

Than his wif were of hure trowþe fals [leaf 190, back]
 The sorowe of dorigen he tolde hym als
 Howe loþe hire was to be a wicked wiff
 And þat she leuere þat day lost hure liff 1600
 And þat hure trouþe she swore þourgh Innocence
 She neuere erst herde speke of apparence
 That made me han of hure so grete pite
 And riȝt as frely as he sent hire me 1604
 As freely sent I hire to hym aȝein
 This is alle and some þer nys no more to seyn
 This Philisophre answerd leue broþer
 Euerich of ȝou did gentilich til oþer 1608
 Thou art a squyere and he a knyȝt
 But god forbode for his blisful myȝt
 But if a clerk coupe do a gentile dede
 As wel as eny of ȝou it is no drede 1612
 Sir I relece þe þi þousand pounde
 As þow riȝt nowe were copen out of þe grounde
 Ne neuere er nowe haddest þou knowe me
 ffor sir I nyl not take a peny of þe 1616
 ffor al my craft and my travaile
 þow hast ypaied wel for my vitaile
 It is ynowe and fare wele & haue good day
 And toke his hors and forþ he goþ his way 1620
 ¶ Lordingges þis question wil I aske nowe
 Which was þe most free as þenkeþ ȝou
 Nowe telleþ me er þat I forþer wende
 I Can no more my tale is at an ende 1624
 ¶ Thus endeþ þe frankleyn his tale

GROUP G. FRAGMENT VIII.

§ 1. THE SECOND NUN'S TALE.

PETWORTH MS.

[THE PROEM.]

[on leaf 190, back]

[No breaks between the stanzas in the MS.]

¶ And here byginneþ þ^e prologe of ij. nonne

(1)

The mynystere and þe norice vnto vices 1
Which þat men clepen in englisch ydelnesse
The portor of þe gate is of delices
To eschewe and by her contrary hure oppresse 4
þat is to sayn by leefful bysynesse
Wel ouȝt we to doñ our entent
Lest þat þe feend þorgh ydelnesse vs shent [leaf 191] 7

(2)

For he þat wip his þousande cordes sclize 8
Continuelly vs waiteþ to be-clappe
Whan he may man in ydelnesse aspie
He can so lightly cacche him in his trappe 11
Til þat a man be hent riȝt by þe lappe
He nys nat ware þe fende hap hym on honȝ
wel ouȝt vs worch and ydelnesse wipstond 14

(3)

And þouȝe men dradden neuere forto deye 15
ȝit seen men wel by resoun doutelees
That ydelnesse is roten scloggardye
Of whiche þer neuere commeth non encrees 18
And siþens þat sclouth hure holdeþ in a lees
Only to slepe and forto ete and drinke
And to devouren alle þat opere swynke 21

PETWORTH 402 (8-T. 527)

GROUP G. § 1. SECOND NUN'S TALE. Petworth MS.

(4)

And forto putten vs from such ydelnesse 22
 That cause is of þe grete confusioñ
 I haue here done my feipful bysynesse
 Aftre þe legende in translaciōn 25
 Riȝt of þi glorious lif *and* passioñ
 Thow wiþ þi garlond wrouȝt of rooses *and* lilie
 The mene I maiden and marter' seint' Cicile 28

(5)

And þou þat floure of virgynes art alle 29
 Of whom þat Barnard lust' so wel to write
 To þe at my bygynnyng' furst' I calle
 Thou comforte of vs wrecches do me endite 32
 þine maidens deþ þat was þorgh þi merite
 þe eternal lif and of þe feende victorie
 Certes men may aftre reden in his storie 35

(6)

Thow maiden *and* modere douȝter' of þ' sone 36
 Thow welle of mercy synful soules cure
 In whom þat god for bounte chees to wone¹ [1 wone later]
 Thowe humble and heȝh ouere euery creature 39
 Thou nobledest so ferre oure nature
 That no desdeyn þe maker had of kynde
 His sone in blood and flessch to cloþ *and* wynde 42

(7)

Wiþ-Inne þe cloystere blisful of þi sidys [leaf 191, back] 43
 Toke mannys shappe þe eterne lone *and* pees
 þat of þe trynie compas lorde and gide es
 Whom erþe and see and heuene wiþ out' relees 46
 Ay heryen and þou virgyne wemlees
 Bare of þi body and dwellest' maiden pure
 þe creatour of euery creature 49

(8)

Assembled is in þe magnificence	50
Wiþ mercy goodnesse <i>and</i> such pite	
That þou arte þe sonne of excellence	
Nouȝt only helpest hem þat preien þe	53
But oftetyme of þi benignyte	
fful frely er þat men þine helpe biseche	
þow goost byform and art her lyues leche	56

(9)

Now helpe þou meke and blisful faire maide	57
Me flemed wrech in þis deserte of galle	
Thenk on þe womman Canane þat saide	
þat whelpes eten somme of þe crommes alle	60
þat from her lordis table bene yfalle	
And þouȝe þat I þe vnworþi sone of Eue	
Be sinful ȝit accepte my bileue	63

(10)

And for þat feip is dede wiþ-out werkes	64
So for to worchen ȝeue me witte <i>and</i> space	
þat I be quytte from place þat most derk es	
O þou þat art so faire and so ful of grace	67
Be myne aduocate in so high a place	
Ther as wiþ-out ende is songe Osanna	
þou cristes moder and douȝter of Anna	70

(11)

And of þi liȝt my soule in prison liȝt	71
þat troubled is by þe contagioñ	
Of my body and also by þe wiȝt	
Of erþly lust and fals affection	74
O heuene o. refute .o. saluacioñ	
Of hem þat bene in sorowe <i>and</i> in distresse	
Nowe helpe for to my werk I wil me dresse	77

GROUP G. § 1. SECOND NUN'S TALE. Petworth MS.

(12)

3it prey I 3ou þat reden þat I write	78
fforyeueþ me þat I doo no diligence	[leaf 198]
þis ilk storie subtely to endite	
ffor boþ haue I þe wordys <i>and</i> þe sentence	81
Of hem þat at sey[n]tes reuerence	
þe storie wroot and folowen her legende	
And prei 3ou þat 3e wil my werk amende	84

(13) [THE TALE.]

First wolde I 3ou þe name of seint Cicile	85
Expoune as men in her stories see	
It is to saye in engelisshe heuenes lilie	
ffor pure chaastnesse of virginite	88
Oþer for she witnesse had of honeste	
Of grene of consciens <i>and</i> of good fame	
The swote sauoure lilie was hure name	91

(14)

Oþere Cicile is to say þe way to blynde	92
ffor she ensample was by good techinge	
Or ellis Cicile as I writen fynde	
Is ioyned by a manere conioynynge	95
Of heuene and lya <i>and</i> hier in figurynge	
þe heuene is sette for þouȝt of holynesse	
And lya for hure lastinge bisynesse	98

(15)

Cicile maye eke be seide in þis manere	99
Wantyng of blyndenesse for hure grete liȝt	
Of sapience and of her thewes clere	
Oþer ellis loo þis maidens name briȝt	102
Of heuene <i>and</i> leos commep for which by riȝt	
Men myȝt þe heuene of puple hure calle	
Ensample of good and wise werkes alle	105

(16)

For leos puple in englisch is to say 106
 And riȝt as men may in þe heuen see
 The sonne and mone *and* þe sterres euery way
 Riȝt so [men] goostly in þis maiden fre 109
 Seen þe feiþ of magnificence
 And eke of helpe and of sapience
 And sondry werkes briȝt of excellence 112

(17)

And riȝt as þise philisophres write 113
 þat heuene is swift rounde *and* brennyng
 Riȝt so was faire Cicile þo white [leaf 192, back]
 ful swift and bisy euere in werkinge 116
 And rounde and hool in good perseuerynge
 And brenne euere in charite liȝt
 Now haue I declared þou what she hiȝt 119

¶ Thus endep þe prologe / & here bygynnep þe .ij. nonnes
 tale

(18)

This maiden briȝt Cicile as hure lif saiþ ¶ þe tale /
 was comen of Romaynes *and* of noble kynde
 And so forþe fostred vp in þe faip
 Of criste and bare hys gospel in her mynde 123
 She neuere sesed as I writen fynde
 Of hure preiere and god to loue and drede
 Biſechinge hym to kepe her maidenhede 126

(19)

And whan þis maiden shuld vnto a man 127
 ywedded be þat was ful ȝenge of age
 That ycleped was valirian
 And þe day was comen of hure mariage 130
 She fille deuoute and humble in her corage
 Vndere hure Robe of gold þat sat ful faire
 And next hure flesh yclad was in an haire 133

(20)

And while þe Orgels maden melodie	134
To god allone þus in hart songe she	
O lorde my saule <i>and</i> eke my body gie	
Vnwemmed lest þat I confounded be	137
And for his loue þat dyed on a tree	
Euery secounde or <i>thridde</i> ¹ day she fast	[MS. 114.]
Ay bidynge in here orisons ful fast	140

(21)

The nyght come and to bed she most goon	141
Wiþ hure husbonde as aften is þe manere	
And priuely she seide anōn	
O swete and welbiloued spouse dere	144
þer is a counsaile <i>and</i> ȝe wold it here	
Which þat riȝt fayn I wolde vnto ȝou seien	
So þat ȝe me assured it nouȝt bywreien	147

(22)

Valeryan gan fast vnto hure swere	148
þat for no caas ne þinge þat myȝt be	
He shold for no þinge neuere bewrien here	[leaf 118.]
And þan at arst þus to hym seide she	151
I haue an aungeſt which þat loueþ me	
þat wiþ grete loue whedere I wake or alepe	
Is redy ay my body forto kepe	154

(23)

And ȝif þat ȝe may felen out of drede	155
þat ȝe wil ȝou gouerne no þinge amys	
He wil ȝou saue and kepe to ȝe be dede	
ffor ȝoure clene lynyng & ȝoure goodnesse	158
And bring ȝou streizte into heuene blesse	
He wol ȝou loue as me for ȝoure clenness	
And schewen ȝou of his Ioye and his briȝtnesse	161

(24)

Valerian corrected as god wolde 162
 Answerde azein if I shal trust to þe
 lat me þat aungel se and hym biholde
 And ȝif þat it a verrei aungel be 165
 þan wil I done as þou hast preide me
 ¶ And ȝif þou loue anoþer man þan me
 riȝt wiþ þis swerde I wil slee ȝou boþe 168

(25)

Cicile Answerde anone in þis wise 169
 And if ȝou lust þat aungel shul ȝe see
 So þat ȝe trowe on criste and ȝou baptise
 God forþ to Via Apia quod she 172
 þat from þis toune ne stant but myles þre
 And to þe pore folk þat þere dwelle
 Say hem riȝt þus as þat I shal ȝou telle 175

(26)

Say þat I Cicilie ȝou to hem sent 176
 To shewe ȝou þe good vrbān þe olde
 ffor secre nedes and for good entent
 And whan þat ȝe seint Vrbān han byholde 179
 Telle him þe wordes which I to ȝou tolde
 And whan þat he haþ purged ȝou fro synne
 þan shul ȝe seen þat aungel er ȝe twynne 182

(27)

Valerian is to þat place ygōn 183
 And riȝt as hym was tauȝt by his lurnynge
 He fonde þis holy Vrbān anōn ./
 Amonge þise seintes burials lowtynges [leaf 188, back] 186
 And he anōn wiþ-out tariynge
 Did his massage and whan he had [it] tolde
 Vrbān for ioie gan his hondes vp holde 189

(28)

The teares from his eien lete he falle	190
Almyzty god o Ihesu crist quod he	
Sowere of chaast' counsaile & herde of vs alle	
The fruyte of pilke seede of chaastite	193
pat' pou haste sawe in cicile take to pee	
Loo like a bisy bee wip-out' gile	
pe serueth ay pine owne thralle Cicile	196

(29)

For pilk spouse pat' she toke but nowe	197
fful like a ferce leon she sendeþ here	
As meke as eny lombe was to þou .	
And wip pat' worde anon þer gan apere	200
An olde man clad wip white cloþes clere	
And had a boke wip <i>lettres</i> of golde in honde	
And gan biforne Valerian stonde	203

(30)

Valerian as dede fille doune for drede	204
whan he hym segþ and hym vphent' þoo .	
And on his boke þus he gan to rede	
Oo lord oo feiþ oo god wip-oute moo	207
Of cristendome and fadere of aH also .	
Abouen alle <i>and</i> oueral euery where	
þise wordes al wip gold [y]writen were	210

(31)

Whan þis was radde pat' seide þis olde man	211
Leuest' þou þis þing' or no sai þe or nay	
I leue al þis þin[g] / [quod Valerian <small>[Harl. 7336, leaf 93, back]</small>	
ffor sother thyng' & ¹ þis I dar wel saye <small>[¹ than Harl.]</small>	214
Vndere þe heuene no wizt' ne þenk may	
¶ Tho vanshed pat' olde man he nyst' wher	
And pope Vrban hym cristened riȝt' þere	217

(32)

Valerian goþ home to seint' Cicile	218
And withInne his chambre an Aungel he segh stande	
þis aungel had of rose <i>and</i> of lillie	
Corownes two þe whiche he bare on hande	221
And first to Cicile as I vnderstande	
Be 3af þat' oon and aftere gan he take	Deaf 194]
þat' oper to Valerian her make	224

(33)

Wip body clene and wip vnwemmed þou3t'	225
kepeþ ay wel þise corownes quod he	
ffrom paradise to 3ou haue I hem brou3t'	
Ne neuere more shul þei roten be	228
Ne lese her swete sauoure tresteth me	
Ne neuere wigt' shal seene hem wip his ye	
But he be chaast' and hate vilanye	231

(34)

And þou valerian for þou so sone	232
Assentest' to good counsaile also	
flay what þe lust' and þou shalt haue þi bone	
I haue a broþer quod Valerian þoo	235
þat' in þis world' I loue no man soo /	
I prey 3ou þat' my broþere may haue grace	
To knowe þe troupe as I do in þis place	238

(35)

The aungel answerde god likeþ 3our request'	239
And boþ wip þe palme of marterdome	
3e shul come vnto þe blisful fest'	
And wip þat' worde tiburce his broþere come	242
And whan þat' he þe sauoure vndernome	
Wip þat' þe roses and þe lilies caste	
Wip-Inne his herte he gan to wonder faste	245

(36)

And saide in pis tyme I wondere of þe ȝere	246
whennys þis swete sauoure commep soo /	
And roses and lilies þat I smelle here	
ffor þouȝe I had hem in myn hondes twoo	249
þe sauoure myȝt in me no depper goo	
þe swete smelle þat in myn hert I fynde	
Hap chaunged me al in a noȝer kinde	252

(37)

Valerian saide two corownes haue we	253
Snowe white and rose rede þat shyneþ clere	
which þat þine eyen han no myȝt to see	
And as þowe smellest hem þouȝe þ' preiere	256
So Shalt þou sene hem leue broȝer dere	
ȝif it so be þou wilt wip-oute scloupe .	
Byleue a riȝt and knowe þe verrey troupe	[leaf 194, back]

(38)

Tyburce answerȝ seist þou þis to me	260
In soȝnease or in dreame herken ȝe þis	
In dremes quod Valerian han we be	
Into þis tyme broȝer myȝn ywis	263
But nowe at arst our troupe dwelling is	
Howe woost þou quod Tiburce & in what wise	
Quod Valerian þat shal I þe devise	266

(39)

The Aungel of god hap me þe troupe tauȝt	267
Which þat þou shalt seen if þat þow wilt reneye	
The ydoles and be clene and ellis nauȝt	
But of þe myracles of þise corownes tweye	270
Seint Ambrose in his preface list to seie	
Solempnely this noble doctour dere	
Commendeþ it and seiþ in þis manere	273

(40)

The palme of marterdome forto receyue	274
Seint Cicile fulfilled of goddys ȝift	
þe worlde and [e]ke hurs chambre gan she weyue	
Witnesse Tiburce and Cicilees shrift	277
To which god of his bountee woldes shift	
Corownes two of flowres wel smellynge	
And made þe sungel hem þoo corownes bringe	280

(41)

This made hap brouȝt þise men to blisse aboue	281
þe world hap wist what it is worþ certeyne	
Deuocion of chastite to loue	
Tho shewed hym Cicile open and pleyne	284
That alle ydoles nys but þing in veyne	
ffor þei bene dombe and þerto þei bene defe	
And charged hym his ydols forto lef	287

(42) .

Who þat þis trouep nat a beest he is	288
Quod þoo tyburce if þat I shal not ly	
She gan þan kisse his brest & þat herd þis	
And was ful glad he couþe trouþ aspie	291
This daye take I þe for myne alye	
Saide þis bleiful maide faire & dere	
ffor aftere þat she saide as ȝe may here ./	294

(43)

Loo ryȝt so as þe loue of crist quod She	295
Made me þi broþeres wif riȝt in þat wise	
Anoon for myn alie here take I þe	
Siþens þat þou wolt þine ydoles despise	298
Go wiþ þi broþer nowe and þe baptise	
And make þe clene so þat þou maist beholde	
þe Aungels face of which þi brother tolde	301

(44)

Tyburse answerd and seide broþer dere	302
ffurst telle me whidere I shal and to what man	
To whome quod he come forþ wiþ riȝt goode chere	
I wil þe lede vnto þe pope Vrban	305
To Vrban broþer myne Valerian	
Quod þoo Tiburce wilt þou me þidere lede	
Me þenkeþ þat it were a wondere dede	308

(45)

Remenest þou nat Vrban quod he þoo	309
That is so ofte dampned to be dede	
And wonnep in halkes to and froo	
And dar nat onys put forþ his hede	312
Men shul hym brenne in a fire so rede	
If he were founde þat men myȝt hym spie	
And we also þat here hym companye	315

(46)

And whiles we seken þilk Dyunynte	316
þat is ihidde in heuene prive	
Algate ybrent in þis world shul we be .	
To whom Cicile answerd bodily	319
Men myȝt drede wel and skilfully	
This lif to lese myn owne dere broþer	
ȝif þis were lyuynges only and noȝ oþer	322

(47)

But þer is better lif in ooper place	323
That neuere shal be lost drede þe nouȝt	
Which goddes sone vs tolde þourgh his grace	
[That fadres sone hath alle thynges wrought	
And al that wrought is with a skilful thoght	
The gost that fro the fader gan procede	
hath sowled hem with-outen ony drede	329

[Harl. 7335,
leaf 96, bk.]

(48)

By word and by myracle he goddes sone [Hart. 7336] 330
whan he was in this world declared here
That ther was other lif ther men may wone
Tho answerde Tiburce o. suster dere 333
Ne sei-destow right now in this manere
Ther nys but o god lord in sothfastnesse
And now of three how maisthow bere witnesse 336

(49)

That shal y telle quod she or y go] [Hart. 7336 extract ends]
Rigt as a man hap sapiences pre
Memorie engeyne and intellecte also
So in oo beinge of diuinite 340
Thre persones rikt wel per may be
Tho gan she hym bisily preche.
Of cristes come and of his peynes teche [Leaf 135, back]

(50)

And mony poyntes of his passion 344
How goddys sonne in pis wip-holde
To do mankynde pleyn remyssioun
That was ybounde in cares colde 347
Al pis pinge she vnto Tiburce tolde
And aftere pis Tiburce in good entent
To pope Vrban wip Valerian went 350

(51)

Which ponked god and wip glad hert and list 351
He Cristned hym and made hym in pat place
Parfit in his lyuyng goddys knykt
And after pis Tiburce gate such grace 354
pat euery day he seie in tyme and space
pe Aungel of god and euery maner bone
pat he god asked it was spedde ful sone 357

(52)

It were ful harde by order forto seyne	358
Howe many wonders Ihesu for hym wrouzt	
But atte last to telle short and pleyñ	
The sergeaunt of þe towne of Rome hem souzt	361
And hem byform Almachie þe prouost brouzt	
Whiche hem opposed and knewe al her entent	
And to þe ymage of Iubiter he hem sent	364

(53)

And saide who so wil not sacrifice	365
Swap of his heued þis is my sentence here	
Anone þise martears þat I 3ou deuise	
On maximus þat was an officere	368
Of þe prefectis and of Corniculere	
Hem hent and whan he forþe þe seyntes ladde	
Hym self he wepte for pite þat he hadde	371

(54)

Whan maximus had herde þe seintes lore	372
he gate hem of þe turmentours leue	
And had hem in his hous wiþ-out more	
And wiþ her prechinge er þat it were eue	375
þei gone from þe tormentours to reue	
And fro maximus and fro his folk echone	
þe fals feith to trowe in god allone.	378

(55)

Cicile come whan it was woxen nyzt	[leaf 196]	379
Wiþ preestes þat hem cristened al in fere		
And afterward whan day was waxen lizt		
Cicile hem seide wiþ a sobre chere		382
Now cristes owne knyghtes leef and dere		
Castep al away þe werkes of derknesse		
And armeþ 3ou in armure of liztnesse		385

(56)

3e han forsoþe ydone grete bataille	386
Which is nowe done 3oure feip han 3e confermed	
Gop to þe corowne of lif þat may not faile	
The Riȝt Iuge which þat 3e han disserued	389
Tofore hym 3e bene feipfulli preserued	
And whan þis þinge was seide as I deuise	
Men ladde hem forþe to done þe sacrificie	392

(57)

But whan þei were vnto þe place brouȝt	393
To telle shortely þe conclusioun	
þei nolde ensence ne sacrificie riȝt nouȝt	
But on her knees þei setten hem adoun	396
Wiþ humble hert and sad deuocioun	
And losten boþ her hedes in þe place	
Her saules wenten to þe kinge of grace	399

(58)

This Maximius þat see þis þinge betide	400
wiþ pitous tales tolde it anon riȝt	
That he her sawles seghe to heuene gl'ide	
Wiþ aungels ful of cleernesse and of liȝt	403
And wiþ his worde conuerted mony a wiȝt	
for which Almachius did hym so to bete	
Wiþ whippe of lede til he his lif gan lete	406

(59)

Cicile hym toke and buried hym anon	407
By Tiburce and Valerian softly	
Wiþ-Inne her heriyng place vnder þe stoñ	
And aftere þis Almachius hastely	410
Bad his mynystres fecchen opynly	
Cicile so she myȝt in his presence	
Don sacrificie and Iubiter ensence	413

(60)

But þei conuerted þorgh her wise lore	414
Wepten sore and ȝaf credence	[leaf 196, back]
Vnto her worde <i>and</i> criden more <i>and</i> more	
Crist goddes sone wip-oute difference	417
Is Verrey god þis is all oure sentence	
þat haþ so good a <i>seruaunte</i> hym to serue	
Thus wip oo vois we trowe þouȝe we sterue	420

(61)

Almachius þat herde al this [doinge]	421
Bad foche Cicile þat he myȝt hure se	
And alderfurst loo þis was his askinge	
What maner womman art þou þo quod he	424
I am a gentile womman born quod she	
I aske quod he þouȝe it þe greue	
Of þi religioñ and of þi bileue	427

(62)

Whi þan bygan ȝoure question folily	428
Quod she þat woldest two answers conclude	
In oon demannde ȝe asked lewedely	
Almachy answerde to þat similitude	431
Of whennys [comth thyn answeyng so rude [Earl. 7226, 7297]	
Of whennys] quod she whan þat she was refreynd	
Of conscience and of good feip vnfeyned	434

(63)

Almachius seide takest þou non hede	435
Of þine answer and she hym answerd þus	
ȝoure myȝt quod she litel is to drede	
fior euery mortell mannys power nys	438
But lich a bladdere ful of wynde ywis	
fior wip a nedelys poynte whan þat is blowe	
May al þe boost of it be laide ful lowe	441

(64)

Ful wron[g]fully bygonne þou quod he	442
And ȝit in wronge is þi perseueraunce	
Woost þou nat how oure myȝty princes fre	
Ben þus comaunded <i>and</i> maken ordinaunce	445
þat euery cristen wiȝt shal han penaunce	
But ȝif þat he his cristendome wiȝseynd	
And goon al quite if he wil it receyne	448

(65)

ȝoure princes aren as ȝoure noblen dop	449
Quod þoo Cicile and a woode sentence	
ȝe make vs gilty and it nys nat soth	
ffor ȝe þat knowen wel our Innocence	452
ffor as moch as we done Reuerence	
To criste and for we bere a cristen name	
ȝe put on vs a cryme and eke a blame	455

(66)

But we þat knowen þilk name soo	456
ffor vertuous we may it not say	
Almachy answerde chese on of þise twoo	
Do sacrifice or cristendome reney	459
þat þowe may nowe scapen by þat way	
At which þe holy blisful maide	
Gan forto lauȝe and to þe Iuge she saide	462

(67)

O Iuge confuse in þi nycete	463
Wilt þou þat I reneye Innocence	
To maken me a wicked wiȝt quod she	
loo he dissimuleþ here in audience	466
He stareþ and wodeþ in his aduertence	
To whom Almachius o vnsely wrecch	
Ne woost þow not howe ferre my myȝt may strecc	469

(68)

Hap nouȝt^t our myȝty prince to me ȝouen 470
 ȝe boȝ powere and auctoritee
 To make folk^t to dien or to lyuen
 Whi spekest^t þou so proudly þan to me 473
 I ne speke but^t stedfastly quod she
 Nouȝt^t proudly for I saie as for my side
 I hate dedly þilke vice of pride 476

(69)

And ȝif þou drede nouȝt^t a soȝe to here 477
 þan wil I shewen al openly by riȝt^t
 þat þou hast^t made a ful grete lesinge here
 Thow seist^t þi princes han ȝeue þe myȝt^t 480
 Boȝ to sleene and forto quyke a wiȝt^t
 Thowe þat^t ne maist^t but^t only lif here by-reue
 Thow nast^t þerto neibere power ne leue 483

(70)

[But þou mayst sayn thi prynces han the maked] ^[Hart. 7388, leaf 96]
 Mynyster^t of deȝ for ȝif þou speke of moo
 þow liest^t for þi power^t is ful naked
 Do way þi boldnesse saide Almachius þoo 487
 And sacrifice to our goddys twoo.
 I ne recche nouȝt^t what^t wronge þat^t þou me profre ^[Hart. 7389, leaf 96]
 ffor I can suffre it^t as a filosofre 490

(71)

But^t þilk^t wronges may I nat^t endure 491
 þat^t þou spekest^t of oure goddes here quod he
 Cicele answerde oo nyce creature
 þow seidest no word siȝ þou spekest^t to me 494
 þat^t I ne knewe þerwiȝ þi nycete
 And þat^t þowe were in euery maner^t wise
 A lewde officere and a veyn Iustise 497

(72)

Ther lackep no þinge to þine vtter eyen	498
þat þou nart blynde for þing' þat we seen alle	
þat is a stone þat men may wel asprien	
That ilke stoon a god þou wolt it calle	501
I rede þe lat þine h[ond] vpon it falle	
And taast it wel and stoon þou shalt it fynde	
Sipe þat þou seest it nat wip þine eyen blynde	504

(73)

It is a shame þat þe puple shal	505
So scorne þe and lauȝe at þi folȝ	
ffor comonly women wote it. well ouerall	
That myȝty god is in heuene hie	508
And þise ymages wel þan maist þou spie	
To þe ne to hem self may þei nat profite	
And in her effecte þei bene nat worth a myte	511

(74)

Thise and such oþer wordes saide She	512
And he wexe wroop and bad she shuld be lede	
home to her hous and in her hous quod he	
Brenne hure in a fuyre wip flawmes rede	515
And as he bad ryȝt so was done þe dede	
And in a bath. þei gan hure fast shetten	
And nyght and day grete fuyre vnder þei maden	518

(75)

Al þe longe nyȝt and eke þe day also	519
ffor al þe fuyre and eke þe bapes hete	
She satte al colde and felt of it no woo	
Ne made hure a drope nouȝt forto swete	522
But in þat bath her lif She most lete	
ffor he Almachie wip ful wicked entent	
To scleen hure in þe bath his sonde sent /	[leaf 196]

GROUP G. § 1. SECOND NUN'S TALE. Petworth MS.

(76)

Thre strokes in þe nekke he smote hure þoo 526
 The turmentour but for no manere chaunce
 He myȝt not smyten al her necke a two
 And for þer was þat tyme an ordynaunce 529
 That none shuld to no man do such penaunce
 þe ferþe stroke to smyten soft or sore
 This turmentour ne durst do no more. 532

(77)

But half dede wiþ her necke ycoruen þere 533
 He laft hure lye and on his waye he went
 þe Cristen folk which aboute hure were
 Wiþ shetes home ful faire hure hente 536
 Thre daies lyued she in þis torment
 And neuere cesed hem þe feiþ to teche
 Whom she had fostred hem she gan to preche 539

(78)

And hem she ȝaf her meueables *and* her þinge 540
 And to þe pope Vrban bytoke hem þoo
 And saide þus I asked þis of heuene kynge
 To han respite. þre daies and no moo 543
 To recomaunde to ȝou er þat I goo
 Thise soules loo! *and* þat I myȝt to wirche
 Here of myn hous perpetuelly a chirche 546

(79)

SEynt Vrban wiþ his dekenes priuely 547
 The body fette and buried it by nyȝt
 Amonge his oþer seintes honestly
 Hure hous þe church of seint Cicile hiȝt 550
 Seint Vrban halawed it as he wel myȝt
 In þe which into þis daye in noble wise
 Men done to crist and to his seinte servise. 553

¶ þus endep þe tale of þe seconnde nonne

[on leaf 100] ¶ The prologe.

And here bygynneþ þe prologe of þe chanouns ȝeman

Whan ended was þe lif of seinte Cecile
 Er we fully had ryden five myle
 An boghton vnder þe ble vs gan a take
 A man þat cloped was in clopes blake 557
 And vnder þat he had a white surplis.
 His hakeney þat was so pomel gris [leaf 100, back]
 So swete þat it wondere was to see
 It semed he had prikked myles þre 561
 þe hors eke þat his ȝeman rode vpon
 So swette þat vnneþes myȝt he goñ
 Aboute þe peitrest stood þe foom ful hie
 He was of fome al flekked as a pie 565
 A male twifolde on his cropour laye
 It semed þat he caried litel araye
 Al liȝt for somer roode þis worþi man /
 And in myn herte wondre I bygan 569
 What þat he was til I vnderstode
 How þat his cloke was sewed to his hode
 ffor which whan I longe had avised me
 I demed hym some chanon forto be 573
 His hatte honge at his bak doune by a laas
 ffor he had ryden more þan trotte or paas
 He had aye prikked like as he were wood
 A clote leef he had vnder his hode 577
 ffor swote and forto kepe his hede from hete
 But it was ioie forto seen hym swete
 His forhede dropped as a Stillatorie
 Were ful of planteyne and of Pyritorie 581

PETWORTH 422 (G-T. 547)

And whan þat he came he gan to crie 582
 God saue quod he þis Ioly companye
 fast haue I prikked quod he for þoure sake
 Because þat I wolde þou ouertake 585
 To ryden in þis mery company
 His ȝeman eke was ful of curtesie
 And sirres now in þe morowe tide
 Out of þoure ostelrie I segh 30^a ride 589
 And warned here my lorde and my souereyn
 Which þat to ride wiþ þou is ful fayn
 ffor his disporte he loueþ daliaunce
 ffrende for þi warnyng' god ȝeue þe good chaunce 593
 Seide oure hoste certes it wolde seme
 Thi lorde were wise and so I may wel dame (leaf 199)
 He is ful iocounde also dar I lay
 Can he ouȝt telle a mery tale or twaye 597
 Wiþ which he glade may þis company
 Who sir my lord! ȝe ȝe wiþ-uten lie
 He can of merrþ and eke of Iolite
 And þat ynouȝe also sir tresteth me 601
 And ȝe hym knewe as wel as do I
 ȝe wolde wonder howe wel and thriftelie
 He couþe worche and þat in sondry wise
 He haþ take on hym mony sondry aprise 605
 Which were ful hard for eny þat is here
 To bringe aboute but þei of hym it lere
 As homely as he ritte amonge þou
 If ȝe hym knewe it wolde be þour prowre 609
 ȝe nolde nat' forȝon his aqueyntaunce
 ffor mochel good I dar laie in balaunce
 Ah þat I haue in myn possession
 He is a man of hiȝe discrecion 613
 I warne þowe wel he is a passing' man
 Wel kope our' hoost' I prey þe telle me þan
 Is he Clerk' or noon telle what he is
 Nay he is gretter þan a clerk' ywis 617

Seide þe ȝeman and in woordes fewe 618
Oost of his craft somewhat I wil ȝou shewe
I saie my lorde can such a sotilte
But all his craft ȝe may not wit at me 621
And Somwhat helpe I ȝit to his worchinge
þat al þis grounde which þat we ben on ridynge
Til þat we come to caunterberye touñ
He coude al clere turne vp so doun 625
And paue it al of siluer and of golde
And whan þis ȝeman had þus ytolde
Vnto oure hooste he seide Benedicite
This þing is wonder meruelous to me 629
Sipens þat þi lord is of so hiȝe prudence
Bycause of which men shulde hym reuerence [leaf 199, back]
þat of his worship rekkeþ he so lite
His ouersclope nys nat worþ a myte 633
As in effecte to him as mot I goo/
It is al baudy and to-tore also
Whi is þi lord so sluttish I þe prey
And is of power better cloþes to beye 637
If þat his dede accorde wiþ þi speche
Telle me þat I þe biseche
Whi quod þis ȝeman wherto aske ȝe me
God helpe me so for he shal neuere the 641
But I wil nat avowe þat I say
And þefore kepe it secre I ȝou pray
He is to wise in feiþ as I bileue
That þat is ouerdone it nyl not preue 645
And riȝt as clerkes seyn it is a vice
wherfore in þat I holde hym lewde and nyce
ffor whan a man hap ouer grete a witte
fful often it happeþ to misusen it 649
So dop my lord and þat me greueþ sore
God it amende I can seye now no more
Therof no fors good ȝeman quod our hoost
Syþ of þe konyng of þi lord þou wost 653

Telle howe he doþ I prey þe hertely 654
 Sipþes þat he is so crafty and so sly
 Where dwelleþ ȝe if it to telle be
 In þe Subarbes of a toune quod he 657
 Lurkynges in hernes *and* in lanes blynde
 Where þise Robbers and þeues be kynde
 Holden her p'rve feerful residence
 As þei þat dar not shewen her presence 661
 So fare we if I shal say þe soþe
 ȝit quod [our] oste lat me talke to the
 Why art þou discolowred on þi face
 Peter' quod he god ȝeue it harde grace 665
 I am so vsed þe fire to blowe
 That it hap chaunged my colour' as I trowe [leaf 200]
 I ne am not wonte in no myrour to prie
 But swynke sore and lerne to multiplie 669
 We Blundren euere *and* powren in þe fire
 And for alle þat we faillen of our desire
 ffor euere we lacken our conclusiō
 To moche folk' we bene but illusiō 673
 And borowe golde be it a pound' or twoo
 Or ten or twelue or mony *sommes* moo
 And make hem wenen at the leest wey
 þat of a pounde we cowde make twey 677
 ȝit is it fals and ay we han good hope
 It forto doon and aftere it we grope
 But þat science is so fer vs biforne
 We mowe not alle þouȝe we had it sworne 681
 It ouertake it alitt' away so fast
 It wil vs make beggers at þe last
 þe whiles þis ȝeman was þus in his talkyng'
 This Chanof drowe hym nere *and* herð al þinge 685
 Which þat þis ȝem[an] spake for suspeciō
 ¶ Of mennys speche euere had þis chanof
 ffor Caton seiþ he þat gilty is
 Demef al þinge be spoke of hym ywis 689

<p>By cause of þat he gan so nyȝe to drawe His ȝeman þat herd alle his sawe And þus he seide vnto his ȝeman þoo Holde now þi pees and speke no wordes moo ffor if þowe doo þu shalt it dere aby þow sclaunderest me here in þis company And eke diskeuerest þat þou shuldest hide ȝe quod oure hoost telle on what so betide Of al þis þretynge rech þe not a myte In feiþ quod he no moore I doo but lite And whan þis chanon segh it wold nat be But þat his ȝeman wolde telle his priuete He fledde a-way for verrey sorowe <i>and</i> shame A quod the ȝeman here shal arise a game Ah þat I can anof wil I telle Siþens he is goon þe foule fende hym quelle ffor neuere here after wil I wiþ hym mete ffor peny ne for pounde I ȝou bihete He þat me brouȝt furst vnto þat game Er þat he dye sorowe haue he <i>and</i> shame ffor it it is earnest to me by my feiþe þat fele I wele what so eny man seiþe & ȝit for all my smerte <i>and</i> al my greff ffor al my sorowe . labour <i>and</i> meschieff I kouþe neuere leue it in no wise Now wold god my wittes myȝt suffise To tellen al þat longen to þat art But napeles ȝit wil I telle ȝowe part Siþens þat my lorde is goon I wil not spare Such þinge as I knowe I wil declare</p>	<p>690</p> <p>693</p> <p>697</p> <p>701</p> <p>[leaf 200, back]</p> <p>705</p> <p>709</p> <p>713</p> <p>717</p>
--	---

¶ Thus endeþ þe prologe of þe chanons ȝeman

[on leaf 200, back] & here bygynneþ þ^r tale

[THE PREAMBLE.]

With þis chanon [I] dwelt haue seuene þere ¶ The
 And of his science am I neuer þe nere tale ./
 Al þat I had I haue ylost þerby
 And god woo so han many moo þan I
 Ther I was wonte to be riȝt fresh and gay
 Of clopinge and of good aray 725
 Now may I were an hose vpon myne heued
 And where my coloure was boþ fresh and rede
 Now is it wan and of a lewde hwe
 Who so it vseþ sore shal he rwe 729
 And of my swynk ȝit blered is myn ye
 Loo suche auantage it is to multiplie
 That selydinge science hap me made so bale
 That I haue no good wher so euer y fare 733
 And ȝit am I endetted so þerby
 Of golde þat I haue borrowed trewly
 That whil I lyve I shal it quite neuere
 Lat euery man be ware by me for euere 737
 What maner man þat casteth hym þerto [leaf 201]
 If he contynue I holde his thrift ydo
 ffor so helpe me god þerby shal he nat wyne
 But empty his purs and make his wyttes pinne 741
 And whan he thorgh his madnesse and folye
 Hap lost his owne good þorgh Iopardye
 þan he exciteþ oþer men þerto
 To lese her good as hym self hap doo / 745
 ffor to shrewes Ioies it is an ese
 To haue her felawes in peyn and dissee

Thus was I ones lerned of a clerk
 Of þat no charge I wil speke of our werk 749
 Whan we bene þere as we shul exercise
 Oure eluessh craft we seme wonder wise
 Our teermes bene so clerghal *and* so queynte
 I blowe þe fyre til þat myn hert feynte 753
 What shuld I telle eche porporcion
 Of þingges which þat we worchen vpon
 As on .v. or .vj. vnces may wel be
 Of Siluere or of som oþer quantite 757
 And biay me to telle þou þe names
 Of Orpyment. brent bonys yren. squames
 Thatt into powdere grounden bene ful small
 And in an erthen pot howe þat pitte is alle 761
 And salt ypitte In. and also paupere
 Byfore þise powdres þat I speke of here
 And wel ykenured wip a laumpe of glas
 And of moche oþer þinge what þer was 765
 And of the potte and glas englutynge
 That of þe eyre myzt passe no þinge
 And of þe Eys fire and smert also
 Which þat was made *and* of the care *and* woo 769
 That we had in our maters sublymynge
 And in amalgame and calcenynge
 Of quik siluere ycleped Mercurie crude
 ffor all oure scleightes we can not conclude 773
 Our orpyment and sublymed Mercurye [leaf 201, back]
 Our grounde litarge eke on þe porphirie
 Of eche of þise of vnces a certeyn
 Nat helpeþ vs oure labour is in veyn 777
 Ne eke oure spirites assencioun
 Ne eke our maters þat lyen al fixe a-down
 Mowen in oure worchinge no þing vs auaile
 ffor lost is al our labour *and* traaille 781
 And all þe cost on twenty deul weye
 Is lost also whiche we vpon it laye

GROUP G. § 3. CAN.-YEOM. PREAMBLE. Petworth MS.

Ther is also mony a nother þing
 That is to our craft appertenynge 785
 þouȝe I by ordere hem here ne reherce kan
 Because þat I am a lewde man
 ȝit wil I telle hem as þei come to mynde
 þouȝe I ne can sette hem in her kynde 789
 As boole armonyak . verdegrees . boras
 And sondry vessels made of erpe *and* glas
 Our vrynales and our dyscensories
 Violles Creseletys . and sublimatories 793
 Concurbitas *and* alembykes eke
 And oper suche dere ynowe a leke
 Nat nedep it to rehersen hem alle
 Waters rubyfyng *and* bolles galle . 797
 Arsenyke sal armonyak *and* brymston
 And herbes coude I telle eke mony on
 As Egrymoyn Valerian *and* lunarie
 And oper such ȝif þat me list tarie 801
 Our lampes brennyng boȝ nyȝt *and* day
 To bringe about our craft ȝif þat we may
 Our furnayes eke of Calcynacioñ
 And of waters albificacioñ 805
 Vnslekked lyme . Chalk *and* gleire of an ey
 Powders divers . Ashes . dunge . pisse . *and* cley
 Sered pockettes . sal peter' . *and* vitriole
 And dyuers fires made of wode *and* Cole 809
 Salt tartre . alcalie *and* salt preparate [leaf 202]
 And combust' maters and coagulate
 Cley made wip horses or mannys here *and* oyle
 Of Tartere . alem glas berme wort & argoille 813
 Rysalgere and opere mateers enbykinge
 And eke of oure mateers encorporinge
 And of [our] Siluer citrinacioñ
 Our sementynge and fermentacioñ 817
 Our ingotes testes *and* mony moo /
 I wil ȝou telle as was me tauȝt also

þe four spiritres and þe bodies seuene
 By ordre oft as I herd my lord hem neuene 821
 The first spirit quyk-siluer cleped is
 þe Secounde orpyment þe *thrid* ywis [1 MS 11]
 Sal Armonyak and þe ferþ bramstone
 þe bodies seuene eke lo hem here anon 825
 Sol gold is *and* luna siluer we threpe
 Mars. yren Mercurie quyksiluer we clepe
 Saturnus lede. and Iubiter is tynne
 And Venus Coper' be my fadere kynne 829
 This cursed craft who so wil exercise
 He shal no good han þat may hym suffice
 ffor al þe good he spendeþ þer-about
 He lese shal þerof haue I no doute 833
 Who so þat list to outen his folý
 Let hym come forþ *and* lerne forto multiplie
 And euery man þat hap ouzt in his cofre
 Let [him] apere and wexe a filosofre 837
 Ascaunce þat craft is so lýt to lere
 Nay nay god wote al be he monke or frere
 Preest chanon or eny oþer wýt
 þat he sitte at his boke þoþ day *and* nyzt 841
 In lernyng' of þis elvissþ nyce lore
 Al is in veyn and parde moche more
 Is to lere a lewde man þis sotille
 ffly speke nat þerof for it wil nat be 845
 Al coude he lettrure or coude he none [leaf 202, back]
 As in effecte he shal fynde it all one
 ffor þoþ twoo be my saluacion
 Concluden in multiplicacion 849
 Illiche wel whan þei han al ydoo
 This is to seyn þei failen þoþ two
 But ȝit for þat I to moche rehersaille
 Of waters corosif and of lymaille 853
 And of bodyes mollificacion
 And also of her induracion

Oilles ablución & metal fusible
 To tellen alle wold passen eny bible 857
 þat owhere is wher as for þe best
 Of all þise names now wil I me rest.
 ffor as I trawe I haue þou tolde ynowe
 To reisen a feende loke he neuere so rowe 861
 A nay lat be þi philosophres stone
 Elixir cleped we sechen fast echone
 ffor had we hym þan were we siker ynouþe
 But vnto god of heuene I make avowe 865
 ffor al our craft whan we han al ydoo
 And al oure sleiþte he wil not come vs too/
 He haþ vs made spende moche good
 ffor sorowe of which almost we wexen wode 869
 But þat good hope creþeþ in our hert
 Supposinge euere þouþe we sore smert
 To be releued by hym afterward
 Supposinge þat hope is sharpe and hard 873
 I warne þou wele it is to seken euere
 þat future tempe haþ made men disseuere
 In trest þerof from alle þat euere þei hadde
 3it of þat art þei koude not wexen sadde 877
 ffor vnto hem it is a bitterswete
 So semeþ it for ne had þei but a shete
 Which þei myȝt wrap hem in a nyȝt
 And a bak to walken In by day liȝt 881
 They wold hem Sellen and spenden on þis craft [lost 203]
 They can not stynt til no þinge be laft
 And euermore wher þat euere þei gone
 Men may hem knowe by þe smelle of bremstone 885
 ffor al þe worlde þei stynken as a gote
 Her sauour is so rammyssh and so hote
 þat þouȝ a man fro hem a myle be
 þe Sauour wil enfecte hym trestþ me 889
 Lo Thus by smellyng and be threde bare aray
 3if þat men lust þise folk þei know may

And if a man wil aske hym prively
 Whi þei bene cloped so vnthriftily 893
 Riȝt anone þei wil rownen in his eere
 And seie if þey aspied were
 Men wolde hem slee by cause of her science
 Loo þus þise folk bitraien Innocence 897
 Passe ouer þis I go my tale vnto
 Er þan þe potte be on þe fuyre ydoo
 Of metalles wiþ a certeyn quantite
 My lorde hem tempred and no man but he 901
 Now he is goon I dar saie boldely
 ffor as men seyne he can do craftely
 Algate I wote wel he hap such a name
 And ȝif ful ofte he rennep in þe blame 905
 And wete ȝe how ful ofte it happeth soo /
 The potte to-brekeþ and fare-wel al is goo
 Thise metalles bene of so grete violence
 Our walles may not maken hem resistance 909
 But ȝif þei [weren] wrouȝt of lyme and stone
 þei percen so þat þorȝe þe wall þei gone
 And somme of hym synken into þe grounde
 Thus haue we lost by tymes mony a pound 913
 And somme are scatered al the flore aboute
 Somme lepen into þe Roof with-out doute
 Thouȝe þat þe feende nat in our siȝt hym shewe
 ¶ I trowe þat he wiþ vs be þat schrewe 917
 In helle wher þat he is lord and sire [leaf 205, back]
 Ne is þer no more woo angere ne Ire
 Whan þat oure pot is broke as I haue saide
 Euery man chitte and halt hym euel paide 921
 Som saide it was longe on þe fire makinge
 Som saide nay it was on þe blowynge
 Than was I aferde for þat was myn office
 Strawe quod þe þred ȝe bene lewde and nyce 925
 It was nat tempred as it auȝt be
 Nay quod þe ferþe stynt and harken me

Be cause oure fire was not made of beche
 þat is þe cause noon opere so theche. 929
 I can not telle wheron it is alonge
 But wel I woot gret strif is vs amonge
 What quod my lord þer nys no more to done
 Of pise periles I wil be ware eft sone 933
 I am rizt syker þat þe pot was craised
 Be as be may be 3e no þinge amased
 As vsage is lat swepe þe flore as swithe
 Pluk vp 3oure hert and be 3e glad *and* blithe 937
 þe Mullok on an hepe yswoped was
 And on þe floore cast a canvas.
 And al this Mullok in a sif yth[r]owe
 And ysifted and yplukked many a throwe 941
 Parde quod oon somewhat of oure metall
 3it is þer here þou3e we haue nat aft
 And þou3e þis þinge myshapped hap as nowe
 Anoper tyme lt may be wel ynowe 945
 Vs most putt our good in auenture
 A Marchaunte parde may not ay endure
 Trestep me wel in his prosperite
 Somtyme his good is drowned in þe see 949
 And somtyme commeth it sauf vnto þe londe
 Pees quod my lord þe next tyme I wil fonde
 To brynge our craft al in anoper plite
 And but I doo sirs lat me haue þe wite 953
 Ther was defeaute in somewhat wel I wote [leaf 204]
 And oper seide þe fire was ouere hote
 But be it hote or cold I dar saie þis
 þat we concluden euer more amys 957
 We failen of that which þat we wold haue
 And in oure madnesse euermore we raue
 And whan we bene to-gidere euerechofi
 Euery man semeþ as wise as Salomon 961
 But al þinge which þat seineþ¹ as þe golde [1 or semeþ]
 Is nat golde as I haue herd it tolde

Ne euery appel þat is faire at ye
 Ne is not god what so men clappe or crie 965
 Riȝt so loo fareþ it amonges vs /
 He¹ þat semeþ þe wisest by Ihesus [1 or Ho]
 Is moost foole whan it commeþ to þe preef
 And he þat semeþ trewest is a þeef 969
 That shul ȝe knowe er þat I from ȝo^a wende
 Be þat I of my tale haue made an ende

[*No break in the MS.*]

[THE TALE.]

Ther is a chanon of Religioun ¶ 2^a pars. :.
 Amonges vs wolde enfecte al a town 973
 Thouȝe it as grete were as was Nyniue
 Rome . Alisaundre . Troie & oþer þre
 his sleightes and his infinite falsnesse
 Ther couþe no man writen as I gesse 977
 Thouȝe þat he myȝt lyuen a thousand ȝere
 In al þis world of falsenesse nys his pere
 for in his termes he wil hym so wynde
 And speke his wordes in so sleȝe a kynde 981
 Whan he comune shal wip eny wiȝt
 That he wil make hym dote anon riȝt
 But it þe feende be as hym seluen is
 fful mony a man haþ he bygyled er þis 985
 And wil if þat he may lif a while
 And ȝit men riden and goon ful mony a myle
 Hym forto seke and haue of a-queyntaunce
 Nat knowing of his fals gouernaunce 989
 And ȝif ȝe lust to ȝeue me audience [leaf 204, back]
 I wil it tellen in wip ȝoure presence
 But worshipful Chanon Religious
 Ne demeþ not I sclaunder ȝour hous 993
 Al-pouȝe my tale of a chanon be
 Of euery ordere som shrewe is parde
 And god forbede þat all a companye
 Shulde rewe a syngule mannys foly 997
 To sclaunder ȝou is nat myn entent
 But to correcten þat mys I-ment

This tale was not only told for þou
 But eke for oþer moo ȝe wote wel howe 1001
 That amonges cristes apostels twelue
 þer ne was no traitour but Iudas selue
 Than whi shulde þe remenaunte all haue blame
 þat giltles were be þou saye I þe same 1005
 Sauþ only þis if ȝe wil harken me
 If eny Iudas in ȝoure couent be
 Remeueth hym be tyme I þou rede
 If shame or losse may causen eny drede 1009
 And beþ no þinge displeȝed I þou pray
 But in this caas herkneþ what I say
 In london was a preest an annuelere
 That þerInne dwelled had mony a ȝere 1013
 Which was so plesaunt and so seruisable
 Vnto þe wiff where he was att table
 That she wolde suffre hym no þing forto paye
 for borde ne. cloþinge went he neuere so gay 1017
 And spending siluere had he riȝt ynowe
 Therof no force I wil procede as nowe
 And telle forþ my tale of þe chanon
 þat brouȝt þis preest to confusioun 1021
 This fals chanon came vpon a day
 Vnto þe preestes chambere þer he lay
 Bysechinge hym to lene hym a certeyn
 Of golde and he wolde quyte hym ageyn 1025
 Leneþ me a marke quod he but daies þre
 [leaf 205]
 And at my day I wil it quite þe
 And it so be þow fynde me fals
 An oþer day honge me by þe hals 1029
 This prest him toke a marke and þat as swithe
 And þis chanon hym þonked ofte sithes
 And toke his leue and went forþ his way
 And at þe þred day brouȝt his monay 1033
 And to þis preest he toke his gold ageyn
 Therof þis preest was glad and fayn

GROUP G. § 4. CANON'S-YEOMAN'S TALE. Petworth MS.

Certes quod he no þinge anoyeþ me
 To lene a man a noble or twoo or þree 1037
 Or what þinge were in my possession
 Whan he so trewe is of condicioñ
 That in no wise he breke wil his day
 To such a man I can neuere say nay 1041
 What quod þis chanon shuld I be vntrewe
 ¶ Nay þat were þinge fallen al of nwe
 Treupe is a þing þat I wil euer kepe
 Vnto þe day in which þat I shal crepe 1045
 Into my graue and ellis god forbede
 Bileueþ þis as siker as is þoure crede
 God thonke I and in good tyme be it seide
 That þer was neuere man 3it euel apaide 1049
 ffor gold ne siluere þat he to me lent
 Ne neuere falshede to myne hert I ment
 And sire quod he nowe in my priuete
 Sipens 3e so goodly haue bene to me 1053
 And kyped to me so grete gentilnesse
 Somwhat to quiten wiþ þour kyndenesse
 I wil þou shewe and 3if þou lust to lere
 I shal it shewe to þou anon riȝt here 1057
 How I can worchen in philosophie
 Takeþ good hede 3e shullen see wel at ye
 That I wil done a maistrie er I goo
 3e quod þe preest 3e sir and wil 3e so 1061
 Marie þerof I prei þou hertely [leaf 205, back]
 At þoure comaundement sir trewly
 Quod þe chanon and ellis god forbede
 Loo howe þis þeeþ kouþe his seruise bede 1065
 fful soþ it is þat such propferd seruise
 Stynkeþ as witnessen þise olde wise
 And þat ful sone I wil it verifie
 In þis chanon is rote of al trecherye 1069
 That euere more delite haþ and gladnesse
 Such feendly þouȝtes in his hert empresse

How cristes puple he may to meschief bringe /
 God kepe vs from his fals dissimulynge 1073
 What wist þis preest wip whom þat he delte
 Ne of his harme commyng' no þing' he felte
 O sely preest' o. sely Innocent'
 Wip couetise anon þou shalt be blent' 1077
 O gracelees ful blynde is þi conseite
 No þing' art' þow war of þe deceite
 Which þat þis fox shapen hap to þe
 His wily wrenches þou maist not' flee 1081
 Wherfore to goo to þe conclusiõ
 þat referreþ to þe confusiõ
 Vnhappy man anon I wil me hye
 To tellen þine vnwytte and þi foly 1085
 And eke þe falsnesse of þat oþer wrecche
 As ferforþ as my conyng' wil strecche
 þis chanoi was my lorde 3e wolde wene
 Sir Oost in feip and by þe Heuene quene 1089
 It was anoþer chanon and nat he
 þat can an hundred fold more sotilte
 he hap bytraied folk' mony tyme
 Of his falsnesse it' dulleþ me to ryme 1093
 Euere whan I speke of his falshede
 ffor shame of him my chekes wexen rede
 Algates þei bygonne forto glowe
 ffor redenesse haue I now riȝt wel I knowe 1097
 In my visage for fumes dyuers [leaf 206]
 Of metalles which 3e han herde me rehers
 Consumed and waasted han my Redenesse /
 Take nowe hede of þi[s] chanons cursednesse 1101
 Sir' quod he to þe preest' lat 3our man gone
 ffor quyk siluere þat we it' had anõn
 And lat hym brynge vneces twoo or þre
 And whan he commeþ as fast' shul 3e se 1105
 A wonder þinge whiche 3e see neuere er þis
 Sir' quod þe preest' it' shal be done ywis

GROUP G. § 4. CANON'S-YEOMAN'S TALE. Petworth MS.

He bad his seruante fecchen him þis þinge
 And he al redy was at his biddynge 1109
 And went hym forþ and come anon ageyn
 wip þis quyk siluere shortely forto seyn
 And toke þise vnces þre to þe chanoun
 And he it laide faire and wel adoun 1113
 And bad þe seruante colys forto brynge
 þat he anon myȝt goo to his worchis
 The Colis riȝt anon weren sette
 And þis Chanon toke out a croslette 1117
 Of his bosom and shewed it þe preest
 This instrument quod he which þat þou seest
 Take in þine hond and pitt þiself þerInne
 Of þis quyk siluer an vnce an here bygynne 1121
 In þe name of crist to wex a philosophre
 þer bene ful fewe whiche þat I wold profre
 To shewen hem þus mochel of my science
 ffor ȝe shullen see here by experience 1125
 That þis quik siluer I wil mortefie
 Riȝt in ȝoure siȝt anon wip-out lye
 And made it as good siluer and as fyne
 As þer is eny in ȝoure purs er myne 1129
 Or ellis where and make it malliable
 And ellis holde me fals and vnable
 Amonges folke euer to apere
 I haue a powder here þat cost me dere 1133
 Shal make al good for it is cause of all
 [leaf 206, back]
 My konyng which þat I ȝou shewe shaft
 Voideþ ȝour man and lat hym be þer out
 And schitte þe door þe whiles we bene aboute 1137
 Our primate þat no man vs espie
 Whiles we worchen in þis philosophie
 Al as he bad fulfilled was in dede
 This ilke seruante anon riȝt out ȝede 1141
 And his maistere shitte þe dore anone
 And to her laboure spedely þei gone

This preest at þis cursed chanons biddynge
 Vppon þe fure anon sette þis þinge 1145
 And blewe þe fire and busied hym ful fast
 And this chanon into þis croslette cast
 A powdere I note wherof it was
 I-made eiper of chalk or ellis of glasse 1149
 Or somewhat ellis was not worþ a fie
 To blynde wiþ þis preest and bad hym his
 Thise coles forto cowchen al aboue
 The crosselette for in token þat I þe loue 1153
 Quod þis Chanon þine hondes twoo
 Shal worche al þing which as shal be doo
 Graunt mercy quod þe preest and was ful glad
 And cowched coles as þe chanoñ bad 1157
 And þe whilys he bisy was þis feendly wreche
 This fals chanon þe foule fende hym fecche
 Out of his bosom toke a bechen cole
 In which ful sotilly was made an hole 1161
 And þer-in pitte was of siluere lymaille
 An vnce and stopped was wiþ-out faille
 This hoole wiþ wex to kepe þe lymaille Inne
 And vnderstondep þat þis fals gynne 1165
 was not made þere but it was made bifore
 And oþer þingges I shal telle more
 Here-afterward which þat he wiþ hym brouzt
 Ere he come þere to begile hym he pouzt 1169
 And so did er þei went atwynne [leaf 207]
 Til he had turned hym coupe he nat blynne
 It dulleþ me whan þat I of hym speke
 On his falshede fayn wolde I be a-wreke 1173
 If I wist howe but he is here and there
 He is so variaunt he bitte no where
 But takeþ hede nowe sirs for goddys loue
 He toke his cole of whiche I speke aboue 1177
 And in his honde he bare it prively
 And whiles þe preest couched bisyly

GROUP G. § 4. CANON'S-YEOMAN'S TALE. Petworth MS.

þe coles as I tolde þou er þis
 þis Chanon seide frende 3e done a-mys 1181
 þis is not couched as it ouȝt be
 But sone I shal amende it quod he
 Now lat me medle þerwiþ but a while
 ffor of þou haue I pite be seint gyle 1185
 3e bene riȝt hoot I se wel howe 3e swete
 Haue here a cloþe and wipe away þe wete
 And whilys þe preest his wy haas
 þis chanon toke his cole I shrewe his faas 1189
 And laide it vpon abouen þe mydward
 Of þe Crosselette and blewe wel afterward
 Til þat þe Coles gonne fast brenne
 Nowe 3eue vs drynk quod þe chanon þen . 1193
 As swith . al shal be wel I vndertake
 Sitte we a-down and lat vs mery make
 And whan þe chanons bechen cole
 Was brentte al þe lymaille out of þe hole 1197
 Into þe Crosselette anon fille adoun
 And so it most nedes by resoun
 Siþ it so euen aboue couched was
 But þerof wist no þing þe preste allas 1201
 He demed al þe coles liche good
 ffor of þe sleiȝt no þinge he vnderstood
 And whan this Alkamystere segþ his tyme
 Riseþ vp sire preest and stondesth by me . 1205
 And for I wote wele Ingot haue 3e none [cat 207, back]
 Gop walkeþ forþ and bringeþ a chalk stone
 ffor I wil make it of þe same shap
 That is an Ingot ȝif I may haue happe 1209
 And bringe wiþ þou a bolle or a panne
 fful of water and 3e shul see þan
 Howe þat oure bysynesse shal happe and preue
 And ȝit for 3e shul haue no mysbileue 1213
 Ne wronge conceite of me in þoure absence
 I wil not bene out of þoure presence

But go wiþ þou and come wiþ þou agayn
 þe Chambere door shortely to sayn 1217
 They opned and shette *and* went forþ her way
 And forþ wiþ hem þei karies þe kay
 And comme ageyn wiþ-out eny delay
 What shuld I tary al þe longe day 1221
 He toke þe chalk and shope it in þe wise
 Of an Ingot as I shal þou deuyse
 I saie he toke out of his owne sleue
 A teyne of siluere eucl mote he cheue 1225
 Whiche þat was but an vnce of weizt
 And takeþ hede now of þis cursed scleizt
 He shope his Ingot in length *and* in brede
 Of þe teyne wiþ-out eny drede 1229
 So sclyzly þat þe preest it not aspiet
 And in his sleue agayn he gan it hide
 And from þe fire toke vp his matere
 And into þe Ingot it pitt *with* mery chere 1233
 And into þe water vessel he it cast
 whan þat him list *and* bad þe preest as fast
 Loke what þer is pitte in þine honde *and* grope
 Thow shalt fynde þere siluer as I hope 1237
 What deucl of helle shuld it ellis be
 Shavyng of siluere. siluere is parde
 He pitte In his honde and toke vp a teyne
 Of Syluere fyne and glad in euery veyne 1241
 was þis preest whan he segh þat it was so [leaf 200]
 Goddys blessing and his moders also
 And alle halowes haue ȝe sir chanon
 Saide þe preest and I her malysoñ 1245
 But and ȝe vouche-sauf to teche me
 This noble craft and þis sotilte
 I wil be ȝour in all þat euere I may
 Quod þe Chanoñ ȝit wil I make assay 1249
 The secounde tyme þat ȝe mow take hede
 And bene expert of þis and in ȝour nede

GROUP G. § 4. CANON'S-YEOMAN'S TALE. Petworth MS.

Anoper day [assaie] in myne absence
 This disciplyne and pis crafty science 1253
 ¶ Lat take anoper vnce quod he poo
 Of quik siluer wip-out wordes moo /
 And doo þerwip as 3e han done er þis
 With þat oper which þat now siluer is 1257
 This preest hym busieþ in al þat he can
 To done as þis chanon þis cursed man
 Comaundeþ hym and fast bloweþ þ^e fuyre
 fforto come to þe effecte of his desire 1261
 And þis chanon riȝt in þe mene while
 Al redy was þis preest eft to begile
 And for a countenaunce in his hand bare
 An holowe stik take hede and be ware 1265
 In þe eende of which an vnce and no more
 Of syluere lymaille put was al bifore
 was in his cole and stopped with wex wel
 fforto kepe in his lymaille euery deff 1269
 And whilis þis preest was in his bysynesse
 This Chanon wip his stik gan hym dresse
 To hym anon and his powdere cast Inne
 As he did eer þe deucl out of his skynne 1273
 Hym turne I prey to god for his falshede
 for he was euer fals in oþe and dede
 And wip his stik aboute þe crosselette
 That was ordeyned wip þat fals gette. 1277
 He stireþ þe coles til relente gan
 [leaf 208, back]
 The wex a-gayn þe fuyr as euery man
 But it a fool be wote wele & mote nede
 And alle þat in þe hole was. out ȝede 1281
 And into þe crosselette hastely it felle
 The preest supposed no þing but wel
 But bisied him fast and was wonder fayn
 Supposing nouȝt but trouþe soþ to sayn 1285
 He was so glad I can not expresse
 In no manere his myrth and his gladnesse

And to þe Chanōn he profred eft sone
 Body and good 3e quod þe chanon sone 1289
 þou3e poor I be crafty þow shalt me fynde
 I warne þe 3it is þer more behinde
 Is þere eny copoure here In saide he
 3e sir quod þe preest I trowe þer be 1293
 Ellis goo by some and þat as swithe
 Now sir go forþ þi way *and* hithe.
 And went his way and *with* þis copere he cam
 And þis chanon it in his honde it nam. 1297
 And of þat copere weyed out but an vnce
 Al to symple is my tunge to pronunce
 His monstre as his witte þe doublenesse
 Of þis Chanon roote of cursednesse 1301
 He semed frendely to hem þat knewe hym nouȝt
 Bot he was feendly boþ in werk and þouȝt
 It weriep me to telle of his falsenesse
 And natheles 3it wil I it expresse 1305
 To þat entent men may be ware þerby
 And for noon opere cause trewly
 He putt þis vnce of copere into þe crosselette
 And on the fuyre as swithe he hap it sette 1309
 And kest In powdere and made þ^e preest to blowe
 And in his worching for to stoupe lowe
 As he did erst and al nys but a Iape
 Riȝt as him list þe preest he made his Ape 1313
 And afterward into the Ingot he it cast [leaf 209]
 And in þe panne pitt it atte last
 Of watere and in he pitte his owne honde
 And in his sleue as 3e to-fornhonde 1317
 Herd me telle he had a siluer teyne
 He sclily toke it out þis cursed heyne
 Vnwetinge þis preest of his fals craft
 And in þe pannes botme he hap it laft. 1321
 And in þe watere rombleþ too and froo /
 And wondere prively toke it vp also

GROUP G. § 4. CANON'S-YEOMAN'S TALE. Petworth MS.

þe Copere teyne nat knowing þis preest
 And hid it and hente hym by þe breest 1325
 And to hym spake and þus seide in his game ./
 Stowpeþ a-downe by god 3e be to blame.
 Helpeþ me nowe as I did 3owe whilere
 Putte Inne 3oure honde and lokeþ what is þere 1329
 This preest toke vp þis siluere teyne anone
 And þan seide þe chanoñ lat vs gone
 Wip þise þre teynes whiche þat we han wrouzt
 To somme goldsmyth and wit 3if it be ouzt 1333
 ffor be my feiþe I nolde for myne hode
 But if þei were siluere fyne and goode
 And þat as swiþe proued shal it be
 Vnto þe goldsmythe wip þise teynes þre 1337
 went þei and pitte þise teynes in assay
 To fyre and hamere myzt no man say nay
 But þei were as hem ouzte to be
 This sotted preest who was glad but he 1341
 Was neuere bridde gladdere a3einst þe day
 Ne nyztyngeale in þe sesoñ of may.
 was neuere noon þat list better to synge
 Ne lady lustyer in Carolyng. . . . 1345
 And forto speke of loue and wommanhede
 Ne knyght in armes done an hardy dede
 To stonden in grace of his lady dere.
 Than had þis preest þis craft to lere. 1349
 And to þe chanon þus he speke and saide
 ffor þe loue of god þat for vs deyde ./
 And as I may deserue it vnto yowe [leaf 209, back:]
 What shal þis Receyte cost telleþ nowe 1353
 By oure lady quod þis chanon it is dere /
 I warne 3ou. for saaf I and a frere
 In Engelonde þer can no man it make
 No fors quod he nowe sir for goddys sake / 1357
 What shal I paye telle me I þe pray
 Iwis quod [he] it is ful dere I saie /

Sir at oon woord if þat þe lest it haue
 3e shul paye xl. li. so god me saue. 1361
 And ne were þe frendship þat 3e did er þis
 To me / 3e shuld paie more ywis ./
 This preest þe some of fourty pounde anoñ
 Of nobles fette and toke hem euerechoñ 1365
 To þis Chanon for þis ilk receite
 AH his worchinge was strawe and deceite
 Sir preest he saide I kepe forto haue no loos
 Of my craft for I wold it were kept cloos 1369
 And as 3e loue me kepeþ it secre
 ffor and men knewe al my sotilte
 By god men wolde haue so grete envie
 To me by cause of my philosophie 1373
 I Shuld be dede þer nys noon oþer waye
 God it for-bede quod þe preest what say 3e.
 3it had I leuere spenden al þe good
 Which þat I haue and ellys wexe I wood / 1377
 Than þat 3e shuld fallen in such meschief
 ffor 3oure good wille sir haue 3e riȝt good preef
 Quod þe Chanon. and sir. oft graunt mercy
 He went his way þat neuere þe preest hym sie 1381
 Aftere þat day and whan þis preest shulde
 Maken assay at suche tyme as he wolde
 Of þis Receite. fare wel it wold nat be
 Loo þus byiaped and begiled was he 1385
 Thus makeþ he his Introducciōn
 To bringe folk to her destructiōn
 Considereþ surs howe þat in eche astaant
 Bytwix men and gold þer is debaat 1389
 So fer forþ þat vnneþes þer is oon [leaf 210]
 This multiplyinge so blendeþ mony oñ
 That in good faip I trowe þat it be
 The cause grettest of þe grete scarcete 1393
 Thise philosophres speken so mystely
 In þis craft þat men can not come þerby

GROUP G. § 4. CANON'S-YEOMAN'S TALE. Petworth MS.

ffor eny witte þat men han now adayes .
 þei may wel Chitere and iangle as doñ þise Iaies 1397
 And in her teemes sette lust and peyne
 But to her purpoos shul þei neuere atteyne
 A man may liztly lerne ȝif he haue ouȝte
 To multiplie and bringe his good to nouȝte 1401
 Loo suche a lucre is in þis lusty game .
 A mannes merþe wil it turne al to grame
 And empty also grete and heuy purses .
 And make folk to purchasen curses 1405
 Of hem þat han þerto her good ylent
 O. fy for shame þei þat han be brent
 Allas can þei nat fleo þe fires hete
 ȝe þat it losen I rede ȝe it lete 1409
 lest ȝe lesen all . for bette þan neuere is late
 Neuere to þriue were to longe a date
 Thouȝe ȝe prolle ay ȝe shul it neuer fynde
 ȝe bene as bolde as is bayard þe blynde 1413
 That blundreþ forþ and perile casteþ non
 He was bolde to renne aȝeinst a stoñ
 As forto goo be sides in þe way
 ¶ Soo faren ȝe þat multiplien I say 1417
 ȝif þat oure eyen can nat seen ariȝt
 Lokeþ þat ȝoure mynde lak nat his sizt
 ffor þouȝe ȝe loke neuere so brode and stare
 ȝe shul nat wynne a myte in þat chaffare 1421
 But waasten all þat ȝe may rappe and renne
 Wiþdrawe þe fuyre lest it so fast brenne
 Medleth no more wiþ þat art I mene .
 ffor ȝif ȝe doon ȝoure þrift is goon ful clene 1425
 And riȝt as swiþe I wil ȝou telle here
 What þat þe philosophres seyn in þis matere
 Loo þus seiþ alnold of þe newe tounne [leaf 210, back]
 As his rosarie makeþ mencionn 1429
 He seiþ riȝt þus wiþ-oute eny lie
 Ther may no man mercury mortefie

But zif it be wiþ his broþers knowlecchinge
 Howe þat he which þat ferst seide þis þinge 1433
 Of philosophres fader was hermes
 He seiþ how þat þe dragon doutelees /
 Ne dyep nat but zif he be sclayn
 Wiþ his broþer and þat is forto sayne 1437
 By þe dragon mercurye and noon oþer
 He vnderstood þat bremstone were his broþer
 þat out of sol and luna were ydrawe
 And þefore saide he take hede to my sawe 1441
 Lat no man bisie him þis arte forto seche.
 But he þat þe entenciõ and speche
 Of philosophres vnderstonde can
 And if he doo he is a lewde man · 1445
 ffor þis science and þis conyngt quod he
 Is of þe secree of secrees parde
 Also þer was a disciple of plato
 þat on a tyme saide his maister too. 1449
 As his boke somere wil bere witness
 And þis was his demaunde en soþfastnesse
 Tel me þe name of a priue stoõn
 And plato answered vnto hym anoõn 1453
 Take þe stoõn þat Titanos men name
 Which is þat quod he magnasia is þe same
 His disciple seide 3e sire and is it þus
 þis is ignotum per ignocius 1457
 What is magnasia good sire I pray
 It is a watere þat is made I saye
 Of elementes foure quod Plato.
 Telle me þe roche good sire quod he þoo. 1461
 Of þat watere if it be 3oure wille
 Nay nay quod Plato certeyn þat I nyh
 The philosophres were sworn echoñ
 þat þei shulde diskeuere it to no moñ 1465
 Ne in no booke it write in no manere
 ffor vnto crist it is so leef and dere. [leaf 211]

GROUP G. § 4. CANON'S-YEOMAN'S TALE. Petworth MS.

þat he wil nat þat it' diskeuered be
 But where it' likeþ to his deite 1469
 Man to enspire and eke forto defende
 Whan þat him likeþ loo þis is þe ende
 Than conclude I þus sipens þat god of heuene
 Ne wil not þat þe philisophres neuene 1473
 How þat a man shal come vnto þis stone
 I rede as for the best lat it gone
 ffor who so makeþ god his aduersarye
 As forto worche eny þinge in contrarie 1477
 Vnto his wille certes neuere shal he thryve
 þouze þat he multiplie teerme of his lyue
 And þer a poynt for eended is my tale.
 God seende euery trewe man boote of his bale / 1481
 ¶ Thus endep þe chanons zeman his tale

And here bigynneþ þe prologe of þe doctour of Phisike
[on leaf 211]

Whan þat þis ȝeman his tale ended hadde ¶ **The prolog.**
 Of þis fals Chanon which þat was so badde
 Our hoost gan say trewly & in certayn
 þis preest was begiled soþly forto sayn 4
 He wenyge forto be a philosophre
 Til he lift riȝt nouȝt in his Cophre
 And soþly þis preest had a liȝer Iape
 This cursed chanon put in his hode an ape 8
 But al þis passe I ouer as nowe
 Sir doctour of phisik I prey ȝou
 Telle vs a tale of some honest matere
 It shal be done ȝif þat ȝe wil it here 12
 Saide þis doctour and his tale bygan anon
 Now good men quod he harkenþ euerechoñ

¶ **Thus endeþ þe prologe of þe doctour of phisik**

GROUP C. FRAGMENT IV.

§ 1. THE DOCTOR'S TALE.

PETWORTH MS.

And here bygynneþ þe tale.

[on leaf 211]

T her was as telleþ vs tytus lyneus	¶ The tale ./
A knyght þat cleped was virgineus	
ffulfilled of honoures and worþinesse	
And stronge of frendes and of richesse	4
A douȝter he had be his wiff	[leaf 211, back]
And neuere had hee moo in al his lif	
ffaire was þis maide in excellent bewte	
Abouen euery wif þat man may see	8
ffor nature haþ wif souereyn [diligence]	
fformed hir in so grete excellence	
As þouȝe she wold say loo I nature.	
Thus can I forme and peynte a creature	12
Whan þat me list who can me countrefete	
Pigmalyon noght þouȝe he alway forge <i>and</i> bete	
Or graue or peynt for I dar wel sayn	
Apollus Zephirus shulde worche in veyn	16
Te graue. peynte. or forge or bete	
If þei presumed me to countrefete	
ffor he þat is þe fourmer principal	
Haþe made me his vikere general	20
To forme and peint eche erþely creature	
Riȝt as me list for al þinge is my cure.	
Vnder þe mone þat may wayne <i>and</i> waxe	
And for my werk no þinge wil I axe	24

PETWORTH 451 (6-T. 303)

GROUP C. § 1. DOCTOR'S TALE. Petworth MS.

My lorde and I bene fully atte acorde
 I made hir' to þe worship of my lorde
 So doo I alle myne oþer creatures
 Of what' coloure þei be or what' figures 28
 Thus semeþ me þat' nature wolde say
 This maide was of age .xij. ȝere *and* tway
 In whiche þat' nature haþ such delite
 ffor riȝt' as she can peynt' aȝ lily white 32
 And roody as roose riȝt' wiþ such peynture
 She peynted haþ þis noble creature
 Er she was born vpon her lymes fre
 Were also briȝt' as such coloures myȝt' be . 36
 And phebus died had her tresses grete
 Like to þe stremes of his boorned hete
 And ȝif þat' excellent' was her bewte
 A thowsand folde more vertuous was she 40
 In hur' ne lackeþ no condicioñ
 þat' is to preise as by discrecioñ .
 As wel in body as goost' chaast' was she [leaf 212]
 ffor which she flowred in virginite 44
 Wiþ al humilite and abstinence
 Wiþ alle attemperance and pacience
 Wiþ mesure eke in beringe of araye .
 Discrete she was in answering' alwaye 48
 And she was wis as pallas dar I seyn
 Hir' facoñ eke ful womanly *and* pleyñ
 Noon counterfeted teermes had shee
 ¶ To seme wise but' after her degree . 52
 She spak and alle her wordes more *and* lasse
 Sownynge in vertue and in gentelnasse
 Shamefast' she was in maidens shamfastnesse
 Constant' in hert' and euere in bysynesse 56
 To drive hur' out' of her scloggardrie
 Bachus had of her mouþe no maistrie
 ffor wille and pouȝt' done Venus encrece
 As men in fire wil casten oile or grece 60

GROUP C. § 1. DOCTOR'S TALE. **Petworth MS.**

And of her owne vertue vnconstreyned .
 She haþe ful oft tyme hur' seke feyned .
 ffor þat she wolde flee þe companye
 where likly was to treten of folye 64
 As is at feestys . Reuels . and daunces
 Whiche bene occasion of daliaunces
 Suche þingges maken children forto be .
 To some ripe and holde as men may see 68
 Which is ful perilous and haþ bene ȝoore
 ffor al to sone may she lerne lore .
 Of boldnesse whan she is a wiff
 And ȝe Maistresses in ȝoure olde liff 72
 þat lordes douȝters han in gouernaunce
 Ne takeþ of my wordes no displesaunce
 Thingges þat bene sette in gouernynnges
 Of lordys douȝters oonly for two þingges 76
 Oȝper for ȝe han kepte ȝoure honeste
 Oȝpere ellis ȝe han falle in freelte
 And knowen wel ynouȝe þe olde daunce
 And konne for-sake fully [such] meschaunce . 80
 ffor euer moo þerfor for cristes sake [leaf 212, back]
 kepeþ wel þoo þat ȝe vndertake
 A theef for venyson þat hath forlaft
 His likerousnesse and al his þeeues craft 84
 Can kepe a forest best of eny man .
 Now kepeþ hem wel for and ȝe wil ȝe can .
 lokeþ wel to no vice þat ȝe assente .
 Lest ȝe be dampned for ȝoure euel entente . 88
 ffor who so doþ a traitoure is certeyn .
 And takeþ [kepe] of þat þat I shal seyn .
 Of al treson suffreyn pestilence .
 Is whan a wifþ bitraieþ innocence . 92
 ȝe faders and ȝe moders eke also .
 þouȝe ȝe han children be it on or twoo .
 ȝoure is þe charge of al her suffraunce .
 Whiles þei bene vnder gouernaunce 96

GROUP C. § 1. DOCTOR'S TALE. **Petworth MS.**

Be ware þat by ensample of þour lyuyng
 Eþere by neeligence in chaastisinge
 þat þei ne perisshe for I dar wel saye
 3if þat 3e done 3e shul ful sore abaye 100
 vndere a sheparde . soft and negligent
 þe wolf hap mony a shepe and lomb to-rent
 Suffiseþ oon ensample nowe as here
 ffor I mot/ turne aȝein to my matere 104
 ¶ This maide of which I telle my tale expresse .
 She kept her self her neded no maistresse .
 ffor in her lyuyng maidens myȝt rede
 As in a booke euery good woord and dede 108
 þat longeþ to a maide vertuous
 She was so prudent and so bounteuous .
 ffor whiche [þe fame] out spronge on euery side .
 Both of her bewte and of her bounte wide . 112
 þat þorowe þe londe þei preised hure echoñ .
 þat loued vertue sauf envie allone .
 þat sorie is of oþer mennys wele
 ¶ And glad is of his sorowe and vnhele 116
 The doctoure makeþ þis descripcioun
 This maide went on a day into þe toun
 Toward þe temple wiþ her modere dere [leaf 212] 120
 As is of yonge maidens þe manere
 Now was þer a Iustice in þe toun
 þat gouernere was of þat Regioun
 And so bifelle þis Iuge his eyen cast
 Vppon þis mayde avisinge hir ful fast 124
 As she came forþe by þere þe Iuge stood .
 Anon his hert chaungeþ and his mood .
 So was he kauȝt wiþ þe bewte of þis maide
 And to him silf ful priuely he saide 128
 This maide shal be myn for eny man .
 Anon þe feende into his hert ran
 And tauȝt him sodeynly by what scliȝt
 The maide to his purpoos wyne he myȝt 132

ffor certis by no force ne by no mede
 Him þouȝt he was not able forto spede.
 ffor he was stronge of freendes *and* eke she
 Confeirmed was in such souereyn bewte 136
 þat wel he wist he myȝt her neuere wynne
 As forto make here wiþ hur body synne
 ffor whiche wiþ grete deliberacioun
 He sent after a clerk into þe tounne. 140
 þe whiche he knewe for subtil or for bold
 This Iuge vnto þis clerk his tale haþ told
 In secre wise and made him to assure
 He shulde telle it to no creature. 144
 And if he did he shulde lese his hede
 whan assented was þis cursed rede
 Glad was þe Iuge and made glad chere
 And ȝaue hym ȝiftes precious *and* dere 148
 whan shapen was all þis conspiracie
 ffrom poynt to poynt how þat þis lecherie
 Perfourmed shulde be ful sotelly
 And ȝe shul here afterward openly 152
 Home gooþ this clerk þat hiȝt Claudius
 This fals Iuge þat hiȝt apius
 So was his name for it is no fable
 But known for an historial þing notable. 156
 The sentence of hit soþ is out of dowte [leaf 213, back]
 This fals Iuge goþ now fast aboute
 To hasten his delit and þat he may
 And so bifelle sone after on a day. 160
 This fals Iuge as telleþ vs þe story
 As he was wowned in his consistorie
 And ȝaf his doomes vpon sondrie caas
 This fals Clerk came forþ a wel good paas. 164
 And saide lord if þat it be ȝoure wille
 As doþ me riȝt vpon þis pitous bille
 In whiche I pleyne vpon Virginius.
 And ȝif þat he wol sayn it is nat þus 168

I wiþ proue it and fynde good wittnesse
 þat soþe is þat my bille wil expresse
 þe Iuge answerde of þis in his absence
 I may not ȝeue diffinitif sentence 172
 Lat doon hym calle *and* I wiþ gladly here
 þou shalt haue riȝt and no wronge here
 Virginius came to witte þe Iuges wille
 And riȝt anoon was rad þis cursed bille 176
 ¶ The sentence of hit was as ȝe shul here
 To ȝowe my lord sir Apius so dere
 Sheweþ ȝour poor *seruaunte* Claudius
 How þat a knyȝt called Virginius 180
 Aȝeinst þe lawe aȝeinst al equite
 Holdeþ expresse aȝeinst þe wille of me.
 My *seruaunt* which þat is þral be riȝt
 Which from myn hous was stolen on a nyȝt 184
 þe whiles she was ful ȝenge I wil it preue
 By wittnesse lord so þat ȝe ȝou nat greue
 She is nat his douȝtere what so he saye
 wherfore my lord þe Iuge to ȝou I praye 188
 ȝeelde me my thraȝ if þat it be ȝour wille
 loo þis was alle þe sentence of þe bille
 Virginius gan vpon þe clerk biholde
 ¶ But hastily er he his tale tolde 192
 he wold haue defended it as shuld a knyȝt
 And by wittnesse of mony a trewe wiȝt
 That al was fals þat saide his *aduersarie* [leaf 214]
 This cursed Iuge wold no lenger tarye 196
 Ne here oon woord more of Virgyneus
 But ȝaf his Iugement and saide þus.
 I deme anoon þis clerk his *seruaunte* haue
 Thow shalt no longer in pine hous hir saue 200
 Goo bringe hir forþ and put hur in our warde
 This Clerk shal haue his þraȝ þus I awarde
 And whan þis worþi knyȝt Virgineus
 Thorgh þe assent of þe Iuge Apius 204

GROUP C. § 1. DOCTOR'S TALE. *Petworth MS.*

Most by force his dere douztere zeuen
 Vnto the Iuge in lecchery to lyuen.
 He goop hym home and sette hym in his halle .
 And lete anoon his deer douzter' calle . 208
 And wip a face dede as asshen colde
 Vpon her humble face he can biholde
 Wip faders pite stikyng' þorgh his herte
 Al wold he nat' from his purpoos *conuerte* 212
 Doughtere quod' he Virginea be þi name
 þer bene twoo weies . oþer deþ oþer shame
 þat' thow most' suffre allas þat' I was bore
 ffor neuer þou deseruedest' wherfore 216
 To dyen wip a sweerd or wip a knyft'
 O dere douzter ender of my lif
 Which I haue fostred vp wip such plesaunce
 þat' þou ne were out' of my remembraunce 220
 O doughtere which þat' art' my last' woo .
 And in lif my last' Ioie also
 O gemme of chastite in pacience
 Take þou þi deþ for þis is my sentence 224
 ffor loue and nat' for hate þou most' be dede
 My pitous honde mote smyten of þine hede
 Allas þat' euer Apius þe say
 Thus hap' he falsly Iuged þe to day 228
 And tolde hur' al þe caas as ȝe bifore
 Haue herd it' nedeþ telle it' no more
 Mercy dere fadere quod' þis maide
 And wit' þat' word' she boþ hure armes laide . 232
 Aboute his nek as she was wowned to doo [leaf 214, back]
 þe teeres brosten out' of her eyen twoo
 A[n]d saide good fadere shal I dye
 Is þere no grace is þer no remedye 236
 No certes dere douzter myn quod' he .
 Than ȝeue me leue fader myn quod' she .
 My deþ [for] to compleyn a litel space
 ffor parde Ieffa ȝane his douztere grace 240

fforto compleyn er he her sclouze alas .
 And god it' woot' no ping' was his trespas
 But þan she ranne her fader first' to see
 To welcome him wiþ grete solempnite 244
 And wiþ þat word she felle a swoun anon
 And aftere whan her swownyng' was agoñ
 She riseþ vp and to her fadere saide
 Blessed be god þat I shal die a maide 248
 Ȝeue me my deef er þat I haue a shame
 Doþ wiþ ȝoure childe ȝour' wille a goddys name
 And wiþ þat word she preieþ [him] ful oft'
 That wiþ his swerde he shuld smyte her soft' 252
 And wiþ þat woord in swowne doune she felle
 Hur' fadere wiþ ful sorowful hert' and felle
 Hure hede of smote and by þe top it' hent'
 And to the Iuge he ȝaue it' to present' 256
 As he satte in his doome in consistorie
 And whan þe Iuge it' seie as seiþ þe storic
 He bad take him and honge hym also fast'
 But' riȝt' anon al þe puple in þrast' 260
 To saue þe knyȝt' for rewþe and for pite
 ffor knownen was þe fooles iniquite
 The puple anon had suspecte in þis þingo
 By manere of þis clerkes chalengynge 264
 þat it' was by þassent' of Apius .
 þei wist wel þat he was lecherus
 ffor which vnto þis Apius þei goñ
 And casten hym in prison riȝt' anōn 268
 Wher as he sclough hym self and Claudius
 þat Seruaunte was vnto þis Apius
 Was demed fforto honge vpon a tree [leaf 215]
 But' Virginius of his grete pite 272
 Preide for hym þat he was exiled
 And ellis certys he had be begiled
 The remenant' were honged more and lesse
 þat consented were to þis cursednesse / 276

GROUP C. § 1. DOCTOR'S TALE. Petworth MS.

Here may men see howe synne hap his merite
 Be ware for no man woote how god wil smyte
 In no degree ne in which manere wise
 þe worme of conscience wil arise . 280
 Of wicked lif þough it so prive be
 þat no man woote of it . but god and hee
 Where he be lewde man or lered
 He note howe sone he may be afered . 284
 Therfore I rede þou this counsel take
 forsakeþ synne er synne þou forsake

|| The prologe of
þe Pardonere.

Our hoost gan swere as he were wood
 Harowe quod he by nailles and by blood 288

This was a cursed peef a fals Iustise
 As shameful deef as herte can deuise .
 Come to þe Iustise and her aduocas .
 Aigates þis sely womman is sclayn alas . 292
 Allas dere aboute she bewtee .
 Wherefore I say alday þat man may se
 That gift of fortune or of nature
 Bene cause of deþ of mony a creature 296
 [Hir beaute was hir deth I dar wel sayn . [Harl. 1756, on leaf
150, back]
 Allas so pitously as sche was slayn .]
 As boþ giftes as I speke of nowe
 Men han ful oft more harme þan prowre 300
 But trewly myne owne maister dere
 This is a pitous tale for to here
 But napelees passe ouer is no fors
 I prey to god to saue þi gentile cors / 304
 And þine vrynales and þi Iordans
 þine ypocras and eke þi Galyans
 And euery box ful of þi letwarye
 God blesse hem and our lady seint Marye 308
 So mote I the þou art a propre man .
 And like a prelate by seynt Runyan .
 Saue þat I can not speke wel in terme [leaf 215, back]
 But wel I woote þou doost myn hert eerme 312
 That I haue almost kaught a Cardyacle
 By corps boones but I haue triacle
 Or ellis a draught of moist or corny ale
 Or but I here anon a mery tale 316

GROUP C. § 2. DOCTOR-PARDONER LINK. Petworth MS.

My hert is lost for pite of þis maide
 þowe belamy Iohn pardonere he saide
 Telle vs some merþe or lapes riȝt anōn
 he shal be done quod he be seynt Runyon 320
 But furst quod he here at þe next ale stake
 I wil boȝ drink and ete of a cake
 But riȝt anōn þise gentiles goȝ to crye
 Nay lat hym telle vs of no Rybaudrye. 324
 Telle vs some moral þing þat we may lere
 Somme witte and þan wil we gladly here
 I graunt Iwis quod he but I mote þink
 Vpon som honest þinge whiles þat I drink / 328
 ¶ Thus endep þe prologe of þe pardonere.

And here bygynnep the tale.

[on leaf 215, back]

L oldingges quod he in church whan I preche	¶ The
I peyn me to haue an hautyñ speche	tale
I ryng' it' out' as rounde as gop a belle	
ffor I can al by roote pat' I telle	332
My teeme is alway oon and euere was .	
Radix omnium malorum est' cupiditas .	
ffirst' I pronouns whennys pat' I come	
And þan my bulles schewe aft' and some /	336
Our liege lordes seel on my patent'	
pat' shewe I furst' my body to warent'	
That' no man be so bolde preest' ne clerk'	
Me to distrowbe of cristes holy werk'	340
And after pat' telle I forþ my tales	
Bulles of popes and of Cardynales .	
Of patriarkes and bisschoppes I shewe .	
And in latyn I speke a wordys fewe	344
To sauer wip my predicacioñ	
And forto stirre men to deuocioñ	
Than shewe I forþ my longe cristal stones	[leaf 216]
Ycrommed ful of clowtes and of bones .	348
Relikes þei bene as wene men echoñ	
þan haue I in laton a sholdere bone	
Which pat' was an holy Iwes shepe	
Good men say I take at' my wordes kepe	352
3if pat' þis boon be wasshen in a welle	
3if kowe or calf . shepe or oxe swelle	
pat' eny worme hath ete or stonge	
About þe hert' or ellis þe longe	356

GROUP C. § 3. PARDONER'S PREAMBLE. Petworth MS.

It is hool anon and ferþermore
 Of pokkes and of scabbe *and* of euery sore
 Shal euery shepe be hool þat of þis welle
 Drynkeþ a drauȝt take hede what I telle 360
 Ȝif þat þe good man þat þe beest oweþ
 Wil euery weke er þat þe Cok hym croweþ
 ffastinge drinkt of þis welle a drauȝte.
 As þilk' holy Iwe our' eldere tauȝte 364
 His beestees and his stoor shal multiplie
 And sirs also it' heleþ Ialowsie
 And þouȝe a man be fallen in a Ialous rage
 Lat' maken wiþ þis watere his potage 368
 And nouer shal he [more] his wif mystrust'
 þouȝe he þe soþ of hure defaute wost'
 Al had she taken · preestes tweyn · or þree
 Here is a myten eke þat ȝe may see 372
 He þat' his honde wil putte in þis myteyn
 He shal haue multiplinge of his greyn
 Whan he haþ sawen be it' whete or otys
 So þat' he bringe me good' pans or ellis grotys. 376
 And men and wommen · oo þing' I warne ȝowe
 Ȝif eny wiȝt' be in þis churche nowe
 þat' haþ doo synne horrible [so] þat' he
 Dar not' for shame of it' shryuen be 380
 Or eny womman be she ȝong' or olde
 That' haþ made her husbonde Cukwold
 Suche folk' shal haue no power ne no grace
 To offre to my relikes in þis place. 384
 And who so findeþ hym out' of such blame [leaf 216, back]
 Thei wil come vp and offre in goddis name
 And I assoille hym by þe autorite
 Such as my bulle was graunted to me 388
 By þis gaude haue I wonnen euery ȝeere
 An .C. Mark sipens I was pardonere.
 I stonde like a clerk' in my pulpitte
 And schewe lewde puples synne ysette 392

GROUP C. § 3. PARDONER'S PREAMBLE. *Petworth MS.*

I preche so as I haue lered by-fore
 And telle an hundred Iapes more.
 Than payne I me to streche forþ þe necke
 And eest and west vppon þe puple I bekke 396
 As doþ a dowue sitting vppon a beerne
 Myne hondes and my tunge goñ ful 3eerne
 þat it is ioye to see my bysynesse
 Of auarice and suche cursednesse. 400
 Is al my prechinge for to make hem free
 To 3eue her pans and namely vnto me
 ffor myn entent is nat but forto wyne
 And nopinge for correction of synne 404
 I rekke neuere whan þat þei bene buried
 þou3e þat her saules goo o blakburied.
 ffor certes mony a predicacioñ
 Commeþ ofte tyme of euel entencioñ 408
 Somme of plesaunce of folk and of flaterye
 To bene auaunced by ypocresie
 And somme for veynglorie and for hate
 ffor whan I dar nat oþer waies debate 412
 Than wil I styngge hem wiþ my tunge smerte
 In prechinge so that he shal not sterte
 To bene defamed falsely so þat he
 hap trespassed to my breþeren or to me 416
 ffor þou3e I telle nat his propre name
 Men shal wel knowe þat it is þe same
 By somme signe and oþer circumstaunces
 Thus smyte I folk þat doñ vs displesaunces. 420
 Thus spitte I out my venyme vnder hwe
 Of holynesse to semen holy and trewe
 But shortely myne entent I wil devise ./ [leaf 217]
 I preche of no þinge but of Couetise ./ 424
 þerfore my teeme is 3it and euer was
 Radix omnium malorum est cupiditas
 Thus can I preche azeinst þe same vice
 Which þat I vse and þat is Auarice 428

GROUP C. § 3. PARDONER'S PREAMBLE. *Petworth MS.*

But þouȝe my self be giltif in þat synne .
 ȝit can I make oþer folk to wynne
 ffrom auarice and soor hem repent
 But þat nys not my principal entent 432
 I preche nat but for coueityse
 Of þis matere it ouȝt ynowe suffice
 Than telle I hem ensamples mony oof
 Of olde stories longe tyme agoȝ 436
 ffor lewde puple louen tales olde
 which þingges þei conne report and hold
 What trow ȝe þe whiles I may preche
 And wynne gold and siluere forto teche 440
 þat I wil lyve in pouert wilfully
 Nay nay I þouȝt it neuere trewly .
 ffor I wil preche and begge in sondry londys
 I nyl do no laboure wiþ my hondes . 444
 Ne make baskettes for to lyve þer-by
 Because I wil not lyuen ydelly
 I wil noon of þe apostels counterfete
 I wil haue money . malt chees and whete 448
 Al were it ȝeuen of þe poorest page
 Eyþere of þe poorest wydowe in a vilage
 Al shulde her children sterue or famyne
 And I wil drink þe licourest of þe wyne 452
 And haue a ioly wenche in euery toun
 But harkenep lordes in conclusioun
 ȝoure liking is þat I shal telle a tale
 Now haue I dronken . a drauȝt of corny ale 456
 By god I hope I shal tel ȝou a þinge
 þat shal of reson be at ȝoure likinge
 ffor þouȝe my self be a vicious man .
 I morale tale ȝit I ȝou telle can . 460
 Whiche Iames went to preche forto wynne . [leaf 217, back]
 Now holdeþ ȝoure pees my tale I wil bygynne .

In flannndres whilom was a companye [on leaf 217, back]
 Of yonge folk þat haunted folye 464
 As hasard^r Riot / stewes . and tauernes .
 Harpes . Rubibes . lutes and giternes .
 þei dauncen and pleyen at þe dys nyȝt^r and day
 and Eten also ouer þat her myȝt^r may 468
 Thorgh whiche þei do þe deuel sacrificise
 Wip-in þe deuels temple in sondry wise
 By superfluite abhominable
 Her opes bene so grete and damnable 472
 þat it is grisly forto here hem swere
 Our blessed lordys body þei to-tere
 Hem þouȝt^r þe Iwes rent hym nat ynowe
 And ilk^r of hem at oper synne loowe 476
 And riȝt^r anoȝ comen Inne þan tomblesters
 ffetys and smale and ȝong^r fruters
 Syngers wip harpes . bawdes and waiffrers
 Such bene verrey þe deuels officers . 480
 To kyndel and blowe þe fyre of lechcherye
 That is annexed [vn]to glotenye
 The holy writt take I to witnesse
 þat lecherie is in wyne and dronknesse 484
 ¶ Lo howe þat dronken Loth vnkindely ¶ nolite inebriari
 Lay by his douȝters two vnwittyngly vino in quo est
 So dronken he was he nyst^r what he wrouȝt^r luxuria
 Herodes who so hap þe stories souȝt^r 488
 [.
 no spurious lines in this MS.]

PETWORTH 466 (6-T. 318)

GROUP C. § 4. PARDONER'S TALE. Petworth MS.

whan he of wyne was replete at' his feest'	489
Riȝt' at' his owne table ȝaf his heest	
To sleen þe baptist' Iohn ful gyltelees	
Senec' seiþ a good word' doutelees .	¶ Seneca 492
He seiþ he can no difference fynde	
Betwix a man þat' is out' of his mynde	
And a man þat' is dronklewe	
But' þat' woodenesse is fallen in a shrewe	496
Perseuereþ langer þan doþ dronknesse	
O glotený ful of Cursednesse .	
O cause furst' of our' confusioñ	[leaf 218]
Oryginal of our dampnacioñ	500
Til crist' had bouȝt' vs wip his blood agayñ	
Lo how dere shortely forto sayne	
About' was þe Cursed vilanye	
Corrupte was as þis world' þorgh glotenýe	
Adam oure fadere <i>and</i> his wif also	¶ Ieronymus contra Iovinianum Quamdiu ieiunauit adam in paradiso . fuit . Comedit & sicutus est statim
ffrom paradis to labour and to woo	
Were driven for þat' wise it' is no drede	
ffor whiles þat' adam fasted as I rede	508
He was in <i>paradiys</i> and whan þat' hee	
Ete of þe fruyte defended on þe tree .	
Anoon he was out' cast' to woo & peyne	
O glotenýe on þe wel ouȝt' vs pleyne	512
O wist' a man how mony maladyes	
ffloweþ of excesse and of glotonýes	
He wolde bene þe more mesurable	
Of his diete sitting' at' his table	516
Allas þe short' prote þe tender mouþe	
Makeþ þat' Est' and West' norþe & souþe	
In erthe in eire in watere men to synk'	
To geten a gloton deynte mete <i>and</i> drink'	520
Of þis matere o poule wel cast' þou trete	
Mete vnto wombe and wombe eke vnto mete	
Shal god distroie boþ as Powle seiþ	
Allas a foule pinge it' is be my feiþ .	524

To saie þis worde and foulere is þe dede
 Whan men so drinken of þe white *and* rede
 þat of his þrote he makeþ his priuee
 Thorgh þilk' cursed Superfluite 528
 þe Apostel wepinge seiþ ful pitously
 þer walken mony of which tolde haue I
 I saie it nowe weping' wiþ pitous vois
 þer bene enemyes of cristes croys 532
 Of whiche þe eende is deþ. Wombe is her god
 O wombe o baly. o stynking' cod.
 ffulfilled of donge. and of corrupciõ
 At eiper eende of þe foule is þe seson 536
 Howe grete cost' and labour is to fynde [leaf 218, back]
 Thise Cokes howe þei stampe streyne *and* grynde
 And turnen substañce into accident'
 To ffulfille alle þe likerous talent' 540
 Out of þe hard bones knocke þei
 þe mary for þei cast' nat' away
 þat may goo þorgh þe golett' sauþ' *and* soote
 Of spicery of leeuës berk' and roote 544
 Shal bene his sause ymade be delite
 To maken hym ȝit' a newe appetite
 But' certes he þat haunteþ suche delices
 Is dede whiles þat' he lyueþ in þoo vices 548
 A lecherous þinge is wyne *and* dronknesse
 It is ful of strivinge and of wrecchednesse
 O dronken man disfigured in þi face
 ffulle is þi breeþ foule art' þou to embrace 552
 And þorgh þi dronken nose souneth þ' sounē
 As þouze þou seidest ay Sampson Sampsoun
 And ȝit' god woot sampson dronk neuere no wyne
 þow fallest' as it were a dronken swyne 556
 þi tunge is lost' and alle þine honest' Cure
 ffor drunknesse is verray sepulture
 Of mannys witte and his discreciõ
 In whoom þat' drink' haþ dominaciõ 560

He can no counsaile kepe it is no drede
 Nowe kepe 3ou from þe white *and* fro þe rede
 Namely from þe white wyne of lepe
 þat is to selle in fischstrete *and* in chepe 564
 This wyne of spayn crepeþ subtilly
 In oþer wynes growinge faste by
 Of woche riseth suche fumosite
 þat whan a man haþ dronke a drauȝt or þre 568
 And wenep þat he be at home in chepe
 þan is he in spayn riȝt at þe toune of lepe
 Nouȝt at the rocheff ne at burdeux town
 And þan wil þei say . Sampson sampsoun 572
 But harkenep lordingges oo þing I 3ou pray
 þat alle þe souereyn actes dar I say
 Of victories in olde testament [leaf 219]
 þat þorge verrey god þat is omnipotent 576
 Weren doon in abstinence *and* in preiere
 Lokep þe bible and þer 3e may it lere
 Lokep Attila þe grete conquerour
 Deide in his sclepe wiþ shame *and* dishonour 580
 Bleding at his nose in dronknesse
 A Captayn shuld live in sobrenesse
 And ouer al þise averse 3ow riȝt weþ
 What was comaunded vnto lamueff 584
 Not Samuel but lamuel say . I. ¶ *Noli vinum dare*
 Redep þe bible and fyndep it expresly
 Of wyne 3euynge of hem þat aren Iustise
 No more of þis for it may suffise 588
 And now þat I haue spoken of glotenye
 Nowe wil I defende 3ou hasardye
 ¶ *Hasard* is verrey modere of lesingges ¶ *Policratici* [Jo.
 And of disceite cursed forswerynges *Sarisburiensis*] li-
 Blaspheme of crist mansclaughter and waast also/ *bro .i. mendaciorum*
 Of bataile and of tyme and of ferþermoo *& perituarum mater*
 It is reпреef and contrarie to honoure *est alea*
 fforto be holden a comon hasardoure 596

GROUP C. § 4. PARDONER'S TALE. **Petworth MS.**

And euer þe hier he is of estate
 The more he is holden desolate
 3if þat a prince vse hasardie
 In al gouernance and polecy 600
 He is as by comon opinioñ
 Holde þe lasse in reputaciõ
 ¶ Stilboon þat was holde a wise embassatour ¶ *Stilboon .i.
Me. curius.*
 Was sent into Corinth with grete honour.
 ffor Calidoyne to make hem alliañce
 And whan he came happed þis chañce
 And al þe grettest þat were of þat lond
 Pleiying at þe hasard he hem fond 608
 ffor which as sone as þat myȝt be
 He stale hym home aȝein to his cuntre
 And saide þere I wold not lese my name
 I wold nat take on me so gret diffame. 612
 ffor to allye ȝou to noon hasardours / ¶ *(leaf 219, back)*
 Sendep oþer wiser embassatours ./
 ffor by my troupe me were leuere dye
 þan I shuld. ȝow to hasardours allie 616
 But ȝe þat bene so glorious in honoures.
 Shal not allie ȝou wiþ hasardoures .
 As by my wille ne as by my trete
 This wis philisophre þus seide hee 620
 Loke eske þat to þe kinge Demetreus
 The kyng of partes as þe booke seiþ þus
 Sent hym a paire of golden dys in scorne
 ffor he had vsed hasardrie þer byforne 624
 ffor whiche he heelde his glorie and his renoun
 ffor no value of reputacioun
 lordes myght fynde oþer manere playe
 Honest ynowe to dryue þe day awaye 628
 Now wil I speke of oþes fals and grete
 A worde or two as oþer bookes entrete .
 Grete sweringe is a þing abhominable
 And fals sweringe is moche more reproueable 632

GROUP C. § 4. PARDONER'S TALE. Petworth MS.

The highs god forbere sweryng' at alle ¶ *Nolite omnino iurare*
 Witnesse of mathewe but in speciall
 Of swerynge [seip] þe holy Ieremye. ¶ *Ieremia de In-*
 Thowe shalt swere soþe þine oþes *and* not lie *rabia inquit is*
 And swere in doome and eke in riȝtwisnesse *veritate in iu-*
 But ydel sweringe is a cursedesne *dicio & iusticia*
 Biholde and see þat in þe first table.
 Of hie goddes heestes honorable 640
 How þat two heestes of hym is þis
 Take not my tale in ydelnes amys
 Loo raþer he forbedeþ such swerynge
 Than homicide or eny oþer þinge. 644
 I saie as þus by order it stondeþ
 This knowen þat heestes vnderstondeþ
 How þat þe Secounde heest of god is þat
 And ferþer ouer I wil þe telle al plat 648
 þat vengeance shal not part from his hous
 þat of his oþes is so outrageous.
 By goddys precious hert' and his nailles [leaf 220]
 And by his blood þat is in hailles 652
 Seuen is my chaunce and his .v. *and* thre
 By goddys armes ȝif þou falsly plaie me
 This daggard shal þorgh þine hert' goo.
 This fruite *commeþ* of þilk bones twoo. 656
 ffor-sweringe Ire falsenesse homyside
 Now for þe loue of crist þat for vs dyde
 Leueþ ȝoure oþes bothe grete and smale
 ffor I shal telle ȝou a mervelous tale / 660
 Thise Riotours of which I telle.
 Longe erste er prime. ronge eny belle
 Were sette in a tauerne for to drynke
 And as þei satte þei herd a belle chink' 664
 Byforn a corpe was caried to his graue
 þat oon of hem can calle to his knaue /
 Goo bette quod he and aske redely
 What coors is þat þat passeþ forþ by 668

And loke þat þou report his name weþ
 Sire quod þis [knaue] it nedep neuer a deþ
 It was me tolde eer 3e came heer two houres
 He was parde an olde felawe of 3oures 672
 Al sodeynly was he sclayn to-nyȝt
 ffor-dronken as he satte vpon his bench vprȝt
 Ther come a prive þeef men clepen deþe
 þat in his contray al þe puple scleeþ 676
 And wiþ his speer he smote his hert atwoo
 And went his way wiþ-oute wordes moo
 He haþ a thousand sclayn þis Pestilence
 And maistere er 3e come in his presence 680
 Me þenkeþ þat it were necessarie
 ffor to be war of such an aduersarie
 Beep redy forto mete hym euermore
 Thus tauȝt me my dame I saye no more 684
 ¶ By seint marye saide þis tauernere
 þe Childe seiþ soop for he haþ sclayn to 3ere
 hens ouer a myle wiþ-Inne a grete vilage
 Both man and womman childe *and* page. 688
 I trowe his habitacioun be þere [leaf 220, back]
 To bene avised grete wisdome it were
 Er þat he did a man dishonoure
 3e goddes armes quod þis Riatoure 692
 Is it suche perile wiþ hym forto mete
 I shal hym sechen by stie and by strete
 I. make a vowe by goddys digne bones.
 Harkenep felawes we þre bene al ones. 696
 Lat eche of vs holde vp his honde to opere
 And eche of vs bycome opers broþer
 And we wil slee þis fals traitour deþe
 He shal be slayne he þat so monye sleeþe 700
 By goddys dignite er it be nyȝt
 To-gidere han þise þre her hertes plȝt.
 To lif and to dye ilk of hem wiþ oper
 As pouȝe he were his owne born broþer 704

And vp þei sterten and dronken in þis rage.
 And forþ þei goon towards þat vilage
 Of which þe tauernere hæp spoke byforne
 And mony a grisly ooþe han þei sworne 708
 And cristes blessed body þei to-rent'
 þat' deeth shal be dede if we may hym hent'
 Whan þei han goon nat' fully a myle
 Riȝt as þei wold' haue troden ouer a stile 712
 An olde and a poor man wip hem mette
 This olde man ful mekely hem grette
 And saide þus nowe lordes god þou see
 þe Prowdest' of þise Riatours thre 716
 Answerde aȝein what' cherlde wip harde grace
 Why art' þou al forwrapped sauf þi face
 Whi lyuest' þou so longe in so grete age
 This olde man gan loken in his visage 720
 And seide þus for I can nat' fynde
 A man þouȝe I walked into Ynde
 Neiþer in Cite ne in noon vilage
 þat' wil chaungen his þouȝe for myn' age 724
 And þefore mote I haue myn' age stille
 As longe tyme as it is goddys wille /
 Ne deeth allas nyl not' haue my lif' (leaf 231r)
 Thus walk I like a restlees catif 728
 And on þe grounde which is my moder' gate
 I knokke wip my staf' erly and late
 And saie leue moder' lat' me Inne
 Loo howe I varyssh flessch blood and skynne 732
 Allas whan shul my bones bene at' reste
 Modere with þou wold I chaunge my chest'
 That' in my chambere longe tyme hæp be.
 Ȝe for an heeren cloute to wrappe me 736
 But' ȝit' to me she wil nat' do þat' grace.
 ffor whiche ful welked is my face
 And sirs to þou it' is no curtesie
 To spoken vntil an olde man vilany 740
 32 PETWORTH 473 (6-T. 325)

GROUP C. § 4. PARDONER'S TALE. Petworth MS.

But he trespase in word or ellis in dede
 In holy writte 3e may 3oure self wel rede
 ¶ Aȝeinast an ȝolde man hoor vpon his hede
 3e shuld arise perfor I 3ene 3ou rede
 Ne doþ vnto and olde man harme as nowe
 No more þan 3e wolde a man did 3owe
 In age if þat 3e so longe abide
 And god be wiþ 3ow wheder 3e goo or ride
 I mote goo þidere as I haue to goo
 We nay olde cherle by god þou shalt nat soo.
 Seyde pise oþer hasardours anone
 Thow partest nat so listly be seynt Iohn
 Thow spak riȝt now of þilk tratour deþe
 þat in þis cuntre alle our frendes sleeþe
 Haue here my troupe as þou art his asprie
 Telle wher he is or ellis þou shalt dye
 By god and by þe holy sacrament
 ffor soþly þou art [on] of his assent
 To scleen vs 3enge folk þou fals þeef
 Nowe sirres if it be to 3ou so leef
 To fynde deþ turne vp þis croked way
 ffor in þat groue I left hym be my fay
 Vnder a tree and þere he wil abide
 Ne for 3oure boost he nyl hym no þinge hide
 See 3e þat ooke riȝt þere 3e shul hym fynde
 God saue 3ou þat bouȝt aȝein mankynde
 And 3ou amende þus saide þis olde man
 And euery of þise Riatours ranne
 Til þei come to þe tree and þer þei fonde
 fforeyns of gold fyne. ykoyned rounde
 Wel nyghe a seuen bussells as hem þouȝt
 No lenger than aftere deþ þei souȝt
 But eche of hem so glad was of þat syȝt
 ffor þat þe floreyne so faire be and briȝt
 That doune þei sette hem by þe precious hoorle
 The worst of hem he spak þe furst word

¶ Ceram canite
capite conserua.
744

748

752

756

760

764

[leaf 221, back]

768

772

776

Breperen quod he take hede what I say
 My witte is grete þough I bourde *and* play
 This tresour hap fortune to vs zeuen
 In myrþe and iolite our lyf to lyuen 780
 And lightly so as it *commeþ* so wil we spende
 Ey precious goddys hert who wende
 To-day þat we shulde haue so faire a grace
 But myȝt þis gold be caried fro þis place 784
 Home into myne hous or ellis to ȝoures
 ffor wel I woote þat all þis gold is oures/
 Than were we in high fellicite.
 But trewly by day it may nat be 788
 Men wold say þat we were þeues stronge
 And for oure owne tresour done vs hongre
 As wisely and as scliȝly as it myȝt
 This tresour most yearied be be nyȝt 792
 Wherefore I rede lat loke among vs alle
 To drawe and lat see where þe Cut wil falle
 he þat hap þe curt wiþ herte bliþ
 Shal renne to toun and þat ful swith 796
 To bringe vs brede and drink ful priuely
 And two of vs shal kepen sotilly
 This tresour wel and if he wil not tarie
 Whan it is nyȝt we wil þis tresor carie 800
 By oon assent where as vs likeþ best
 That oon of ham broȝt gras in his fest
 And bad hem drawe and loke wher it wolde falle [leaf 232]
 And it felle on the ȝongest of hem alle 804
 And forþ toward þe towne he went anon
 And also sone as that he was goone
 That oon of hem spak vnto þat opere
 Thewe woost wel þou art myn owne sworn broþere 808
 Thi prophite wil I telle þe anon
 Thowe woost wel þat our felawe is goon
 And here is gold and þat grete plente
 þat shal departed be amonges vs þree 812

But napelees if I can shape it soo
 þat it departed were amonges vs twoo
 Had I not done a frendes turne to þe
 þat oper Answered I not howe þat myȝt be 816
 I wold wel þat þe gold were oures twoo.
 What shuld wee doo þat it myȝt be soo.
 Shal it þe counsaile said þe first schrewe
 And I shal telle [þe] in wordes fewe 820
 What we shul doon and bringe it aboute
 I graunt quod þat oper out of doute
 That by my tronþe I nyl þe nat bywreien
 Now quod the furst þou woote wel we be tweyen 824
 And twoo of vs shul strengre be þan oon
 loke whan he is sette and þat anon
 Arise as þouȝe þou woldest wiþ hym play
 And I shal ryuen hym þorgh þe sides tway 828
 Whiles þat þow strogelest with hym as in game
 And wiþ þi daggere loke þou doo þe same
 And þan shal al þis golde departed be
 My dere freende bytwixe þe and me 832
 Than may we boop our lustes fulfille
 And play at þe dice at our owne wille
 And þus accorded bene þise shrewes tway
 To scleen þe þred as ȝe han herd me say 836
 ¶ This ȝongest which þat went to þe tounse
 fful oft in his hert rolled vp and doune
 þe bewte of þise floreyne faire and brizt
 O lord quod he ȝif it so were I myȝt 840
 Haue al þis tresour to myself alone
 [leaf 222, back]
 Ther nys no man þat lyueþ vnder trome
 Of golde þat shuld lyve so mery as I
 And at þe last þe feende oure enemye 844
 Put in his þouȝt þat he shuld poyseþ bey
 wiþ which he myȝt scleen his felawes tway
 for whi þe feende fonde him in such liyngre
 That he had leue hym to sorowe bringe 848

GROUP C. § 4. PARDONER'S TALE. Petworth MS.

ffor þis was vtterly his entent
 To scleen hem boþe and neuere to repent
 And forþ he goþ no lenger wold he tarye
 Into þe towne vnto apotecarye 852
 And preide hym þat he hym wolde selle
 Somme poysen þat he myȝt his rattes kelle
 And eke þer was a polcat in his hawe
 þat as he seide his capons had Isclawe 856
 And seide he wolk wreke hym ȝif he myȝt
 On vermyn þat destroyen hem by nyȝt
 The apoticarie answerd þou shalt haue
 A þinge þat as god my saule saue 860
 In al þis worlde þer nys no creature
 þat ete or drink of þis confecture
 Nouȝt but þe mountance of a corn of whete
 þat he ne shal his lif anon forlete 864
 Ȝe sterue he shal and þat in lasse while
 þan þow wilt goon a pace nat but a myle
 This poysen þat is so hard and violent
 This cursed man hap in his honde it hent 868
 This poysen in a boxe and siþens he ranna
 Into þe nexte strete vnto a man
 And borrowed hym large botelles þre
 And to his felawes aȝein repaireþ he 872
 The iij. he kepte clene for his drinke
 ffor alle þe nyȝt he shope hym forto swynk
 In caryng of þat gold out of þat place
 And whan þis riotour wiþ sory grace 876
 Had filled wiþ him his grete botels þre
 To his felawes aȝein repaireþ he ./.
 What nedep it to sermon þerof more (Deaf 223)
 ffor riȝt as þei had cast his deef byfore 880
 Riȝt so þei han hym sclayn and þat anon
 And whan þat þis was doon þan speke þat on
 Now lat vs sitte and drink and make vs mery
 And afterward we wil his body bery 884

GROUP C. § 4. PARDONER'S TALE. Petworth MS.

And after þat hit happed hem percas
 To taken a botell wher-in the poyson was
 And drank' and ȝaue his felawe drink' alsoþe
 þorghe whiche anon þei steruen bothe 888
 But' certes I suppose þat' Auicen
 Wroote neuer in no canon ne in no fen
 Moo wondere sorowes of empoysenyng
 Thus had þise wrecches two her endinge 892
 Thus eended be þise homycydes twoo
 And eke þis false enpoysoner alsoo
 O. cursed synne ful of al cursednesse
 O. traterous homycides .o. Wickednesse 896
 O. glotenye luxurye and hasardrye
 Thow blasphemour of crist wiþ vileny
 And opes grete of vsage and of pride
 Allas mankinde howe may it betide 900
 That' to þi creatour which þat' þe wrouȝt'
 And wiþ his precious blood þe bouȝt'
 Thowe art' so fals and so vnkynde allas
 Now good men god forȝeue ȝou ȝour trespas 904
 And kepe ȝou from þe synne of auarice
 Myne holy pardon may ȝou aȝt warisshe
 So that ȝe offer nobles or sterlyngges
 Oȝer ellis Siluere . spoones . broches . or ryngges 908
 Boweþ ȝoure hede vnder þis bulle
 Commeþ vp ȝe Wyues offereþ ȝour wille
 ȝoure name I entre here in my rolle anon
 In to þe blisse of heuene shul ȝe al goon 912
 I ȝou assoille be my highe powere
 ȝe þat' wollen offre as cleue and eke as cleere
 As ȝe were born and loo sirs þus I preche
 And Ihesu crist þat' is our saules leche . 916
 So graunte ȝou his pardon to receyue ./ [leaf 223, back]
 ffor þat' is best' I wil ȝou not' deceyue
 ¶ But' sirs oon word forgate I in my tale
 I haue relikes and pardon in my male 920

As faire as eny man in engelond
 Whiche were zeue me by þe popes hond
 3if eny of 3ow wol of deuociōn
 Offre and han myn absolucioñ 924
 Commeþ forþ anon and kneleþ here adoun
 þat 3e may haue part of my pardoun
 Or ellis takeþ pardon as 3e wende
 Al newe and fresh at euery tounes ende 928
 So þat 3e offre alway newe *and* newe
 Nobles and pans which þat bene good and trewe
 It is an honure to euery þat bene here
 þat 3e may haue a suffisant pardonere 932
 To assoile 3ou in contree as 3e ride
 ffor auentures which þat may be-tide
 ffor parauenture þer may falle oon or twoo
 Doune of her hors and breke her nek' atwoo 936
 Looke swiche a swerte it is to 3ou alle
 That I am in 3oure felawship yfalle
 þat may assoile 3ou boþ more *and* lasse
 Whan þat þe soule shal fro þe body passe 940
 I rede þat hour [hooste] shal bygynne
 ffor he is most enuolupte of synne
 Come forþ sire hoost' and offre first' anon
 And þou shalt kysse þe relikes euerchoñ 944
 3e for a groot vnbokel anon þi purs
 Nay nay quod he þan haue I cristes curs
 lat' be quod he it shal nat' be so theche
 þow woldest make me kissen þine olde breche 948
 And swere it were þe relike of a seynt'
 þouze it were wiþ þi foundement' depeynt'
 But by þe crosse which seint' Elyne fonde
 I wold I had þi culyons in myne honde 952
 In stede of relikes of seint'-wary
 Lat' kitte hem of *and* I wil helpe hem cary
 They shulde be schryned in an hogges toord' [leaf 224]
 This Pardonere answered nat' a woort' 956

GROUP C. § 4. PARDONER'S TALE. Petworth MS.

So wroþ he was he wolde no word say
 Nowe quod our oost I nyl no lenger play
 Wiþ þe ne wiþ noon oþer angry man
 But riȝt anoon þe worþi knyȝt bygan 960
 Whan þat he seegh þat alle þe puple louȝe
 No more of þis for it is riȝt ynoghe
 Sir Pardonere be mery and glad of chere
 And ȝee sir Hoost þat bene to me so dere 964
 I prei ȝou þat ȝe kisse þe Pardonere
 And pardonere I prei ȝou drawe ȝe nere
 And as we did lat vs lauȝe and play
 And anon þei kissed and riden forþ her way 968

¶ Thus endep þe pardoners tale.

And here bygynneþ

The prologe of Thoппas

¶ The prologe

[on leaf 224]

WHan saide was þis tale euery man
 As sober was þat wonder was to see
 Til þat our oost lape byganne
 And þan at erst he loket vpon me .i. chaucers 1884
 And saide þus what man art þou quod he
 Thow lokest as þow woldest fynde an hare
 ffor euer vpon þe grounde I se þe stare 1887

¶ Approche nere and loke meryly
 Now war þou sirs and lat þis man han plas
 He in þe waast is shape as wel as I
 This were a popeþ in armes to embrace 1891
 ffor eny womman smal and faire of faice
 He semeþ Elnyssh be his cuntenaunce
 ffor vnto no wizt doþ he daliaunce 1894

Say nowe somewhat siþens opere folk han saide
 Telle vs a tale of merth and þat anon
 Oost quod I ne be nat euel paide .
 ffor oper tale certes can I noon . 1898
 But of a ryme I lered longe agoþ
 þe þat is good quod he shul we it here
 Som deynte þing me semeþ by his chere . 1901

[No break in the MS, and no spaces between the stanzas
 above and after.]

¶ Here bygynneþ be tale of chauncere by Sire Thopace.

¶ Capitulum xix^m ¶ Sire Thopace.

[Fytte I.]

<p>L Estneth lordes in good entent^t And I wiþ telle verrement^t Of myrth¹ and of solace Of a knyȝt^t was faire and gent^t In bataile and in tornement^t His name was sir thopacc.</p>	<p>[leaf 224, back]</p> <p>[in a later hand] 1904</p> <p>1907</p>
---	--

<p>I-born he was in fer cuntree In flounders al byzonde þe see Att^t Poperinge in þe place His fader was a man ful free And lorde he was of þat^t cuntre As it^t was goddes grace</p>	<p>1910</p> <p>1913</p>
--	-------------------------

<p>Sir Thopas was a doughty swayn White was his face as payndemayn His lippes rede as Roos. His ruddy is like scarlett^t in grayn And I ȝow telle in good certayn He had a semely nose</p>	<p>1916</p> <p>1919</p>
---	-------------------------

<p>His heer his beerd was lik saffron þat^t to his girdel kauȝt^t adoune His shoon of Cordewayne/ Of brugges were his hosen broun His Roobe was of Ciclatoun That^t cost^t mony a rayn</p>	<p>1922</p> <p>1925</p>
---	-------------------------

PETWORTH 482 (6-T. 191.)

He coupe hunte at wylde dere
 And Ride on hawkyng' for þe Ryuer
 Wiþ grey goshaunke on honde 1928
 Therto he was a good archere
 To wrastling' was þer noon his peer
 Ther eny ram shulde stonde 1931

fful mony a maide brigt in boure
 þei morn for him Paramoure
 Whan þei were bette to slepe. 1934
 But he was chaast' and no lecchoure
 And swete as is þe bremble floure
 That bereþ þe reede heppe 1937

And so byfelle vppon a day
 for sopþe as I 3owe telle may
 Sire Thopaas wold out' ride [leaf 225] 1940
 He worþ vp on his stede gray
 And in his honde a launce gay
 A longe swerde be his side 1943

He prikkeþ þorowe a faire forest
 Ther-in is mony a wilde beest
 3a boþ bukke and hare 1946
 And as he prikkeþ norþ and east
 I telle 3owe hym had almeest
 By-tidde a sory care 1949

There springen herbes grete and smale
 þe lykorice and þe Setuale
 And mony a clowe gyloffre 1952
 And notemuges to put' in ale
 Wheþere it' be moyst' or stale
 Or forto lay in Coffre 1955

þe birdes syngen it is no nay
þe sparhauke and þe popenaiy
þat Ioie it was to here 1958
The þrostel cok made eke his lay
The woode douve vpon þe spray
She songe ful loude *and* clere/ 1961

Sire Thopas felle in loue longynge
And whan he hard þe þrostel synge .
He prikkes as he were woode 1964
His faire stede in his prikkinge
So swette þat men myȝt hym wringe
His sides were al blood 1967

Sire Thopas eke so wery was
ffor prikkinge on þe soft gras
So feers was his corage 1970
That' doune he laide hym in þat' plas
To maken his stede som solas
ffor he was so Sauage 1973

O seint Marie Benedicite	
What aileþ þis loue at mee	
To hynde me so sore	1976
Me dremed al þis nyȝt parde	
An Elfe quene shal my lemman be	[leaf 122, back]
And slepe vndere my gore	1979

And elf quene wil I loue ywis
ffor in þis world no womman is
Worþi to be my make
in town
Al oþer wommen I forsaake
And to an elfe quene I me take
By dale *and* eke by doun

Into his sadel he came anone
 And prikkeþ ouere stile *and* stone
 An helf quene forto asprie 1989
 Til he so longe haþ riden and goon
 That he fonde in a priuee wooñ
 þe Cuntry of fary. 1992

¶ so wild

ffor in þat cuntre nas þer noon
 [. *no gap in the MS.*]
 Neiþer wif ne child 1996

Til him þer come a Ioly geaunt
 His name was clepede Sir Olyfaunte
 A perilous man of dede 1999
 He seide childe by tirmagaunt
 But þif þou prik' out of myn haunt
 Anoon I sclee þi stede. 2002

¶ wiþ mace

Here is þe quene of fairie
 Wiþ harpe wiþ pipe and Simphony
 Dwelling in þis place 2006

The Childe saide so mot I þee
 To morowe wil I meten þee
 Whan I haue myn Armure 2009
 And ȝif I hope þar ma faye
 þat þou shalt wiþ þis launcelay
 Abien it ful sore 2012

¶ Thorgh þ' mawe

Shal I perce ȝif I may
 Er it be fully prime of day
 ffor here þow shalt be sclawe 2016

Sire Thopas drogh a-bak ful fast
 This Geaunt at him stones cast
 Out of a felle staf sclynge 2019
 But faire eskapeþ child thopa
 And al it was þorgh goddes grace [leaf 220]
 And þorgh his faire beringe 2022

3it listneþ lordes to my tale
 Murier þan þe nyztingale
 ffor now I wil 3ou rowne 2025
 Howe Sire Thopas wiþ sides smale
 Prickinge ouer doune *and* dale
 Is come a3ein to toune 2028

His mery men commaunded he
 To make hym boþ game and glee
 ffor nedes most he fi3t 2031
 Wiþ oon geaunt wiþ hedes þre
 ffor paramoure and Iolite
 Of oon þat shoon ful bri3t 2034

Do come he seide myn menstralles
 And geestours for to telle vs tales
 Anon in myn armynge 2037
 Of Romance þat bene reales
 Of popes and of cardynales
 And eke of loue likyng 2040

þei fatte hym first þe swete wyne
 [.] 2043

 *no gap in the MS.*
 And licorice *and* eke comyne
 Wiþ sugre þat is cree 2046

GROUP B. § 8. SIR THOMAS. Petworth MS.

He did next his white leer
 Of clop of lake fyne *and* clere
 A breche and eke a sherte 2049
 And next his shert an aketon
 And ouer þat an haberioun
 for peercyng of an herte 2052

And ouer þat a fyne hawberk
 Was al ywrouzt of Iwes werk
 fful stronge it was of plate 2055
 And ouer þat his cote armour
 As white as is þe lily flour
 In which he wil debate 2058

His sheeld was of gold so rede
 A þer-in was a bores hede
 A charboele by his side 2061
 And þere he swore on ale *and* brede [leaf 225, back]
 Howe þat þe geaunt shal be dede
 Betide what bytide 2064

His laumbeux were of 'quirboile [1? conlurtoile]
 His sweerde scheep of yuory
 His helme of laton brizt 2067
 His sadel was of Rowel bone
 His bridel as þe sonne shone
 Or as þe moon lizt 2070

His spere was of fyne Cipres
 That bodeþ werre & no þing pees
 The hede ful sharpe ygrounde 2073
 His stede was al dapple grey
 It goþ an aumble by þe wey
 fful softely and rounde 2076

¶ In londe

Loo lordys myne here is a fitte

If 3e wil eny more of it

To telle it wil I fonde

2080

[Fitte II.]

Now holde 3oure mouth for charite

Boþ knyȝt and lady fre

And harkneþ to my spelle

2083

Of Bateþ and of Chivalrie

And of ladies loue drurye

Anoon I wil 3ou telle

2086

Men speken of romances of price

Of horn childe and of ypotice

Of Befes and of sire gie

2089

Of Sy le boyx and Pleyndamour

But sire Thopace he bereþ þe flour

Of royal chyualrie

2092

His good stede he bystrode

And forþ vpon his way glode

As sparke out of þe brond

2095

Vpon his creest he bere a tour

And þer-Inne stiked a lilye flour

God shilde his corpe fro shonde

2098

And for he was a knyȝt auntrous

He nolde sclepen in non hous /

But ligge in his hode

[leaf 227]

His briȝt helme was his wongere

And by hym baite his deistrere

Of eebes fyne and good.

2104

GROUP B. § 8. SIR THOPAS. **Petworth MS.**

Hym self drank watere of þe welle

As did þe knyzt' sire percyvelle

So worpely vnder wede

[. *no gap in the MS.*]

2108

NO more of þis for goddys dygnite
 Quod our hoost for þou makest me
 So wery of þi verrey lewdenesse
 That also wisly god my soule blesse 2112
 Myn eeres aken of þi drasty speche
 Now such a ryme þe deuel I byteche
 ¶ This may wel be cleped ryme dogrel quod he
 Whi so quod he whi wilt þou lette me. 2116
 More of my tale þan an oþer man
 Siþ þat it is þe best ryme þat I can
 By god quod he for pleynty at a worde
 Thi drasty rymyng' nys nat' worþ a torde 2120
 Thow dost' not' ellis but' spendest' tyme
 Sire atte oon worde þou shalt' no lenger ryme
 Lat' see wher þou canst tellen ouzt' in geeste
 Or ellis in prose somewhat' at' þe leest' 2124
 In whiche þer be somme merth' or doctrine
 Gladly quod I by goddys swete pyne
 I wil ȝow telle a litel þinge in prose
 þat' auȝt' like ȝou as I suppose 2128
 Or ellis certes ȝe bene to daungerous
 It is a moral tale vertuous
 Al be it tolde somtyme in sondry wise
 Of sondry folk' as I shal ȝou devise 2132
 As þus ȝe woote þat' euery euangelist
 That' tallen vs þe peyn of Ihesu crist'
 Ne seiþ al þing as his felawe doop
 But' napeles her sentence is aft' soop. 2136
 And al accorden as in her sentence
 Al be þer in her tellyng' difference

GROUP B. § 9. THOPAS-MELIBE LINK. **Petworth MS.**

ffor somme of hem seyn more and somme leese [leaf 227, back]
 Whan þei his pitous passioun expresse 2140
 I mene of mark mathewe luke and Iohn
 But doutelees her sentence is al on
 Therefore lordynggs al I 3ou biseche
 3if þat 3e þenk I vary as in my spech 2144
 As þus þou3e þat I telle somewhat more
 Of prouerbes þat 3e han herd byfore
 Comprehended in þis liteff tretys here
 To enforseen wiþ þe effecte of my matere 2148
 And þou3e I not þe same wordes say
 As 3e han herde 3it to 3o" all I pray
 Blameþ me nat for in my sentence
 Shul 3e nowhere fynde difference 2152
 ffro þe sentence of þis tretys lite
 Aftere þe which þis mery tale I write
 And þerfor harkenep what I shal say
 And lat me telle al my tale I pray 2156

¶ Here endep þe tale of Sir Thopas

[No break in the MS.]

GROUP B. § 10. MELIBEUS. Petworth MS.

[*There are no line-numbers or breaks between the paragraphs in the MS. Tyrnwhitt's breaks are kept here to prevent slight differences in the Six Texts throwing out many lines. Some of the omissions in the MS are supplied from the print of the French original in Le Ménagier de Paris, ed. 1847, i. 186, as that proves the omissions to be such.*]

[*Petworth MS, on leaf 227, back.*]

And here bygnneþ þe tale of Melebius & prudence.

[2157]

A þong' man called Melebius myȝty and riche
bygate vpon his wif þat' called was Prudence a
doughter which þat' called was Sophie.

[2158] Vpon a day byfelle' þat' he for his disporte
is went' into þe felde. him to play' [2159] his wif
and his doughtere he haþ bylaft' in-with his hous. of
which þe doores weren fast' shette. [2160] Ther of his
olde foen had espied. and satten ladders to þe walles
of his hous. and by þe wyndowes bene entred. [2161] and
bete his wif and wounded his douȝter wiþ .v.
mortal woundes in .v. sondry places. [2162] This is to
sayn in her feete. in her hondes. in her eeres. in her
nose. and in her mouþe. and laften her' for dede. and
wenten her way

[2163] Whan Melebius retourned' was into his
hous and segh al þis meschief. He like a mad man
reending' his cloþes gan to wepe and crie.

[2164] ¶ Prudence his wif as ferforþ as she durst'.
bysouȝt' hym of his weping' for to stynt'. [2165] but' not'
forþi. he gan wepe and crye euere lenger þe more.

[2166] This noble wif prudence remembred her' vpon
þe sentence of Ovide in his booke þat' cleped is þe remedy
of loue. 'De remedio Amoris. Where as he seiþ. [2167]
He is a foole þat' distroubeþ þe modere to weepe in þe deep
of her childe. til she haue wepte her fulle. as for a certeyn
tyme. [2168] And þan shal man / doon his dyligence wiþ
amyable chere hir' to recomforte and prei hyr' of

GROUP B. § 10. MELIBEUS. Petworth MS.

her wepinge forto stynt. [2169] ffor which reson þis noble wiff Prudence suffred her husbonde forto wepe and crie as for a corteyn space. [2170] ¶ And whan she segh her tyme she saide to him in þis wise ¶ Allas my lord quod she whi maken ȝe ȝour self forto [*sembler fol?*] [2171] *Il n'appartient pas à sage homme de* maken such a sorowe. [2172] ȝoure douȝtere with þe grace of god shal warissch and scape. [2173] And al were is so? þat she riȝt now were dede. ȝe ne auzt not as for her deth ȝour self destroie. [2174] ¶ Senec seip / þe wise man shal not take to gret discomfort for þee deep of his children. [2175] but certes he shuld suffre it in pacience / as wel as he abideþ þe deep of his owne propre persone.

[2176] ¶ This Melebius answerd anon and sayde. What man quod he shulde of his weping stent. þat hap so grete a cause as I haue. [2177] .Ihesu our lord him self wepte for þe deep of lazarus his frende ¶ *Qualiter Ihesus christus fleuit propter mortem Lazari.* [2178] ¶ Prudence answerde. Certes wel I woot attempre wepinge is no þinge defended to him þat soroweful is. amonges folk in sorowe. but it is rather graunted hym to wepe. [2179] The Appostel paul vnto þe Romayns. *Apostolus a Romanos writeþ.* Man shal reioyse wip hem þat maken Ioie. and wepe with suche folk as wepen: [2180] But pouȝe attempre wepinge be graunted. certes outrage wepinge is defended. [2181] ¶ Measure of wepinge shulde be considered aftre þe loor þat techeth vs senec [2182] ¶ Whan þat þi frende is dede seip he. lat not þine eyen to moist bene of teeres. commynge to þine eyen. lat hem nat falle. [2183] And whan þowe hast forgoon þi frende. Do diligence to geten anoþer. and þis is more wisdomen þan forto wepe for þi frende which þat þow hast lorne. for þer-in nys no boote. [2184] And þerfore ȝif ȝe gouerne ȝou by sapience. putte away sorowe from ȝoure hertes. [2185] Remembreþ þat Ihesus Sirak seip,

GROUP B. § 10. MELIBEUS. Petworth MS.

A man þat is loious and glad in hert it conserueþ
 hym florsshyng in his age But soly sorowful hert
 makeþ his bonys drie. [2186] He seiþ eke þus.
 þat sorowe in hert scleeþ ful mony a man. [2187] Sa-
 lomon seiþ: þat riȝt as mothes in þe shepes fleese
 annoyen to þe cloþes. and þe smale wormes to þe tree.
 Riȝt so annoieþ sorowe to þ^e herte [2188] 'Wherefore
 vs auȝt as wel in þe deef of oure children as in þe
 losse of our goodes temporeles haue pacience.

[2189] Remembreþ ȝowe vpon pacient Iob.
 Whan he had lost his childere and his temporell sub-
 stance and in his body endured mony a
 greuous tribulaciō ȝit saide he þus. [2190] Our
 lorde haþ ȝeue it me / our lorde haþ byraft it me
 Riȝt so as our lord wolde riȝt so is it done. yblessed
 be þe name of our lord [2191] ¶ To þise forseide
 þingges answered Melebius vnto his wif Prudence
 Al þise wordes quod he bene trewe. and þerto pro-
 fitable. But trewly myn hert is troubled soo. wiþ þis sorowe.
 so grisly þat I note what to doon. [2192] Lat calle
 quod prudence þi trewe frendes alle. and þine lynage
 which þat bene wise. telleþ ȝour caas and herkeneth
 what þei say in counsaillinge And ȝou gouerne aftere her
 sentence. [2193] Salomon seiþ wrik al þi þing
 by counsail and þou shalt neuere repent

[2194] ¶ Than by þe counsaile of [his wif Pru-
 dence] [*Melibée appella moult de*] folk. [2195] as
 Sirurgyens. Phisiciens. olde folk and ȝonge. and som
 of his olde enemyes reconciled as by her countenaunce
 to his loue and into his grace. [2196] And þerwipal
 þer commen somme of his neizboures þat didden him
 reuerence. more for drede þan for loue as it happeþ
 oft [2197] ¶ Ther commen also ful mony subtile flaterers
 and wise aduocates lered in þe lawe.

[2198] And whan þise folk to-gydere were assembled.
 this Melebius in sorowful wise shewed hem his caas.

[2199] And by þe manere of his speche it semed þat in his hert he bere a cruel yre. redy to do vengeance vpon his foon. And sodeynly þan desired þat þe werre shuld bygynne [2200] But napeles 3it axed he her counsaile vpon þis matere. / [2201] ¶ A Sirurgien by licence and assent of such as were wise vp aroos and vnto melebius saide as 3e shul here

[2202] ¶ Sir quod he as to vs Syrurgience appentep þat we doo to euery wight þe best þat we can . wher as we bene wipholden. and to our pacience þat we do no damage. [2203] Wherfore it happed mony tyme and oft þat whan þat twey men had euerich wounded opere oon Sirurgien heleþ hem boþe. [2204] Wherfore vnto our art it is not appertenent to norsshe werre ne parties to supporte / [2205] But certes as to þe warissching of 3oure doghtere al be it so þat she perilously be wounded we shullen do so ententif bysynes fro day to nyght That wip þe grace of god she shal be hool and sounde as sone as is possible [2206] ¶ Almost riȝt in þe same wise þe Phisicien answerd saue þat þei seiden a fewe woordes moore. [2207] That riȝt as maladies ¹ bene by hure contraries saued Riȝt soo shal man warisshe werre by vengeance. [2208] His neighbours ful of envie his feyned frendes þat semeden reconciled his flaterers [2209] made semblant of wepinge and enpeiren and engreggen mochel of þis matere in preising gretely meleby of myȝt. of power. of Richesse and of frendes. Dispisinge þe power of his aduersaries / [2210] and seiden vttrely þat he anon shuld wreke hym. on his foes and bygynne werre.

[2211] ¶ Vp roos þan an aduocate þat was wise. by leue and by counsaile of opere þat were wise. and saide. [2212] ¶ Lordingges þe nede for þe which we bene assembled in þis place is ful heuy þinge. and a grette matere [2213] by cause of þe wronge and of þe wikkednesse þat hap bene doon. and eke by reson of a grette damage þat

in tyme commyng^t is possible to fallen. for þe same. [2214] and eke by resoñ of þe grete riches and power of þe parties boþe. [2215] ffor þe which resonis it were a ful grete perile to erren in þis matere. [2216] Wherfore melebius þis is oure sentence. we counsaile þou abouen al þinge. þat riȝt^t anon ȝe do diligence in þe kepinge of ȝoure propre persone in such a wise þat ȝe ne wante noon espie ne wacche. ȝoure body forto saue. [2217] And after þat we counsaile þat in ȝoure hous ȝe sette suffisant^t harnays. so þat þei mowe as wel ȝoure body as ȝour hous defende [2218] But certes forto moue werre. or sodeynly to doo vengeance we mowe not deme in so litel tyme þat were profitable [2219] wherfore we axen leisere and space to haue deliberaciō in þis caas to deme. [2220] ffor þe Comon prouerbe seiþ þus. He þat sone demeth sone shal repent. [2221] And eke men sayn þat þilk Iuge is wis þat sone vnderstondeþ a matere. and Iuggeþ by leisere. [2222] ffor al be it soo þat taryinge be noyful. algate it is nat^t to repreue in ȝeuyng of Iuggement ne in Vengeaunce takinge whan it is so suffisaunt^t and resonable. [2223] & swed oure lorde Ihesu crist^t by ensample. ffor whan þe womman þat was taken in avoutrie / was brouȝt in his presence to knowen what shulde be doon of her persone. al be it þat he wist wel him self what he wold answere [*toutesvoies il ne respondi pas*] sodeynly. but he wolde haue deliberaciō. And in þe grounde he wroot threse. [2224] and by þise causes we axe deliberaciō. And we shul þan by grace of good counsaile doo þinge that shal be profitable

[2225] ¶ Vp sterten þen þe ȝonge folk at onys¹ and þe moost^t partie of þat companye han scorne of þis wise olde man and bygonnen to make noyse and saide. [2226] Riȝt^t soo þe while þat yren is hoot. men shulde smyte. Riȝt^t soo shuld^t men wreken her harmes and wrogges.

þe while þei bene fresshe and newe. And wip lowde voice þei criden werre.

[2227] .Vp roos þoo oon of þise olde wise and wip his hondes made countenaunce þat men shulde holden hem stille and ȝeuen hym audience. [2228] ¶ Lordingges quod he þer is ful mony a man / þat crien werre werre þat woten ful litel what werre amounteþ. [2229] Werre at his bygynnynges haþ so grete an entre *and* so large þat euery wight may entre whan him likeþ and listly fynde werre. [2230] But certes what ende shal falle it is nat list to knowe. [2231] ffor sopely whan þat werre is onys bygonne. þer is ful mony a childe vnborn of his modere. þat steruen. ȝonge by cause of pilk werre or ellys lye in swowe and dye in wrecchednesse. [2232] And þerfore er þat eny wefre be bygonne men most han grete counsaile and grete deliberacioñ [2233] And whan þis olde man had wende to enforseen his tale by resons. wel nygh aȝ at onys bygonne to rise forto breken his tale. and beden hym ful oft his wordes forto abrigge. [2234] ffor soply he þat precheþ to hem þat list nat here his wordes his sermon auaileþ not. [2235] ffor Ihesus Sirak. seiþ. þat musike in wepinge is noyous pinge. This is to saien as moche auaileþ to speke tofore folk to which his speche auaileþ not. as it is to synge byfore hym þat wepeþ. [2236] And whan þis wise man segh þat hym wanted audience al shamefast he sette hym doune ageyne. [2237] ffor Salomon seiþ. Ther as þou ne maist not haue audience. enforce þe nat to speke [2238] ¶ I se wel quod þis wise man þat þe comon prouerbe is soþe. þat good counsaile whan it is most nede auaileþ

[2239] ¶ ȝit had þis Melebius in his counsaile moche folk þat prively in his eere counsailed hym moche pinge *and* counsailed hym þe contrarye in general audience

[2240] ¶ Whan Melebius had herd þe grettest

partye of his counsaile were acorded þat he shuld make werre. Anof consented to her counsaillinge and fully affermed her sentence [2241] ¶ Than dame Prudence whan þat she seye howe þat her husbonde shope forto wreke hym on his foon and bygynne werre. she in ful vnble wise whan she segh her tyme saide hym þise wordes [2242] ¶ My lord quod she I þow biseche as hertely as I dare and can no hast þou nat to fast. and for all guerdons as þeue me audience. [2243] ffor Pirus Alfons. seiþ þus. who so þat dop þe good or harme. hast þe nat to qwiten it. ffor in þis wise þi frende wil abide and þine enemye shal þe lenger lyve in drede. / [2244] ¶ The prouerbe seiþ. He hastep wel þat wisely can abide. And in wicked haast nys no profit

[2245] ¶ This Meleby answerd to his wiff Prudence I. purpoos not quod he to wirken after þi counsaile ffor mony causes and resons. ffor certes euery wiȝt wolde holde me þan a foot [2246] ¶ This is to sayne If I for þi counsailling wold chaunge þingges þat aren affermed by so mony wise men. [2247] Secoundly I saye þat alle wommen bene wicke. and non good of hem all. for of a thowsande men saiþ Salomon .I. foond oon good man. But certes of alle wommen good womman fonde I neuer one. [2248] And also certys ȝif I gouerned me by þi counsaile it shuld seme þat I had þeue þe euere þe maistrie as god forbede þat it so were. [2249] ffor Syrak seiþ þat if þe wif haue þe maistrie she is contrarious [*à son mary*]. [2250] And Salomon seiþ Neuere in þi lif to þi wif ne to þi childe ne to þi frende ne þeue no power ouer þi self. ffor bettere it were þat þi children asken of þi persone þinge þat hem nedep þan þou sese þi self in þe hondes of þi children [2251] ¶ And also ȝif I wolde wyrk by þi counsaillinge. Certes my counsaile most somtyme be secree. til it were tyme þat it most be

knowe and þis ne may not be [2252. For it is written,
 'þe Iangelarie of wommen can hide pingges þat
 þei woote nouȝt' [2253] Furthermore, the philosopher
 saith, 'In wicked counsaile wommen venquissȝ men;'
 and for these reasons I ought not to make use of thy
 counsel. (See l. 2274, 2280, p. 209, 210, *below*.)]

[2254] ¶ Dame Prudence ful debonairly and
 wiȝ grete pacience had harde aȝ þat her husbonde
 liked to say. þan axed she of hym licence forto
 speke and saide in þis wise. [2255] ¶ My lord quod she
 as to ȝoure furst reson certes it may lȝtly be
 answerde. for I say þat it nys no folȝ to chaunge
 counsaile whan þe þinge is chaunged. ffor ellis whan
 þe þinge semeȝ oȝer wise þan it was byforn
 [2256 *Après, je dy encores plus, car se tu avoies
 promis et juré de faire*] ȝoure emprise. And
 napelees ȝe wayn to [per]foreme þilk same emprise.
 by iust cause. Men shuld not seyn þat ȝe were
 a lyer or forsworne. [2257] ffor þe booke seiȝ The
 while man makeȝ no lesinge! whan he turneȝ his corage to
 þe better. [2258] And al be it soo þat ȝoure emprise be
 establed and ordeyned by grete multitude of folk. ȝit
 ther ȝou not accomplise þilk same ordynaunce but ȝou like.
 [2259] ffor þe troupe of pingges and þe profite bene
 raper founden. in fewe ¹folk þat bene wise and ful of
 reson þan by grete multitude of folk per euery man
 criȝ and clatereȝ what hym likeȝ. Sooply such
 multitude nys not honest [2260] And to þe secounde
 reson wher as ȝe seyn þat wommen bene wicked.
 saue ȝoure grace Certes ȝe dispise aȝ wommen in þis
 wise. and [he] þat al dispiseth [al displeseth]. as seiȝ þe
 boke. [2261] And Senec seiȝ. Who-so wil haue sapi-
 ence shal no man dispreise. but he shal gladly teche
 þat he can. wiȝ[out] presumpcioun or pride.
 [2262] and suche þinge as he nouȝt ne can he
 shal not bene ashamed to lerne hem / and enquire of lasse

GROUP B. § 10. MELIBEUS. Petworth MS.

folk pan hym self. [2263] And þat þer haþ bene ful mony good wommen. [*l'en le puet prouver légèrement.* [2264] *Premièrement, car nostre Seigneur Ihésu-Crist ne se fust oncques daigné descendre en femme*] 3if alle wommen had be wikke. [2265] but for þat grete bounte þat is in wommen: our lorde Ihesus crist whan he was risen from deþe to lyf appered raper to a womman pan to his apostels. [2266] And þou3e þat Salomon say. þat he ne fonde neuer no good womman: It folowep not þefore þat alle wommen bene wikke. [2267] ffor þou3e. þat he ne foonde noon good Certes mony an opere man haþ founde mony a womman ful good and trewe. [2268] Or ellis peraventure þe entent of Salomon þis. as in souereyn bounte he saide no womman. [2269] This to sayn þat þer is no wizt þat haþ souereyne bounte sauf god allone. as he hym self recordeþ in his euangely. [2270] ffor þer nys no creature so good þat hym ne wantep somewhat of þe perfeccioun of god þat is his [maker] [2271] ¶ 3oure iij. reson is þis. 3e seyne þat if 3e gouerned 3ou by counsaile of me it shulde seme þat 3e had 3eue me þe maistrie and þe lordship Ouer 3oure person. [2272] sire saue 3oure grace: it is not soo. ffor 3if it so were þat man shulde be counsailed but only of hem þat had maistrie and lordship ouer his persone. men wold nat be counsailed so oft. [2273] ¶ ffor soply pilk man þat axep counsaile of a purpoos. 3it haþ he free chois wheþer he wil wirk by þat counsaile or nōn. [2274] ¶ And as to 3oure ferþe reson þer as 3e sayn þat þe Iangelarie of wommen can hide þingges þat þei woote nou3t as who seiþ. þat a womman can not hide. [2275] Sire Thise woordes bene vnderstonde of wommen þat bene Iangelers and wicked [2276] of which womme men seiyn þat þre þingges dryuen a man out of his hous. That is to seyn Smoke. dropping of Reyn/ and wicked wyues [2277] ¶ And

such womman seith Salomon . þat it were better a man were
 in desert by hym self . þan wiþ a womman at home þat is
 riotours . [2278] And Sire by ȝoure leue ¹þat am nat I .
 [2279] ffor ȝe haue ful oft assaied my grete silence and my
 grete pacience . and eke how wel I can hiden and hele þinges
 þat men ouȝten secrely to hyde [2280] ¶ And soply as to
 ȝoure .v. resoñ . where as ȝe sayn þat in wicked coun-
 saille wommen venquissȝ men / god woote þilk is no reson
 in no stede . [2281] ffor vnderstondeth now . ȝe
 axen counsaile forto doo wikkednesse . [2282] and if ȝe wiþ
 wikkednesse and ȝoure wiff restreyn þilk
 wikkednesse & ouercommeþ ȝou by reson and by
 good counsaile / [2283] certis ȝoure wiff ouȝt raper to be
 preysed þan yblamed [2284] ¶ Thus shuld ȝe vnder-
 stonde þe philosophre þat saiþ . In wikked counsaile
 wommen venquysȝ her husbondes [2285] And þer
 as ȝe blamen alle wommen and her reasons I shal shewe
 ȝou by mony ensamples þat mony a womman haþ
 bene ful good an ȝit bene . and her counsaile hoolsom
 and profitable [2286] Eke somme men han saide þat þe
 counsaile of wommen is eiþer do dere or to
 litel of price [2287] But al be it soo þat ful mony
 womman is badde and her counsaile vile and not worþe /
 ȝit han men founden ful mony a good womman and ful
 discrete and wise in counsailynge [2288] ¶ Loo Iacobe by
 counsaile of his modere Rebekka wan þe benyson of
 Isaak his fadere and þe lordship of al his //
 [2289] Iudith by her good counsaile delyuered þe Cite of
 Bethulye in which she dwelled out of þe hondes of
 Olyfernes þat had it biseched and wolde it destroye
 [2290] abigaille deliuered Nabell her husbonde from
 dauid þe [*roy qui le voloit occire, et appaisa*]
 þe kinge by her witte and by þe good counsail-
 inge [2291] ¶ Hester By hure good consaile enhaunsed
 gretly þe puple of god in þe regne of Assuerus . The kinge
 [2292] and þe same bunte in good counsailynge of

mony a good womman may men telle / [2293] and moreover whan our lorde had create Adam our forme fadere he saide in þis wise [2294] ¶ It is nat good to be a man allone. make we to hym an helpe s[e]mblable to him self [2295] ¶ Here may ȝe see þat ȝif womman were nat good and her counsaile good and profitable [2296] Oure lord god of heuen wolde neiȝer haue wrouȝt hem. ne called hem helpe of man. but ȝaper confusion to man. [2297] And þat seide onys a clerk in twoo vers. What is bette þan gold. Iasper. And what is better þan Iaspe. Wisdome. [2298] And what is better þan wisdom Womman. and what is better þan good womman no þinge. [2299] And sire by mony oȝer resons may ȝe see þat wommen bene good [*et leur conseil bon*] and profitable. [2300] And þefore ȝif ȝe wil trest to my counsaile I shal restore ȝou ȝoure douȝtere hool¹ and sounde. [2301] And eke I wil do to ȝou so moche þat ȝe haue honure in þis caas

[2302] ¶ Whan meleby harde þe wordes of his wif Prudence he saide þus. [2303] I see wel þat þe wordes of Salomon bene soȝe. He seiȝ þat wordes þat bene spoken discretely by ordinaunce. bene hony combes for þei ȝeuen swetnesse to þe soule and hoolsomnesse to þe body [2304] And wif by cause of þi swete wordes and eke for I haue assaied and preued þi grete sapience and þi grete trouȝe I wil gouerne me by þi counsaile in al þinge

[2305] ¶ Now sire quod dame prudence and sipeȝ ȝe vouche sauȝ to be gouerned by my counsaile I wol enforme ȝowe howe ȝe shul gouerne ȝoure selfe in chesing of ȝoure counsaile. [2306] ȝe shal first in al ȝoure werkes mekely bysechen to þe hiȝe god þat he wil be ȝoure counseilour [2307] and shapeȝ as to such entent þat he ȝeue ȝou counsaile and comferte as tauȝt Thebye his sone. [2308] At al tymes þow shalt blesse

god and prey hym dresse þi waies. and loke alle
þi counsailes bene in hym for euermore [2309] ¶ Seint
Iame eke saiþ. If eny of ȝowe haue nede of Sapience. axe
it of god. [2310] and afterward þan shal ȝe take
counsaile in ȝoure self. and examyne wel ȝoure pouȝtes of
such þingges as ȝou þenkeþ þat is best for ȝoure profit.
[2311] And þan shal ȝe driue from ȝoure hert þoo
þat bene contrarious to good counsaile. [2312]
þat is to sayn Ire. Couetise and hastynesse.

[2313] ffurst he þat askeþ counsaile of hym self certys
he most bene wip-out Ire. for many causes [2314]
¶ Þe ffurst is þis. He þat haþ grete Ire and wreþe in
hym self he weneþ alway þat he may doo þat he
may nat doo [2315] ¶ And secoundly he þat is Irous
and wroth. he ne may nat wel deme. [2316] [and he þat]
may nat wel [deme may nat wel] counsaile [2317] ¶ The
iiij. is this þat he þat is Irous and wroþe as saiþ
Senec ne may nat speke but blameful þingges / [2318]
and wip his vicious wordes he stireþ oþer folk to
angre and to Ire. [2319] And eke sir ȝe most dryue
Couetise out of ȝoure hert. [2320] ffor þe appostel seiþ
þat Couetise is roote of alle harmes. [2321] And trusteþ
wel þat a couetous man ne can nat deme [ne thinke]
but only to fulfille þe eende of his couetise [2322] and
certes þat may neuer ben accompliced. ffor euer
more þe habundance þat he haþ of Ricchesse þe more
he desireþ. [2323] ¶ And sire ȝou most also dryue away
from ȝoure hert hastynesse [2324] for certes ȝe may
not deme for þe best a sodeyn pouȝt þat falleþ in
ȝoure hert. ¶ but ȝe most averse ȝou on it ful oft.
[2325] ffor as ȝe herde he[re]-to-forþe þe comon prouerbe. It
is þis þat he þat sone demeþ. sone repenteth.

[2326] Sire ȝe bene not alway in like disposicion
[2327] for certes some þinge þat semeþ somtyme to
ȝou good to do. Anoper tyme it semeþ to ȝou
þe contrarie

[2328] ¶ Whan ȝe han taken counsaile in ȝoure self and so han demed by good deliberacioñ such pingges as ȝou semed best / [2329] þan rede I ȝou þat ȝe kepe it Secre [2330] Bywrey nat ȝoure counsaile to no persone. but if so be þat ȝe wenen þat sikerly þat þorgh ȝoure bewreying ȝoure condicioñ shal be þe more profitable. [2331] ffor Ihesus Cirak seiþ. neipere to þi ffoo ne to þi freende diskeuere not þi secre ne þi folye [2332] for þei wil ȝeue þe audience and lokinge and supportacioñ in þi presence and scorne þe in þine absence [2333] ¶ Anoper clerk seiþ þat scarcely shalt þow fynden eny persone þat may kepe counsaile secrely. [2334] þe boke saiþ. Whilst þat þou kepest þi counsaile in þine herte þou kepest it in þi prisoñ. [2335] And whan þou bywreiest þi counsaile to eny wight he holdeþ þe in his snare [2336] And þerfore it is better hide þi counsaile in þine hert. þan preien hym to whom ȝe han bywreieþ ȝoure counsaile þat he wil kepen it clooce and stille [2337] ¶ ffor Senec saiþ. If so be þat þou ne may þine owne counsaile hide. how maist þou preien eny oper wight þi secree counsaile to kepe [2338] ¶ But napeles ȝif þou wene sikerly þat þi bewrying of þi counsaile to a persone wil make þi condicion stonden in a better plite. þan shalt þou telle him þi counsaile in þis wise [2339] ¶ ffurst þou shalt make no semblant whedere þe were leuer pces or werre. or þis or þat. ne schewe hym not þi wille and þine entent. [2340] ffor trest wel þat comonly þise counsailours bene flaterers [2341] and namely þe counseilours of grete lordys. [2342] ffor þei enformen hem alway rapier to speke plesannt wordys enclynyng to þe lordes lust þan woordes þat bene trewe and profitable [2343] ¶ And þerfore men sayne þat þe riche man haþ seelden good counsaile. but ȝif he haue it of hym self [2344] And aftere þat þow shalt considere þi frendes and þine enemyes. [2345] and as touchinge þi frendes þou shalt con-

sidere ¶ which of hem bene most feipfull. and most wyse and eldest 'and most' approued in counseillynge / [2346] of hem shalt þowe axe þi counsaile as þe caas requireþ

[2347] I say not furst 3e shul clepe to 3oure counsaile 3oure frendes þat bene trewe [2348] ¶ ffor Salomon seiþ. þat riȝt as þe hert of a man deliteþ in Sauour þat is swete. riȝt so þe counsaile of trewe frendes 3eueþ swetnesse to þe sowle. [2349] He seiþ also þat þer may no þing be likned to þe trewe frende. [2350] ffor certes gold ne siluer bene not so moȝh worþ as þe good wille of a trewe frende. [2351] ¶ And eke he seiþ þat a trewe frende is a grete defence / who so þat it fyndeþ. certis he fyndeþ a grete tresoure. [2352] Than shul 3e eke considere if þat 3oure trewe frendes bene discrete and wise. for þe boke seiþ Aske alway þi counsaile of hem þat bene wise. [2353] And by þis same reson shulde 3e clepen to 3oure counsaile of 3oure frendys þat bene of age such as han sayn moȝh and bene expert in mony þingges and bene approued in counsailinge. [2354] ffor þe boke seiþ þat in olde men is þe sapience [*et en moult de temps est prudence*] [2355] ¶ And Tullius seiþ þat grete þingges ne ben not accomplished by strenght ne by delyuernesse of body but by good counsaile By auctorite of persones and be science þe which iij. þinges ne bene not feble by age but certes þei enforsen and encresen day by day. [2356] And þan shal 3e kepe þis for a general rewle ¶ ffirst shal 3e kepe to 3oure counsaile a fewe of 3oure frendes þat especial bene [2357] ffor Salomon seiþ Mony frendes haue þowe but among a thousand chese þe oon to be þi counsellour. [2358] ffor al be it soo þat þowe furst ne telle þi counsaile but to a fewe. þou maist afterward telle it to more folk. ȝif it be nede. [2359] But loke alway þat þi counsailers haue þilk thre condiciouns þat I haue saide

byfore. þat is to say þat þei bene trewe and wise and of olde experience. [2360] and wirk' not' alway in euery nede by oon counsaillere alloñ. for some it' byhouep be counsailed by mony [2361] ¶ ffor Salomon seiþ [salvation] of þingges: is wher þer bene mony counselours

[2362] ¶ Nowe seiþ what I haue tolde þou of which folk 3e shuld' be counsailed. Now wil I telle þou which counsaile 3e auzt' eschewe [2363] ¶ ffirst 3e shul eschewe þe counsaile of foolis. So seiþ Salomon. Take no counsaile of a foole ffor he can no counsaile. but' after his owne affeccioñ [2364] ¶ The boke saiþ. þat þe proprete of a fool is þis. He troweth liztly harme of euery wizt'. and liztly troweþ aþ bounte in hym self [2365] Thow eke shal eschewe þe Counsaillynge of aþ flaterers suche as enforßen hem raper to preise þe persone by flaterye þan forto telle þou þe soþfastnesse of þingges./

[2366] ¶ Therfore Tullius seiþ ¶ Amorße alle þe pestilences þat beñ in frendship þe grettest is flattery. And þerfore is moor nede. þat þowe eschewe and drede and flee from þe swete wordes of flaterers þan of eny oper puple [2367] ¶ The booke seiþ. Thow shalt raper drede and flee from þe swete wordes of flaterers and preisers þan fro þe eger wordes of þi frende þat saiþ þe þi soþes. [2368] ¶ Salomon seiþ: That þe wordes of a flaterer is a snare to cacchen innocentes wipe. [2369] He seiþ also þat he þat spekeþ to his freende. wordes of swetnesse and of plesaunce setteþ a nett' byfore his foote to cacchen him [2370] And þerfore seiþ Tullius ¶ Encline nat' þine eeres to flaterers. ne take no counsaile to wordes of flattery [2371] And Caton seiþ ¶ Auiße þe wel and eschewe wordes of swetnesse and of plesaunce. [2372] And eke þou shalt eschwe þe counsaile of þine olde enemyes [*qui sont reconciliés*, [2373] *car il est escript: nul ne retourne seurement en la*

grâce de son ennemy.] [2374] ¶ And Isope seiþ. Ne trest not to hem to þe which þow hast hadde somtyme werre or onemyte. ne telle not hem þi counsaile [2375] ¶ And senec telleþ · þe cause whi · it may nat be. He seiþ where þat grete fuyre haþ longe endured. þat þer dwelleþ somme vapour of warmnesse [2376] ¶ And þefore seiþ Salomon./ In þine olde foo trest neuere. [2377] ffor sikerly þouze þine enemye be reconciled and makeþ þe chere of humilite. and lowteþ to þe his hede. ne trust him neuere. [2378] for certes he makeþ pilk fayned humilite more for his profite þan for eny loue. of þi persone. [*afin qu'il puisse avoir victoire de toi*] by swich feyned countenance. þe which victory he myȝt not haue wiþ stryf or werre [2379] ¶ And Peter Alfons seiþ ¶ Make noon felawship wiþ þine olde enemyes. for ȝif þowe doo hem bounte. þei wil peruerten it into wykkednesse [2380] ¶ And eke þou most eschwe þe counsaile of ham þat beñ þi se[r]uauntes. and beren þe grete reuerence. for perauenture þei sayñ it more for drede þan for loue [2381] ¶ And þefore seiþ a Philosophre in þis wise! Ther nys no wiȝt perfytly trwe to hym þat he to fore dredeþ [2382] ¶ And Tullius saiþ ¶ Ther is noo myȝt so grete of noon Emperour that longe may endure but ȝif he haue more loue of þe puple þan drede [2383] ¶ Thow shalt also e[s]cheu þe counsaillynge of folk þat bene dronklewe. for þei ne can no counsaile hide [2384] ¶ ffor Salomon seiþ ¶ Ther is no counsaile þer as regneþ dronknesse [2385] ¶ Ȝe shul also haue in suspecte þe counsaile of such folk as counsaile ȝowe prively. oon. and þe contrarie openly [2386] **ffor Cassiodorie seiþ.**/ That it is a manere sleiȝt to hindere. whan he sweweth to doon oon þinge openly and werkeþ þe contrarie prively [2387] ¶ Thow shalt also haue in suspecte the counsailing wiþ wickeþ folke **ffor þe boke saiþ** The counsaillynge of wicked folk is alway ful

of fraude [2388] And dauid seiþ Blessed is þat man
þat haþ not folowed þe counsailling of wikked men or
schrewen [2389] ¶ Thow shalt also eschewe þe counsaile
of þonge folk. for her counsaile is not ripe

[2390] ¶ Now Sire siþ I haue shewde þou of such
folk þe shuld take þoure counsaile And of which folk þe
shul take þoure counsaile. and of which folk þe shul
folowe þe counsaile [2391] ¶ Now shal I telle þou howe þe
shul examyne þoure counsaile. after þe doctrine of Tullius
[2392] in examynynge. þan of þoure counsellour.
þe shul considere mony þingges [2393] ¶ Alþer furst þe
shul considere þat in þilk þinge þat þowe purposest.
and vpon what þinge þow wolt haue counsaile þat verrey
troupe be saide and considered. This is to sayn telle
trewly þi tale. [2394] for he þat seiþ fals may not
wel be counsaile in þat tale [in which he lyeth] [2395]
And after This þou shalt considere þoo þingges þat
accorden to þat þou purposest forto doo by þi counsail-
lours. ȝif reson. accorde þerto. [2396] & eke ȝif þi
myght may atteyne þerto. And ȝif þe more party and þe
better part of þi counsailours accorde þerto anon.
[2397] þan shalt þou considere þat þinge þat shal
folowe of þat counsailleng. as. pees. werre.
grace. profite or damage and mony oþer þingges.
[2398] [*et en toutes ces choses*] þow shalt chese þe
best and wayue all oþer. [2399] ¶ Than
shalt þow considere of what roote is engendred þi matere
of þi counsaile and whatt fruyte may be conseyued and
engendred þer-of [2400] ¶ Thow shalt also considere all þise
cases from whannes þei bene sprongen [2401] And
whan þe han examyned þoure counsaile as I haue saide.
which parte is þe better *and* more profitable and
haue approued it by mony wise folk and eelde. [2402]
Than shalt þow considere if þow maist performe it and
make of it a good ende. [2403] ffor reson wil not
þat eny man shuld bygynne a þinge but ȝif he myght
performe it as hym lest or auȝt [2404] Ne no wiȝt shuld

take vpon him so heuy a charge þat he myȝt not bere
 it. [2405] ffor þe prouerbe seiþ. He þat to moche
 embraiseth: destrayneth litel. [2406] And Caton saiþ
 ¶ Assaie to doo such þingges as þow hast pouer to doo.
 lest þat þi charge oppresse þe so soor þat þe
 byhoueþ to wayue. þinge þat þou hast bygonne
 [2407] ¶ And ȝif so be ¹þat þowe be in doute whedere þou
 maist performe a þinge or noon. chese raper to suffre
 þan bygynne [2408] And Petrus Alfons / saiþ: If
 þou hast myȝht to done a þinge of which þe most
 repent. it is bettere nay þan ȝee. [2409] This is
 to sayn þat þe is bettere to holde þi tunge stille. þan
 forto speke. [2410] Than may ȝe vnderstonde by
 strengre resons. þat ȝif þou hast powere to perfourme a
 warke of which þou shalt repent. þan is it better
 þat þowe suffre þan bygynne [2411] ¶ Wel sayne þei þat
 defenden euery wiȝt to assay a þing of which he is
 in doute whedere he may performe it or noon. [2412]
 And after whan ȝe han examyned ȝoure counsaile as I
 haue saide biforn. and knowen wel ȝe may per-
 fourme ȝoure emprise. conforme it þan sadly til it be at
 an eend

[2413] ¶ Nowe is it reson and tyme. þat I shewe
 when and wherfore þat ȝe may chaunge ȝoure counsail-
 lours wiþ-out reproof. [2414] ¶ Sopely a man
 may change his counsaile. and his purpoos if þe cause
 seseþ. or whan a newe cause byndeþ. [2415] ffor þe
 lawe seiþ þat vpon þingges þat newly betiden byhoueþ
 newe counsaile. [2416] And Senec seiþ / ȝif þi counsaile
 be comen to þe eeres of myn enemye: chaunge þi counsaile
 [2417] ¶ Thow maist also chaunge þi counsaile. ȝif so
 be þat þou fynde þat by errour or by oþer
 cause harme or damage may be-tide [2418] ¶ Also ȝif þi
 counsaile be dishonest. or ellis commeþ of dishonest cause
 chaunge þi counsaile [2419] ffor þe lawes sayn. þat
 al byheestes þat bene dishonest bene of no valewe.

GROUP B. § 10. MELIBEUS. Petworth MS.

[2420] And eke gif it so be þat it be impossible or may not goodly be performed or kept.

[2421] And take þis for a general rewle þat euery counsaile þat is affermed so strongly þat it may nat be chaunged for no condiciōn þat may be-tide I saye þat þilk counsaile is wikked

[2422] ¶ This Melebius whan he had herde þis doctrine of his wif Dame Prudence. Answerde in þis wise. [2423] ¶ Dame quod he as ȝit into þis tyme ȝe han wel and connably tauȝt me. as in generall howe I shal gouerne as in chesinge and in wiþholding of my counsaillours [2424] But nowe wolde I fayn þat ȝe wolden condescenden in especiaʃ. [2425] and tel me howe likeþ. or what semeþ ȝowe by our counsaillours þat we haue chosen in our present nede

[2426] ¶ My lord quod she I biseche ȝowe in alle humblesse þat ȝe wil not wilfully replie aȝeinst my resons / and mystemper nat ȝour hert þouȝe I say or speke þinge þat ȝou displeseþ. [2427] ffor god woote þat as þat as in myn entent I speke it for ȝoure best for ȝoure honure and ȝoure profite. [2428] and soþly. I hope þat ȝoure benigne wil taken in pacience. [2429] Tresteþ me wel quod she þan þat ȝoure counsaile as in þis caas ne shuld nat as forto speke proprely. be called a consaillinge. but a mociōn or mouynge of foly. [2430] in which counsaile ȝe han erred [*en moult de manières*]

[2431] [*Premièrement, tu as erré*] in þe assemblyng of ȝoure counsaillers. [2432] ffor ȝe shuld first haue cleped a fewe folk [*et puis après plusieurs*] gif it had bene nede. [2433] But certes ȝe han sodeynly cleped to ȝoure counsaile a grete multitude of puple. fful chargeant and ful noyous forto here [2434] Also ȝe han erred. for þere as ȝe shuld oonly haue cleped to ȝoure counsaile ȝoure trewe freendes olde and wise [2435] ȝe haue ycleped straunge folk. ȝonge folk. fals flaterers and enemyes

reconsiled and folk' þat' done 3ou reuerence without
loue [2436] ¶ Also 3e haue erred. for 3e haue
brouȝt' wip 3ou to 3oure counsaile. Ire. Coueityse.
and hastynesse [2437] þe which þre pingges *[sont
contraires à conseil, et]* [2438] 3e han not'
avyncesed or destroyed hem / neiþer in 3oure
self ne in 3oure counsaillours as 3e ouȝt [2439]
¶ 3e haue erred also for 3e han shewed to 3oure
counsailers 3oure talent' and 3oure affection to make
werre anon and forto do vengeance. [2440] þei han
espied by 3oure wordes to what' þing' 3e bene enclined.
[2441] & þefore han þei counsailled 3ou raper to
3oure talent' þan to 3oure prophete [2442] ¶ 3e haue erred
also. ffor it semed þat' 3ou suffised to haue bene coun-
sailled by þise counsailloures oonly & with þat' litel avice. /
[2443] Where as in so grete and so highe a nede it' had
ben necessarie moo counsaillours and more deliberaciō to
performe 3oure emprise [2444] ¶ 3e haue erred also. for
3e haue nat' examened 3oure counsaile in þe forseide
matere ne in dwe manere. as þe cace requireþ [2445] ¶ 3e
han erred also for 3e han makend no dyuysioñ bytwix
3oure counsaillours. þis is to sayñ bytwix 3oure
frendes & 3oure fayned counsaillours [2446] ne 3e han
not' knowe þe wille of 3oure trewe frendes. olde and wise
[2447] But' 3e han cast' aȝ her wordes in an hochepote
and enclyned 3oure herte to þe more parte and to þe
gretter nombre and þer by 3e condescended. [2448]
And siþ 3e wote wele þat' men shal fynde a
gretter multitude of fooles þan of wise men. [2449] and
perfor þe counsaillours þat' ben at congregacions and mul-
titudes of folk' þer as men take more reward' to þe
nombre þan to þe sapience of persones [2450] ¶ 3e se wel
þat' ¹in such counsaillyngges fooles haue þe maistrie [2451]
. Melebius answerd' ageyn and saide ¶ I graunte wel þat'
I haue erred. [2452] but' þer as þowe saist' me here
bifore þat' he nys nat' to blame þat' chaungeþ his coun-

saillours in certeyn cases and for certeyn iust causes
 [2453] I am al redy to chaunge my counsailours ríht
 as þowe wolt devise [2454] ¶ The prouerbe seip. þat
 forto do synne is mannyssh But certes forto perseuere
 longe in synne is werke of þe deueñ

[2455] ¶ To þis sentence anon answered dame prudence
 and saide [2456] Examyneþ quod þan she þoure counsaile.
 and lat vs see whiche of hem haþ spoken moost resonable
 & taught þou best counsaile. [2457] And for as moche as
 þat þe examynacion is necessarie lat vs bygygne at Cirurgiens
 and at þe phisicience þat furst speken in þis matere.
 [2458] I say þou þat þe Cirurgiens and þe phisiciens
 haue seiden þou in þoure counsaile discretly as hem auzte.
 [2459] and in her speche seiden ful wisely as to þe office
 þat hem appentþ to done to euery wíht honoure and profite
 and no wízt to anoye [2460] and aftere her craft to doon grete
 diligence vnto þe cure of hem which þat þei han in gouernance.
 [2461] And sir ríht as þei han answered wisely and discretely
 [2462] ríht so rede I þat þei bene heghly and souereynly
 guerdoned for her noble speche. [2463] and eke for þei shuld
 do þe more ententif bysynes in þe Curacion of þoure douzter /
 [2464] ffor al be it soo þat þei bene þoure freendes þerfore
 shal þe not suffre þat þei serue þou for nouzt [2465]
 But þe auzt þe rapet to gerdone hem and shewe hem þour
 largesse. [2466] And as tochinge þe proposicion þe which
 þe phisiciens encresden in þis caas. þis is to sayn [2467]
 þat in maladies. þat on contrarieþ is warshed by anoper
 contrarie [2468] .I wold fayn knowe how þei vnderstonde
 þilk text And what is her sentence [2469] ¶ Certes quod
 Melebius vnderstonden it in þis wise. [2470] þat ríht as
 þei han [m'(ont) fait un contraire, que je leur face un autre,
 [2471] et pour ce qu'ils (se) sont] venged ham on me and done
 me wronge Ríht so shal I venge me vpon hem.

GROUP B. § 10. MELIBEUS. Petworth MS.

and done hem wronge [2472] and þan haue I cured oon contrary by a noþer

[2473] ¶ lo lo quod dame Prudence. how listly is euery man enclyned to his owne desire and to his awne plesaunce [2474] Certes 'quod she. wordes of þe phisiciens ne shulden nat' haue bene vnderstonden in þis wise. [2475] ffor certys wikkednesse is nat' contrarie to wicknesse. ne vengeance to vengeance. ne wrong' to wronge. but' þei bene semblable [2476] and þerfor on vengeance is not' warissed by anoþer vengeance. ne oon wrong' by a noþer 'wronge. [2477] but' euer-ych of hem encroseþ and angreþ and greggeþ oþer. [2478] But certes þe wordes of þe phisicien shuld ben vnderstonden in þis wise. [2479] ffor goodnesse and wikkednesse ben two contraries and pees and werre *and* vengeance and suffrance. discord' and accorde and mony oþer þingges. [2480] But' certes wikkednesse shal be warsshed by goodnesse. discord' by accord'. werre by pees. *and* so forþ of oþer þingges. [2481] And also to hem accordeþ [*saint Pol*] þe appostel in mony places [2482] He seiþ. ne zeldeþ nouȝt' harme for harme ne wikked speche for wikked speche. [2483] but' doþ wel to hem þat' don ȝou harme. and blesse hem þat' sayn to þe harme [2484] *and* in mony oþer places he amonesteþ pees and accorde. [2485] ¶ But' now wil I speke to ȝou of þe counsaile which þat' was ȝeuē to ȝou by þe men of lawe and þe wise folk' [2486] þat' seiden aȝ by oon acorde as ȝe han herd' bifore. [2487] That' ouer alle þingges ȝe shal do ȝoure diligence to kepe ȝoure persones and to warnestore ȝoure hous [2488] and saiden also. þat' in þis ȝe ouȝt' fortō worchen ful wisely and hisily and wiþ grete deliberaciō [2489] And sire as to þe furst' poynt' þat' toucheþ to þe keping' of ȝour persone [2490] ȝe shul vnderstonde þat' he þat' hap werre shal euermore deuoutely and mekely preien by-forn alle þingges [2491] þat' Ihesu crist of his mercy. wol

haue hym in his protectiōn and bene his souereyn helpinge
 at his nede. [2492] ffor certes in þis world þer nys no
 wight þat may be counsaillid or kepte sufficiently wiþ-
 out þe keepinge of our lord Ihesu crist. [2493] To þis
 sentence accordeþ þe profete Dauid þat seiþ. [2494]
 3if god ne kepe þe Citie in ydel waiteþ he þat it kepeþ.
 [2495] Now sire þan shul 3e committe [*la garde*] of
 3oure persone to 3oure trewe frendes þat bene appreued
 and yknowe [2496] and of hem shul 3e asken helpe 3oure
 body forto kepe ffor caton seiþ ¶ 3if þou hast
 nede of helpe aske it of þi frendes [2497] ffor þer is
 noon so good a phisicien as þi trewe frende [2498]
 ¶ After þis þan shal 3e kepe 3ou from al
 straunge folk and fro leers and haue alway in suspecte
 her companye [2499] ¶ ffor Pers Alfons seiþ þus ne
 take no company by þe waye of a straunge mon. but 3if
 so be þat þowe knowe him of a lenger tyme. [2500]
 And 3if so be þat he falle to þi companye per-
 auenture wiþ-uten þine assent [2501] enquire þan
 as sotilly as euer þou maist of his conuersaciō and of his
 lyf byfore and feyne þi way. Say þow wolt goo þidere
 as þou wilt not goo. [2502] and 3if he bere a spere
 holde þe on þe riȝt side. And 3if he bere a sverde
 holde þe on þe left side [2503] and so after þis
 þan shal 3e kepe 3ou wisely from al such manere
 puple as I haue saide byfore and hem and her counsaile
 eschewe. [2504] And þan after þat shal 3e kepe 3ou
 in such a manere [2505] þat for eny presumpciō of 3oure
 strength. þat 3e ne despise nat þe myȝt of 3oure
 enemye and of 3our aduersarie. so lite þat 3e lete þe
 keepinge of 3oure persone for 3oure presumpciōn. [2506]
 ffor euery wise man dredeþ his enemye. [2507]
 Salomon seiþ. wakeful is he þat oft hap drede.
 [2508] ffor certes he þat þorowe hardynesse of his
 hert and þorowe þe hardynesse of hym self hap to
 grete presumpciōn him shal euil betide [2509] ¶ Than

GROUP B. § 10. MELIBEUS. Petworth MS.

shal 3e euermore countrewaite enbusshmentys and al
 specials. [2510] ffor Senec saip. þat þe wise man
 þat dredeþ harmes: escheweþ harmes. [2511] he ne
 falleþ not into periles: þat periles escheweþ [2512] ¶ And al
 be it so þat it seme þat þou art in siker place 3it
 shaltowe alway doo þi diligence in kepinge of þi persone.
 [2513] þis is to sayn be not negligēt to kepe þi
 persone not oonly from þi grettest enemyes: but fro þi
 leest enemyes. [2514] Senec saip. A man þat is wel
 avised he dredeþ his leest enemye [2515] Ovide. saip.
 þat þe litel weseth wil slee þe grete Owle and þe
 wilde hert [2516] And þe boke seiþ: A litel þorne
 may prik a kinge ful sore. And an hounde wil
 holde þe wilde bore. [2517] But napelees I say. ¶ not
 þou shalt be so moch cowarde þat þou doute þer as it is no
 drede [2518] ¶ The boke saip / þat some folk han
 grete lest to desceyue. but 3it þei dreden hem to be de-
 sceyued. [2519] 3it shalt þou drede to be empoysened
 and kepe þe from þe company of scorners [2520]
 ¶ ffor þe booke seiþ: Wip scorners make no companye.
 but flee hem and her wordes as venyme.

[2521] Now as to þe secounde poynt when as 3oure
 wise counsailours counsailed 3ow to warnstore 3oure hous
 wip grete diligence. [2522] I wold fayn knowe how þat
 3e vnderstonden þilk wordys and what is 3oure Sentence.

[2523] Melebius Answerd and saide. Certes I vnder-
 stonde it in þis wise þat I shal warnstore myn hous
 wip towres such as haue castels and oper manere
 ediff[c]es and armure and arcelries [2524] by such
 pingges as I may my persone and my hous kepe and
 defende. þat myn enemyes shul be in drede myn
 hous to approche.

[2525] To þis sentence anon answerd Dame Prudence
 ¶ Warnstoringe quod she of hegh toures and grete
 edifices [appertaineth sometimes to pride [2526] Men
 make towers and great edifices] with grete

costages and wiþ grete travaille. and whan þat þei be accompliced. ȝit bene þei nat worþ a stree. but ȝif þei ben deffended by trewe frendes þat bene olde and wise. / [2527]
 1 And vnderstonde wel þat þe strengest and þe grettest garisoñ þat þe riche man may haue as wel to kepe his persone as his goodes. is [2528] þat he be beloued wiþ his subiectys. and wiþ his neiȝbours [2529] for þus saiþ Tullius ¶ That þer is a maner garnesoñ þat no man may venquyssh ne discomfett. And þat is [2530] a lord to be byloued wiþ his Citeseins and of his puple

[2531] Now sir as to þe iij. poynt where as ȝoure olde and wise counsaillours. seiden þat ȝowe ne auȝt not. sodeynly ne hastely proceden in þis nede. [2532] but þat ȝou auȝt purueien and apparailen ȝou in þis caas wiþ grete diligence and grete deliberacioñ. [2533] trewly I trowe þat þei seiden riȝt wisely and riȝt soþe. [2534] ffor Tullius seiþ ¶ In euery nede er þow bygynne it apparaille þe wiþ grete diligence [2535] Than say I þat in vengeance takinge in werre in bataile and in warne-storinge. [2536] er þan þou bygynne. I rede þat þou apparaille þe þerto. and do it with grete deliberacioñ. [2537] ffor Tullius saiþ: ¶ That longe apparaylinge to-forn þe bataile: makeþ shorte victorie. [2538] And so Cassidorus saiþ. ¶ The garneson is strengere whan it is longe tyme avised.

[2539] But now lat vs speke more of þe counsaile. þat was accorded by ȝoure neiȝbours which as doon ȝou reuerence wiþ-out loue [2540] ȝoure olde enemyes reconciled. ȝoure flaterers [2541] þat counsailden ȝou certeyn þingges prively. and openly counsailden ȝou þe contrarie [2542] ¶ The ȝonge folk also þat counsailed ȝou to venge ȝou / and make werre anooñ [2543] ¶ And certes sire as I haue saide byforñ ȝe haue gretly erred to han cleped Such manere folk to ȝoure counsaile. [2544] which counsaillours bene nowe repreued. by þe reasons tofore saide. [2545] But napeles lat nowe descende to

þe speciall. ¶ 3e shullen furst proceden afters þe doctrine
of Tullius [2546] ¶ Certes þe troupe of þis or
þis counsaile nedep nat diligently enquire. [2547] for it
is wel wist which þei bene þat done to 3ou þis
trespace and vilanye [2548] and how mony trespasours.
and in what manere þei han to 3ou done. Aft þis
wronge and al þis vylanye [2549] And afters þis
þan shal 3e examyne þe .ij. condicions whiche
þat þe same Tullius addeþ in þis matere. [2550] ffor
Tullius put to a þinge. þe which he clepeþ consentinge.
þis is to sayn [2551] ¶ Who ben þei and which bene þei.
and how mony. þat consenten to þi counsaile in þi wilful-
nesse to doo hastely ¶ vengeance. [2552] And lat vs con-
sidere also. Who bene þei and howe mony & which
bene þei þat consenten to 3oure aduersaries. [2553]
And certys as to þe ¹furst poynt it is wel knowen which
folk bene þei þat consenten to 3oure hastif wilful-
nes. [2554] ffor trewly al þoo þat counsailden 3ou
to make sodeyn werre ne bene nat 3oure frendes [2555]
[*Or véons doncques qui tu es et qui sont ceulx que tu*
tiens tant à ennemis.] as to 3oure persone. [2556] ffor
al be it soo þat 3e bene myghty and riche. certes 3e
bene but alloon. [2557] for certes 3e ne haue no childe
but a dougtere. [2558] ne 3e ne haue no breþeren ne Cosyns
Germainns ne noon oþer nygh kynrede./ [2559] wherfore
þat 3oure enemyes for drede shulden stent to plede with
3owe ne destroye 3oure persone [2560] ¶ 3e knowe
also þat 3oure richesces mosten be dalt in
diuers parties. [2561] and whan þat euery wight hap
his parte þei ne wol not take but litel reward to venge
þi deth. [2562] but þine enemyes bene þre. And
þei han mony children. breþeren Cosynes and oþer nygh
kinrede. [2563] And þou3e it so were þow haddeþ
sclayn of hem twoo or þree. 3it dwellen þer ynowe to wreke
her deeth. and to slee þi persone [2564] And þou3e so
were þat 3oure kynrede were more siker and stedfast þan

þe kyn of 3oure aduersaries. [2565] 3it napeles 3oure kynrede nys but litel kynrede. and litel sibbe to 3owe. [2566] And þe kynne of 3oure enemyes ben nygh sibbe to hem. And certis as to þat. Her condicione is bett þat 3owres. [2567] Than lat vs considere also. 3if þe counsaillinge of hem þat counsailed 3owe to take sodeyn vengeance whedere it accorde to resoñ. [2568] Certys 3e knowe wel nay. [2569] ffor as by riȝt and resoñ þer may no man take vengeance on no wiȝt but þe Iuge þat haþ þe Iurisdiction of it [2570] whan it is ygraunted hym to take þilk vengeance hastely or attemperally as þe lawe requireþ. [2571] And 3it moreouere of þilk word þat Tullius clepeþ consentynge. [2572] Thow shalt considere 3it þow myȝt and þi power myȝt consent and suffice to þi wilfulnesse and to þi counsaillours. [2573] ¶ And certes þou maist wel say nay. [2574] for sikerly as forto speke proprely. we may do no þinge. but oonly þing as we may done riȝtfully. [2575] And certes riȝtfully ne mowe 3e take no vengeance as of 3oure propre auctorite [2576] þan mowe 3e sene þat 3oure power consentþ nat ne accordeþ not to 3oure wilfulnesse [2577] ¶ lat vs nowe examyne þe iij poynt þat Tullius clepeþ consequent [2578] [*Tu dois doncques savoir que à vengeance que tu veulz faire, est consequent*] [2579] And þerof foloweþ a-noþer vengeance perile and werre. and oþer damages wiþ-out nombre of which we bene litel warre as at þis tyme. / [2580] ¶ And as touþing þe fourte poynt þat Tullius clepeþ engendringe [2581] þou shalt considere þis wronge which þat is done to þe is engendred of þe hate of þine enemyes [2582] and of þe vengeance takinge vpon þat wolde engendre anopere vengeance And mochel sorowe and waastinge of Richesse as I saide eerst.

[2583] ¶ Now sire as þan touchinge to þe poynt. That Tullius causes which þat is þe last poynte [2584] þou

GROUP B. § 10. MELIBEUS. Petworth MS.

shalt vnderstonde þat þe wronge þat þou hast receyued
 hap certeyne causes. [2585] whiche þat clerkes clepen
 orience. And officience. And causa longinqua and causa
 propinqua. This is say þe fer cause and þe nyze
 cause. [2586] The fer cause is almyȝty god þat is
 cause of al þingges. [2587] The nere cause is by
 þre enemyes [2588] ¶ The cause accidentale was hate.
 [2589] þe cause materiall beþ .v. woundes of
 þi douȝtere [2590] The cause formal is þe maner of
 her worching þat brouȝten ladders and clomben Inne at
 þi wyndowes. [2591] The cause ffynal was. for to sle þi
 doughtere. It lotted nouȝt in as moch as in hem was / [2592]
 Than to speke of þe ferþe cause as to what ende þei
 shal come or what shal fynaly bytide of hem in þis
 caas. ne can I not deme but by countyng and by
 supposinge [2593] ¶ ffor we shul suppose. þat þei shul
 come to a wikked ende. [2594] by cause þat þe booke
 of Decrees seiþ ¶ Seeldome or wiþ grete peyne bene causes
 ybrouȝt to good ende whan þei bene bodely begonne.

[2595] ¶ Now sire ȝif men wold aske me whi þat
 ȝe suffred men to doo ȝou þis wronge and vilenye. Certes I
 can nat wel answers as for no soþfastnesse. [2596] ffor
 þe apostell seiþ. þat þe sciences and þe Iugementes of
 our lord god almyȝty. bene ful depe. [2597] þer may
 no man comprehende ne Serchen hem suffisantly [2598]
 ¶ Napeless by certeyne presumpcions of coniectyngges
 I holde and bileue [2599] þat god which þat is ful of
 iustice. and of riȝtwisnesse hap suffred þis bitidde by
 Iustise ¶ cause resonable

[2600] ¶ Thi name is Melebye ¶ This is to sayne a man
 þat drynkeþ hony. [2601] thow hast ydronke so moche
 hony of which swete temporell richesses / and delicious hon-
 oures of þis world [2602] þat þou art dronken. and
 hast forȝeten Ihesu crist þine creature [2603] Thow ne
 hast not doon to hym such honoure and reuerence as þe
 auȝt [2604] ne þou ne hast nat wel taken kepe to

GROUP B. § 10. MELIBEUS. *Petworth MS.*

þe wordes of O ¶ Ovide þat seiþ. [2605] Vndere þe hony
of þe goddes of þi body. is hidde. þe venyme þat scleeþ
þi soule [2606] ¶ And Salomon seiþ. 3if þou hast
found hony. eete of it þat suffiseþ the. [2607] ffor 3if þou
ete of it out of mesure. þou shalt spewe and be nedý
and poore. [2608] and peraenture criste haue þe in
despite. and haþ turned away from þe his face and his
eeres of mysericordē [2609] And also he haþ suffred
þat þou hast be ¹punshed in þe manere þat þou
hast trespassed. [2610] Thou hast doon synne aȝeinst
our lord crist [2611] ffor certes iij. enemyes of man-
kynde þat is to seyne þe flessħ. þe feende. and þe
worlde [2612] thowe hast suffred hem entred into þine
hous wilfully by þe wyndowe of þi body. [2613] And
hast nat defended þi self sufficiently aȝeinst her assawtes
and her temptacions so þat þei han wounded þe
saule in .v. places. [2614] þis is to sayn þe dedly
synnes þat bene entred into þine hert by þi .v.
wyndowes [2615] and in þe same manere our lord crist
haþ suffred and willed þat þise iij. enemyes bene entred
into þi hous by þi wyndowes [2616] and haue
ywounded þi douȝtere in þe forsaide manre

[2617] ¶ Certes quod Melebius I se wel þat 3e en-
force 3ou moche by wordis to ouercome me in suche
a manere þat I shal not venge me on myn enemyes. [2618]
shewing me þe periles and þe euels þat myghten
falle of þis vengeance [2619] But who so wold considere
in all vengeance þe periles and euels þat myȝten swe
of vengeance takinge [2620] a mon wold neuere take
vengeance and þat were harme [2621] ffor by þe venge-
aunce takinge. bene þe wikked men disseuered from þe
good men. [2622] And þei þat han wille to do wikked-
nesse restreynen her wikked purpoos whan they sene þe
punshynge and chastising of trespassoures.

[2623] [And to this answered dame Prudence : ' Certes,'
said she, 'I grant you that from vengeance come many

advantages as well as many evils; [2624] yet vengeance be-
 longeth not to a "senglere persone," but only to the judges,
 and to those who have jurisdiction over evil-doers.]
 [2625] And ȝit say I more þat as riȝt as so senglere
 persone synneþ in takinge vengeaunce of a noþer man
 [2626] Riȝt so synneþ þe Iuge ȝif he doo no vengeaunce
 on hem þat it haue deserued [2627] ¶ ffor Senec seip
 þus ¶ þat maister he saiþ is good þat repreueþ schrewes
 [2628] ¶ And as Cassiodorie seip. A man dredeþ to do
 outrage whan he woote and knoweþ þat it displeseþ
 to þe Iugges and þe souereyns. [2629] And anoþer seip ¶ The
 Iuge þat dredeþ to do riȝt. makeþ men schrewes
 [2630] ¶ And seint Paule þe apostel seip in his epistel
 whan he writeþ to þe Romayns þat þe Iuge berent
 not þe spere wiþ-uten cause. [2631] but þei beren it
 to punshe þe schrewes and mysdoers and forto defende
 þe good men. [2632] ȝif ȝe wil þan take vengeance
 of ȝoure enemyes ȝe shal retourne or haue ȝoure recours
 to þe Iuge þat haþ þe Iurisdiction vpon him [2633]
 and he shal punsshe hem as þe lawe askeþ and requereþ

[2634] ¶ A quod Melebies þis vengeance likeþ me
 no þinge [2635] I by-þenk me nowe and take hede.
 howe fortune haþ norshed me fro my childhode.
 and haþ hulpen me to passe mony a stronge paas [2636]
 ¶ Now wil I assaien her trowinge wiþ goddes helpe
 þat he shal helpe me my shame forto 'venge

[2637] ¶ Certes quod Prudence ȝif ȝe wil wirk by my
 counsaill ȝe shul not assaien fortune by no way [2638] ne
 ȝe shul not lene ne bowe vnto hire. after þe wordes
 of Senec. [2639] ffor þingges þat bene folily done. and
 þat bene in hope of fortune shullen neuere come to good
 eende. [2640] ¶ And as þe same senc saiþ. þe more
 clere and þe more shynynge þat fortune is. þe more
 brotel and þe sonner brekeþ she. [2641] tresteþ not
 on her for she nys nat stedfast. [2642] ffor whan
 þowe wenest or trowest to be more swre or siker of her

GROUP B. § 10. MELIBEUS. Petworth MS.

helpe. she wil faile þee. [2643] ¶ And þer as 3e
sayn þat fortune hap norshed 3ou from 3oure child-
hode. [2644] I say þat in so mochel shal 3e þe
lasse trest in her. and in her witt [2645] ¶ ffor Senec
saip. what man þat is norshed by fortune: she makeþ
him to grete a foole [2646] ¶ Now þan siþ 3e desire
and aske vengeance. and þe vengeance þat is done
[*selon l'ordre de droit et devant le juge ne te plaist*, [2647]
et la vengeance qui se fait] in hope of fortune is peril-
ous and vncerteyn. [2648] þen haue noon oþer
remedy. but forto haue 3oure cours vnto þe souereyn
Iuge þan vengeþ all vilanyes and wrongges. [2649]
and he shal venge 3ou. After hym self witnesseth:
where as he saip [2650] ¶ leueþ þe vengeance to me./
& I shal doo it

[2651] ¶ Melebius answered. 3if I ne venge me noȝt of
þe vilanye þat men han done to me. [2652] I shal somne or
warne hem þat han do to me þoo vilanyes and al oþer
to doo me an oþer vilanye. [2653] ¶ ffor it is writen. 3if
þou take no vengeance of an olde vilanye / þow somn-
est þine aduersaries to doo an newe vilanye. [2654]
And also for my suffraunce men wolden doo me so
mochel vilanye þat I myȝt neiþer bere it ne sus-
teyne it. [2655] And so þan I shulde be kept ouer
lawe [2656] ¶ ffor men sayn In mochel suffringe shul
mony þingges vnto þe which þow shalt not
mow suffre

[2657] ¶ Certes quod prudence I graunte 3ow þat
ouer mochel suffraunce is not good [2658] But 3it ne
folowep it not þer-of. That euery persone to whome men
doo vilany take of it vengeance. [2659] ffor þat apper-
tenep & longeþ oonly to the Iuges. ffor þei shul
venge vilanyes and Iniuries. [2660] And herfore
þoo two autoritees þat 3e han saide aboue ben oonly
vnderstonden in þe Iuges [2661] for whan þei suffre
ouer ¶ mykel þe wrongges and vilenyes to be done

GROUP B. § 10. MELIBEUS. Petworth MS.

wip-out' ponshinge. [2662] þei sommone nat' a man al only forto doo newe wrongges but' þei commaunden it' [2663] ¶ Also a wise man seiþ þat' þe Iuge þat' correcteþ not' þe synner. Commaundeþ and biddeþ hym to synne [2664] and þe Iuges and 'souereynes myzten in her londe so moche suffre of þe Shrewes and mysdoers [2665] þat' þei shulden bye such suffraunce by processe of tyme wexen of such power and myzt'. þat' þei shuld putte out' þe Iuges and souereynes from her places. [2666] and at' þe last' do hem lose her lordshippes

[2667] ¶ I put' caas rizt' nowe 3e had leue to venge 3ou. [2668] I say þat' 3e ben nouzt' of myght' ne power' as nowe to venge 3ou. [2669] ffor 3if we wil make comparisoñ vnto þe myzt' of 3our aduersaries. 3e shul fynde in many þingges þat' I haue shewed 3o^a er þis þat' her condicioñ is better þan 3oure. [2670] And þerfore say I þat' it' is good as nowe þat' 3e suffre and be pacient'

[2671] ¶ fferþer more 3e knowen wel þat' after þe comon Sawe it' is a woodenesse a man to stryue wip a strenger. or wip a more myzty man þan hym self. [2672] And forto stryue wip a man of euen strenght' þat' is to say wip as stronge a man as he is it' is perile. [2673] And forto stryue wip a waikere man it' is foly [2674] And þerfore shuld' a man flee stryuyng as mochel as he myzt' [2675] ¶ ffor Salomon saiþ. It is a grete worship a man to kepe hym from noyse and stryf. [2676] And 3if it' so byfalle or happe þat' a man of gretter myzt' and strenger þan þou art' do þe greuaunce. [2677] stody and byse þe rapier to stille þe same greuaunce þan forto venge þe [2678] ¶ ffor Senec saiþ That' he putteþ hym in grete perile. þat' stryueþ wip a gretter man þan he is him self [2679] And Caton saiþ. 3if a man of hier astate or of degre or more myzty þan þou. do þe an oþer greuaunce suffre hym [2680] for he þat' onys haþ greued þe

may anoþer tyme releue þe. and helpe þe. [2681] ȝit sette I caas ȝe haue boþ myȝt and licence forto venge ȝou. [2682] I saie þat þer bene ful mony þingges þat shuld restreyn ȝou of vengeance takinge [2683] and make ȝou forto enclyne to suffre and forto haue pacience in þe wrongges þat bene done to ȝou. [2684] ffurst and forward ȝif ȝe wil considere þe defautes þat bene in ȝoure persone. [2685] for which defautes god haþ suffred ȝou to haue tribulaciō as I haue saide byfore [2686] ¶ flfor þe Poete seiþ. þat we ouȝten paciently þe tribulacions to take þat comen to vs whan þat we þenken and consideren þat we han deserued to haue hem [2687] ¶ And seint Gregor seiþ. That whan a man considereþ wel þe nombre of his defautes and of his synnes [2688] þan peynes and þe tribulaciōs þat he suffreþ semen þe lasse vnto him [2689] And in as moche as him þenk- eþ his synnes more hevie and greuous [2690] in so moche his peyne is þe lizter / and þe 'esier vnto hym [2691] ¶ Also ȝe owen to enclyne and bowe ȝoure herte to take þe pacience of our lorde Ihesu crist. As seiþ seint Petre in his epistell [2692] Ihesu crist he seiþ haþ suffred for vs and ȝeuen ensample to euery man to folowe and to swee hym [2693] for he did neuere ¶ synne ne neuere cam a vileyns worde out of his mouþe [2694] whan men cursed hym he cursed hem nouȝt [. no gap] [2695] Also þe grete pacience ¶ whiche þat seintes þat bene in paradis han had in tribulacions þat þei han suffred wiþ-uten her desert or gilt. [2696] aught moch stire ȝou to pacience [2697] ¶ fferþer- more ȝe shal conforte ȝou to haue pacience [2698] consideringe þat þe tribulaciōs of þis worlde. but litel ¶ while enduren. and soon bene ypassed and goon [2699] And þe Ioye þat a man seccheþ to haue by pacience in tribulacions is perdurable. after þat þe

GROUP B. § 10. MELIBEUS. Petworth MS.

appostel seiþ. in his Epistel [2700] ¶ The Ioie of god he seiþ is perdurable. þat is to saye euerlastinge. [2701] Also trouep and bileueþ stedfastly þat he nys nat wel norshed ne wel ytauþt þat cannot haue pacience ne wil not receyue pacience [2702] ¶ ffor Salomon seiþ. That þe doctrine and þe witte of man is knowe by pacience. [2703] And in anopere place he seiþ. þat he þat kepeþ hym by pacience ¶ gouerneþ him by grette prudence [2704] ¶ And þe Same Salomon seiþ The angre and þe wrethful man makeþ noyses. and þe pacient man attempreþ and stilleþ him self [2705] ¶ he seiþ also it is more worth to be pacient þan for to be riȝt stronge. [2706] And he þat may haue lordship of his owne hert is more to preise þan he þat by his fors takeþ grette Citees and townes [2707] Therfore seiþ seint Iame in his Epistell. þat pacience in a grette vertue of perfection.

[2708] [*Certes, dit Mellibée, je vous ottroye, dame Prudence, que patience est une grant vertu,*] [2709] But euery man may nat haue þe perfection þat we seken. [2710] ne I. am not of þe nombre of riȝt perfit men. [2711] for myn hert may neuer be in pees: vnto þe tyme it be venged [2712] ¶ And al be it so þat it was grette perile to myne ¶ ennemyes to done me a vilanye in takinge vengeance vpon me. [2713] ȝit token þei noon hede vpon þe perile. but fulfilleden her wikȝked wille and her corage [2714] And þer-for me þenkeþ men ouȝt not repreue me þouȝe I putte me in a litel perile to venge me. [2715] and þouȝe I doo a grette excesse. þat is to say þouȝe I venge oon outrage by a nopere

[2716] ¶ O quod dame prudence ȝe say ȝoure wille. and as ȝou likeþ. [2717] But in no caas of þe world a man shuld not do outrage ne excesse forto venge hym [2718] ¶ ffor Cassidore seiþ þat as euel doþ he þat auengeþ him by outrage. as he þat doþ þe

outrage. [2719] And þer-for 3e shul venge 3ou after þe ordere of ry3t þat is to saiñ 'by þe lawe and by noon excesse ne noon outrage. [2720] And also if 3e wil venge 3ou of þe outrage of 3oure aduersaries in oþer manere þan ri3t comaundeþ 3e synnen [2721] ¶ And þerfore saiþ Senec. þat a man shal neuere venge schrewdenesse by schrewdenesse / [2722] And if 3e say þat ri3t axeþ a man to defende violence by violence. and fi3tynge by fi3tinge. [2723] certes 3e say soth. whan þe defence is done anoon with-outen interualle or wiþ-out taryinge or delay. [2724] for to defenden hym and not forto vengen hym. [2725] And it bihoueþ þat a man put such attemperance in his defence [2726] þat men haue no cause no matere to repreuen hym þat defendeþ hym of excesse and of outrage. [*car autrement ce seroit contre droit et contre raison* (Le Mén.)] [2727] ¶ Parde 3e knowen weþ þat 3e maken noon defence as nowe forto defende 3ou but forto venge 3ou [2728] And so sweþ it þat 3e han no wille to doo 3oure dede attemperally. [2729] and þerfore me þenkeþ þat pacience is goode ¶ ffor Salomon seiþ: þat he þat is nat pacient shal haue grete harme

[2730] ¶ Certes quod meleby I graunte 3ou þat whan a man is impatient and wrooþ of þat þat toucheþ hym nat and of þat þat perteneþ not to hym. þou3e it harme him it is no wondere [2731] ¶ ffor þe lawe saiþ. þat he is coupable. þat entermeteþ hym or melleþ hym wiþ suche þinge as apperteneþ nat to hym [2732] ¶ And Salomon saiþ. That he þat entermeteþ hym of þe noise or of þe strif of an oþer man is like to hym. þat takeþ þe hounde by þe eeres [2733] and [*aussi comme celui qui prend le chien par les oreilles*] is oþer while biten wiþ þe hounde. [2734] ¶ Ri3t in þe same wise is it reson þat he haue harme þat by his impacience medleþ him of þe noise of an oþer man. wher þat it apperteneþ not to him [2735] ¶ But 3e knowe wel þat þis dede and

GROUP B. § 10. MELIBEUS. Petworth MS.

pis greef and pis dissesse toucheþ me riȝt
nyȝh. [2736] And þerfore þouȝe I be wroþe and im-
patient it is no mervaille. [2737] and sauynge ȝoure
grace I can not see þat it myȝt gretlich harme me.
þouȝe I toke vengeance [2738] ffor I am Riccher and
more myȝty þan myn enemyes bene. [2739] And wel
knownen ȝee þat by money and by hauynge grete posses-
sions bene all þingges of pis world ygouerned [2740]
¶ And Salomon seiþ. þat all þingges obeyen to
monay.

[2741] [*Prudence, quant elle oy son mary vanter de sa
richesse et de sa puissance, et soy esjouir, et*] dispreis-
ing þe poor of his aduersaries. Tho she spak and seide in
pis wise. [2742] Certes dere sire I graunt þou þat
ȝe bene riche and myȝty. [2743] and þat riches ben
good to hem þat han wel gotten hem. and þat
wel can vsen hem [2744] ffor riȝt as þe body of a
man; may not lyue wiþ-out þe saule. no more may it
live wiþ-out temporal goodes. [2745] And by rich-
esse may a man gete hym grete worship [2746] ¶ And
þerfore seiþ Pamphilles. ȝif an neterdes douȝtere he seiþ
be riche she may chese of a thowsand men [*lequel
qu'elle veult pour son mary* [2747] *car* (Le Ménagier, tome i)]
[. . . *no gap in the MS.*] oon wil not forsake her ne refuse
her. [2748] And þus Pamphilles seiþ also ¶ ȝif þou be
riȝt happy þat is to say riȝt riche þow
shalt fynde a grete nombre of felawes and frendes. [2749]
And ȝif þi fortune that þou wexe poor. fare
wel frendship and felawship. [2750] for þou shalt bene
allone wiþ-oute eny companye. but ȝif it be þe
company of poor folk [2751] // And ȝit seiþ pis
Pamphilles more ouer þat þei þat bene thral and
bonde of lynage. shullen be made worþi and noble by
richesses [2752] And riȝt so as by riches þer
commen mony goodes. Riȝt so by pouert þer commen
mony harmes and euels. [2753] ffor grete pouerte con-

streyneth a man to doo many euels [2754] ¶ And þerefore clepeþ Cassidore pouert'. þe modere ruyne. [2755] That is to say þe modere of ouerþrowinge or falling' downe [2756] ¶ And þerefore Pers Alfons saip. Oon of þe grettest' aduersitees of þis world' is [2757] whan a free [man] by kinde is constreyned by pouert' to eten þe almesse of his enemye [2758] ¶ And þe Same Seip Innocent' in oon of his bokes. He seip þat' soriful and vnhappy is þe condition' of a poor begger. [2759] ffor ȝif he askep not' his mete he dyep for hungere. [2760] [*et se ils demandent, ils meurent de honte;*] Necessite constreynep hym to aske. [2761] And þerefore seip Salomon. That' better is to dye þan forto haue suche pouerte [2762] ¶ And as þe Same Salomon seip Better is to dye a bitter deep þan forto lyuen in swich wise [2763] ¶ By þise reasons þat' I haue seide vnto ȝowe and by many reasons þat' I coude saie [2764] I graunte þat' richesces bene good to hem þat' geten hem well And vsen hem wel. [2765] And þerefore wil I shewe ȝow how ȝe shul haue ȝou. and howe ȝe shal bere ȝou in gaderinge of richesces. and in what' manere ȝe shul vsen hem

[2766] ffirst' ȝe shul geten hem with-out grette desire. by good leisere sokingly. and not' ouerhastely. [2767] ffor a man þat' is to desiringe to geten richesce. abandoneþ hym to þeft' and to all oþer evels [2768] ¶ And þerefore seip Salomon ¶ he þat' hastep hym to bysily to wexe ricche! shal be noon Innocent' [2769] ¶ He saip also þat' þe Richesse þat' hastely comþeþ to a man. sone and liztly goþ and passeþ from hym [2770] ¶ But' þat' richesce þat' comþeþ alway litel and litel. wexeþ alway and multipliþ [2771] ¶ And sire ȝe shul gete richesce by ȝoure witte. and by ȝoure trauaile. vnto ȝoure profite [2772] and þat' wiþ-uten wronge or harme doynge to eny oþere persone. [2773] ffor þe lawe

seip ¶ That he ne makeþ nat hym self riche. ȝif he do
 harme to a noþer wight [2774] ¶ This is to say þat
 nature defendeþ and forbedeþ by ryght. þat 'no man
 make him self riche wiþ þe harme of a noþere person.
 [2775] ¶ And Tullius seiþ. þat no sorowe ne no drede
 of deth ne of þouȝt þat may falle to a man [2776]
 is so mochel aȝeinst nature as a man to encrees his
 owne profite to þe harme of anoþer man [2777] ¶ And þouȝe
 þe grete men and þe riche men geten rychesses more
 liȝtly þan þou. [2778] ȝit shalt þou nat be ydel ne sclowe
 to þi prophete. ffor þou shalt in al þinge and in al wise fle
 ydelnesse [2779] ¶ ffor Salomon seiþ: That ydelnesse techeþ
 a man to do mony eueles [2780] ¶ And þe Same Salomon
 seiþ. þat he þat travailleþ and bysieþ him to tille
 his londe shal ete þe brede. [2781] But he þat is ydel and
 casteþ him to doo no bysynesse ne occupacioñ shal falle into
 pouert and dye for hungers. [2782] And he þat is
 ydel and sclowe. can neuer fynde conable tyme forto
 do his profite [2783] ¶ ffor þer is a versifour þat seiþ. That
 þe ydel man excuseþ hym in wyntere. be cause of þe
 grete colde. And in somer by encheson of þe grete hete
 [2784] ¶ ffor þise causes seiþ Catoñ ¶ Wakeþ and enclyneþ
 ȝou not ouermeche forto slepe. for ouer moche rest
 norrsheþ and causeþ mony vyces [2785] ¶ And þerfore
 seiþ seint Ierom ¶ Doþ somme good dedys þat þe deuæl
 which is oure enemye ne fynde ȝou nat vnocupied.
 [2786] ffor þe deuæl ne takeþ not liȝtly vnto his worch-
 inge suh as he fyndeþ occupied in goode werkes

[2787] ¶ Than þus in geting of Richesse ȝe
 moten fle ydelnesse / [2788] ¶ and afterward ȝe shul vse
 þe richesse which ȝe han geten by ȝoure witte and by
 ȝoure travaille [2789] in suh a manere þat men
 holde ȝou nat to scarce. ne to sparinge. ne to fool large.
 þat is to sayn ouer large a spendere [2790] ¶ ffor riȝt as
 men blamen an Auarous man by cause of his scarsete
 and chyncherie [2791] In þe same manere is he blamed

GROUP B. § 10. MELIBEUS. Petworth MS.

þat' spendeþ ouer largely. [2792] ¶ And þerfore seiþ
 Catoñ. vse he saiþ þe Richesse þat' þou hast' ygeten.
 [2793] in such a manere. þat' þer be no matere ne
 cause to calle þe neiþer wrecche ne chynche. [2794]
 ffor it' is grete shame a man to haue a poor hert'
 and a rich purs [2795] ¶ He seiþ also þe goodes þat'
 thow hast' geten vse hem by mesure þat' is to say.
 spende mesurably [2796] ffor þei þat' folylly waasten
 and dispenden þe goodes þat' þei haue. [2797] whan
 þei han no more propre of her owne þei shape hem
 to take þe goodes of a noþer man. [2798] ¶ I say þan
 þat' 3e shal flee Auarice / [2799] vsinge 3oure richesse
 as in such manere þat' men say not' þat' 3oure goodes
 bene yburied. [2800] but' þat' 3e ¹haue hem in 3oure
 myght' and in 3oure weldinge [2801] ffor þe wise
 repreeueþ þe Auerous man and seiþ in twoo
 versus. [2802] Wherto and whi bereþ a man his
 goodes by his Auarice and knoweþ wel þat' nedes
 he most' deye. [2803] for deþ is þe ende of euery man
 as in þis present' lif [2804] and for what' cause or
 enchesoñ ioyneth he him or knytteþ he hym so fast'
 vnto his goodes [2805] þat' all his wittes mowe not'
 disseuere hym or departen hym frø his goodes.
 [2806] and knoweþ wel or aught' knowe þat' whan he
 is dede he shal no þinge bere wiþ him out' of þis
 world [2807] ¶ And þerfore seiþ seynt Austyne. That'
 þe Auerous man is likned into helle. [2808] þat' þe
 more it' swoloweth. þe more desire it' hap to swalowe and
 deuowre [2809] And as wel as 3e wolde eschwe to be
 cleped an Auarous man or chynche [2810] as wel
 shul 3e kepe 3ou and gouerne 3ou so and in such a wise
 so þat' men ne cleped 3ou not' fool large [2811] ¶ Therfore
 seiþ Tullius The goodes he seiþ of þine hous shuld
 nat' bene hidde ne kept' so cloos but' þat' þei myȝt'
 be opned by Pite and by bonairte [2812] þat' is to
 sayn to 3eue hem parte þat' han grete nede [2813]

Ne þi goodes shuld not bene so open to be euery
mannys goodes [2814] ¶ Afterward in getinge of þoure
richesse & in vsyng of hem þe shul alway haue þre
þingges in þoure hert. [2815] þat is to sayn. our lorde
god. conscience and good name [2816] ¶ ffirst þe shul
haue god in þoure hert [2817] and for no richesse þe
shul doo no þinge which may in eny manere displese
crist þat is youre creatour and þour maker [2818] ¶ ffor after
þe worde of Salomon. it is better to haue a litel good
with þe loue of god [2819] þan to haue moche good
and tresour and lese þe loue of his lorde god [2820]
¶ And þe prophet seiþ. þat better it is to bene a
good man. and haue a litel good and tresour. [2821] þan to
be holden a shrewe and haue grete Ricchesse. [2822]
And ȝit say I ferþermore þat þe shulden alway
doon þour bisynesse to gete þou riches [2823] so þat
þe gete hem wiþ good conscience [2824] ¶ And þe Appostel
seiþ. Ther nys no þinge in this world of which we
shuld haue so grete Ioye as whan our conscience bereþ
vs witnesse of good [2825] ¶ And þe wise man seiþ. The
substaunce of a man is ful good whan synne nys nat in
his coscience [2826] ¶ Afterward in getinge of þoure
richesses / and in vsyng of hem [2827] þe most haue
grete bysynesse and grete diligence þat þoure good
name be alway kept and conserued [2828] ¶ ffor Salo-
mon seiþ That better it is and more availleþ a man
to haue good name þan to haue grete richesse
[2829] ¶ And þerfore he seiþ in a noþer place Doo grete
diligence seiþ Salomon in kepinge of þi frend and of
þi good name. [2830] ffor it shal lenger abide wiþ
þe þan eny tresour be it neuere so precious. [2831]
And certes he shuld not be cleped a gentil man. þat
after god and good conscience all þingges left ne dop
his dyligence and bysynesse to kepen his good name
[2832] ¶ And Cassidore seiþ þat it is signe of a gentill
hert whan a man desireþ and loueþ to haue a goode name./

[2833] ¶ And þerfore seiþ seint Austyne. Ther bene two þingges þat are necessarye and nedeful. [2834] & þat is good conscience and good loos. [2835] that is to sayn good conscience to þine owne persone inward And good loos for þi neighbour outward. [2836] And he þat tresteþ him so moche in his good conscience [2837] þat he displese and setteþ at nouȝt his good name or loos. *and* rekkeþ not þouȝe he kepe not his good name. he nys but a cruell cherle

[2838] ¶ Sire now haue I schewed þou how ȝe shuld doo in kepinge rychesse and howe ȝe shuld vsen hem [2839] ¶ I see wel þat for þe trust þat ȝe haue in ȝoure ricchesse. ȝe wil meuen werre and bataille [2840] I counsaile þat ȝe bygynne no werre. in trest of ȝoure Richesse. ffor þei ne suffisen not werres to Mayntene [2841] ¶ And þerfore seiþ a Philosophre. That man þat desireþ *and* wil algates haue werre. shal neuere haue suffisaunt. [2842] ffor þe Richer þat he is þe gretter dispence mote he make ȝif he wil haue worship or victorie [2843] ¶ And Salomon seiþ þat þe gretter richesse þat a man hath. þe gretter dispendours he haþ. [2844] And dere sir al be it soo. þat for ȝoure richesse ȝe mowe haue mochel folk. [2845] ȝit byhoueþ it not. ne it is not good to bygynne werre. þer as ȝe may in oþer manere haue pees vnto ȝoure worship and profite [2846] ¶ ffor þe victorie of batailles þat bene in þis world lith not in grete nombre or multitude of puple. ne in vertue of man. [2847] but it lith in þe wille and in þe hand of our lord god almyȝty [2848] ¶ And þerfore Iudas makabeus which was goddys knyȝt [2849] whan he shuld fȝt aȝeinst his aduersarie þat had a gretter nombre and a gretter multitude of folk And strengre þan was þis puple of Makabe. [2850] ȝit he recomforte his lytel 'companye and saide riȝt in þis wise [2851] ¶ Also litzly quod he may our lord god almyȝty ȝeue victorie to fewe folk

as to monye [2852] ffor þe victory of bataille commeþ
 not by þe grete nombre of puple [2853] but it commeth
 fro our lord of heuene. [2854] And dere sire for
 as moch As þer nys no man certeyn ȝif it be worþ þat
 god ȝeue hym victorie [.
 *no gap in the MS.*] or nouȝt. aftre
 þat Salomon seiþ. [2855] Therefore enery man shulde gretly
 drede werrus to bygynne [2856] And by cause þat [in]
 batailles [are] many periles [2857] & [it may] happen oþer
 while þat as sone is þe grete man sclayn as þe litel
 man [2858] ¶ And as it is ywritte in þe secōd book of
 kingges The dedes of batailles bene auenturous and no
 þinge certeyn. [2859] for as liztly is oon hurt wip a
 spere as a noþer [2860] And þerfore it is grete perile in
 werre. Therefore shuld a man flee and eschewe werre in
 as mochel as a man may goodly ./ [2861] ffor Salomon
 seiþ: He þat loueþ perile shal falle in perile

[2862] After þat dame prudence had spoken in
 þis manere Melebius answerd and saide. [2863] I see
 wel dame þat by ȝoure faire wordes and by
 ȝoure resons þat ye han schewed me. þat þe werre likeþ
 ȝou no þinge. [2864] But I haue not ȝit herde ȝoure coun-
 saile howe I shal doo in þis nede.

[2865] Certes quod she I counsaile ȝoⁿ þat ȝe ac-
 corde wip ȝoure aduersaries and þat ȝe haue pees
 with hem [2866] ¶ ffor seint Iame seiþ in his Epistell
 ¶ That by concord and pees þe smale richesces wexen
 grete [2867] And by debate and discord þe grete richesce
 fallen down. [2868] And ȝe knowe wel þat oon of þe
 grettest and most souereyn þinge þat is in þis world
 is vnite and pees [2869] And þerfore seiþ our lord
 Ihesu crist to his apostel in þis wise [2870] ¶ Wel
 happy and blessed bene þei þat louen and pu[r]chasen
 pees for þei bene called children of god [2871] ¶ A quod
 Meleby nowe se I wel þat ȝe loue not myn h[o]noure
 and my worship. [2872] ȝe knowen wel þat myne

aduersaries haue bygonnen þis debate and brigge by her outrage [2873] And 3e See wel þat þei ne requiren ne preien me nat' of pees ne þei asken not' to be recounsailed. [2874] wil 3e þan þat I goo meke and obeie me to hem. and crye hem mercye. [2875] ffor soth þat were not' my worship. [2876] ffor riȝt as men sayn þat ouer grete humblesse engendrep dispisinge. so fareþ it by to grete humilite & mekenesse

[2877] ¶ Than bygan dame prudence to make semblaunt' of wreth and saide. [2878] Certes sire sauf 3oure grace I loue 3our honoure and 3oure profite as I doo myn owne and euere ha'ue done [2879] ne 3e ne mowen not' sayn þe contrarie. [2880] And 3it' 3if I had saide þat 3e shulde haue purchased þe pees and þe reconsiliacion I ne had not' moche mystake me ne saide amys [2881] ffor þe Wise man seiþ. The disencion bygynnep by a noþer man. and þe reconsilynge by þi silf. [2882] And þe prophete seiþ. flee schrewdenesse and doo goodnesse [2883] ¶ Seke pees and folowe it in as moche as in þe is. [2884] ¶ 3it' seiþ he not' þat 3e shul Swe rapier to 3oure aduersaries for pees þan þei shullen to 3ou. [2885] ffor I knowe wel þat 3e bene so hard' herted. þat 3e wil do no ping' for mee [2886] ¶ And Salomon seiþ: þat he þat hap ouer harde an hert'. at þe last' shal myshappe and mystide

[2887] ¶ Whan Melebius had seye dame prudence make semblaunt' of wreth he saide in þis wise [2888] ¶ Dame I prey 3ou þat 3e be not' displeased of þingges þat I saye. [2889] ffor 3e knowe wel þat I am angry and wroop and þat is no wondere. [2890] and þei þat bene wroop. weten not' wel what' þei doon ne what' þei seyn [2891] ¶ And þefore the prophete seiþ. That' trowbled eyen haue no clere sight'. [2892] But seiþ on and counsaile me as 3e likeþ. for I am redy to doo riȝt as 3e wil desire. [2893] and if 3e repreue me of my fuly .I am þe more holden to loue 3ou and to preise

3ou [2894] ¶ ffor Salomon saith That he þat' reprouep hym þat' doop foly. [2895] he shal finde gretter grace þat' he þat' deceyueþ hym wiþ swete wordes

[2896] Than said Dame prudence. I make no semblant' of wreþe ne of anger' but' for 3oure grete profite [2897] ¶ ffor Salomon seiþ: he is more wroop þat' re-preueth or chideþ a foole for his folye schewing' him semblañt' of wreþe [2898] þan he þat' supporteþ hym or preiseþ him in his mysdoynge at' laugheþ at' his foly [2899] ¶ And þis same Salomon seiþ afterward' þat' by þe soriful vese of a man þat' is to sayn by sory and heuy countenance of a man [2900] þe foole correcteþ and amendeþ him self

[2901] ¶ Than sayde Meleby I shal not' conne answer to so mony resons as 3e putten to me and shewen / [2902] seiþ shortely 3oure wille. and 3oure counsaile and I am al redy to fulfille and performe it

[2903] ¶ Than Dame prudence diskeuered al her wille vnto hym and saide [2904] I counsaile 3ou þat' 3e abouen al þinge maken pees bytwene god and 3owe [2905] and beþ reconsailled vnto him and to his grace. [2906] ffor I haue seið 3ow here byfore ¶ God hap suffred 3ou to haue þis tribulaciõ and dissesse for 3oure synnes. [2907] And if 3e doo as I say 3owe ¹god wil sende 3oure aduersaries vnto 3ou [2908] and make hem to falle at' 3oure fete redy to 3oure wille and 3oure com-aundement' [2909] ¶ ffor Salomon seiþ: Whan þe condicion of man is plesaunte and likinge to god [2910] he chaungeth þe hertes of þe mannes aduersaries and constreyneþ hem to bysechen him of pees and of grace [2911] ¶ And I prei 3ou lat' me speke wiþ 3oure aduersaries in privy place. [2912] for þei shal not' knowe it' be 3oure wille ne 3oure assent'. [2913] And þan whan I knowe her wiþ and assent': I may counsaile 3ou þe more suerly

[2914] ¶ Dame quod Meleby dop 3our wiþ and

GROUP B. § 10. MELIBEUS. Petworth MS.

ȝoure lyking' [2915] ffor I putte me fulli in ȝoure disposicioñ and ȝoure ordynaunce

[2916] ¶ Than dame prudence whan [she] segh þe wille of her husbonde and she delyuered her and toke avice by hure self [2917] þenkinge by her self how she myȝt bringe þis nede vnto a goode conclusioñ and a good eende [2918] ¶ And whan she seeȝe her tyme she sent for þise aduersaries to come vnto her into a pryvy place [2919] and schewed wisely vnto hem þe greet goodnesse þat' commeþ of pees. [2920] and þe grete harmes and periles þat' ben in werre. [2921] and saide to hem in a goo[d]ly manere howe þat' hem ouȝten to haue grete repentance [2922] of þe Iniurie and wronge þat' þei hadden ydone. to Meleby her lorde and vnto her and vnto her douȝter'.

[2923] And whan þei herden þe goodly wordes of dame Prudence [2924] þei weren so supprised and rauished and hadden so gret Ioie of her' þat' wondere was to telle [2925] ¶ O lady quod þei ȝe ¶ han schewed vnto vs þe blissinge of swetnesse aftere þe Sawe of dauid þe prophete. [2926] ffor þe reconsilinge which we ne bene not worpi to haue in no manere. [2927] but we ouȝt to requiren it wiþ grete contricioñ and humilite [2928] ȝe as ȝoure grete goodnesse haþ presented vnto us [2929] Now se we wel þe sciencē and þe konyng' of Salomon is ful trewe [2930] for he seiþ þat' swete wordes multiplen and encresen freendes. and maken schrewes to be debonayre and meke

[2931] Certes quod þei we putten oure dede and al our matere. *and* cause alhoolly in ȝoure good wille [2932] and bene redy to obeie to þe speche and þe comaundement of my lord Melebye [2933] ¶ And þerfore our dere and benigne lady we preien ȝou and bysechen ȝou as mekely as we conne or mowen [2934] ¶ þat' 'it' like vnto ȝoure grete goodnesse to fulfille in dede ȝoure goodly wordes [2935] ffor we consideren and knownen

GROUP B. § 10. MELIBEUS. Petworth MS.

þat we han offended and greued my lorde Melebie out of
 mesure [2936] so fer forþ þat we bene nat a power to
 maken his a[men]dys. [2937] and þerfore we oblie and
 bynde vs and our frendes forto doo al his wille and his
 comaundement [2938] But perauenture he haþ such
 hevynesse and such wreth to vs ward by cause of our
 defence [2939] þat he wil enioyne vs suche peyne
 as we may not bere ne susteyne [2940] ¶ And þerfore
 noble lady we biseke to þoure wommanly pite.
 [2941] takeþ such avisement in þis nede þat we ne our
 frendes ben not disherited ne distroied porgh oure
 foly

[2942] Certis quod Prudence it is an harde þinge and
 riȝt perilous [2943] þat man put him al vtterly
 in þe arbitracioñ and Iugement and in þe myȝht and
 power of his enemyes [2944] ¶ ffor Salomon seiþ Leueþ
 and ȝeueþ credence to þat I shal sayn ¶ I say
 quod he ȝif puple and gouernours of holy church
 [2945] to þi sone. to þi wif and þi frende. ne to
 þi broþer. [2946] ne ȝeue þou neuere myȝt ne
 maistrie of þi body while þou lyuest [2947] ¶ Nowe
 sith þat he forfendeþ. þat man shuld not ȝeue to his
 broþer ne to his freende þe myȝt of his body [2948]
 Than by a strengre reson he forfendeþ and forbedeþ. a
 man to ȝeue hym self vnto his enemye [2949] ¶ And nape-
 les I counsaile ȝowe þat ȝe ne mystrest not my lorde
 [2950] for I woote wel and knowe verrelly þat he is
 debonaire and meke. large and curtays. [2951] and no
 þinge desirous ne coueitous of good ne ricchesse. [2952]
 ffor nys no þinge in þis world þat he desireþ.
 saue oonly worship and honour [2953] ¶ fferþermore
 I knowe wel and I am riȝt swre þat he wil no þinge
 doo in þis nede wiþ-out counsaile of me. [2954] And I
 shal so worche in þis cause þat by þe grace of our lorde
 god ȝe shul be recounsailed vnto vs.

[2955] Than seið þei wiþ oon vois. Worshipful

lady we putten vs and oure ¶ goodes al fully in ȝoure wille and in ȝoure disposicioñ [2956] and bene redy forto come what day þat it likeþ vnto ȝoure noblenesse to lymyte vs or asigne vs [2957] forto make oure obligacioñ and be bounde as stronge as it likeþ vnto ȝoure goodnesse [2958] þat we may fulfille þe will of ȝow *and* of my lord Melebye.

[2959] And whan dame prudence had ¶ 'herde þe answers of þise men she bad hem go ageyn prively [2960] And she retorned to her lord Meleby and told hym how she fand his aduersaries ful repentaunte [2961] knowlechyng ful lowly her synnes and trespasses / and howe þei weren redy to suffren al peyne. [2962] requiryng and preying hym of mercye *and* pite

[2963] ¶ þan saide Meleby he is wel worþ to haue pardone and forȝeuenesse of his synne. þat excuseþ nat his synne. [2964] but knowleccheþ and repentþ hym asking Indulgence [2965] ¶ ffor Senec say. There is þe remysioñ and forȝeuenes: wher as þe confession is. [2966] ffor confession is neighbour to Innocence. [2967] ¶ And he saþ in an oþer place: þat he þat hap shame of his synne and knowleccheþ it: is worþi remysioñ. And þerefor I assent and conferme me to haue pees. [2968] But it is good þat we doo it not wip-out þassent of oure frendes

[2969] Than was prudence riȝt glad and loyful and saide þis [2970] ¶ Certes sire quod she ye han wel and goodly answerd. [2971] ffor riȝt as by the counsaile of assent and helpe of ȝoure frendes ȝe haue beñ stired to venge ȝou. and make werre. [2972] Riȝt so wip-outen her counsaile shal ȝe not accorde ȝou ne haue pees wip ȝoure aduersaries [2973] ¶ ffor þe lawe saip. Ther nys no þing so good by way of kynge as þinge to bene vnbounde by hym þat it was ybounde

[2974] And þan Dame prudence wip-outen delay or tarynge sent anon Massagers for her kynne and for her olde frendes which þat were trewe *and* wise [2975]

GROUP B. § 10. MELIBIUS. Petworth MS.

and tolde hem by order in þe presence of Me[le]bye al þis matere as it is aboue expressed and declared. [2976] and preyed hem þat þai wolde ȝeuen her avise *and* counsaile what best were to doo in þis nede [2977] ¶ And whan Melibies frendes had taken her avise and deliberacioñ of þis forseide matere [2978] and hadden examyned it by grete bysynesse and grete diligence. [2979] þei ȝaf ful counsaile forto haue pees *and* rest. [2980] And þat Melebius shuld receyuen wip good hert his aduersaries to forȝeuenesse and Mercy.

[2981] ¶ And whan dame prudence had herd passent of her lord Melebius and þe counsaile of his frendes [2982] accorde wip her wille and her entencion [2983] she was wonderly glad in hert and saide [2984] Ther is and olde prouerbe quod She seiþ: þat þe goo[d]nesse þat thou maist doo þis day do it [2985] and abyde nat til [le soir ne] to morowe. [2986] And perfor¹ I counsaile ȝou þat ye sende ȝoure massagers which þat bene discrete and wise. [2987] vnto ȝoure aduersaries Telling hem in ȝour bihalf. [2988] þat ȝif þei wil trete of pees and accorde. [2989] þat þei shapen hem wip-out delay or taryng to come vnto vs. [2990] Which þinge was perfourmed in dede. [2991] And whan þise trespasours and repentyng folk of her folies þat is to say þe aduersaries of melebye [2992] hadden herd what þe massagers saiden vnto hem. [2993] þei were riȝt glad and loiful and answerden ful mekely and benygnely [2994] ȝeeldinge graces and thonkingges to her lorde Melebie and to al his companye [2995] and shopen hem wip-out lay to goo wip þe massagers and obey to þe Comaundement of her lorde Melebius

[2996] ¶ And riȝt anoon þei token her way to þe courte of Meleby [2997] and token to hem some of her trewe frendys to make feiþ for hem and forto bene her borowes [2998] ¶ And whan þei were comen to

GROUP B. § 10. MELIBIUS. Petworth MS.

þe presence of melebius he seide hem þise wordes
 [2999] It stondeþ þus quod Melebie and soþ it is
 þat ȝe [3000] causelees and wiþ-out skille and reson
 [3001] haue done grete iniuries and wronges to me and
 to my wif Prudence And to my ¶ douȝtere also. [3002] ffor
 ȝe han entred into myn hous by violence [3003] and haue
 done such outrage þat alle men knowe wel þat ȝe han
 deserued þe deef [3004] And þerfore wil I knowe
 and witt of ȝou [3005] wheþere ȝe putte þe
 punsshment and þe chastisement and þe vengeance of
 þis outrage in þe witt of me and of my wif Dame Prudence
 or ȝe wil not

[3006] Than þe wisest of hem þre answerd for
 hem alle and seide [3007] ¶ Sire quod he we knowe
 wel þat we bene vnworþi to come vnto þe Suerte vnto
 so grete [a lord] and so worþi as ȝe bene. [3008] ffor
 we han so gretely mystaken vs and haue offended and giltyd
 in such a wise. ageyn ȝoure hegh lordship. [3009] þat
 trewly we han deserued þe deef. [3010] But ȝit for
 þe grete goodnesse and debonaire þat all men don
 witnesse of ȝoure persone / [3011] We submytten vs to
 ȝour excellence and benygnyte of ȝoure gracious lordship.
 [3012] for we bene redy to obey to all ȝoure comaundementes
 [3013] bysekinge ȝou þat of ȝoure merciable pite ȝe
 wil considere our grete repentaunce and lowe submyssion
 [3014] and graunt us forȝeuenesse of oure outrageous
 trespas and offence. [3015] ffor wel we knowen þat ȝoure
 liberaþ grace and mercie streccheþ forþere into good-
 nesse þan doþ our outrageous trespas into wikked-
 nesse. [3016] 1al be it þat cursedly and damp-
 nably we han ygilt aȝeinst ȝoure grete lordship

[3017] ¶ Than Melebye toke hem vp fro þe grounde
 ful benygnelly [3018] and receyued her oblacion and her
 londres by her opes vpon her plegges and borowes. [3019]
 And assigned hem a certeyn day to retourne vnto his
 courte [3020] forto accepte and to receyue þe sentence and

Iuggement of þat Melebye wil comaunde to be done to hem by þise causes to-fore seide. [3021] which þingges ordeyned / euery man · retourned home to his hous

[3022] ¶ And whan þat Dame Prudence segh her tyme. she f[r]ayned and asked her lorde [3023] what vengeance he þouȝt to take on his aduersaries

[3024] To which Melebius answerd and saide. Certys quod I I thenk and purpoos me fully [3025] to disherite hem and al þat euere þei haue and forto putte hem in exile for euere moo

[3026] ¶ Certis quod dame Prudence þis were a cruel sentence and mochel aȝeinst resoun. [3027] ffor ȝe bene riche ynouȝe and haue no nede of oper mennys good / [3028] and ȝe myȝten lightly gete ȝou a coueitous name [3029] Whiche is a vicious þinge and ouȝte to bene eschewed of euery man [3030] ¶ ffor aftere þe sawe of þe word of þe apostel Coueityse is roote of alle harmes [3031] And þefore it were better to ȝou to lese so mochel good of ȝoure owne. þan forto take of her good in þis manere. [3032] ffor bettere it is to lese good with Worship þan it is to wynne good wip vileny and shame. / [3033] And euery man ouȝt to doo his diligence of his bysynesse to geten hym a good name. [3034] And ȝit shal he not oonly bysyen him in kepinge his good name [3035] But he shal also enforsen him alway to doon somme þinge by which he may renouelle his good name [3036] ¶ ffor it is written ¶ The olde good lose or good name of a man · is sone done or goon or passed whan it is not newed ne renouelled [3037] And as touching þat ȝe sayn ȝe wil exile ȝoure aduersaries [3038] þat þenkeþ me moch aȝeinst resoun. and out of mesure [3039] considered. þe power þat þei han ȝeuen ȝou vpon hem self [3040] ¶ And it is writen ¶ that he is worpi to lessen his privelegge þat mysverseþ þe myȝt and þe power þat is ȝeuen hym [3041] And I sette caas ȝe myȝt enioyne hem þat peyne by riȝt and lawe [3042] which I

GROUP B. § 10. MELIBEUS. Petworth MS.

trowe 3e mowe not doo [3043] I say 3e myȝt not
 put it to execucion *peraventure* / [3044] and þan
 were it likly to retourne to þe werre as it was byforne
 [3045] And þerfore ȝif 3e þan wol þat men doñ ȝou obeis-
 aunce 3e most deme more curteisly [3046] This is to
 sayn 3e most ȝeue more esy sentences and Iuggementys.
 [3047] ffor it is writen þat he þat most curteisly
 comaundeþ to hym men most obeyen [3048] ¶ And þer-
 fore I prey ȝou þat in þis necessite and in þis nede
 3e cast ȝou to ouercome ȝoure hert. [3049] ffor Senec
 seiþ. He þat ouercommep his hert ouercommep
 twies. / [3050] ¶ And Tullius seiþ. Ther nys no þing so
 comendable in a grete lord [3051] as whan he is debonaire
 and meke and apaiseth hym self lightly. [3052] And I prey
 ȝou þat ye wil forbere nowe to do vengeaunce [3053] in
 such a maner þat ȝour good name may be kept and
 conserued [3054] and þat men mow han a cause and
 matere to preise ȝou of pite and of mercy [3055] and
 þat 3e haue no cause to repent ȝou of þinge þat 3e doñ
 [3056] ¶ ffor Senec seiþ. He ouercommep in an euel
 manere þat repentep hym of his victorie. [3057] Where-
 fore I prey ȝou lat mercy be in ȝoure
 hert [3058] to þe effecte and entent þat god
 almyȝty haue mercy on ȝou in his last Iuggement [3059]
 ¶ ffor seint Iame seiþ in his Epistel ¶ Iuggement wiþ-
 oute mercy shal be do to hym þat haþ no mercy on
 another wiȝt

[3060] Whan Melebius had herd þe grete skilles
 and resons of dame Prudence and her wise enformaciōn
 and techinge. [3061] His hert gan encline to þe wille of
 his wif. considerynge her trewe entent. [3062] Con-
 firmed. hym anōn and contened fully to worchen aftere her
 counsaile [3063] and þonked god of whome procedep al
 goodnesse þat hym sent a ¶ wif of so grete
 discreciōn [3064] And whan þe day come þat his aduer-
 saries shuld apperen in his presence [3065] he speke

GROUP B. § 10. MELIBEUS. Petworth MS.

to hem ful goodely And saide in þis wise. [3066] Al be
 it soo þat of ȝoure pride and hegh presumpciō and foly.
 and of ȝoure negligence and vnkonyng' [3067] ȝe han
 mysborn ȝou. 'and trespassed vnto me [3068] ȝit' for aa
 moche as I See and byholde ȝoure grete humilite
 [3069] and þat ȝe bene sory and repentaunte of ȝoure giltes.
 [3070] It' constreyneþ me to do ȝou grace./ and mercy
 [3071] and wherfore I receyue ȝou to my grace. [3072] And
 forȝeue ȝou vtterly al þe offences Iniuries and wrongges
 þat' ȝe have done aȝeinst' me and myne [3073] to þis
 effecte and to þis eende þat' god of his endeles mercye.
 [3074] wil at' þe tyme of our deyinge forȝeue vs our
 giltes þat' we han trespassed vnto hym in þis wrecched
 world. [3075] ffor douteleesȝif we bene sory and repentaunte
 of þe synnes and giltes in þe which we han trespassed in þe
 sight of oure lorde god. [3076] he is so free and so merci-
 able. [3077] þat' he 'wil forȝeue vs oure giltes [3078]
 and brynge vs to þe bliasse þat' neuere hap eende .AmeN.

¶ Here endep chaucers tale of melebye

And here bygynneþ þe prologe of þe Monke./ [on leaf
244, back]

Whan ended was my tale of Meleby
 And of Prudence and her benygnyte 3080
 Our hoost' saide as I am feiþful man
 And by þe corps precious Matrian
 I had leuer þan a barel of ale.
 That' good loue my wif had herd' þis tale 3084
 ffor she nys no þinge of such 'pacience
 As was þilk Melebies Dame Prudence
 By goddes bones whan I bete my knaues
 She bringeþ me forþ þe grete clubbed staues 3088
 And crieth Slee þoo dogges euerychoñ
 And breke of hem boþ bak and boon
 And ȝif þat' eny neighbour of myne
 Wil nat' to my wif in church enclyne 3092
 Or be so hardy to hure do trespas
 Whan she commep' hoom she rampeþ in my face
 And criep' fals coward' kepe and wreke þi wiff
 By goddes bonys I wil haue þi knyff 3096
 And þow shalt' haue my distaff and go spynne
 ffrom day to nyght þus she wil bygynne
 'Allas she seiþ þat' euer I was yshape
 To wedde a Milksop or a coward' ape 3100
 That' wil be ouercome wiþ euery wiȝt'
 Thow darst' not stonde by þi wyues riȝt'
 þis is my lif but ȝif þat' I wil fiȝt'
 Out' at' þe door anon I mot' me diȝt' 3104
 Or ellys I am lest' but' ȝif þat' I.
 Be like a wilde lyon fool hardy.
 I wote wele she wil do me sclee som day
 Somme neighoure of myne and þennes renne away 3108
 ffor I am perilous wiþ knyf in honde
 Al be it' I dar nat' her withstonde

GROUP B. § 11. MELIBE-MONK LINK. Petworth MS.

ffor she is bigge in Armes be my faith
 þat shal he fynde þat hir mysdoþ or saip 3112
 But lat vs passe away fro þis matere
 My lorde þe Monke quod he be mery of chiere [leaf 247]
 ffor ȝe shul telle a tale trewly
 Loo Roucheester stant here fast by 3116
 Ride forþ myn owne lord breke not ȝoure game
 But by my troupe I knowe nouȝt ȝoure name
 Whedere shal I calle ȝou my lord dan Iohn
 Or danne Thomas or danñ Albon 3120
 Of what hous be ȝe by ȝoure fader kyn
 It is a gentile pasture þat ȝe goon In
 Thow art not like a penannte or a goost
 Thus þe Monke seide oure oste 3124
 Vppon my faipe þou art some officere
 Som worpi Sexteyñ or som selerere
 ffor by my fadere saule as to my dome
 Thow art a maistere whan þou art at home 3128
 No poor cloistrere ne no novise
 But governour boþ wily and wise
 And þer-wiþ-al of braune and of bonys
 A wel farynge persone for þe nonys 3132
 I pray god ȝeue hym confusioñ
 That þe furst brouȝt to Religion
 ffor þou woldest haue bene a tredeforþ ariȝt
 Haddest thou as grete leue as þou hast myȝt 3136
 To performe al þi lust in engendrure
 Thow haddest ygete mony a creature
 Allas whi werest þow so wide a cope
 God ȝeue sorowe to me and I were pope 3140
 Not oonly þou but euery myȝty man.
 Thouȝe he were shore brode vpon þe pan.
 Shuld haue a wiff for al þe world is lorn
 Religion hap take vp al þe cōrn 3144
 Of tredyng and we burile men bēñ but shrympes.
 Of feble trees þer comen symple ympes.

GROUP B. § 11. MELIBE-MONK LINK. Petworth MS.

This makeþ þat' oure heires bene so sclendere
 And feble þat' þei may not' wel engendere 3148
 This makeþ þat' our wyues wil assay
 Relygious folk' for þei may bettere paye
 Of Venes payment' þan may we
 God woot' no lasshebourues pay 3e [leaf 247, back] 3152
 Be nat' wrope my lorde þouȝe I play
 ffor ofte in game a soþe I haue herd' say
 This worþi monke toke aȝt in pacience
 And saide I wil doon al my diligence 3156
 As fer as sowneth unto honeste
 To telle ȝou a tale or two or þre
 And ȝif þe list' to herken hiderwarde
 I wil ȝou say þe lif of seint' Edward 3160
 Or elles furst tregedies wil I ȝou telle
 Of which I haue an hundred in my Selle
 Tregedie is forto seyn a certeyn storie
 As olde bookes make vs memorie 3164
 Of hem þat' stood in grete prosperite
 And is falle out' of hie degree
 Into Miserye and endeþ wretchedly
 And þei bene versified comonly 3168
 Of sex fete of which men callen exametron
 In proose eke bene endited mony on
 In metere eke and in sondry wise
 loo þis claring' auȝt' ynow suffice 3172
 Now herkenep ȝif ȝou like to here
 But' furst' I ȝou biseche in þis manere
 þouȝe I be ordred tel not' þise þingges
 Be it' of Popes Emperours or kyngges 3176
 After her Age as men may writen fynde
 But' telle hem som byfore and some behynde
 As it commep' nowe in my remembraunce
 Haue me excused of myn ignoraunce 3180

¶ Here bygynnep þe prologe of þe monke

[No breaks between the stanzas in the MS, except for
the red headings.]

And here bygynneþ þe monkes tale

[on leaf 247, back]

I wol by-waile in ma[ne]re of tregedie ¶ **þe tale**
 þe harme of hem þat stonden in hie degre
 And fallen so þat þer nys no remedye
 To bringe hem out of her aduersite 3184
 ffor certeynly whan fortune list to flee
 þer may no man of hir þe cours wiþholde
 Lat no man trest on blynde prosperite
 Beþ ware of pise ensamples trewe and olde [leaf 248] 3188

¶ **Primo de Lucifero :**
At lucifere þouge he an aungel were
 And nat a man . but at hym I wil bygynne
 ffor þouge fortune may noon aungel dere
 ffroo high degre þer felle he for hys synne 3192
 Downe into helle wwere he zit is Inne
 O lucifer briȝtest of aungels alle
 Now art þou Sathanas þat maist nat twynne
 Out of myserie in which þat þou art falle 3196

¶ **De Adam . /**
Loo Adam in þe feelde of Damyssene
 Wiþ goddes ounne fyngers wrouȝt was he
 And nouȝt bygeten of mannes sperme vncleue
 And wolt al Paradys sauynȝ oon tree 3200
 Had neuere worldly man so hie degre
 As Adam vnto he wyþ nyce gouernafice
 Was dryue out of his high prosperite
 To labour and to helle and to meschaunce 3204

L¶ De Sampson
 Lo sampson þat was annunciate
 By þe Aungel longe er his natiuite
 And was to god almyȝty consecrate
 And stooðe in noblesse while þat he myȝt see 3208
 Was neuer such a noþer as was he
 To speke of strenght, and þerto hardynesse
 But to his wyues tolde he his secree
 Thourgh which he sclouȝe hym self for wrecchednesse 3212

¶ Sampson þis noble and myȝty champion
 Wip-oute wepen saaf his hondes tway
 He sclough and also to-rent þe lyon
 Toward his weddyng walking by þe way 3216
 His fals wif coude hym so wel plese and pray
 Til she his counsaile knewe and she vntrewe
 To his foos his counsaile gan to wrye
 And hym forsoke and toke anoþer newe 3220

Thre hundred foxes toke Sampson for Ire
 And alle her tailles he to-gyder bonde.
 And Sette þe foxes tailles a fire [leaf 248, back] 3224
 ffor he in euery taile had knytte a bronde
 And þei brent al þe cornes of þat londe
 And al her oliuerus an vynes eke
 A thowsand he sclough eke wip his honde
 And had no wepon but an asses cheke 3228

Whan þei were sclayn so prested hym þat he
 was wel nye lorn wherfor he gan to preye
 þat god wolde of his peyne haue som pite
 And sende hym drynke or ellys most he deye 3232
 And out of his asses cheke þat was so dreye
 Out of a wonge toth spronge anof a welle
 Of whiche he dronk ynouȝe shortly to [. . .
 : no gap in the MS.] telle 3236

By verray force at Algason vpon a nyzt'
 Maugre the philistiens of þat Cite
 þe gatys of þat toune he hæp vp pligt'
 And on his bak caried hem hæp he 3240
 Hie vpon an hille þat men myzt' See
 O noble almyztý sampson leef and dere
 Haddest þou nat' to wommen told þi secre
 In al þis world ne had ben þi pere 3244

This Sampson neiþer Sither dronk ne wyne
 Ne on his hede come neiþere rasour' ne Shere
 [. no gap in the MS.]
 ffor al þe strenght in his heres were 3248
 And fully xxth wynter ȝeer by ȝere
 He had of Israel þe gouernaunce.
 But' he shal wepe mony a tere
 ffor wommen men bryngen to meschaunce 3252

To his lemmon his Dalyaunce he told
 That in his herus al his strengthe lay
 And falsly to his foomen she hym sold
 And sclepinge in her barme vpon a day 3256
 She made to clippe or shere his heer away
 And made his foomen all his craft to aspyen
 And whan þat þei foofde hym in þis aray
 þei bounde hym fast and put out' his yen 3260

But' er his heer was yclipped or shaue
 Ther was no boonde wiþ which men myzt' hym bynde
 But' now he is in prison put' in a kaue [leaf 219]
 Where as þei made hym at þe querne grynde 3264
 O noble Sampson strengest' of mankynde
 O whilom Iuge in glorie & richesse
 Now maist' þow wepe wiþ pine eyen blynde
 Sipens þow art' from wele falle into wrecchednesse 3268

The eende of þise catyfs was as I shal say
 His foomen made a feest vpon a day
 And^þ made hym as her foole to-forn hem play
 And þis was [in] a temple of a grete aray 3272
 But at þe last he made a foule afray
 ffor he two postes shoke and made hem falle
 And downe fitt temple and al þer it lay
 And sclough hym self and eke his foomen alle 3276

This is to say þe princes euerechofi
 And eke a thowsand bodyes were þere sclayfi
 Wip falling of þe grete temple of stoñ
 Of Sampson ne wil I no more sayfi 3280
 Be ware of þise ensamples olde *and* playn
 þat no man telle her counsaile to her wyves
 Of suche þinge as þei wolde haue secre fayn
 3it þat it touche her lymmes or hir lyues . 3284

O De Ercole ./
 Of Ercole this souereyn conquerour
 Syngen his werkes lewde and high renoun .
 ffor in his tyme of strength he bere þe flour
 He slowe and raft þe skyn fro þe lyoun 3288
 He of Sentawres laide þe boost a down
 He Arpies sclowe þe cruel briddes felle
 He golden apples byraft þe dragoun
 He drowe out Serbyrois þe hound of helle 3292

He sclowe þe cruel tyraunt Buserus
 And made his hors to frete hym flessfi *and* bofi
 He sclough þe verrey serpent venemous
 Of Achilles two hornes breke he on 3296
 An he sclowgh Cacus in a kaue of stoñ
 He sclowgh þe geaunte Anteus þe strong
 He sclowe þe grisly boore and þat anoñ
 And bare þe hede vpon his nekt longe [leaf 249, back] 3300

Was neuer wylt sipeñ þe world bygan
 þat selowe so mony monstres as did he
 þorgh-out þis wide world his name ran
 What for his strength and for his bounte 3304
 And euery Rewine went he forto See
 He was so stronge no man myzt hym lette
 And boþ þe worldes ende saip trophe
 In stede of bondes he a piler sette 3308

A lemman had þis noble Campiõ
 That hight Dianyre fresh as may
 And as þe clerkes maken mencion
 She hap hym sent a shert fresh and gay 3312
 Allas þis shert and welaway
 Evenymed was subtilly wip-aft
 That ere þat he had wered it half a day
 It made his bones from his flesshe falle 3316

But napeles some clerkes her excusen
 By oon þat hight Nessus þat it maked.
 Be as be may I wil her not accusen
 But on his bakke þe shert he weres al naked. 3320
 Til þat his flesshe was for þe venyme blaked
 And whan he segh noon oper remedye
 In hote cooles he hap hym-self raked
 ffor wip no venyme deynd he to dye 3324

Thus sterf þis worpi myghty Ercules
 Lo who may trust on fortune eny throwe
 ffor hym þat folowep al þis world of prees
 Er he be ware is oft yleide ful lowe 3328
 fful wise is he þat hym self can knowe
 Beþ ware for whan þat fortune lest to glose
 þan waiteþ she her man down to throwe
 By suche a way as he wold leest suppose 3332

T ¶ De rege Nabugodonosor. /

he myzty trone þe precious tresour
 The glorious sceptre and real mageste
 þat had þe kyng Nabugodonosor
 Wip tunge vnneþ may / discribed be 3336
 He twyes nam Ierusalem þe Cite [leaf 230]
 The Vessell of þe temple he wip hym lad
 At Babiloyne was his souereyn See
 In which his glorie and his delit he had. 3340

The fairest children of þe blood Royal
 Of Ierusalem he ded do gilde anonon
 And maked eche of hem to bene his cherle
 Anon[ge] all oþer Danyel was oon 3344
 þat was þe wysest childe of euerychoñ
 ffor he þe dremes of þe kyng expowned
 Wher as in Caldey clerk was þer noon
 þat wist to what fyne his dremes sowned 3348

This prowde kyng lete make a stature of gold
 Sixty cubites longe and Seuen in brede
 To whiche ymage boþ 3onge and olde
 Comaunded he to loute and haue in drede 3352
 Or in a fornays ful of flawmes rede.
 He shal be brent þat wold nat obeye
 But neuere wold assent vnto þat dede
 Danyel ne his 3onges felawes tweye 3356

This kyng of kyngges prowde was and elate
 He wende god þat sitte in maieste
 Ne myght hym nat byreue of his estate
 But sodeynly he lost his dignyte 3360
 And like a beest hym semed forto be
 And ete hay as an oxe and lay þerout
 In reyne wip wilde beestes walked he
 Til a certeyn tyme was come aboute 3364

And like an Egles fetheres was his heeres
 His nailes like briddes clawes were
 [Til] God releued hym a certeyn jeres
 And ȝaf hym witte and þan wiþ mony a tere 3368
 He þonked god and euere his lyf in fere
 was he to doon amys in more trespas
 And or þat tyme ylaide was on his bere
 He knewe wel þat god was ful of myȝt and grace 3372

De Baltazar dicti Regis Nabugodonosor filio.

His soñe which þat hiȝt Baltazar
 That heelde þe regne after his faders day [leaf 280, back]
 He by his faders coupe not be war
 ffor proude he was of hert and of aray 3376
 And eke an ydolater was he ay
 His high astate assured hym in pride
 But fortune cast hym doune and þer he lay
 And sodeynly his regne gan deuide 3380

A feest he made vnto his lordes alle
 Vppon a tyme and made hem bliþe be
 And þan his officers can he calle 3384
 Goop bryngeþ forþ þe vessels quod he
 Which þat my fader in his prosperite
 Out of þe temple of Ierusalem byraft
 And to oure heghe goddes þonke wee
 Of honour þat our elders wiþ vs laft 3388

His wif his lordes and his concubynes
 Ay dronken þe whiles her appetite last
 Out of þise noble vessels sondry wynee
 And on a wal þis kyng his eyen cast 3392
 And sawe an honde armelees þat wrote ful fast
 ffor fere of which he quoke and sighed sore
 This honde þat baltazar made so soor agast
 Wrote mane techel phares and no more 3396

GROUP B. § 12. MONK'S TALE. Petworth MS.

In al þat londe Magytien was þer noon
 þat coupe expounen what þis lettre ment
 But Danyel expounded it anon
 And saide king' god þi fader sent' 3400
 Glorie and honour Regne tresour and rent
 And he was proude and god no þing' dradde
 And þerfore god grete wreth vpon hym Sent
 And hym by-raft þe regne þat he hadde 3404

He was out' cast' of mannys companye
 Wiþ asses was his habitacioñ
 And ete hay as a beest' in wete *and* drye
 Til þat he knewe by grace *and* by reson 3408
 That' god of heuene haþ domynaciañ
 Ouer euery regne and euery creature
 And þan had god of hym compassioñ
 And hym restored his regne and his figure [leaf 231] 3412

Eke þou þat art' his sone art' proude also
 And knowest' aþt þise þingges prively
 And art' rebel to god and art' his foo
 Thow drank' eke of his vessels boldly 3416
 Thi wif eke and þi wenches synfully
 Drank' of þe same vessels sondry wyne
 And heried fals goddys cursedly
 þerfore to þe shapen grete peyn es 3420

This hand was sent' fro god þat on þe wall
 wrote mane techel phares trest' me
 Thy regne is done þou waigest' not' at aþt
 Deuided is þi regne and it' shal be 3424
 To Medes and to perses 3euen quod he
 And þilk' same nyȝt þe kyng' was sclawe
 And Darius occupieþ his degre
 They he þerto nad neiper riȝt ne lawe 3428

GROUP B. § 12. MONK'S TALE. Petworth MS.

Lordyngges her-by ensamples mowe 3e take
 How þat in lordship is no sikernesse
 ffor whan fortune wil a man forsake
 He bereþ away his regne and his richesse 3432
 And eke his frendes boþ more and lesse
 And what man haþ frendes þorowe fortune
 Mishappe wil make hem enemyes I gesse
 This prouerbe is ful soþe and ful commune 3436

¶ De Cenobia: /

CEnobia of Palamere þe quene
 As writen Persiens of her noblesse
 So worþi was in Armes and so kene
 þat no wiziþ passed hure in hardynesse 3440
 Ne in lynage ne in oþer gentilnesse
 Of þe kyngges blood of percy is she descended.
 I say þat she nad not moost fairenesse
 But of hure Shap she myziþ not be amended 3444

Fro childhode I fynde þat she fledde
 Office of wommen and into woode she went
 And Mony a wilde hertes blode she shedde
 wiþ arowes brode þat she to hym sent 3448
 She was so swift þat she anon hem hent
 [leaf 251, back]
 And whan þat she was elder she wolde kille
 Lyons, lybardes and beres alto-rent
 And in hure armes weelde hem at her wille 3452

She durst wilde beestes dennes seke
 And renne in þe mountayn al þe nyght
 And slepe vndere a busshe she coude eke
 Wrastelen by verray force and myght 3456
 Wiþ eny yong man were he neuer so wiziþ
 Ther myght no þinge in her Armes stonde
 She kepte her maidenhode from euery wiziþ
 To no man deyned hure to be bonde 3460

But at þe last her frendes han hurs maried
 To Odonak a prince of þat Cite
 Al were it so þat she hem longe taried
 And ȝe shal vnderstonde how þat he 3464
 Hap suche fantasies as had she
 But napelees whan þei were knyȝt in fere
 þei lyueden in Ioie and in felicite
 ffor eche of hem had oȝer leef and dere 3468

Sauf oon þinge that ȝe nolde neuere assent
 By no way þat he shulde by hire lye
 But onys for it was her pleyȝn entent
 To haue a childe þe world to multiplie 3472
 And also sone as she myȝt aspie.
 That she was nouȝt wiȝ child wiȝ þat dede
 þan wil she suffre hym doon his fantasie
 Eftsonen and not but onys out of drede 3476

And ȝif she were wiȝ childe at pilke cast
 No more shulde he playe pilke game
 Till xlth daies were past
 Than wolde she onys suffre hym doo þe same 3480
 Al were this Odenake wilde or tame
 He gate no more of hure. for þus she saide
 It was to wyues lechery an shame
 In oȝer caas if þat men wiȝ hem plaide 3484

Two sones by þis odyȝnak had She
 The whiche she kepte in vertue and in letture
 But nowe vnto oure tale turne wee [leaf 252]
 I say þat worshipful creature 3488
 And wise per-wiȝ and large wiȝ mesure
 So penyble in þe werre and curteyse eke
 No more labour myȝt in werre endure
 was noon þouȝe in al þis world men shuld seke 3492

Hire Riche aray myȝt' not' be tolde
 As wel in vessel as in clopinge
 She was al clad in perry and in gold
 And eke she laft' not' for noon huntynge 3496
 To haue of sondry tungges folk' knowing'
 whan pat' she leisere had and forto entende
 To lerne bookes was al hure likynge
 How she in vertue myȝt' her lyf dispende 3500

And shortely of þis storie forto entrete
 So dughty was her husbonde as she
 That þei conquered mony regnes grete
 In þe Orient' wip mony a faire Cite 3504
 Appertenent' vnto þe mageste
 Of Rome and wip stronge hond helde hem fast'
 Ne neuer myȝt' her foomen doon hem flee
 Ay whiles þat' Odenake dayes last' 3508

Her batailles who so lest' hem forto rede
 Ageyn sopere þe kyng' and oþer moo
 And howe þat' all þe processe felle in dede
 whi she conquered and what' titel had þerto. 3512
 And after of her mescheef *and* of her woo
 Howe þat' she was byseged and itake
 Lat' hym vnto my maister Petrarke goo.
 þat' writte inowe of þis I vndertake. 3516

Whan Odenak' was dede she myȝtily
 þe Regnes heelde and wip hur propre honde
 Aȝeinst' her foos she fauȝt' trewly
 þat' þer nas kyng no prince in al þat londe 3520
 þat' he nas glad ȝif he þat' grace fonde
 þat' she ne wolde vpon his lond' werreye
 wip hire þei made alliance by bonde
 To bene in pees *and* lat' hure ride and pleye / 3524

[leaf 222, back]

The Emperour of Rome Claudius
 Ne hym byforn þe Romaine galiene
 Ne durst' neuer be so coragius
 Ne noon ermyne ne noon Egipciene 3528
 Ne Surryene ne noon Arabiene
 Wip-in þe feelde þat' durst' wip hire fiȝt'
 Lest' þat' she wolde wip hure hondes hym scleen
 Or wip her mayne putten hem to fiȝt' 3532

In kyngges habite went' her sonys twoo
 As heires of her regnes atte
 And hermanno and Tymalao
 Her names were as perciens hem calle 3536
 But' ay fortune hap in her hony galle
 This myȝty. qweue may not longe endure
 fortune out of her regne made her falle
 To wrecchednesse and to mysaventure 3540

Aurelion whan þat' þe gouernaunce
 Of Rome come into his hondes tweye
 He shope vpon þis quene to do vengeaunce
 And wip his legyons he toke his waye 3544
 Toward' Cenoby and shortly forto seye
 He made hur flee and at' þe last' her hent'
 And fettred hure and eke her children tweye
 And wan þe londe and home to Rome is went' 3548

Amonge þise oper þingges þat' he wan
 her chare þat' wrouȝt' was with gold and perre
 This grete Romayn þis Aurelian.
 hap wip hym lad for þat' men shuld see 3552
 Byforn hys trihumphe walkeþ she
 Wip Gilt' cheynes in her nek' hongynge
 Corowned she was as after her degre
 And ful of Perry charged her clopinge 3556

GROUP B. § 12. MONK'S TALE. Petworth MS.

Allas fortune she þat whilom was
 Dreedful to kyngges and to emperours
 Now gaureþ alle þe puple on hir allas
 And she þat helmed was in stronge stoures 3560
 [. no gap in the MS.]
 Shal on her hede bere a Vitremyte
 And she þat bare þe sceptre ful of floures
 Shal bye a dystaf her coste forto quite [leaf 253] 3564

[*Peter the Cruel, of Spain.*]

O noble o worþi peter glory of Spayn
 Whoom fortune helde so hiȝe in maieste
 Wel ouȝt men þi pitous deef complayn
 Thi bastard broþer made þe to flee 3568
 And aftere at a siege by subtilte
 Thowe were hytraied and lad to his tent
 Wher as he wiþ his owne honde scloȝh þe
 Succedyng in þi regne and in þi rent 3572

The felde of snowe wiþ þe Egle blak per-Inne [Bertrand du Guesclin.]
 Caught wiþ þe lyme rodde colours as þe glede
 He brewe þis cursednesse and al þe synne
 þe wicked nest was werker of þis nede. 3576
 Nouȝt charles Olyfere þat ay toke good hede
 Of troupe of honure but Armorekke [Oliver de Mauny of Brittany.]
 Genilof Olyuer corrupte for nede
 Brouȝtest þis worþi king in such brekke 3580

[*Peter of Cyprus.*]

¶ worþi Petre kyng of Cipre alsoo.
 That Alisaunder wan by high maistrie
 ful mony a heþen wrouȝtest þou for woo.
 Of which þine owne leeges had enuye 3584
 And for no þing but for þi chyualrie
 They in þi bed han sclayn þe by þe morue
 Thus gan fortune gouerne and gie
 And out of Ioie bringe into sorowe 3588

PETWORTH 559 (S-T. 269)

[*Bernabo Visconti, of Milan.*]

Of Melane grete Barnabo Viscounte
God of delite and scourge of lumbardie
Whi shuld not I pi fortune acounte
Sip in estaat þou clomben were so hie 3592
Thy broþer sone þat was pi double alie
ffor he pi Neuewe was and sone in lawe
Wip-in his prison made þe to die
But whi ne howe wote I þat þou were sclawe 3596

[*Ugolino, Count of Pisa.*]

Of the Erle Hugelyne of pise þe languour
Ther may no tunge telle for pite
But litel out of Pise stant a tour'
In whiche towre in prison put was he 3600
And wip hym bene his litel children þre
þe eldest scarcely .v. ȝere was of age [leaf 253, back]
Allas fortune it was grete crueltee
Such briddes forto putte into a cage 3604

¶ Dampned he was to dye in þat prison
ffor Roger which þat bisshop was of pise
Had on hym made a fals suggestiõ
Thorgh which þe puple gan on hym arise 3608
And putten him in prison in such a wise
As ȝe han herd and mete and drinke he had.
So smal þat vnneþes it may suffise
And þerwipal it was ful poor and bad 3612

In a day byfelle þat in þat houre
Whan þat his [mete] was wonte to be wrouȝt
þe Gailour shette þe doores of þe toure
He herde it wel but he seegh it nouȝt 3616
And in his hert anoon þer felle a þouȝt
þat þei for hunder wolde done hym dyen
Allas quod he allas þat I was wrouȝt
þer-wip þe teeres felle from his eyen . 3620

GROUP B. § 12. MONK'S TALE. Petworth MS.

His 3onge sones þre þer were of age
 Vnto hym seide fadere whi do 3e wepe
 whan wil þe Gailoure brynge our potage.
 Is þer no morsel brede þat [ye] doo kepe 3624
 I am so hungry þat I may nat' slepe
 Nowe wolde god þat I myȝt' slepen euere
 þan shuld noon hungre in myn herte crepe
 þer nys no þinge sauf brede þat me were leuere 3628

Thus day by day þis childe gan to crie
 Til in his faders barme adoune it lay
 And saide fare wel fadere I mote dye
 And kissed his fadere and dyed þe same day 3632
 And whan þe wooful fadere did hym say
 ffor woo his armes two he gan to bite
 And saide alas fortune and welaway
 Thy fals whele my woo I may al wite 3636

His childer [wende] þat hit' for hunger was
 þat he his armes gnowe *and* nouȝt' for woo.
 þei seiden fadere do not' so allas
 But' rap' ete þe flessȝ vpon vs twoo. [leaf 254] 3640
 Our flesshe þou 3af vs take our flessȝ vs froo
 And ete ynouȝe riȝt' þus to hym þei saide
 And after þat wip-Inne a day or twoo
 þei leide hem doune in his lappe *and* dayde 3644

Hym self dispeirede eke and for hu[n]ger starf'
 Thus ended is þe myȝty erle of pise
 ffor highe astate fortune fro hym carf
 Of his tregetrie it ouȝte ynouȝe suffise 3648
 Who so wil here it' in a lenger wise
 Redep þe grete poete of ytaile
 þat hiȝte Daunte, for he can it' devise
 ffrom poynt' to poynte for no þing wil he faile. 3652

¶ De nerone Imperatore .

Al pouze þat Nero were as vicious
 As eny feende þat lieth ful lowe adounne
 3it' he as tellep vs swetheneus
 This wide world had in subieccioñ 3656
 Both eest' and west' and Septemptrion
 Of Rubies Saphires and peerles white
 Were al his [clopes] browd[ed] vp and doune
 ffor he [in] gemmes grete gan delite 3660

More delicate more pompous of araye
 More proude was neuere Emperour þan he
 þat ilke clope þat he had wered a day
 Aftere þat tyme he nolde it' neuer see 3664
 Nettes of gold threde had he grete plente
 To fiaschen in Tibre whan hym list to pleye
 His lustes [were] as lawe in his degre
 ffor fortune as his frende wold hym obeye 3668

He Rome brent' for his delicacie
 The Senatoures he sclouze vpon a day
 To here howe þat men wolde wepe *and* crie
 And sclouze his broþer and by his sustere [lay] 3672
 His modere made he in pitous aray
 ffor he her wombe sclitte to byhold
 wher he conceyued was so welaway
 That' he so litel of his moder tolde. 3676

No teer out' of his eyen for þat sizt' [leaf 254, back]
 Ne came but saide a faire womman was she
 Grete wondere is þat he cowde or myzt'
 Be Domes man of her dede bewte. 3680
 The wyne to brynge comaunded he
 And dronke anoon noon oþer woo he made
 Whan myzt' is loyned vnto cruelte
 Alas to depe wil þe venyme wade 3684

GROUP B. § 12. MONK'S TALE. Petworth MS.

In ȝouthē a maister had þis emperour
 To teche hym letture and curtesye
 ffor of moralite he was þe floure
 As in his tyme but ȝif bokes lye 3688
 And whiles his maister had of hym maistrie
 He made hym so conyngē and so souple
 That longe tyme it was or tyrannye
 Or eny vice in hym durst vncouple 3692

This Seneca of which [that] I devise
 By cause Nero had of hym such drede
 ffor he for vices wold hym chastise
 Discretely as by worde and nat by dede 3696
 Sire wolde he sayne an Emperour mot nede
 Be vertuous and hate tyrannye
 ffor which he hym in bathe made to blede
 On boop his Armes til he most dye 3700

This Nero had eke of a custumance
 In ȝoupe ageinst his maister forto rise
 Which afterward hym pouȝt a grete greuance
 Therfore he made hym dye in þis wise 3704
 But nathelees þis Senec þe wise
 Chees in a bathe to dye in þis manere
 Raper þan han a noþer tormentri[s]e
 And þus hap Nero sclayn his maister dere 3708

Now felle it so þat fortune lest no lenger
 þe highe Pride of Nero to cherice
 ffor þouȝe he were stronge ȝit was she strengere
 She þouȝte þus by god I am to nyce 3712
 To sette a man þat is fulfild in vice
 In heghe degre and Emperour hym calle.
 By god out of his sete I wil him trice. [leaf 255]
 whan he leest weneþ sonnest shal he falle. 3716

The puple roos vp on hym on a nyȝt
 ffor his defeaute and whan he it aspied.
 Out of his doores anon he haȝ hym diȝt
 Allone and þer he wende haue bene alied. 3720
 He knocked fast and ay þe more he cried
 The faster schitten þei þe doores alle
 þo wist he wel he had hym self mysgied.
 And went his way no lenger dorst he calle 3724

The puple cried and rombled vp and down
 That wiȝ his ceeres herde he what þei seide
 Where is þis fals traitour þis Neroun
 ffor fere almost out of his witte he breide 3728
 And to his goddes pitously he seide
 ffor socoure but it myȝt nat be-tyde
 ffor drede of þis him þouȝt þat he dyde
 And ranne into a gardeyne hym to hyde 3732

And in þis gardyne fonde he cherles tweye
 That sitten by a fuyre ful gret and rede
 And to þe cherles twey he gan to preie
 To scleen hym and to girden of his hede 3736
 That to his body whan þat he were dede
 Were no despite ydon for his diffame
 Hym self he sclowȝe he coude no better rede
 Of which fortune lough and made a game 3740

[*Holofernes.*]

Was neuere Captayne vnder a kinge ¶ De Olyferno/
 þat regneȝ more putte in subiectioun
 Ne strengre was in feelde of al þinge
 As in his tyme ne gretter of renoun 3744
 Ne more pompous in high presumpcioun
 Than olyferne which that fortune ay kest
 So lycorously and lad hym vp and down
 Til þat his hede was of er þat he wist 3748

Not oonly þat this world hæþ of hym awe
 ffor lesinge of Richesse and of liberte
 But he made every man renaye his lawe
 Nabugodonosor was lord saide he. 3752
 Noon oþer god shulde honoured be [leaf 255, back]
 Azeinst his heest no wiȝt dar trespace
 Saeue in Betulia a stronge Cite
 Wher Eliachym a preest was of þat place 3756

But take kepe of þe deth of Olyferne
 Amydde þe hooste he dronke lay al nyȝt
 Wiþ Inne his tente large as is a beerne
 And ȝit for al his pompe and al his myȝt 3760
 Iudith a womman as he lay vpriȝt.
 Sclepinge his hede of smote and fro his tent
 fful prively she stale from every wiȝt
 [. no gap in the MS.] 3764

[*Antiochus.*]

What nedep it of kyng Antiochus ¶ De Antiocho Rege
 To telle his high and Ryal maieste
 His hie pride his werke venymus
 ffor suche an oþer was neuer noon as he 3768
 Redep which þat he was in machabe
 And redeþ þe proude wordes þat he seide
 And whi he felle fro his prosperite
 And in an halle how wrechedly he deide 3772

Fortune hym had enhaunsed so in pride
 That verrelly he wende he myȝt atteyne
 Vnto þe sterres vpon every side
 And in a balaunce to wey þe mounteyne 3776
 And alle þe floodes of the See Restreyn
 And goddes puple had he most in hate
 Hem wolde he sclee in torment and [in] peyn
 wenyng þat god ne myȝt his pride abate 3780

PETWORTH 565 (6-T. 274)

And for þat Nichamour and thymothe
 wip Iwes were venquysshed myztely
 Vnto þe Iwes such an hate had he
 That he bad graped his chare ful hastify 3784
 And swore and saide ful dispitously
 Vnto Ierusalem he wolde eftsone
 To wreke his Ire on it ful cruelly
 But of his purpos he was lette ful sone 3788

God of his manace hym so sore smote
 Wip vnvisibile wounde ay vncurable
 That in his guttes carf soo and bote
 That his peynes were importable [leaf 256] 3792
 And certainly þe wrech was resonable
 ffor many mannys guttes did he payne
 But fro his purpos cursed and dampneable
 ffor al his smerte he nolde hym restreyne 3796

But bad anon appaile his Ooste
 And sodeynly er he was of it ware
 God daunted al his pride and al his boost
 ffor he so sore felle out of his chare 3800
 That hurte his lymmes and his skyn to-tare
 Soo þat he ne myzt goo ne ride
 But in a chaier men about hym bare
 Al for-brused boþ bak and side 3804

The wreth of god hym smote so cruelly
 That in his body wikked wormes crepte
 And þer wip al he stonke so horriblye
 That noon of alle his mayne þat hym kepte 3808
 whedere þat he woke or ellis sclepte
 Ne myght not þe stynt of hym endure
 In þis meschief he wailed and eke wepte.
 And knewe god lorde of euery creature 3812

To alle his hooste and to hym self also
 fful wlatom was þe stink' of his careyne
 No man myȝt' hym bere to ne froo.
 And in his stynk' and in his horrible peyne 3816
 He starfe ful wrechedly in a mounteyne
 Thus haþ þis robbour and homycide
 That' mony a man made to wepe and pleyne
 Such guerdon as by-longeþ vnto pride 3820

[*Alexander the Great.*]

The Storie of Alisaundre is so comune. ¶ De Alex-
 That' euery wiȝt' þat' haþ discrecioun andro Reye
 Haþ herd' somewhat' or all' of his fortune
 This wide world' as in conclusioun 3824
 He wanne by strength' or for his hie renoun
 They weren glad for pees vnto hym sende
 þe pride of man and beest' he laid adoun
 Wher so he come vnto þe worldes ende 3828

Comparison myȝt' neuere be makid.
 Bytwix hym and anoper conquerour [leaf 236, back]
 ffor al þis world' for drede of hym Haþ quaked.
 He was of knyghthode and of fredom flour' 3832
 fortune him made þe heir' of hur' honour
 Saue wyne and wommen no þing' myȝt' a-swage
 His hegh entente in armes and laboure
 So was he ful of louying' corage 3836

What' pite were it' to hym þouȝe I ȝou tolde
 Of Darius and an hundred thowsand moo.
 Of kyngges Princes. and Erles bold'
 Which he conquered and brouȝt' into woo 3840
 I say as fer as man may ride and goo.
 The worlde was his what' shuld' I more devise
 ffor þouȝe I write and told' ȝou ener moo.
 Of his kinghode it' myȝt' not' suffice 3844

PETWORTH 567 (6-T. 276)

Twe'ue ȝere he regned as saip Machabe
 Philippes sone of Macedoyne he was
 That furst was kinge of Grece þe cuntree
 O worþi gentile Alisaunder' alas 3848
 That euer shuld [thee] falle Such a caas
 Enpoysened of þi folk' þou were
 Thine. *sise.* fortune haþ turned into an aas
 And ȝit' for þe ne weppe she neuere a tere 3852

Who shal ȝeue teeres men to compleyne
 The deef of gentilnesse and of ffraunchise
 That al þe worlde weilded in his demeyne
 And ȝit' him þouȝt hit myȝt not suffise 3856
 So ful was his corage of high emprise
 Allas who shal me helpe to endite
 ffals fortune and poyson to despise
 The which twoo of al this woo I wite 3860

[*Julius Cæsar.*]

By wisdomē manhode and by labour' ¶ *Julius Cesar.*
 ffo humblehede and fro Roial Maieste
 Vp roos he Iulius þe Conquerour
 That aȝ þe Occident' by londe and See 3864
 By strength of honde or ellis by trete
 And vnto Roome made hem tributarie.
 And Sithens of Rome þe Emperour was he /
 Til þat' fortune wexe his aduersarie [leaf 257] 3868

A Mighty Cesar þat' in Tessalye.
 Aȝeinst' Pompūs fader þine in lawe
 That' of þe Orient' had al þe chyualrie
 As fer as þat' þe day bygynneþ dawe 3872
 Thogh þou þorgh þi knyghthode haþ hem take and sclawe
 Sauf fewe folk' þat' wiþ Pompūs fledde
 Thorghe which þou puttest' al þe orient' in awe
 Thonke fortune þat' so wel þe spedde 3876

But now a litel while I wil bywaile
 This Pompeus þis noble gouernour
 Of Roome which þat fleigh at this bataille
 I saye oon of his men a fals traitour 3880
 His hede of smote to wynne hym fauour
 Of Iulius and hym þe hede brouȝt
 Allas Pompey of the Orient conquerour
 That fortune vnto such a funte brouȝt 3884

TO Rome aȝeine repeireþ Iulius.
 Wiþ triumphe laureat ful high
 But on a tyme Brutus Cassius
 þat euere had of his astate Envie 3888
 fful priuely had made Conspiracie
 Aȝeinst þis Iulius in subtile wise /
 And cast þe place in which he shuld dye
 With boydekyns as I shal ȝou devise 3892

This Iulius to þe Capithole went
 Vypon a day as he was wonte to goon
 And in þe Capithole anon hym hente
 This fals Brutus and his foule foof 3896
 And stiked hym wiþ boydekyns anon
 Wiþ mony a wounde and þus þei lete hym lye
 But neuere grunte he at no stroke but oon
 Or ellis at twoo but ȝif his storie lye 3900

So manly was þis Iulius of herte
 And so wel loued estately honeste
 That þouȝe his dedly woundes so sore smerte
 His mantel ouer his hippes cast he 3904
 ffor no man shuld se his priuete
 And as he lay on dyinge in a traunce [leaf 287, back]
 And wist verrelly þat dede was he
 Of honeste ȝit had he remembraunce 3908

¶ Lucane to þis storie I recomende
 And to Sweton and Valerius also.
 That of His storie writen word *and* ende
 How þat þise grete conquerours twoo 3912
 fortune was furst frende and siþen a foo/
 No man ne trust vpon his fauour longe
 But haue hure in a-waite euer moo
 Witnes on alle þise conquerours stronge 3916

[*Cresus.*]

This riche Cresus whilom kyng of lyde
 O which Cresus Cyquus sore hym dradde
 3it was he kauzt amonges al his pride
 And to be brent men to þe fure hym ladde 3920
 But suche a Reyne doune fro þe walken shadde
 þat sclouþe þe fuyre and made hym to eskaþe
 But to be war 3it no grace he hadde
 Til fortune on þe galous made hym gape 3924

Whan he askaped was he can not stent
 for to bygynne a newe reyne aþeine
 He wende wele for þat fortune hym sente
 Suche happe þat he askaped þorþe þe reyne 3928
 þat of his foos he myzt not be selayn
 And Suche a sweuen vpon a nyzt he mette
 Of which he was so proude and so fayn
 That in vengeance he al his hert sette 3932

Vpon a tree he was as hym þouzt
 Ther Iubiter hym wassh boþ hals *and* Side
 And Phebus eke a faire towale hym brouzt
 To drye hym wiþ an þerfore wex his pride 3936
 And to his douztere þat stood hym beside
 Which þat he knewe in his sentence habounde
 He bad hure telle hym what it signyfied
 And she his dremes byganne rizt þus expounde 3940

The tree quod she þe galous is to mene
 And Iubiter bitokeneþ snowe and reyne
 And Phebus wip his towale so clene.
 Thoo bene the sone stremes forto sayn [leaf 238] 3944
 Thow shalt an honged be fadere certayn
 Rayn shal þe wassh and sonne shal þe drye
 Thus warned she hym ful plat and ful playn
 His douȝter [which] þat called was Phanye 3948

An honged was Cresus þe proude kinge
 His Roial trone myȝt hym not auaile
 Tregedie is noon oþer maner þinge
 Ne can in synnyng cry ne bywaile 3952
 But þat fortune alway wil assaile
 wip vnware stroke þe regnes þat bene proude
 ffor whan men trusten hir þan wil she faile
 And keuere her briȝt face wip a clowde 3956

¶ Thus endeþ þe monke his tale

And here bygynneþ þe nonpreest his prologe

¶ The prologe:
[on leaf 228]

Ho quod þe knyȝt no more good of þis
That ȝe han said is riȝt ynowe ywis
And mochel more for litel heuynesse
Is riȝt ynough to mochel folk I gesse [no gap in Petworth] 3960
[I sey for me / hit is a gret disease [Addit. MS 5140,
on leaf 272 and
back]]
Wher as men haue ben / in gret welth and ese
To here of her sodeyn falle allas
And the contrarye / is Ioye and gret solas 3964
And whan a man hath be / in poor estat
And clymbeth vp / and waxeth fortunat
And ther abidith / in prosperite
Such thyng is gladsom / as thynketh me 3968
And of such thyng / were goodly for to telle
ya quod our hoost / bi seynt poules belle
ye sey soth / this monk hath clappid lowd
He spak how fortune / couered was with a clowd 3972
I nat nere what / and also tragedie
Riht now ye herde / and parde no remedie
I[*t i*]s forto be wailyng and compleyne
for that that is don / and also it is a peyne 3976
As ye han seid to heer of hevynesse
Sir monk nomore of this / so god you blesse
[You]*r* tale anoyeth / alle this companye
Such thyng / is nat worth / a bottirflye [Addit. MS 5140,
extract stops]
ȝoure tales done vs no sporte ne game
Wherefore sir monke or daun pers by ȝour name
I prey ȝou hertely telle vs somewhat ellys
for sikerly ne were þe Clynkyng of ȝour bellis 3984
PETWORTH 572 (6-T. 281)

That on ȝoure bridel honge on euery side
 By heuene kynges þat for vs alle deyde
 I shuld er þis haue falle down for slepe
 Al þough [þe] sclouþe had neuer be so depe 3988
 Than had ȝoure tale ben told in veyn
 ffor certeynly as al þise clerkes seyn
 wher as a [man] may haue non audience
 Nouȝt helpeþ it to telle his sentence 3992
 And wel I woote þe substaunce is in me
 ȝif eny þinge shal wel reported be
 Sir say somewhat of huntynge I ȝou preie
 Nay quod þis monke I haue no lust to pleie 3996
 Now lat' anoþer telle as I haue told
 þan spak our hoost with rude spech and bold
 And saide vnto þe nonnes preest' anon
 Come nere sir' preest' Come hider' Sire Iohn [leaf 258, back]
 Telle vs such þingges as may our hertis glade 4001
 Be bliþ þouȝe þou ride vpon a Iade
 What' þouȝe þine hors be boþ foule and lene
 ȝif he wil serue þe rek' nat' a bene 4004
 Loke þat þi hert' be mery euermoo.
 ȝis sir' quod he ȝis hoost' so mote I goo
 But I be mery Iwis I wil be blamed.
 And Riȝt' anon his tale he haþ atamed. 4008
 And þus seide to vs euerychoñ
 My tale I wil bygynne anon [apart]

¶ Thus endep þe prologe of þe nonnes preste

And here bygynneþ þe nonne preest his tale

[on leaf 228, back]

A poor wydowe somdel stope in age
 was whilom dwelling in a narowe cotage 4012
 Besides a groue standing in a dale
 This widowe of which I telle þou my tale
 Sipeþ þilk day þat she was last a wiff
 In paciens lad a ful sympul liff 4016
 ffor litel was hur Catel and hur rent
 By Husbondry of such as god her sent
 She fonde hure self and eke her doughtred twoo
 Thre large sowes had she *and* no moo. 4020
 Thre kyen and eke a shepe þat hight malle
 fful soty was hur boure *and* eke her halle
 In whiche she ete mony a sclender mele
 Of poynant sause hir neded neuer a dele 4024
 No deynte morsel passed hur þrote
 Hir diete was acordant to her cote
 Replecio ne made her neuer seke
 Attemper diete was all her phisike 4028
 And exercise and hert sufficiance
 The goute letted hur no þing to daunce
 Ne poplexie shent not her hede
 Noo wyne dronke she neiþer white ne rede 4032
 Her boord was serued most wip white *and* blake
 Milk and broune brede in which she fond no lake
 Seyned Bacon and somtyme an eye or tweye
 ffor she was as It were a manere of a deye [leaf 228]
 A gardyne she had enclosed al aboute 4037
 Wip stikkes and a drie dicke wip-oute
 In which she had a cok þat hight chauntilers
 In all þe londe of crowing was his pere 4040

PETWORTH 574 (6-T. 283)

GROUP B. § 14. NUN'S PRIEST'S TALE. Petworth MS.

His moup was myrier þan þe mery orgon
 On masse daies þat in þe church goon
 Wel sikerer was þe crowyng in his logge
 þan is a klokke or an abbay orlogge 4044
 By nature he crewe eche ascencioun
 Of Equinoxial of þilk town
 ffor whan degrees .xv. were descended.
 þat knewe he þat it myȝt not bene amended 4048
 His Combe was redder þan þe fyne Curah
 And bateled as it were a castel wall
 Ilike azure were his legges and his toone
 His bille was blake and as þe gete it shone 4052
 His nailles witter þan þe lily floure
 And ylike burnysshed gold was his coloure
 This gentile Cok had in his gouernaunce
 Vij. hennys forto doon his plesaunce 4056
 Which weren his sustres and his paramours
 And wonder like to hym as of colours
 Of þe which þe fairest hwed vnder prote
 Was clepe fair Damysel Pertilote 4060
 Curtais she was discrete and debonaire
 And Companable and bere her self so faire
 Sipens þilk day þat she was vij. nyȝt olde
 That trewly she hap þe hert in hold 4064
 Of Chaunteclere loukyn in euery lith
 He loued hure so þat wel was hym þer with
 But such a Ioie as it was to here hem singe
 Whan þat þe bryȝt sonne gan to sprynge 4068
 In swete accorde my lief is fare a londe
 ffor þilk tyme as I haue vnderstonde
 Beestes and briddes coude speke and synge
 And so byfelle þat in þe dawynge 4072
 As Chauntecleer amonges his wyues alle
 Sat on his perch þat was in þe halle [leaf 253, back]
 And next hym sat þis faire Pertilote
 This Chaunteclere gan gronen in his prote 4076

GROUP B. § 14. NUN'S PRIEST'S TALE. *Petworth MS.*

As a man þat is in his dreame drecched sore
 And whan þat Pertilote þus herd hym rore
 She was a-gast and seide hert dere
 What eileþ þou to grone in þis manere 4080
 Ȝe bene a verray scleper fy for shame
 And he answerd and saide þus madame
 I prey þou þat Ȝe take it not a greef
 By god me mette þat I was in such mescheef 4084
 Riȝt now þat ȝit myn hert is sore afriȝt
 Nowe god [quod] he my sweuen rede ariȝt
 And kepe my body out of foule prisoun
 Me mette þat I romed vp and down 4088
 With-in our yerde wher as I segȝ a beest
 Was lik an hounde and wold haue made arest
 Vpon my body and wold haue had me dede
 His colour was bytwix white and red 4092
 And tipped was his taille and boþ his Eeres
 Wiþ blak vnlike þe remenaunt of his heeres
 His snowte smal with glowinge eyen tweye
 ȝit for his loke almost for fere I dye. 4096
 This caused me my gronyng doutelees
 A voy quod she fie on þou hertelees
 Allas quod she for by þat god aboue
 Now han Ȝe lost myn hert and my loue 4100
 I can not loue a coward by my faiþe
 for certes what so eny womman seiþe
 We alle desiren ȝif it myȝt be
 To han husbondes hardy wise and free 4104
 And secre ne noo nygard ne ne foot
 To hym þat is a-gast of euery toot
 Ne noon avoutour by þat god aboue
 How durst Ȝe seyn for shame vnto ȝour loue 4108
 That eny þing myȝt make þou a-ferde
 Haue Ȝe no mannys hert and han a berde
 Allas and conne ye be a-gast of swuenes.
 No þing god woote but vanite in sweuen is [leaf 286] 4112

GROUP B. § 14. NUN'S PRIEST'S TALE. Petworth MS.

Sweuens engendren of replexions
 And oft of fume and of complexions
 Whan humours bene to habundante in a wigt
 Certes þis dreame which ȝe han had to nyȝt 4116
 Commeþ of þe grete superfluite
 Of ȝoure rede Colere parde
 Which causeþ folk to dreame her dremes
 Of Arowes and fires wiþ rede lemes 4120
 Of Rede beestes þat willen hem bite
 Of kontek' and of whelpes grete and lite
 Riȝt as þe humour of Malecolie
 Causeþ [ful] mony a man in slepe to crye 4124
 ffor fere of beeres and boles blake
 Or ellis blake deuels wil hem take
 Of oþer humoures coupe I telle also
 That worken mony a man in slepe ful woo. 4128
 But I wil passe as listly as I can
 Loo Caton which þat was so wise a man
 Seid he not þus ne do no force of dremes
 Now sire quod she whan we flee fro the bemes. 4132
 ffor goddis loue as takeþ som laxatif
 Vp perile of my saule and of my liff
 I counsaile ȝou þe best I wil not lye
 That bop of colour and of Malencolie 4136
 ȝe purge ȝou and for ȝe shul not tarie
 þouȝe þat in þis toun is non Apotecarie
 I shal my self to herbes techen ȝou
 which shal be ȝoure here and ȝour prowre 4140
 And In þe Gardeyne two herbes shal I fynde
 þe which han of her proprete by kynde
 To purgen ȝou by-neþe and eke aboue
 fforȝeteþ not þis for goddes awne loue 4144
 ȝe bene ful Colerike of complexioñ
 Where þe sonne in his assencion
 Ne fynde ȝou replete of ȝour humours hote
 And if it doo I dar wel lay a grote 4148

GROUP B. § 14. NUN'S PRIEST'S TALE. Petworth MS.

þat 3e shul haue a feuer terciane .
 Or an ague þat may be 3our bane [leaf 280, back]
 A day or twoo 3e shul haue dygestyues
 Of wormes er 3e take 3oure laxatyues 4152
 Of laureal Centaure and of fumytere
 Or ellis of Ellibore þat growep þere
 Of Catapuce and of gatys-buries
 Or Erbe Ive grouyng in oure 3eerd þer mery es 4156
 Pek hem vp rízt as þei growe and ete hem Inne
 Be mery husbonde for 3our fader kynne
 Dredeþ no dreme I can say 3ou no more
 Madame quod he gramercy of 3oure lore 4160
 But napelees as touching Danne Catoun
 That hap of wisdomes such grete renown
 By god men may in olde bokes rede
 Oon of þe grettest auctour out of drede 4164
 Of mony a man more of auctorite
 Than euer caton was so mot I the
 That al the reuers seyn of þis sentence
 Han han wel founden by experience 4168
 That dremes bene significaciōns
 As wel of Ioie as tribulaciōns
 That folk enduren in þis lif present
 It nedep nat to make of þis noon argument 4172
 The verrey preef shewep it in dede
 Oon of þe grettest auctour out of drede
 Saiþ þus þat whilom two felawes went
 On Pilgrimage in ful good entent 4176
 And happed so þei comen into a toun
 Wher as þere was such congregacioun
 Of puple and eke of streite herbygage
 þat þei fand not as moche as a cotage 4180
 In whiche þei boþ myght ylogged be
 Wherfore þei mosten of necessite
 As for þat nyzt departen of companye
 And eche of hem goþ to his hostelrye 4184

GROUP B. § 14. NUN'S PRIEST'S TALE. Petworth MS.

And toke his logginge as it wolde falle
 That oon of hem was logged in a stalle
 fter in a 3eerde wip oxen of þe plouze
 That oper man was logged wel ynouze [leaf 281] 4188
 As was his auenture or his fortune
 þat vs gouerneþ al as in commune
 And so by-felle longe er it were day
 This man mette in his bed þer as he lay 4192
 How þat his felawe gan on hym calle
 And saide Allas for in an oxes stalle
 This nyȝt shal I be murdered þer I lie
 Now helpe me dere broþers er I dye / 4196
 In al hast come to me he seide
 This man out of his slepe for fere abreide
 But whan þat he was wakened out of his slepe
 He turneþ hym and toke of þis no kepe 4200
 Hym þouȝt his dreame was noȝt but a vanyte
 Thus twies in his slepinge dreamed he
 And at þ^e .iiij. tyme ȝit his felawe
 Come as he þouȝt I am nowe Isclawe 4204
 Biholde my bloody woundes depe and wide
 Arise vp erly in þe morowe tide
 And at the west gate of þe toun quod he
 A cart ful of donge þer shalt þou see 4208
 In which his body is hidde ful priuely
 To þilk carte aresten boldely
 My golde caused my murder soþ to sayn
 And tolde hym euery poynt how he was sclayn 4212
 Wip a ful pitous face pale of hwe
 And trest wel his dreame he fonde ful trwe
 ffor on þe morowe as sone as it was day
 To his felawes Inne he toke þe way 4216
 And whan he come to þis oxes stalle
 Aftere his felawe he bygan to calle
 The ostelere answerd hym anon
 And saide Sir ȝoure felawe is goon 4220

GROUP B. § 14. NUN'S PRIEST'S TALE. Petworth MS.

As sone as day he went out of þe tounne
 This man gan falle in grete suspecioune
 Remembryng hym on his dremes þat he mette
 And forþ he goþ no lenger wold he lette 4224
 Vnto þe west gate of þe tounne and fonde
 A donge cart as he went to donge þe londe [leaf 261, back]
 That was araied in þe same wise
 As ȝe han herde þe dede man deuyse 4228
 And wiþ an hardy hert he gan to crie
 Vengeaunce and iustice on þis vilanye
 My felawe mured is þis same nyȝt
 And in þis carte he lith gapinge vp riȝt 4232
 [I crye out / on the mynystres quod he
 That sholde the lawe keep in this Cite
 Harrow alas / here lith my felawe sleyn
 What sholde I more / vnto this tale seyn 4236
 The people out sterte / and caste the carte to grounde
 And in the myddis of the donge thei founde] [Addit. MS 5140, on
 leaf 276, back]
 The dede man þat mured was all newe
 O blisful god þat art so iust and trewe 4240
 Loo how þat þou bywreiest mordre alway
 Murder wil out þat see wee day by day
 Morder is so wlatson and so abhomynable
 To god þat is so iust and resonable 4244
 þat he ne wil not suffre it hilled be
 Theigh it abide a ȝeer or twoo or þre
 Murder wil out þis is my conclusioun
 And riȝt anoon ministres of þe town 4248
 Hap hent þe Carter and [ful] sore hym pyned
 And eke þe Ostilere so fer engnyed
 That þei biknewe her wikkednesse anoon
 And weren honged by þe nek bone 4252
 Here may men see þat dremes bene to drede
 And certes in the same boke I rede
 Riȝt in þe next chapitere I rede of þis
 I gabbe not so haue I Ioie or blis 4256

GROUP B. § 14. NUN'S PRIEST'S TALE. **Petworth MS.**

Two men þat wolden haue passed þe See
 ffor certeyn cause in to a fer contre
 If þat þe wynde ne had be contrarie
 That made hem in a Cite forto tarie 4260
 That stood ful merye vpon an hauen side
 But on a daye azeinst þe euentide
 The wynde gan chaunge and blowe as hym lust
 Iolif and glad þei wenten vnto rust 4264
 And Casten hem ful erly forto saile
 But herken how oo man felle in grete perile
 That oon of hem in scleping as he lay
 Hym mette a wonder dreme azeinst þe day 4268
 Hym þouȝt a man stood be his beddys side
 And hym commaunded þat he shuld abide. [leaf 202]
 And saide hym þus if þou to morn wende
 Thowe shalt be dreynt my tale is at an ende 4272
 He woke and tolde his felawe what he meitt
 And preide him his viage forto lette
 As for þat day he preide hym to abide
 His felawe þat lay by his beddys side 4276
 Gan forto laugh and scorned ful fast
 No drem quod he may myne hert agast
 That I wil lette forto do my þingges
 I sette not a strawe by dremyngges 4280
 ffor sweuenes bene but vanytees and Iapes
 Men dreme alway of owles and of apes
 And of mony a mase þer-wipath
 Men dremen of þinge þat neuere [shal] 4284
 But siþen I see þou wit here abide
 And þus forsclewþen wilfully þi tyde
 God woote it rewep me and haue good day
 And þus he toke his leue and went his way 4288
 And er that he had half his cours assailed
 I not whi ne what meschaunce it ailed
 But casuely þe shippes botme rent
 And ship and man vnder þe water went 4292

GROUP B. § 14. NUN'S PRIEST'S TALE. Petworth MS.

In sizt of oper shippes hym beside
 That wiþ hym sailled att þe same tyde
 And þerfore he seide Pertelote so dere
 By suche ensamples olde maist þou lere 4296
 That no man shulde be to rechelees
 Of Dremes for I say þe doutelees
 That in mony a dreame ful sore is forto drede
 Lo in þe lif of seint kenelyne I rede 4300
 That was kenulphus sone þe noble kynge
 Of Mertenrike how kenelyne mette a þinge
 A litel er [he] was murde[re]d on a day
 His murdre in his Aunsion he say 4304
 His norice him expowned euery deit
 His sweuen and bad hym for to kepe hym weit
 for treson but he was seuen þere olde
 And þerfore litel tale haþ he tolde [leaf 22v, back] 4308
 Of eny dreame so holly was his herte
 Be god I had leuer þan my sherte
 That 3e had heret his legende as haue I
 Dame Pertelote I say þou trewly 4312
 Macrobyus þat writ þe auision
 In affrike of þe worþi Ciprion
 Affermeþ dremes and seþ þat þer bene
 Warnynge of þingges þat men after sene 4316
 And ferþermore I pray þou lokeþ weþ
 The olde testament of Danyel
 3if he heelde dremes of eny vanyte
 Rede eke of Ioseph and ye shal See 4320
 Wheder dremes be somtyme I say not alle
 Warnyng of þingges þat shul after falle
 Loke eke of Egipte þe kinge danne Pharao
 His bakere and his botalere also 4324
 Wher þei ne felt noon effecte in dremes
 Who so wil seche of sundry rewmes
 May reden of dremes mony a wonder þinge
 Loo Cresus which þat was of lyde þe kynge 4328

Mette he not þat he satte vpon a tre
 Which signified he shuld anhonged be
 Lo here Adromacha Ectors wiff
 That day þat Ector shuld lete his lif 4332
 She dremed on þe same nyȝt byforn
 How þat þe lif of Ector shuld be lorn
 ȝiff þilk day he went into bataile
 She warned hym but it myȝt not auaile 4336
 He went forto ȝiften napelees
 But he was sclayn of Achilles
 But thilk tale is alto longe to telle
 And eke it is nyȝt day I may not dwelle 4340
 Shortly I say as for conclusiō
 That I shal haue of þis avisiō
 Of aduersitees and I say ferþermore
 That I ne wil telle of laxatifs no store 4344
 ffor þei bene venemous I wote riȝt weþ
 I hem diffie I loue hem neuere a dele [leaf 283]
 NO lat vs speke of merþe and stent al þis
 Madame pertilote so haue I blisse 4348
 Of oo þing god haþ sent me large grace
 ffor whan I se þe bewte of ȝoure face
 ȝe bene so scarlet rede aboute þe eyen
 It makeþ al my drede for to dyen 4352
 ffor also siker as in principio .
 Mulier est hominis confusio
 Madame þe sentence of þis latyn is
 Womman is mannys ioy and his blisse 4356
 ffor whan I fele on nyȝt ȝour soft side
 Al be it þat I may not on ȝou ride
 ffor þat oure perche is made so narowe alas
 I am so ful of loye and solas 4360
 þat I desie boþ sweuen and dreme
 And wiþ þat word I fleegh doune fro þe beme
 ffor it was day and eke his hennes alle
 And wiþ a chukke he gan hem forto calle 4364

GROUP B. § 14. NUN'S PRIEST'S TALE. Petworth MS.

ffor he had founden a corn lay in þe ȝerde
 Real he was no more afferd
 He ffeþered Pertelot xxth tyme
 And drad as oft er it were prime 4368
 He lokeþ as it were a grym lyoun
 And on his toes he roomed vp and down
 Hym deyned not to sette his fete on grounde
 Ay chokked he whan he had a corne found 4372
 And to hym þan ronne his wyues all
 Thus Royal as a prince in his hall
 Leue I þis chauntelere in his pasture
 And aftere wil I telle of his auenture 4376
 Whan þe month þe which þe world byganne
 That hiȝt marche whan god first made man
 Was Complete and passed were also
 Siþens Marche bygan .xxxth daies and twoo . 4380
 Byfelle þat chauntelere in his pride
 His seuen wyues welken hym byside
 Cast vp his eyen to þe briȝt sonne
 That in þe signe of Taurus was ronne [leaf 262, back] 4384
 Twenty degrees and oon and somewhat more
 He knew by kynde and by noon oþer lore
 That it was prime he crewe wiþ blisful steuen
 The sonne he saide is clumben vp to heuen 4388
 xl. degrees and oon and more ywis
 Madame Pertelote my worldes blisse
 Herken how þise blisful briddes singe
 And se þe fresshe floures how þei springe 4392
 ful is myn hert of Reuel and of solas
 But sodeynly hym felle a soriful caas
 ffor euer þe latter and of Ioie is sone ygoo
 And comonly ofte tyme it falleþ soo 4396
 And if arthour coude faire endite
 He in cronicle myȝht Sauely write
 As for a souereyn notabilite
 Nowe euery wise man herken me 4400

GROUP B. § 14. NUN'S PRIEST'S TALE. **Petworth MS.**

This story is as trewe I vndertake
 As is þe booke of launcelote de lake
 That women holde in ful gret reuerence
 Now wil I turne aȝein to my sentence 4404
 A Col foxe [ful] of sleiȝt and iniquite
 That in þe groue had wozned ȝeeres þre
 By high ymagynacioñ to-fore cast
 þe same nyght þorgh-out þe hegges brast 4408
 Into þe ȝeerd þer chauntelere þe faire
 was wonte and eke his wyues to repaire
 And in a bedde of wortes stille he lay
 Till it was passed vndren of þe day 4412
 Waitynge his tyme on chaunteler to falle
 As gladly done þise homycydes alle
 That in a-waite ligge to murdre men
 O fals murdere rowkyng in þi den 4416
 O newe Scariot o . newe Genyloñ
 ffals dissimylour o greke Symon
 þat brouȝtest troye al vtterly to sorowe
 O chauntelere acursed be þat morowe 4420
 þat þou into [þi] ȝeerd flegħ from þe bemes
 Thow were ful wel ywarned by þi dremes [leaf 304]
 That ilke day was perilous to þe
 But þat . þat god a-fore wote most nedes be 4424
 Aftere þe opynyon of certeyn clerkes
 Wittnesse of hym þat eny clerk es
 That in scole [is] grete altercacioñ
 In þis mater and grete disputacioñ 4428
 And haþ bene of an C. thousand men /
 But I ne can[not] bult it to þe brenne
 As can þe holy doctour augustyne
 Or boys or þe Bisshop Bradwardyne 4432
 Whedere þat goddys wille a-fore wetyng
 Streyneþ me nedely forto doon a þing
 Nedely clepe I aþmple necessite
 Or ellis ȝif þe free chois be graunted me 4436

GROUP B. § 14. NUN'S PRIEST'S TALE. Petworth MS.

To do þat same þing' or do it' nouȝt' ·
 Thouȝe god forwote it' er it' was wrouȝt'
 Er of his wetyng' streyneȝ neuer a dele
 But by necessaite condicionele 4440
 I wil not' haue to done of such' matere
 My tale is of a cokke as ȝe shullen here
 That' toke his counsaile of his wif with sorowe
 To walken in þe ȝeerde vpon þe morowe 4444
 That' he had mette þe dreame þat' I ȝou tolde
 Womm[an]es counsaile is ful ofte colde
 Womm[an]es counsaile brouȝt' vs first' to woo
 And made Adam from paradys to goo . 4448
 Ther he was ful mery an wel at ese
 But for I note whom I myȝt displese
 If I counsaile of wommen wold blame
 Passe ouere for I seide it' in my game 4452
 Rede awters wher þei trete of such' matere
 And what' þei seyne of wommen here
 Thise bene þe cokkes wordes and not myne
 I can no harme of no womman devyne 4456
 ffaire in þe sonde to bath hur merely
 lith pertelote and al hurs susters bye
 Aȝeinst' þe sonne and chauntelere so fre
 Songe meryer þan þe meermiden in þe See [leaf 294, back]
 ffor phisialogus saiȝ witterly 4461
 How þat' þei syngen wel and merely
 And so byfelle as he cast' his ye
 Amonges þe wortes vpon a botterflie 4464
 He was war of this fox þat' lay ful lowe
 No þinge ne lust' hym þan for to crowe
 But' cries anon cok' cok' and vp he sterte
 As a man þat' was affraied in his herte 4468
 ffor naturelly a beest' desireȝ to flee
 ffro his contrarie if he may it See
 þouȝe he neuer had seye it' erst with his ye
 This chauntelere whan he hym gan asprie 4472

GROUP B. § 14. NUN'S PRIEST'S TALE. Petworth MS.

He wold haue fledde but þat þe fox anon
 Saide gentile sir allas what hast þou don
 Bene 3e affraied of me þat am 3oure frende
 Certes sir þan ben 3e vnhende 4476
 If I to 3ou wil harme or vilanye
 I am not come 3our counsaile to aspie
 But trewly þe cause of my comynge
 was oonly to harken how þat 3e singe 4480
 ffor trewly 3e han as mery a steuen
 As aungel hap þat is in heuen
 Ther-with 3e han in musike more felinge
 þan had boys or eny þat can synge 4484
 My lorde 3our fadere god his saule blisse
 And eke 3oure modere and hur gentilnesse
 Han in myn hous bene to 3ou grete ese
 And Certes sir riȝt fain wold I 3ou plese 4488
 But for men speken of syngynge I wil seye
 So mot I brouke myn eien tweye
 Sauf 3e I ne herd neuer man so synge
 As did 3oure fader in þe mornynge 4492
 Certes it was of hert al þat he songe
 And forto make his vois þe more stronge
 He wold so peyn hym þat wiþ both his yen
 He most wynke so loude he did crien 4496
 And stonden on his typtoon þerwiþal
 And strecche forþ his nek longe and smalt [leaf 205]
 And eke he was of such discrecion
 That þer nas no man in no region 4500
 That him in songe or wisdom myȝt passe
 I haue wel red daun Burnel þer as
 Amonge his vers þer was a cok
 [That] ffor a preestes sone 3aue hym a knok 4504
 Vpon his legge whiles he was 3onge and nyce
 He made hym forto lese his benefice
 But certeyn þer nys noon comparisoñ
 Bytwix þe wisdom and discrecion 4508

GROUP B. § 14. NUN'S PRIEST'S TALE. Petworth MS.

Of 3oure fadere and of his subtilite
 Now syngeþ sir' for seint' charite
 Lat' see conne 3e 3oure fadere countrefete
 This Chaunteclere his wenges gan to bete 4512
 As man þat' coude nat' his tresoñ aspie
 So was he rauessed wiþ his flaterye
 Allas 3e lordes mony a fals flatour
 Is in 3our court' and mony a losengour' 4516
 That' plesen 3ou more by my feiþ
 That' he þat' soþfastnesse vnto 3o" seiþ.
 Redep Ecclesiastre of flaterye
 Beþ ware 3e lordes of her trecherye 4520
 This Chaunteclere stood high vpon his toos
 Strecchinge his nek and held his eien cloos
 And gan to crowe loude for þe nones
 And daun Russel stert' vp al at' ones 4524
 And by þe Gargaige hent' Chaunteclere
 And on his bak toward' the wood hym bere
 ffor 3it' was ther no man hym swed
 O Destany þat' maist' not' bene eschewed' 4528
 Allas þat' chaunteclere fel fro þe bemes
 Allas his wif ne rouzt' not' of dremes
 And on a friday felle all þis meschāunce
 O Venus þat' art' goddes of plesaunce 4532
 Sipens þat' þi seruauante was þis chaunteclere
 And in þi seruise did al his powere
 More for delit' þan þe world' to multiplie
 Whi woldest' þou suffre on þi day to dye [leaf 265, back]
 O Gaufrede dere maistere souereyn 4537
 þat' whan þe worþi kinge Richard' was sclayn
 Wiþ shot' compleyndest' his deþ so sore
 Whi ne had I nowe þi sentence and þi lore 4540
 þe ffriday forto chide as did 3e
 ffor on a friday shortely sclayne was he
 þan wolde I shewe howe þat' I coude playne
 ffor chaunteclere and for his peyne 4544

GROUP B. § 14. NUN'S PRIEST'S TALE. Petworth MS.

Certus such crye ne lamentaciō
 was of ladies made whan þat Ilyon
 Was wonne. and pirrus with his streijt swerd
 Whan he hent king Priā by þe beerd 4548
 And sclayn hym as seide Enneidos
 As maden all þe hennes in þe cloos
 Whan þei had seie of chaunteclere þe sizt
 But souereyn dame pertelote shriȝt 4552
 wel lodder þan did Hasdrubaldes wif
 whan þat her husbonde had lost his lif
 And þat þe romaynes had brent Cartage
 She was so ful of torment and of Rage 4556
 That wilfully into þe fire she stert
 And brent her self wiȝ a stedfast hert
 O wooful hennys riȝt so criden ȝe
 As whan þat Nero brent þe Cite 4560
 Of Rome criden þe Cenatours wyues
 ffor þat her husbondes shulden lese her lyues
 wiȝ-uten Gilt [þis] Nero hap hem sclayn
 Now wil I turne to my tale aȝein 4564
 This sely widowe and hure douȝters two
 Herden þe hennys crien and make woo
 And out atte door sterten þei anoon
 And segh þe fox toward þe groue goon 4568
 And bare on his bak þe Cok away
 They criden out and harawe and welaway
 A ha þe fox and after hym þei ran
 And eke wiȝ staues mony an oȝer man 4572
 Ran Coȝ our dogge. talbot and Garlonde
 And Malkyn wiȝ her dystaf in hure honde [leaf 298]
 Ran cove and calf and eke the verrey hogges
 Sore afferd for berking of dogges 4576
 And shetinge of men and wommen eke
 þei ronne so þeire hertes þei pouȝt to breke
 þei ȝelden as feendes doȝn in helle
 The dogges criden as men wolȝ hem quelle 4580

GROUP B. § 14. NUN'S PRIEST'S TALE. **Petworth MS.**

Out' of the hyues come þe swarme of bees
 The gees for fere flowen in þe trees
 So hidous was the noise .O benedicite
 Certes he Iak' strawe and his mayne 4584
 Ne made neuer showtes half so shrille
 whan þat' þei wolde eny flemmyng kille
 As þat' ilk' day was made vpon þe fox
 Of bras þei brouȝt' bemes and of box 4588
 Of horn and boon in which þei pouped
 And þerwiþal þei schrited and showed.
 It semed as þat' heuene shulde falle
 Now good I prey ȝou harkenep alle 4592
 Lo how fortune turnep sodeynly
 The hope and eke pride of her envie
 This cok/ þat' lay vpon the fox bak'
 In al his drede vnto þe fox spak' 4596
 And saide Sire if I were as ȝe
 ȝit' shuld I say as wis god helpe me
 Turne aȝeine ȝe proude charles alle
 A verrey pestilence vpon ȝou falle 4600
 Nowe am I come vnto þis wodys side
 Maugre ȝoure hede þe cok shal here abide
 I wol hym ete in feiþ and þat' anon
 The fox answerde in faiþ it' shal be doñ 4604
 And [as] he spak' þat' worde al sodeynly
 This Cok' brak from his mouþ delyuerly
 And high vpon a tree he flegħ anon
 And whan þe fox segh þat' he was goñ 4608
 Allas quod he O chauntelere allas
 I haue quod he done to ȝou trespas
 In as moch as I made ȝou aferd
 Whan I ȝou hent' and brouȝt' out of þe ȝerde [leaf 206, back]
 But' sire I did it' not in no wicked entent' 4613
 Commeþ doune and I shal telle ȝou what' I ment'
 I shal saie soþ god helpe me soo
 Nay þan quod he I schrewe vs boþ twoo 4616

GROUP B. § 14. NUN'S PRIEST'S TALE. Petworth MS.

And first I schrewe my self boþ blood and bones
 3if þou bigile me ofter þan ones
 Thow shalt no more wiþ þi flaterie
 Do me swynk' and wink' wiþ myn ye 4620
 for he þat wynket whan he shuld see
 As wisly god lat hym neuer þee
 Nay quod þe fox god 3eue hym meschaunce
 That is so vndiscrete of gouernaunce 4624
 That langleþ whan he shuld haue pees
 Loo such is forto be rechelees
 And necligent and trusteþ on flaterie
 But 3e þat holden þis folý 4628
 As of a Cok' of a fox and of an henne
 Takeþ þe Moralite good men
 for seint poule seiþ al þat writen is
 To our doctrine it is writen ywis / 4632
 Takeþ þe fruyte and lat þe chaf be stille
 Nowe good god if it be þi wille
 As seiþ my lorde so make vs all good men
 And bringe vs al to his blisse Amen. 4636

Thus endeþ þe preestes tale

GROUP H. FRAGMENT IX.

§ 1. THE MANCIPLE'S HEAD-LINK.

PETWORTH MS.

And þus [on leaf 218, back]

bygynnes þe manciples tale .

WEte ȝe not where stont a litel toune ¶ The prologe/
Which þat is cleped bob vp and doun
Vnder þe blees in Caunterbery waye
Ther gan our hooste to lape and playe 4
And saide Sirres donne is in þe myre
Is þer no man for preiere ne for hyre
That wil awake our felawe behinde
A theef myȝt hym robbe and bynde 8
Se howe he nappeth for goddys bones .
Awaite he wil falle from his hors at ones
This is a coke of london wip meschaunce
Do hym come forþ he knoweth his penaunce [leaf 217] 12
ffor he shal telle a tale be my fay
Al þouȝe it be nat worth a botel of hay
Awake þou coke god ȝeue þe Sorowe
What aileþ þe to slepe so by þe morowe: 16
Hast þou had fleen to nyȝt or þou art dronke
Or hast þou al nyȝt wip som quene yswonke .
So þat þou maist not holde vp þine hede
This Coke þat was [ful] pale and no þing rede 20
Saide to oure hooste so god me blesse
As þer is holden on me such heuynesse
That I not wheder me were leuer slepe
Than þe best Galon wyne in chepe 24

PETWORTH 592 (6-T. 570)

wel quod þe manciple it wil done ese 25
 To þe Sir Coke and to no wízt mysplese
 whiche þat riden in þis company
 þat soo our hoost wil of his curtesy 28
 I wil as nowe excuse þe of þi tale
 ffor in good fay þi visage is rízt pale
 þine eyen dasen as me þenkeþ
 And wel I woot þi breth̃ sore stynkeþ 32
 That sheweþ þou nart not wel disposed .
 Of me certaine þou shalt not bene glosed .
 See howe he goleth þis dronken wízt
 As þowe he wolde swoune anon rízt 36
 Hold cloos þi mouþe man by þi fader kyn
 The deuel of helle sette his foote þerIn .
 Thy cursed breeth̃ wil affecte vs alle
 ffly stynkinge hogge foule mot þe byfalle 40
 Now takeþ hede sirs of þis lusty man
 Now swete sir wil ye Iust at þe fan
 Therto me þenkeþ 3e be wel yshape
 ¶ I trowe 3e han dronken wyne grape 44
 And þat is whan men pley with a strawe
 And wíþ þis speche þe coke wex al wrawe
 [And on the Maunciple . gan to nodde fast [MS Reg. 17 D 14,
leaf 286] 48
 ffor lak of speche . and downe the hors hym cast
 Where as he lay til that men hym vptoke
 This was a faire cheuache . of a cooke
 Allas that he nad . hold hym bi his ladih̃
 And or that he ageyn . were in his sadih̃] 52
 Ther was grete schovuyng to and froo
 To lift hym up and mykel care and woo
 So vnweldy was þis appalled goost
 And to þe manciple þan speke our hoost [leaf 287, back] 56
 By cause drink hap Dominacion
 Vppon þis man by my sauacion
 I trowe he wolde lewdely telle his tale
 ffor were it wyne or ellis moyst ale 60

That he haþ dronken he spekeþ in his nose 61
 And galpeþ fast and eke he haþ þe pose
 He haþ also to doo more þan ynogh
 To kepe hym and his capel out of þ^e sclouȝgh 64
 And if he falle fro his capel eft sone
 Than shal we alle haue ynogh to done
 In liftinge vp of his heuy corps
 Telle on þi tale of hym make I no force 68
 But nowe Maunciple in feiþ þou art to nyce
 Thus openly to repreue hym of his vice
 Anoper day he wil perauenture
 Recleyme þe and bringe þe to lure 72
 I mene he speke wold of smale þingges
 As forto pynchen at þi rekenyngges
 That were not honest ȝif it come to preef
 Nowe quod the maunciple þat were a gret mescheef 76
 So myȝt he bringe me in þe snare
 ȝit had I leuer paien for þe mare
 Which he rit vpon þan he shuld with me strive
 I wil not wreþ hym as mot I þriue 80
 what þat I spak I saide it in my bourde
 And wote ȝe what I haue here in a gourde
 A drauȝt of wyne ȝe of a ripe grape
 And riȝt anoon ȝe shul se a good lape 84
 This Coke shal drynk þerof ȝif þat I may
 Vp peyne of deþ he wil nat say me nay
 And certeynly to tellen as it was
 Of þis vessel þe Coke dronk fast alas 88
 What nedep hit he dronk ynouȝe to-forn
 And whan he had poped in his horn
 To þe Manciple he toke þe gourde ageyn
 And of þat drinke þe Coke was wonder feyn 92
 And þonked hym in such wise as he coude
 Than gan oure hoost to laughen wondere loude [leaf 268]
 And saide I see wel it is necessarie
 Where þat we goon good drink wip vs to carie 96

GROUP H. § 1. MANCIPLE'S HEAD-LINK. Petworth MS.

ffor þat wil turne rancour and disese	97
To pees and loue and mony a wronge to sese	
O Bachus blessed be þi name	
That so can turne earnest into game	100
Worship and þonk be vnto þe	
ffor of þis matere 3e gete no more of me	
Telle on þou manciple I þe pray	
Wel sir quod he now herkenep what I say	104
¶ Thus endep þe prologe of þe Manciple	

¶ The Tale. . .

And here bygynneþ þe manciple his tale

[on leaf 268]

WHan Phebus dwelt here in þis erþe adoun 105
 As olde bokes maken mencioune
 He was þe most lusty bachilere
 Of al þis world and eke þe best archere 108
 He sclough Phiton þe serpent as he lay
 Scleping azeinst þe sonne vpon a day
 And mony a noþer worpi noble dede
 He wiþ his bowe wrouzt as men may rede 113
 Pleien he coude on euery mynstralcie
 And syngen þat it was a melodye
 To harken of his cleere voys þe soun
 Certes þe kynge of Thebes Amphion 116
 That wiþ hys syngging walled þat cite
 Coude neuere synge half so wel as he
 Therto he was þe semeliest man
 That is or was siþ þe world bygan. 120
 What nedep it is fetures to discriue
 ffor in þis world was noon so faire alyue
 He was þer-with fulfilled of gentilnesse
 Of honoure and of parfit worþinesse 124
 This Phebus þat was flour of bachelerie
 As wel in fredom as in Chiualrie
 ffor disport and in signe eke of victorie
 Of Pheton so as telleþ vs þe storie 128
 was wont to beren in his honde a bowe
 Now haþ þis Phebus in his hows a crowe [leaf 268]
 Which in a Cage he fostred mony a day
 And tauzt it to speke as men doon a laye 132

White was þis crowe as is a white swan 133
 And countrefeted þe speche of euery man
 He cowde whan he shuld telle a tale
 Ther-wiþ in al þis londe þer nys no nyztyngale 136
 That cowde by an hundred thousan dele
 Synge so mery and eke so wel
 Now had þis phebus in his hous a wif
 Which þat he loued more þan his owne lif 140
 And nyght and day did euer diligence
 Her for to plesse and done reuerence
 Sauþ oonly ȝif I þe soþ shal sayn
 Ialous he was and wold haue kept hure fayn 144
 for hym were loþe Iiaped forto be
 And so euery man wold in such degre
 But al for nauȝt for it auaileþ noȝt
 A good wif þat is clene of werk and þoȝt 148
 Shuld not be kepte in noon awaite certeyn
 And trewly þe labour is in veyn
 To kepe a schrewe for it wil not be
 This hold I for a verrey nycete 152
 To spille labour forto kepe wyues
 Thus writen olde clerkes in her lyues
 But nowe to purpos as I first bygan
 This worþi phebus dooþ al þat he can/ 156
 To plesen hure wenyng by such plesaunce
 And for his manhode and his gouernaunce
 That no man shuld haue put hym from hir grace
 But god it wote þer may no man embrace 160
 As to destroie a þinge which þat nature
 Haþ naturelly sette in a creature
 Take eny bridde and put it in a cage
 And doo al þine entent and þi corage 164
 To fostere it tenderly wiþ mete and drink
 Of alle deyntise þat þou canst by-þenk
 And kepe it also clenly as he may
 Al þouȝe his Cage of gold be neuer so gay [leaf 260] 168

3it hap þis brid by twenty þousand fold 169
 Leuer in a forest þat is wilde and cold
 Goon ete wormes and suche wrecchednesse
 ffor euer þis bridde wol doon his bysynes 172
 To escape out of his cage if he may
 His liberte þe bridde desireþ ay
 Lat take a cat and fostre hym wel with mylk
 And tendere flesshe and make his couche of silk 176
 And lat hym seen a mous goo by þe wait
 And anon he wayueth mylk flesshe and all
 And euery deynte þat is in þe hous
 Suche appetit hap he to ete a mous 180
 Lo here hap lust his domynaciōn
 And appetit flemep discretiōn
 As þe wolf hap also a vileyns kynde
 The lewdest wolf þat she may fynde 184
 Or leest of reputaciōn þat wil she take
 In tyme whan hur lust to haue a make
 Alle þise ensamples speke I. by þise men
 That bene vntrewe and no þing by wommen 188
 ffor men han euer a likerous appetit
 On lower þing to performe her delite
 Than on her wyues bene þei neuere so faire
 Ne neuere so trewe ne so debonaire 192
 flesshe is so newefongel wiþ meschaunce
 That we ne konne no þinge han plesaunce
 That sownep in vertue eny while
 This Phebus which þat þouzt vpon no gile 196
 Deceyued was for al his Iolite
 ffor vnder hym anoper had she
 A man of litel reputaciōn
 Not worþ to phebus in comparisōn 200
 The more harme is it happed oft soo
 Of whoch þer commeth mochel harme and woo
 And so byfelle whan phebus was absent
 His wif anon hap for her lemman sent 204

GROUP H. § 2. MANCIPLE'S TALE. Petworth MS.

Here lemman certes þis is a knauyssh speche 205
 forȝeueþ it me and þat I ȝou biſeche [leaf 200, back]
 The wiſe Plato seiþ aȝ ȝe may ¹rede [1. first here rede]
 þ^e Word mot nedes accorde wiþ þe dede 208
 ȝif men ſhal telle proprely a þinge
 The worde mot Coſyn be to þe workinge
 I am a boiſtous man riȝt þuſ ſay I
 Ther nys no difference trewly 212
 Bitwix a wiſ þat is of hie degre
 ȝif of her body diſhoneſt ſhe be
 And a poor wenche oþer þan þis
 ȝif it ſo be þei wix boþ amys 216
 But þat þe gentile is in ſtate aboute
 She ſhal be cleped hiſ lady aȝ in loue
 And for þat oþer is a poor womman
 She ſhal be cleped hiſ wench and hiſ lemman . 220
 And god it woote myn owne der broþer
 Men ſayn þat oon liȝh aȝ lowe aȝ doþ þat oþer
 Riȝt ſo bitwix a titles tyraunt
 And an houlaw² and a þeeſ erraunt [2 or houlaw] 224
 The ſame I ſay þer nys no difference
 To Alisaunder waȝ tolde þat ſentence
 That for þe tyraunt is of grētere myȝt
 By force of mayne for ſclen down riȝt 228
 And brennen houſ and home and make al playn
 Lo þerfore is cleped a Capitayn
 And for þe outlaw haþ but ſmal mayne
 And may not doon ſo grete an harme aȝ he 232
 Ne bringe a contre to ſo grete meſchief
 Men clepen hym an outlay or a þeeſ
 But for I am a man not text wel
 I wil not telle of Tituſ neuer a dele 236
 I wil go to my tale aȝ I byganne
 Whan phebuſ [wiſ] had ſent for her lemman
 Anoon þei wrouȝten al her luſt volage
 Thiſ white crowe þat henge ay in þe cage 240

Bihelde her werk' and saide neuer a word' 241
 And whan þat home was come Phebus þe lord'
 þis crowe songe Cokkow . cokkow . Cukkowe
 What' brid quod phebus what' songe singest' thouwe [near 250]
 Ne were þou wonte so merely to synge
 That' to myn hert' it' was a reioysinge
 To here þi vois allas what' songe is þis
 By god quod he I synge nat' a mys 248
 Phebus quod he for al þi worþinesse
 ffor al þi bewte and þi gentilnesse
 ffor al þi songe and al þi mynstralcye
 ffor al þi waytinge blered is þine ye 252
 Wip oon of lital reputaciõn
 Nouȝt' worþ to þe as in comparisoñ
 The mountaunce of a gnatte so mote I thryue
 ffor on þi bed þi wiff' I segh hym swyve 256
 What' wil ȝe more þe craue anon hym tolde
 By sad tokens and by wordes bolde
 How þat' his wif' had doon her leccherie
 Hym to grete shame and to gret' vilenye 260
 And tolde hym oft' he segh it' wip his eyen
 This Phebus gan awaiward' forto wryen ./
 Hym pouȝt' his sorowful hert' brast' atwoo
 His bowe he bent' and sette þer-Inne a floe 264
 And in his Ire hap he his wif' sclayñ
 This is þeffecte þer nys no more to sayñ
 ffor sorowe of which' he brak' his mynstralcie
 Bop harpe and lute . giterñ . and sawtrie 268
 And eke he brak' his harowes and his bowe
 And after þat' þus speke he to þe crowe
 Traitour quod he wip tunge of scorpion
 Thou hast/ me brouȝt' to my confusiõn 272
 Allas þat' I was wrouȝt' why ner I dede
 O dere wiff o. gemme of lustihede
 þat' were to me so sad and eke so trewe
 Now liest' þou dede wip face pale of hwe 276

ful gyltes þat durst I swere ywis	277
O Rakel hounde to doon so foule amys	
O trouble witte .o. yre rechelees	
That vnavised smyttest gyltlees	280
O wan-trest ful of fals suspecion	
Wher was þi witt and þi discrecion	[leaf 270, back]
O euery man be war of rechelesnesse	
Ne trow no þinge wiþ-out strong witnesse	284
Smyte not to sone er þow wit why	
And be avised wel and soberly	
Er ȝe doon eny execution	
Vppon ȝoure Ire for suspecion	288
Allas an Mt. folk han rakel yre	
fully fordoon or brouȝt hem in þe myre	
Allas for sorowe I wil my self scle	
And to þe Craue o' fals þeef saide he	292
I wil þe qwrite anon þi fals tale	
Thow songe whilom like a nyȝtyngale	
Now shalt þou fals þeef þi songe forgone	
Eke þi white fetheres euerechone	296
Ne neuer in al þi lif shalt þou speke	
Thus shal men on a traitour ben ywreke	
Thowe and þine ospringe euer shul be blake	
Ne neuer swete noys shul ȝe make	300
But euer crie aȝeinst tempest and reyne	
In tokenynge þat þorgh þe my wif is scleyn	
And to þe crowe he stert and þat anone	
And pulled his white feþeres euerechone	304
And made hym blak and raft hym al his songe	
And eke his speche and out atte dore hym sclonge	
Vnto þe deuel to whom I hym bitake	
And for þis caus bene al[le] crowes blake	308
Lordyngges by þis ensample I ȝou preie	
¶ Beþ war and takeþ kepe what þat ȝe seie	
Ne telleþ neuer no man ȝoure liff	
How þat anoþer man haþ diȝt þi wif	312

PETWORTH 602 (6-T. 586)

GROUP H. § 2. MANCIPLE'S TALE. Petworth MS.

þe flemyng' seip and lerne it ȝif þe list	349
That litel Iangelinge causeþ mochl ryst	
My sone ȝif þou no wikked word hast seide	
The ther not drede forto be bywreiede	352
But he þat haþ myssaide I dar wel sayn	
He may by no way clepe his word agayn	
þing' þat is saide. is saide <i>and</i> forþ it goþ	
þouȝe hym repent' or be he neuer so loop	356
He is his þral to whom þat he haþ saide	
A taile of which he is now euel a-payde	[leaf 271, back]
My sone be war and be not' autour newe	
Of tydingges whedere þei be fals or trewe	360
Where so þou come amonges hie or lowe	
Kepe wel þi tunge and þenk' vpon þe crowe	362
¶ þus endep þe prologe of þe manciple.	

GROUP I. FRAGMENT X.

§ 1. THE BLANK-PARSON LINK.

[*This is really a link between some unwritten Tale and the Parson's. It has been made into the Manciple-Parson Link (or Footman-Parson by the Christ-Church MS) by Chaucer's copiers, though not meant for it.*]

PETWORTH MS.

And here bygygneþ þe prologe of þe persone [on lf 271, bA]

B Y þat þe manciple had his tale ended	1
þe sonne fro þe south is descended.	
So lowe þat he was nauȝt to my siȝt	
Degrees <i>nyn</i> e and <i>twenti</i> ¹ as of hight	[¹ MS xxix] 4
Ten of þe clok it was so as I gesse	
ffor xj foote or litel more or lesse	
My shadowe was at þilke tyme as þer	
Of suche fete as my lengthe parted were	8
In sex foote equal of <i>proporcio</i> n	
þer-wiþ þe moones exaltacio	
I mene libra alway gan ascende	
As we were entringe at a throppes ende	12
ffor wiþ our hoost as he was wont to gye	
As in þis caas our Ioly companye	
Saide in þis wise lordyngs euerecho	
Now lakkeþ vs no tale more þat oon	16
ffulfilled is my sentence <i>and</i> my degre	
Who wil nowe telle a tale lat see	
Almost ^t fulfilled is myn ordynaunce	
I prei to god so ȝeue hym riȝt good chaunce	20
That telleþ þis tale to vs lustely	
Sir preest quod he art þou a vikarie	
Or art thou a persone sei þe soþ by þi feye	
Be what þou be ne breke nat our pleye	24

PETWORTH 604 (6-T. 589)

GROUP I. § 1. BLANK-PARSON LINK. *Petworth MS.*

ffor euery man sauf þou haþ told his tale	25
Vnbocke and schewe what is in þi male	
ffor trewly me þenkeþ by þi chere	
Thow shuldest knet vp wel a grete matere	28
Telle vs a fable anoon for Cokkes bonys	
This person answerd al at onys	
þow getest fable noon ytold for me	
ffor Poule þat writeth vnto Timothe	[leaf 272] 32
Repreuen hem þat waiven soþfastnesse	
And tellen fables and such wrechednesse	
Whi shuld I shewen draf out of my fest	
Whan I may shewe whete if þat me lest	36
ffor which I say if þat þe lust to here	
Moralite and vertuous matere	
And þan þat 3e wil 3eue me audience	
I wil ful fayne at cristes reuerence	40
Doon 3ou plesaunce leeful as I can	
But trusteth wel I am a soþeren man	
I can not gest. rum ram. ruf by letter	
Ne god woote Ryme hold I but lite better	44
And þerfore if 3ou lust I nyl nat glose	
I wil 3ou telle a mery tale in prose	
To knytte vp al þis feest and make an ende	
And Ihesu for his grace wit me sende	48
To schew 3ou þe way in þis viage	
Of þilk parfite glorious pilgrimage	
That hight Ierusalem celestiaH	
And if 3e vouchesauf anoñ 3e shaft	52
Bygynne vpon my tale for which I prey	
Telle 3our avis I can no better seye	
But napelees þis meditaciō	
I putt aye vnder correccion	56
Of clerkes for I am not textweH	
I take but þe sentence trusteth weH	
Therefore I make protestaciō	
That I wil stonde to correccion	60

GROUP I. § 1. BLANK-PARSON LINK. Petworth MS.

Vpon þis woord we han assented sone 61
 ffor as it semed it was forto done
 To enden in som vertuuous sentence
 And forto ȝeue hym space *and* audience 64
 And bad our hoost he shulde to hym seie
 þat alle we to telle his taile hym preye
 Our hoost had þe wordes for vs alle
 Sir preest quod he now faire mot ȝou byfalle 68
 Say what ȝou lust and we shullen gladly here
 And wip þat word he saide in þis manere [leaf 572, back]
 Telleþ quod he ȝoure meditacioun
 But hastep ȝou þe sonne wil a-down 72
 Beep fructuous and þat in litel space
 And to do wel god sende ȝou his grace. 74
 ¶ Thus endep þe prologe of þe persons tale

THE PARSON'S TALE.

A TREATISE ON PENITENCE, IN 3 PARTS :

- Part I. On Penitence, and its 1st requisite *Contrition* (A) (p. 593—612).
 Part II. On its 2nd requisite, *Confession* (B) (p. 612—679).
 Part III. On its 3rd requisite, *Satisfaction* (C) (p. 679—684), with the Writer's Leave-taking and Retractions (p. 684—85).

PART I. (p. 593—612).

ON PENITENCE, AND ITS 1st REQUISITE, CONTRITION.

Proem on Jeremiah vi. 16. The Tale is to be on *Penitence* as a full noble way to lead folk to Christ, and is to treat of

- i. 'what is Penitence' (p. 594).
- ii. 'whennes it is cleped Penitence'. [*not in the Tale.*]
- iii. 'in how many maneres been the acciouns or werkynge of Penitence' (p. 594-5).
- iv. 'how many speses ther been of Penitence' (p. 595).
- v. 'whiche thynges apertenen and bihouen to Penitence' (p. 595—682: nearly all Parts I and III, and all Part II).
- vi. 'whiche thynges destourben Penitence' (at end of Part III, p. 682) (p. 593).
- i. Penitence defined, by *a.* St Ambrose; *b.* 'som doctour'; *c.* the writer. Its requisites: 1. bewailing of sins; 2. purpose to have shrift, to do satisfaction, never to sin again, to continue in good works (p. 594).
- [ii. *not given.*]
- iii. The 3 actions of Penitence: 1. Baptism after sin; 2. not to do deadly sin after baptism; 3. not thus to do venial sin (p. 594-95).
- iv. The 3 speses or kinds of Penitence: 1. Solemn (to be put out of church, or do open penance); 2. Common (to go naked on pilgrimage); 3. Private (p. 595).
- v. The 3 necessities or requisites for Penitence (p. 596—682):
 - A. Contrition of heart (p. 596—612).
 - B. Confession of mouth (Part II, p. 612—679).
 - C. Satisfaction (Part III, p. 679—682).
 Penitence avails against 3 things, by which we wrath Christ (p. 596).
- A. Contrition is the root of Penitence, whose stem bears branches and leaves of Confession, and fruit of Satisfaction. Contrition also bears a seed of grace, whose heat draws men to God. (Simile of the child and his nurse's milk.) Penance is the tree of life (p. 596).

Four Points to be known about Contrition :

1. What it is; 2. the causes that move a man to it; 3. how to be contrite; 4. what it avails the soul (p. 597).
2. The 6 Causes that should move a man to Contrition :
 - a. Remembrance of Sins (p. 597-8).
 - b. Whoso does sin is the Thrall of Sin (p. 598-99).
 - c. Dread of the Day of Doom and the Pains of Hell (p. 599—604). These described: the Doom (p. 599-600); Job's 'lond of myseke and of derknesse' (p. 600-1); the 3 shames in hell against (1) 'Honours, (2) delices, and (3) riches' (p. 611); poverty in 4 things: no treasure, food, clothing, or friends (p. 602); and no delights of the 5 senses. The pain shall be eternal (p. 603). Hell is orderless (p. 603-4). The 7 causes why the damnd have lost all hope (p. 604).
 - d. Remembrance of the good works we've left undone, and the loss of the good works done while we were in sin (p. 604-6). Deadly sin wipes out all good works formerly done (p. 605); and no good works can be done in deadly sin (p. 605-6). The new French song, *J'ai tout perdu mon temps* (also quoted in Chaucer's late poem of *Fortune*).

- e. Remembrance of Christ's suffering for our sins (p. 606). In man's sin, every ordinance is turned up-so-down (p. 607). For this disorder Christ suffered (p. 608).
- f. The hope of 3 things: 1. Forgiveness of Sins, 2. the Gift of Grace to do well, 3. the Glory of Heaven (p. 609).
- 3. How to be contrite. Contrition must be universal and total: for sins of thought, for desires against God's law, for wicked words as well as wicked deeds (p. 610). Contrition must be angwishous and continual (p. 609-11).
- 4. How Contrition helps the soul. It sometimes delivers a man from sin; destroys the prison of hell; cleanses the soul; changes the son of Wrath to the son of Grace (p. 611-12).

PART II (*no. v. continued*).B. CONFESSION (THE 2ND REQUISITE FOR PENITENCE)
(p. 612-679).

- B. Confession. § 1. (l. 317) 'what is confession' (p. 612).
- § 2. 'whether it oghte nedes be doon or noon' (p. 672-9).
- § 3. 'whiche thynges been couenable to veray Confession' (p. 674-79).

CONFESSION, § 1.

- 1. 'Confession is veray shewynge of synnes to the preest' (l. 318) (p. 612). We must understand too
 - a. (l. 321) 'whennes that synnes spryngen' (p. 612-15).
 - b. 'how they encreessen' (p. 615-16; 672-74).
 - c. 'whiche they been' (p. 616-672).
- 1.a. Sin sprang from the fall of Adam (p. 612). The legend of Adam and Eve told (p. 613). From Adam we took Original Sin, and were born sons of eternal damnation; but Baptism rescues us; though we keep liability to temptation, or Concupiscence (p. 613-14).
- Concupiscence, or the nourishing and occasion of sin. St Paul and St Jerome's temptations (p. 614-15).
- 1.b. How Sin grows in a man. 1. by Concupiscence; 2. Subjection to the Devil; 3. Hesitation; 4. Doing, the Sin becoming Actual (p. 615-16).
- 1.c. Sin is *a.* venial, *β.* deadly (or mortal).
 - a. 1. Venial Sin defined. It skips into Deadly Sin. (Simile of the drops of water into a vessel's hold drowning the ship;) (p. 616).
 - β. 1. Deadly Sin defined (p. 617).
 - a. 2. Of divers small venial sins, hardly thought sins (p. 617-18); eating, drinking, talking, too much; using your wife too much; not visiting the sick (p. 617); talking vanities at church, &c. (p. 618). Cure of venial sins by love to Christ, prayer, confession, good works, receiving the Sacrament, holy-water, &c. (p. 618).
- 1.c. β. 2. *The Seven Deadly Sins.* The Chieftains, head and spring, of all other Sins (p. 619).
 - i. Pride (p. 619-26), and its Remedy (p. 626-8).
 - ii. Envy (p. 628-30), and its Remedy (p. 630-1).
 - iii. Ire or Anger (p. 631-42), and its Remedy (p. 642-5).
 - iv. Accidie or Sloth (Discontent, Ennui) (p. 645-49), and its Remedy (p. 650-1).
 - v. Avarice or Covetousness (p. 651-7), and its Remedy (p. 657-8).
 - vi. Gluttony (p. 658-9), and its Remedy (p. 660).
 - vii. Lechery (p. 660-8), and its Remedy (p. 668-72).
- i. PRIDE (p. 619-626). Its 16 (and more) Twigs. 1. Disobedience, 2. Boasting, 3. Hypocrisy, 4. Despite, 5. Arrogance (p. 619), 6. Impudence, 7. Swelling of Heart (rejoicing in harm done), 8. Insolence, 9. Elation, 10. Impatience, 11. Contumacy, 12.

(FOR PETWORTH 607 a)

Presumption, 13. Irreverence, 14. Pertinacity, 15. Vain-glory, 16. Jangling (chattering).

A private kind of pride (the Host's Wife's and Wife of Bath's¹), wanting to go to offering first, &c. (p. 620).

Two kinds of Pride, *a.* 'within man's heart', *b.* without; *b.* being the sign of *a.*, 'as the gaye leefsel atte Taverne is sign of the wyn that is in the Celer'² (p. 620-21), *b.* outside pride.

a. in dear clothing, 1. superfluity of it: its cost, furring, chisel-holes, dragging in the dung, waste of material (p. 621), unfitness for giving to the poor; 2. scantness of it: showing men's privy members, and buttocks (like a she-ape's rump), and the former as half-flayed, in parti-coloured hose³. The 'outrageous array of Women' (p. 623).

β. in horses (p. 623), and vicious grooms to tend 'em; plate-harness, &c.

γ. in household: keeping too many retainers or servants, who oppress the poor (p. 624).

δ. in table: not asking the poor to feasts; having burning and ornamented dishes⁴; too costly cups, &c., and too choice minstrelsy (p. 624).

What Pride sins are deadly, and what venial (p. 624).

The Sources of Pride (p. 624): goods of Nature, Fortune, Grace (p. 624). The Folly of Pride in any of these goods of Nature: 'we ben alle of o fader and of o mooder, and . . . of o nature'⁵. The general signs of *Gentleness*. (The flies call'd 'bees', and their stingless king) (p. 625); 3 gifts of Grace; 3 of Fortune. The brittleness of popular praise⁶ (p. 626).

The Remedy against Pride.

Humility or Meekness, and its 3 kinds: in 1. heart, 2. mouth, 3. works. 4 kinds of each of these (p. 626-27).

ii. ENVY (p. 627-30): defined by the Philosopher and St Augustine. It springs from Malice (p. 627).

Malice; 2 kinds of: 1. hardness of heart, or recklessness; 2. opposing truth (p. 627).

The 2 kinds of Envy (p. 628): 1. sorrow at other men's prosperity; 2. joy at other men's harm: whence comes

Backbiting; 5 kinds (p. 628): 1. praise with a *but* at the end; 2. turning well-meant things upside down to ill ones; 3. lessening a neighbour's goodness; 4. putting one man above another; 5. glad listening to scandal (p. 628).

Grudging or murmuring (p. 628): 1. against God (p. 629); 2. Murmuring from avarice, 3. from pride, 4. from envy; 5. among Servants, who say 'the Devil's *Paternoster*'. 6. Murmuring from ire or hate: thence, *a.* Bitterness of Heart, *b.* Discord, *c.* Scorning; *d.* Accusing (p. 629); *e.* Malignity (p. 630).

The Remedy against Envy (p. 630-31).

Love of God and one's neighbour. How a man shall love his neighbour. How an enemy is included in the name 'neighbour' (p. 630). 3 Remedies of Love, against 3 deeds of Hate (p. 631). Love is the medicine that casts out the venom of Envy from man's heart (p. 631).

iii. IRE or ANGER (p. 631-42), and its 2 kinds: *a.* good Ire or Wrath (p. 632); *b.* wicked Ire, and its 2 kinds: sudden ire, and ire of malice aforethought (p. 632-33).

Three Shrews that forge in the Devil's furnace: Pride, Envy, and Contumely (p. 633).

¹ Melibe-Monk Link, B. § 11; and General Prologue, A.

² Chaucer's father no doubt had a sign outside his wine-shop or tavern in Thames Street, London.

³ The outspoken and somewhat coarse abuse of the new fashions in dress is a great change from Chaucer's admirable Third-Period chaff of the moral short-comings of the monks and friars, &c., in the Prologue and middle Tales. If this is not change of man, it's change of mood.

⁴ Chaucer must have seen plenty of these when he was page, valet, and squire.

⁵ Compare Chaucer's *Gentleness*, &c. * Compare Clerk's Tale, Part VI, st. 125.

Wrath takes away a man's wit and spiritual life (p. 634).

Fruits of Wrath: 1. Hate. 2. War and wrong. 3. Manslaughter, a. spiritual; b. bodily (p. 634).

a. The 3 kinds of spiritual Manslaughter (3, call'd 6 in MSS. p. 634): 1. by Hate. 2. by Backbiting. 3. Giving wicked Counsel, by Fraud (p. 634).

b. bodily Manslaughter: slaying with your tongue, giving orders or counsel to slay a man (p. 634).

Manslaughter in deed: its 4 (that is, 7) kinds (p. 635): 1. by law: a Justice condemning a man to death; 2. justifiable homicide, in defence of one's own life; 3. by misadventure: shooting an arrow, &c.; 4. a woman overlying her child; 5. a man making a woman barren by drinks, &c., killing the foetus within her, shedding his seed in the wrong place; a woman killing the child in her womb; 6. a woman killing her child (after birth) for shame; 7. a man by lechery or blows killing a foetus.

(Sixteen) other sins coming from Ire or Anger.

1. blaming or despising God, as hazarders do (Cp. *Parson's Tale*) (p. 635); and those who treat of the Sacrament of the altar irreverently (p. 636).

2. Attry anger: making angry false excuses for sin.

3. Swearing, which dismembers Christ (p. 636).

a. Of lawful Swearing, before a Judge: its 3 conditions, and its motives; b. God's name and Christ's, not to be taken in vain (p. 637); c. swearing for gentility or manliness (p. 638); d. swearing suddenly; e. of Adjuration and Conjurat[i]on by enchanter[s] and necromancer[s]; f. of Divination by Dreams, &c.; g. of Charms for Wounds and Maladies (p. 638).

4. Lying (p. 638), and its 6 kinds.

5. Flattering. How Flatterers are the Devil's Nurses, his Enchanters and Chaplains (p. 639).

6. Cursing that comes of irous heart: Malison.

* 7. Chiding and Reproach (p. 640); (specially a chiding wife) (p. 640-41).

8. Scorning (p. 641).

9. Giving wicked Counsel (p. 641).

10. Sowing and making Discord (p. 642).

11. Double tongue (p. 642).

12. Betraying of Counsel (p. 642).

13. Menace.

14. Idle words.

15. Jangling (chattering) (p. 642).

16. Japing (joking) (p. 642-43).

The Remedy against Anger (p. 643-5). Debonairtee and Patience (p. 643). Four kinds of grievances, and their remedies: 1. wicked words, 2. loss of goods, 3. harm of body, 4. outrageous labour (p. 644).

Incentives to Patience. Story of the Philosopher and Child (p. 644-45). Obedience comes from Patience (p. 645).

iv. ACCIDIE, or SLOTH (Discontent, Ennui) (p. 645-49), is an enemy to the 3 states of man,—1. innocence (p. 645), 2. prayer (p. 646), 3. grace;—and to one's livelihood. Its 12 bad consequences (p. 646): 1. Sloth (and its remedy); 2. Dread to begin good works (p. 646); 3. Wanhope, or Despair (and its Remedy) (p. 647); 4. Somnolence (p. 648), and 5. Negligence, or 6. Recklessness, and the Remedy for each; 7. Idleness; 8. *Tarditas*, or tarrying before turning to God (p. 649); 9. Lachesse, or giving up a good work begun; 10. Coldness; 11. Undevotion; 12. Worldly sorrow (p. 649).

The Remedy against Accidie (p. 650-51): Fortitude or Strength, and its 5 kinds. 1. Magnanimity¹ or great Courage; 2. Faith or Hope; 3. Assurance; 4. Magnificence; 5. Constancy (p. 651).

¹ Does Chaucer here refer to his former wife?

² Miswritten 'Magnificence' in Ellesmere and Lansdowne MSS.

- v. **AVARICE** (p. 651-57). The difference between Avarice and Covetousness (p. 651); and between an Idolater and an avaricious man (p. 652). Of Covetousness, and lords' extortion from their bondmen: "humble folk been Cristes freendes" (p. 652-53). The Duty of lords to their thralls or churls. Of those that pillage Holy Church (p. 653-54); lords who plunder the poor are like wolves (p. 654). Of Deceit between Merchant and Merchant (p. 654). Of honest bodily Merchandise (the surplus of one country may be sent to help another) (p. 654). Of spiritual Merchandise, or Simony, and its 2 kinds (p. 655),—thieves that steal Christ's souls get livings (p. 655-56);—Hasardry or Games of Chance (p. 656). Other outcomes of Avarice (p. 656): 1. Lying, 2. Theft (bodily and spiritual) (p. 656-57), 3. False Witness, 4. False Oaths (p. 657).

The Remedy against Avarice (p. 657): Mercy and Pity, and reasonable Liberality (p. 658). Of foolish largess (p. 658).

- vi. **GLUTTONY** (p. 658-59), and its 5 kinds (p. 659): 1. Drunkenness, or the burial of man's reason; 2. a troubled spirit; 3. bad way of eating; 4. distemperd bodily humours; 5. forgetfulness. Or, as St Gregory says, 1. eating too soon; 2. eating too delicate food; 3. taking too much; 4. troubling too much about cooking food; 5. eating greedily: these are the 5 fingers of the devil's hand (p. 659).

The Remedy against Gluttony (p. 660): Abstinence, and its fellows. Temperance, Shame, Content with plain food, Moderation, Sobriety, Sparing (p. 660).

- vii. **LECHERY** (p. 660). Its punishment in the Old Testament (p. 660). Adultery, and the desire of it (p. 661-62).

The 5 fingers of the Devil's other hand (p. 662); 1. foolish looking; 2. villainous touching; 3. foul words; 4. kissing (old dotards, and dry dogs at a rose-tree (p. 662); and how a man should love his wife); 5. the stinking deed of lechery (p. 663). Its kinds: 1. Fornication. Taking a maid's maidenhead, or 100th fruit (p. 663). 2. Adultery, defined. 3. Harms following from it: *a.* breaking of faith; *b.* theft (of the wife's body from her husband (Joseph and Potiphar's wife), and of her soul from Christ); *c.* breaking God's commandment, and defouling Christ (p. 664). Of Harlots and Bawds (p. 665). Adultery is set between Theft and Manslaughter. More kinds of Adultery: 1. by Men bound by Religious Vows, &c.; 2. those in Holy Orders (p. 665). Lecherous Priests are like a free Bull in a town, and they eat raw flesh of folk's wives and daughters (p. 666); 3. by man and wife copulating for pleasure only (p. 667); 4. copulation with kinsfolk, spiritual (or godchildren) or fleshly (blood relations). 5. the abominable unmentionable sin; 6. Pollution, of 3 kinds: 1. too rank humours; 2. weakness (p. 667); 3. evil thoughts (p. 668).

The Remedy for Lechery (p. 668): I. Chastity and Continence.

1. in Marriage. (The true effect of Marriage. One husband to have one wife (p. 668). How a man should behave to his wife (p. 669). How the wife should be subject to her husband (p. 669), and be moderate in behaviour, discreet in words, &c. (p. 669-70). The 3 causes for which man and wife may copulate (p. 670): *a.* begetting of children; *b.* to pay the mutual debt of their bodies; *c.* to avoid lechery (p. 670). The 4th cause, pleasure, is deadly sin (p. 670-71).)
2. In Widowhood; 3. Virginity (p. 671).

- II. Special avoidance of causes of lechery: *a.* eating and drinking; long sleeping; *b.* the person who'd tempt you (p. 671-72). (I wish I could tell you the Ten Commandments; but it's too high doctrine (p. 672).) [End of *Confession*, § 1, *c.*]

Sin is in heart, mouth, deed, by the 5 Wits (p. 672).

(FOR PETWORTH 608 *a*)

- § 1. *b.* (see p. 615-16.) The 7 Circumstances that encrease or aggravate sins (p. 672). 1. the person who sins (male or female, &c.); 2. the kind of sin (fornication or homicide); 3. the place it was committed in (as in a church, by a priest) (p. 673); 4. for what motive; 5. the number of times it was committed; 6. by what temptation; 7. how it was committed; and all other circumstances (p. 674).

CONFESSION, § 2, § 3 (p. 674-79).

Profitable Confession, and its 4 (= 3) Conditions (p. 674):

1. sorrowful bitterness of heart (p. 674); its 5 signs: *a.* shamefastness (like the Publican's) (p. 675); *b.* humility; *c.* fulness of tears (p. 675); *d.* no hesitation (like the Magdalen) for shame; *e.* obedience to receive penance laid on you (p. 675).
2. speedy Confession (p. 676); its 4 Conditions: *f.* that it be well thought over; *g.* the greatness and number of sins must be understood; *h.* the sinner must be contrite, and *i.* avoid occasions of sins.

3. Shrift must be made to one man, not more (p. 676).

True Shrift, and its 10 Conditions (p. 677): 1. that it be of free will; 2. that it be lawful (both sinner and priest, Popish); 3. that it be not despairing of Christ's mercy; 4. that a man accuse himself only, and not another; 5. that it be not lying (accusing oneself of sins never committed) (p. 678); that it be by one's own mouth, and not by letter; 7. that the sin be not painted with fair words; 8. that the shrift be to a discreet priest; 9. that the shrift be not made for vain-glory, but for fear of Christ; 10. that the shrift be not made suddenly, for a joke (p. 678). You may be shriven more than once for the same sin; and should be houseld once a year (p. 679).

PART III (*no. v. continued, and no. vi.*).

SATISFACTION (THE 3RD REQUISITE FOR PENITENCE)

(p. 679—684).

In *a.* Alms. *β.* bodily punishment.

a. Alms and its three kinds (p. 679): 1. Contrition of heart. 2. Pity for one's neighbour's faults. 3. Giving good counsel to other's souls and bodies (food, visits in prison, burial). These Alms should be done privily, if possible (p. 680).

β. Bodily Punishment (Penance), of 4 kinds: 1. Prayers (chiefly of the Paternoster, whose expounding I leave to Masters of Theology) (p. 680). 2. Watching, and its 3 kinds: forbearing, *a.* meat and drink, *b.* worldly jollity, and *c.* deadly sin (p. 681). 3. Fasting, and its 4 kinds: Liberality to poor folk; spiritual gladness of heart; not grudging at fasting; reasonable eating. 4. Virtuous teachings, or Discipline: *a.* by word, writing, or example; *b.* by wearing hairshirts, &c., next your skin, scourging yourself, taking evils and injuries patiently (p. 682). [End of no. v. in Part i; p. 593.]

vi. The 4 Things that disturb Penance [no. vi, or last §, of p. 593 at foot] (p. 682). 1. Dread, and its remedy. 2. Shame, and its remedy. 3. Hope: *a.* of long life, and *b.* consequent overconfidence in Christ's mercy (p. 683). 4. Wanhope, or Despair of Mercy; its 3 kinds: *x.* from great and long continued sin; *y.* from falls-back into sin; *z.* from not being able to persevere in goodness (p. 683).

The fruit of Penance (p. 683-4).

EPILOGUE.

The Author's Leave-taking, and Lament over, and Withdrawal of, his Sinful Books, &c. (p. 684-85).

(FOR PETWORTH 608 *b*)

[Petworth MS, on leaf 272, back.]

[There are no breaks in the MS. Tyrwhitt's are kept here to prevent slight differences in the texts throwing the Six-Text out of gear.]

And here bygynneþ þe person his tale.

¶ Capitulum
xxliij.

Ieremie vj^{to}. ¶ State super vias & videte & interrogate
de Semitis / antiquis que sit / via bona & ambulate in ea
& inuenietis refrigerium animabus vestris :

[75]

O Wre swete lord god of heuene þat no man wil
perisshe but wil þat we comen all to the
knowlecch of hym and to þe blisful lif
þat is perdurable [76] ammosheþ vs by þe
prophet Ieremye þat seiþ in þis wise
[77] ¶ Stondeþ vp-on þe wayes and seeþ and askep
of olde Patthes þat is to sayne of olde sentences
which is þe good way [78] and walkeþ in þat way
and 3e shul here refresshyng for 3oure saules. &c
[79] ¶ Mony bene þe waies espiritual þat leden folk
to oure lord Ihesu crist and to þe regne of glorie.
[80] Of which way þer is a ful / noble waye and a
ful couenable which may not faile to man / ne to
womman þat þourgh synne haþ mysگون from þe riȝt
way of Ierusalem Celestiall [81] ¶ And þis way is cleped
Penytence of which men shuld gladly harken and
enquere wiþ al his herte [82] to wete what is Pen-
aunce. and whi it is cleped penitence / and in how
mony maners bene þe accions of worchyng of penytence.
[83] and howe mony spices þer bene of penytences. and
whiche þingges appertenen and byhouen to penytence. [and]
which þingges distrouben penytence

¶ Nota de peni-
tencia.

¶ Ambrosius

[→ A sidenote
copied into the
text.]

[84] ¶ Seynt Ambrose seip. That penitence is þe laynyng¹ of man for þe gilt þat he haþ done. ¹ What is penytence¹ and no more to doon eny þinge for which hym ouȝt to playne. [85] And somme doctour² seip. Penytence is þe waymentyng² of man þat soroweþ for his synne. and pyneþ hym self for he haþ mysdone. [86] Penytence wiþ certeyn circumstaunces is verray repentaunce of man þat halt hym self in sorowe and oþer payn for his gyltes. [87] And for he shal be verrey penytent³. he shal first bywaillen þe synnes þat he haþ done and stedfastly proposed in his hert to haue shrift of mouþ and to doon satisfaccioñ [88] and neuere to doon þinge for whiche² hym ouȝte more to be-wayle or to compleyn and to contynue in good werkes or ellis his repentaunce may not auaille. [89] ffor as seip ysidere ¶ he is a Iaper and a gabber and no verrey repentaunt þat eftsone doon þinge for whiche hym ouȝt to repent⁴ [90] wepinge and nouȝt fortostint⁵ to do synnemaynouȝt auaille [91] ¶ But napeles men shullen hope þat at euery time þat man / falleþ be it neuer so oft þat he may arise þorgh penytence. if he haue grace // But certeynly it is grete dout.

¶ Isidore.

¶ gregorius.

[92] ffor as seip seint gregorie. Vnneþes ariseþ he out of his synne þat is chargeþ wiþ þe charge of euil vsage. [93] annȝt þerfore repentaunt folk þat stint forto synne and forlete synne. er þat synne forlete hem holy church holt hem siker of her sauaciõ [94] ¶ And he þat synneþ and verrely repentþ hym in his last [day]. holy church ȝit hopeþ his saluaciõ by þe grete mercy of our lord Ihesu crist for his repentaunce. but take þe siker way certeyn :

¶ tres acciones^[a]
penitencie
1^a. accio.

[95] And now siþens I haue declared ȝou what þinge is penitence ¶ Now shul ȝe vnderstonð þat þer bene iij. actions of penytence [96] ¶ The first is þat a man be baptist⁶ aftere þat he haþ synned [97] ¶ Seynt Austyn seip But he be penitent for his olde synful lif⁷ he may no bygynne þe newe

clene lif. [98] ffor certes if he be paptised wip-out
 penitence of his olde gilt. he resceyueþ þe mark of
 bapteme. but not þe grace ne þe remyssion of his
 synnes til he haue repentaunce verray [99] ¶ Anoper *2. accio.*
 defaute is þis. þat men doon dedly synne after þat
 þei han resceyued bapteme [100] ¶ The iij. defaute *2. accio.*
 is þat men falle in venyal synnes after her bapteme
 fro day to day. [101] þerof seiþ seynt Austyne. ¶ *Augustinus*
 þat penitence of good and humble folk. is þe
 penitence of euery day

[102] ¶ The spices of penaunce bene þre. þat oon ¶ *þe spices of*
 of hem is solempne Another is comune. and the *penaunce*
 iij. is prive. [103] Eche penaunce þat is so-
 lempne is in two maners. as is to be put out of holy
 church in lent for slaughtere of children and such
 maner þingges [104] ¶ Another is whan man ¶ *penitencia*
 hap synned openly of whiche synne þe fame is openly *communis*
 spoken in þe contre. and þan holy church by Iugge-
 ment distreyneþ hym forto doo penaunce open. [105]
 Somme penaunce is þer is þat preestes enioynen men. comonly
 in certeyn caas as forto goon perauenture naked in
 pilgrimage. or bare þe feet [106] ¶ Privey penaunce is ¶ *De secreta*
 þilk þat men doon al day for privey synnes of which *penitencia*
 we shryuen vs prively and receyuen prive penaunce

[107] ¶ Now shalt þou vnderstonð what by[ho]ueþ
 and is necessarie to verrey parfite penytence and þise
 stonden on þre þingges. [108] Contricion of hert. con-
 fession of mouþ. And satisfacciō [109] ¶ ffor which
 seiþ Iohn Grisostom ¶ Penytence distreyneþ man ¶ *Grisostomus*
 to accept benignely euery peyne þat is enioyned
 hym wip contricion of hert and shrift of mouþe. wip satis-
 facciō and worching of al manere humilite. [110]
 And þis is fruytful penytence azeinst iij. þingges in whiche
 we wreþen our lord Ihesu crist. [111] þis is to / sayn
 be delite in þenkinge. by rechelesnesse in spekinge.
 by wikked synful worching. [112] and azeinst þise

¶ *Hon penance* wikked giltes is penytence. þat may be likned vnto a tre
 may be likned to
 a tree [113] The rote of þis tree is contricion þat hideþ
 hym in þe herte of him þat is verrey repentaunt. riȝt as
 þe rote of a tree hideþ hym in þe erþe. [114] ¶ Of þe
 rote of contricion spryngēþ a stalk þat bereþ braunches
 and leues of confession. and fruyt of satisfacioun [115]
 ¶ ffor which Crist seiþ in þe gospell ¶ Doþ digne fruyte of
 penytence. for by þis fruyte may men knowe þis
 tre. and not by þe rote þat is in þe hert
 of man. ne by þe braunches ne by þe leues of confession
 [116] ¶ And þefore our lord Ihesu crist seiþ þus By
 þe fruyte of hem shul ȝe knowe hem [117] ¶ Of þis
 rote springeth a sede of grace. .þe which sede is
 modere of sikernesse. þus þis sede is eger and hote.
 [118] The grace of þis / sede springēþ of god þorowe þe re-
 membraunce of þe day of dome. and on þe peynes of
 helle [119] ¶ Of þis matere seiȝh salomon. þat in þe
 degre of god man forleteþ his synne [120] The hete
 of this seede is þe loue of god / and þe desiring of þe
 Ioie perdurable. [121] þis hete drawēþ . þe hert of
 man to god and doþ him hate his synne. [122] ffor
 soþly þer nys no þinge þat sauoureþ so wel to a childe
 as þe mylk of his norice. ne no þing is to hym more abhom-
 inable þat þilk mylk what it is medled wiþ
 oþer mete. [123] Riȝt so þe synful man þat louēþ
 his synne. hym semeþ þat it is to hym most swete of
 eny þinge. [124] But fro þat tyme þat he loueth sadly
 our lord Ihesu crist and desireth þe lif perdurable. ther
 nys to hym [no þing] more abhominable. [125] ffor
 soþ. þe lawe of god is þe loue of god. ffor which
 ¶ *De propheta.* / Dauid þe prophet seiþ. I haue loued þi lawe and hated
 wikkednesse ¶ he [þat] loueth god kepeþ his lawe and his
 worde. [126] This reson seiþ þe prophete Danyel in spirit
 vppon a vision of Nabugodonosor whan he coun-
 sailled hym to doo penance. [127] Penance is þe tree
 of lif to hem / þat it receyuen. And he þat holdeþ hym

in verrey penyntence is blessed aftre þe sentence of ¶ Salomon.
Salomon

[128] In þis penitence or contriciōn man shal vnderstonde .iiij. pingges. þat is to seyn what is contriciōn and whiche bene þe causes þat meuen a man to contriciōn and howe he shuld be contrite. and what contriciōn auailed to þe soule. [129] Than is it þus. þat contriciōn is þe verrey sorowe þat a man receyueþ in his hert for his synnes with sad purpos to schryuen hym and to do penaunce and neuere more to do synne. [130] And þis sorowe shal be in þis manere as seið seint Bernard ¶ It shal be greuous and hevie and ful ¶ Bernardus sharp and poynant in hert. [131] first for a man hap a-gilt his lorde and his creature. and more sharpe and poynant for he hath agilt his fadere celestia. [132] And 3it more sharpe and poynant ffor he hap wreþed and agult hym þat bougt hym. þat with his precious blood haþe delyuered vs fro the boondes of synne and fro þe cruelte of þe deuett. and fro þe paynes of helle. [133] ¶ The causes þat ouȝten to meuen a man to contriciōn be. .vj. ¶ ffurst a man shal remembre him of his synnes. [134] but loke þat þilk remembraunce be to him no delite by no way. but gret shame and sorowe for his gilt. ffor Iob seiþ. Synful men do. ¶ Iob. / werkes worpi of confession. [135] And þerfore seiþ Ezechie. I wil remembre me al þe ȝeeres of my lif. ¶ Ezechiel. my bitternesse of myn hert [136] ¶ And god seiþ in þe apocalips ¶ Remembre ȝou from whennes þat ȝe be ¶ Apocalypsis / falle. ffor byforn þat tyme þat ȝe synned ȝe were þe children of god. and lymmes of þe reigne of god. [137] But for ȝoure synne ȝe bene woxe þraff and foule. and membres of þe feende. hate of aungels sclaunder of holy church. and foode of þe fals serpent perpetuele matere of the fuyre of hell [138] and þat more foule and abhominable for ȝe trespasen so often tyme as doþ þe hounde þat turneþ to eten his vomyte. [139] And ȝit

614 GROUP I. § 2. PARSON'S TALE. Petworth MS.

bene 3e foulere for 3oure longe contynnyng' in synne and 3oure synful usage. for which 3e bene roten in 3our synne as a beest in his dunge. [140] ¶ Suche maner of þouȝtes maken a man haue shame for his synne and no delite. As / god saiþ by þe prophete Ezechiele [141] ¶ 3e shul remembre 3ou of 3oure waies: and þei shul displese 3ou soþely ¶ Synnes beñ þe waies þat lede folk to hell

[142] ¶ The ij. cause þat ouȝt to / ¹make a man to haue disdeyne of synne is þis. That as seiþ seint Peter ¶ Who so doth synne: is þral to synne and synne putteþ a man in gret þraldome. [143] And þerfore seith þe prophete Ezechiël ¶ I went soryful in disdeyn of my silf. Certes ¶ wel auȝt a man haue disdeyn of synne and wiþ-drawe / hym from þat þraldom and vilanye. [144] And lo what seiþ Senec

¶ In þis matere he seiþ þus ¶ Thouȝe I wist þat neiþer god ne man ne shuld neuere knowen it. ȝit wolde I haue desdeyne forto / do synne. [145] And the same Senec seiþ ¶ I am horn to gretter þingges þan to be þraht to my body. [.

¶ Seneca / no gap in the MS.] [146] A [fouler] þral may no man ne womman make of his body þan 3eue is body to synne [147] A[1] were it the foulest cheerle or womman þat lyueþ and leest of valewe. ȝit is he chaunged and most foule and more in seruitute. [148] euer fro þe hyer degre þat man falleþ: þe more is he þraht and more vnto god and to þe world vile and abhomyable. [149] O / 3ood god wel auȝt men haue desdeyn of synne. siþen þat þorgh synne. þer he was free now is he maked boonde. [150] & / þerfore seiþ seint

¶ Augustinus. / Austyn. ¶ If þou haue desdeyn of þi seruauunt if he a-gilt or synne. haue þou þan disdeyn þat þou þi silf shuldest do synne. [151] Take reward of þine valewe þat þou / ne be to foule to þi self. [152] Allas wel ouȝten þei þan to haue desdeyne to be

seruauntis and þralles to synne and sore bene ashamed
 of hem self. [153] þat god of his endeles goodnesse
 hap sett hem in hie astat and zeuen hem with strength
 of body. helpe. bewte. and prosperite. [154] and
 bouȝt hem fro þe deep with his hert blood. þat
 þei so vnkyndely aȝeinst gentelnesse aquiten hym so
 vilenistly to sclowghter of her owne soules. [155] ¶ O
 good god. ȝe wommen þat bene of so grette bewte.
 remembreȝ ȝou of þe prouerbe of Salamon ¶ He ¶ Salomon.
 [156] likneȝ a fair womman þat is a foole of her body.
 ylik to a ryng of gold þat is wreȝed in þe Groyne of a sowe.
 [157] ffor riȝt as a sowe ¶ wroteȝ in euery ordure. So
 wroteȝ she her bewte in stynkinge ordure of synne

[158] ¶ The iij cause þat ouȝt to meuen a / man
 to contricion and drede of þe day of dome. and of þe /
 horrible peynes of helle. [159] ffor as seint Ierom seiȝ ¶ Ieromias : /
 ¶ Att euery tyme þat me remembreȝ of þe day of dome I
 quake [160] ffor whan I ete or drinke or doo what so I
 doo / euer me semeȝ þat þe trompe sowneȝ in myn ere.
 [161] Riseth vp 1 þat bene dede and comeȝ to þe
 Iuggement. [162] O Good god mochel. oweȝ a man to
 drede such Iuggement þer as we shulne bene alle
 as seiȝ seint Poule by-forne the strete of our lord Ihesu ¶ Paulus
 crist [163] wher as he shal make a general con-
 gregacion. Wher as no man had be absent. [164] for
 certes þer ne veileȝ non assoyn ne excusacion
 [165] and not only þat our defautes shullen / be
 Iugged but eke þat all our werkes shul openly
 be knowe [166] And as seint Bernard seiȝ. There ne ¶ Bernardus
 shal no pledyng auaile ne no sleiȝt we shul zeuen
 reknyng of euery ydel word [167] Ther shul we haue
 a Iugge þat may not be deceyued. ne corrupte and whi
 for certes al oure þouȝtes ben diskeuered as to hym.
 ne for preiere ne for mede he wil not bene corrupte.
 [168] And þefore seiȝ Salomon. þe wreȝe of god ¶ Salomon
 wil not be corrupte / And þefor seiȝ Salomon ¶ þe / wreche ¶ Idem.

of god ne wil not spare no wȳt for preier ne for ȝift. And
 þerffore at þe day of dome þer nys no hope to escape.
 [169] Wherefore Anselme seiþ ¶ fful grete
 Angwissȝ shullen þe synful folk haue at þat tyme
 [170] Ther shal be þe sterne and þe wroþe Iuge sitte aboue
 and vnder hym þe horrible pitte of helle open to di-
 stroye hym. þat most byknowe his synne. which
 synnes openly bene shewed byforn god and biforne
 euery creature. [171] And on þe left side moo deuels /
 than hert may þenk forto harie and to drowe
 þe synful soules / to þe pyne of helle. [172] And wip-
 in þe hertes of folk shal be þe bitynge conscience
 and wip-out forþ shal be þe world al brennyng.
 [173] whidere shal þan þe wrecched synful soule flee /
 to hide hym. Certes he may not hide hym. he most
 come forþ and schewe hym. [174] ffor certes as seiþ
 ¶ Ieronimus seint Ierom ¶ The erþe shal cast hym out of hym.
 and þe see also and the Eiere. þat shal be ful / of
 pondere clappes / and liztynge [175] Now sople
 who so wil remembre hym of þise þingges I geese
 þat his þingges shal not turne hym into delite. but to grete
 sorowe for drede of the payne of helle. [176] And þer-
 fore seiþ Iob. ¶ Suffre lord þat I may a while
 biwaile and wepe or I goo and wepe wip-out retournynge to þe
 derk londe keuered wip þe derknesse of depe [177]
 to þe londe of myssese and of derknesse. where as is
 shadowe of depe. wher as þer nys noon oþer or-
 dynaunce. but grisly drete þat euere shul last [178]
 ¶ Loo here may ȝe seen þat Iob preied of respite a while
 to bywepe and waile his trespas. ffor sople oo / day of
 respite is bettere þan al þe tresoure of þis world [179] And
 1 for as moche as a man may acquite hym self to forþ god
 by penitence in þis world and nouȝt by tresour þerfor
 shuld he prei to god to ȝeue hym respite a while to
 bywepen and bywaillen his trespas [180] ffor certes al
 þe sorowe þat a man myȝt make fro þe bygynnyng

¶ Ieronimus

¶ Iob./

of þe world̃ nys but a lital þing̃ at þe regard̃ of þe sorowe
of helle [181] ¶ The cause why þat Iob clepeþ helle
þe londe of derknesse. [182] Vnderstondeþ þat he
clepeþ it londe or erþe. for it is stable and neuere shal
faile. derknesse. for he þat is in helle hap defaute of
lizt materiaþ [183] ffor certes þe derk̃ lizt̃ þat shal
come out of þe fire þat euere shal brenne shal turne
hym al to payne þat is in helle. ffor it sheweþ hym to þe
horrible deuels þat hym tormenten [184] keuered wip
þe derknesse of deþe [.

. [185]
no gap in the MS.] bene þe synnes þat þe wrecched / man
hap doñ which þat distourben hym to se þe face
of god. rizt̃ as a derk cloude bytwix vs and þe
sonne. [186] londe of myssese by cause þat þer bene
.iiij. manere of defautes azeinst̃ þre þingges þat folk
of þis world̃ han in þis present̃ lif. þat is to say
honours. delices. and Richesse. [187] Azeinst̃ honour
han þei in helle shame and confusioñ. [188] ffor wel 3e
woote þat men clepen honour̃ þe reuerence þat men
doon to man. But in helle nys noon honur̃ ne reuerence.
ffor certes no more reuerence shal be do to a
kinge þan to a knaue [189] ¶ ffor which god seith by
þe prophetys wordes Ieremye. ¶ Thilk folk þat me despisen ¶ *Textus Ieremie*
shullen bene despised. [190] ¶ Honour is eke cleped gret lord̃
Ther shal no wizt / seruen oper. but of harme and
torment̃ ¶ Honure is eke cleped grete dignite and high-
nesse. But in helle shul þei bene al for-troden of deuels.
[191] as god seiþ The horrible deuels shal goon and
come vpon þe hedes of dampned folk̃ And þis
is for as moche as þe hier þat þei were in þis present̃
lif. þe more shullen þei bene abated and defouled in
helle. [192] ¶ Azeinst̃ þe richesse of þis world̃. shullen
þei haue myssese and pouerte. and þis pouert̃ shal be
.iiij. þingges [193] in defaute of tresour. of which

¶ David prophete

David þe prophete seiþ ¶ The riche folk þat enbraceden and onoden in al her hert to tresoure of þis world shullen sclepe in þe sclepinge of deþ. As no þinge shul þei fynden in her hondes of al her tresour [194] ¶ And more ouer þe dissesse of helle shal bene in þe defaute of mete and drynk. [195] ¶ ffor god seiþ þus by moyses ¶ Thei shullen be wasted with 'hunger' and þe briddes of helle shal deuoure hem with bitter deþ and þe galle of þe dragon [.

¶ Deus per moyses

no gap in the MS.] her morseil. [196] And ferþer ouer her myssese shal bene in defaute of cloþinge ffor þei shullen be naked in body as of cloþing. sauf þe fuyr in which þei brenne and oþer filþes. [197] and naked shul þei bene of saule. of al manere vertues which þat is þe cloþinge of saule. Wher bene þan þe gay Roobes and þe soft shetes and þe smal / shertes [198]

¶ Isayas /

¶ Ioo what seiþ god to hem by þe prophete Ysay ¶ That vndere hem shullen be strawed motthes. and her couertours / shul be of wormes of helle [199] ¶ And ferþer ouere her dissesse shal / bene in defaute of frendes. ffor he nys not poor þat haþ good / freendes. but þer nys no frende. [200] ffor neiþer god ne creature / shal be frende to hem. and euery of hem shal haten oþere wiþ dedly hate. [201] The sones of þe doughtren shullen rebellen aȝeinst þe fadere and modere and kynrede aȝeinst kynrede and chiden and despisen euerech of hem oþer boþ day and nyȝt As god seiþ by þe prophet Michias [202] ¶ And þe louyng children. þat whilom loued so fleshly euerech oþer. wolden euerech of hem eten oþer if þei myȝt. [203] ffor howe shuld þei loue hem to-gydere in þe peynes of helle. whan þei hated eche of hem oþer in þe prosperite of þis lif. [204] ffor trust wel her fleshly loue was dedly hate

¶ Michias /

as seiþ þe prophete dauid ¶ who so þat loueþ wickednesse he hateþ his saule. [205] and who þat hateþ his owne soule. certes he may loue noon oþer wiȝt

¶ David /

in no manere. [206] and þerfor in helle is no frendship. But euer þe moo fleshly kynredes þat bene in helle. þe more cursyng' þe more chyd-inge. and þe more dedly hate þer is amonges hem [207] ¶ And forþermor þer shal be defaute of al maner delyces. ffor why þe delices ben þe appetites of þe .v. wittes. as. sizt'. heryng'. smellynge. sauer- yng' and towchyng'. [208] But in helle her sizt' shal be ful of derkenesse and of smoke and ful of teeres. and her heryng' ful of waymentyng' and of gnaistyng' of teep as seith Ihesus / crist [209] ¶ her nose- ¶ Ihesu þrelles shullen be ful stynkyng' stynks ¶ And as seip Isay þe prophete. Her saueryng' shal be ful of bitter ¶ Isayas. galle. [210] and touchyng' of her body ykeuered wip fuyr' þat neuere shal be quenched. and wip wormes þat never shul dye ¶ As god seip / by þe moup of ¶ Ihesus. / ysay. [211] ¶ And for as moch as þei shullen not wene þat þei may dyen for peyne. and by her deþ flee fro peyne. 1þat' may þei vnderstonde by þe worde of Iob. ¶ Iob. þat seip. There as is þe shadowe of deþe [212] ¶ Certes a shadowe hap þe liknesse of a þinge of which it is shadowe. But shadowe nys not þe same þinge of which it is shadowe. [213] Riȝt so fareþ þe peyne of helle. it is like deþ for þe angwisshe horrible. and why for it peyneþ hem euere as þoo men shulden dye anon But certes þei shullen not dye. [214] ffor as seip seynt Gregore. ¶ To wrecched Catyfe shal be deþe wip-out' ¶ Gregorius. / deþe. ande ende wip-uten ende. and defaute wip-out' faillyng'. [215] for her deþe shal alway lyve. and her eende shal euermor bygynne and her defaute shal not faile. [216] And þerfore seip seint Iohn þ' ¶ Iohannes euzangeliste They shullen folowe deþ and þei shul not fynden hym. And þei / desiren to deye. and deþe shul flee fro hem / [217] And eke Iob seith That in helle ¶ Iob. / is noon order ne rewele [218] And al be it soo þat god hap created al þing' in riȝt ordre and no þing' wip-

out' ordere. but' alle þingges ben ordred and nom-
 bred. 3it' napeles þei þat bene dampned bene no
 þinge in order ne holden / noon order'. [219] for þe
 erpe ne shal bere hem no fruyte. [220] ffor as þe / prophete
 dauid seiþ ¶ God shal destroy þe froyte of þe erpe as
 fro / hem. ne watere shal 3eue hem no moystere. ne
 þe eyre no refresshyng. ne þe fuyre no liȝt'. [221] ffor as
 seiþ seynt' Basile. þe brennyngges of þe fuyre of þis
 worlde shal god 3euen to hem in helle þat' bene dampned.
 [222] But' þe liȝt' and þe clernesse shal be 3euen in
 to heuene to his children. / Riȝt as þe good man 3eueþ
 flesshe to his children. and bonyes to his boundes [223]
 for þei shullen have noon hope to escape seiþ
 Iob. At' þe last' þat' ther shal horroure and grisly drede
 dwelle. wiþ-outen ende [224] ¶ Horroure is alway drede
 of harme þat' is to come and þis drede shal euer dwelle
 in þe hertes of hem þat' bene dampned. and þerfore
 han þei lorn all her hope. for vij. causes. [225] ffirst'
 for god þat' is her Iuge shal be wiþ-oute mercy to
 hem. ne þei may not' plesse hym. ne noon of his
 halowes. ne þei may 3eue no þinge for her raunsom.
 [226] ne þei han no voys to speke to hym. ne þei
 may nat' flee fro peyne ne þei han no goodnesse in
 hem þat' þei may schewe to delyuere hem fro peyne
 ¶ Salomon. / [227] ¶ And þerfore seiþ Salomon ¶ The wikked man
 dyeþ' and whan he is dede he shal haue no hope to /
 eskape fro peyne. [228] who so shame wolde wel vn-
 derstonde and bythenk' hym wel on þise peynes and þat' he
 haþ deserued þe same peynes / for his synne. Certes he
 shuld' haue more talent' to sike and to wepe ¹þan for
 syngen and to pley. [229] ffor as seiþ Salomon.
 Who so þat' had þe science forto knowe þe peynes þat'
 bene establiished and ordeyned / for synne he wold make
 ¶ Augustinus. sorowe. [230] Thilk' science as seiþ seint' Austyn
 Maketh a man to weymenten in his hert'

[231] ¶ The iiij. poynte þat' aught' make a man

haue contritioun is þe soryful remembraunce of þe
 good þat he haþ lost to doon here in erþe. and
 eke þe good / þat he haþ lorne [232] ¶ Soply þe good
 werkes þat he haþ lost eiper þei bene þe good
 werkes þat he haþ wrouȝt er he felle into dedly synne
 Or ellys þe good werkes þat he wrouȝt þe while he lay
 in synne [233] ¶ Soply þe good werkes þat he did
 byforne þat he fille in synne ben aȝt mortefied and astonyed
 and dilled by þe oft synnyng [234] That oþer
 good werkes þat he wrouȝt þe whiles he lay in
 synne þei bene vtterly dede as to þe lif perdurable in
 heuene. [235] Than / þilk good werkes þat bene
 mortefied by oft synnyng which good werkes he did þe
 whiles he was in charite ne mowen neuere / quicken aȝein
 with-outen verrey penytence. [236] And þefore seiþ god
 by þe mouþe of Ezechiele þat is þe riȝtful man. Re- ¶ *Ezechiele*
 tourne aȝein from his riȝtwisnesse and to worch wikked-
 nes shal he lyue. [237] nay. ffor aȝt þe good werkes
 þat he haþ wrouȝt ne shul neuere be in remembraunce
 for he shal deye in his synne. [238] ¶ And vpon þilk
 chapitere seiþ seint Gregorie thus. than we shuld vnder- ¶ *Gregorius*
 stonde þis principaly. [239] þat whan we doon dedly *super Eze-*
 synne. it is for noȝt þan to reherce or drawe into *chielem*
 memorie þe good werkes þat we han wrouȝt biforȝ.
 [240] ffor certys in þe wirking of dedly synne
 þer nys no trest to no good werk þat we han doon to-forne /
 þat is to sayn as forto haue þer-by þe lif per-
 durable in heuene [241] [.]

 *no gap in the MS.*] Whan we
 han contritioun. [242] But soply þe good werkes þat
 men / doon whiles þat þei bene in dedly synne. for as moȝ
 as þei weren doon in dedly synne þei mowe neuer quyen
 aȝein [243] ffor certes þing þat neuere haþ lif : neuere
 may quyked. And naþeles al be it þat þei ne
 availe nouȝte to han þe lif perdurable ȝit availen

pei to abreggen of þe peyne of helle or ellis to geten
temporeH richesse. [244] Or ellis þat god wil
rather enlume and / lighten þe hert of þe synful
man to han repentaunce. [245] and eke þei availen
forto vsen a man to do goode werk' þat þe fende /
haue þe lasse power of his soule [246] ¶ And þus þe
curtaise Lord Ihesu crist' ne wil þat no good werk'
be lost. ffor in somewhat it shal availe. [247] But for as
moche as þe good werkes ¹þat men doon whan þei
bene in þis lif bene al mortefied by synne folowinge.
And eke siþens al þe good werkes þat men done
þe whiles þei bene in dedly synne bene vtterly dede
as forto haue þe lif perdurable [248] ¶ wel may þat man
þat no good werk ne / dooþ syngyn þilk newe songe.
Iay tout perdue moñ temps et moñ labour [249] ffor
certes synne byreueþ a man goodnes and nature
and eke þe goodnes of grace [250] ¶ ffor soþ
þe grace of þe holy goost fareþ as fuyre þat may not
be ydeH. ffor fire failleþ / anoon as it forleseþ his worch-
inge [. *no gap*
in the MS.] [251] þan leseþ þe synful man þe goodnes
of glorie þat oonly is bihiȝt to good men þat labouren
and worken [252] wel may he be sory þen that
oweþ al his lif to god as long as he lyueþ haþ lyued and
eke as long as he shal bene þat no goodnes ne haþ
to pay wiþ his dette to god. to whom he oweþ al his
lif. [253] ffor trust wel he shal ȝeue acountes as seiþ
seint Bernard of alle þe goodes þat han bene ȝeuen hym.
in þis present lif and how he haþ hem dispended.
[254] not so moch þat þer shal not perissahe an heer
of his hede. ne a moment of an / houre ne shal not perissahe
of þis tyme þat he ne shal ȝeue of it a rekenynge

¶ Bernardes

[255] ¶ The .v. þinge þat ouȝt to meue a man to
contricion is remembraunce of þe passion of our Lord
Ihesu crist' suffred for oure synnes [256] ffor as seiþ
seynt Bernard whiles þat I lyue ¶ I shal haue remem-

¶ Bernardes

braunce of þe trauailes þat our lord Ihesu crist suffred in
preching' [257] in werynesse in travailynge. his tempt-
acions whan he fasted. his longe waking' whan he
preied. his teeres whan þat he wepte for pite of
good puple. [258] þe woo and þe shame and þe
filþe þat men seiden to hym oft foule spitting'
þat man / spitten on his face / and þe buffettes þat men
ȝaue hym of þe // foule moupes and of þe re-
preous þat men to hym seiden. [259] Of þe nailles
wiþ þe which he was nailed to þe cros. and of all þe
remenaunte of his passiõ þat he suffred for my synnes. /
and no þinge for his gilt. [260] And ȝe shul vnder-
stonð þat in mannys synne is euery maner order'
of ordynaunce turned vp so down. [261] ffor it is soþ
þat god and reson and sensualite and þe / body of man
bene so ordeyned þat euerech of þise iiij. þingges
shuld haue lordship of þat oþer. [262] As þus.
god shuld haue lordship ouer reson. and reson ouer
sensualite. and sensualite ouer þe / body of man.
[263] And soþly whan man synneþ al þis ordere of
ordynaunce is turned vp so doune [264] ¶ And þerfore
þan for as moch¹ is þe reson of man wil not be
subiette ne obeysaunt to god þat is his lord by riȝt þer-
fore leseþ it þe lordship þat it shuld haue in
sensualite and eke ouer þe body of man. [265] And
whi for sensualite rebelleþ þan aȝeinst reson. And
by þat way leseth resoun his lordship ouer sensualite
and ouere þe bodye. [266] ffor riȝt as reson is rebelle to
god. riȝt so is boþ Sensualite rebell to reson and
þe body also. [267] ¶ And certes this ordynaunce and
þis rebellion. oure lord Ihesu crist aboute vpon his
precious body ful dere and herkeneth in which wyse.
[268] ffor as moche þan is reson rebelle to god. þer-
fore is man worpi to haue sorowe and to be dede
[269] ¶ This suffred our lord Ihesu for man after þat
he had be hytraied of his disciple and destreynd and

bounde so þat þe blood brast out at euery naile of his
 hondes as seiþ seint Austyn [270] ¶ And ferþermore
 for as moche as reson of man wil not daunte Sensu-
 alite whan it may. therfore is man worþi to haue shame.
 and þis / suffred our lorde Ihesu crist for man whan þei
 spitten in his visage [271] ¶ And ferþer ouere for as
 moch þan as the catif body of man is rebelle
 bop to reson and to sensualite. þerfore is it worþi þe
 deep [272] ¶ And þis suffred our lord Ihesu crist for man
 vpon þe crosse wher as þer was no parte of his body
 free with-oute grete peyne and bitter passioñ [273]
 and al þis suffred Ihesu crist þat neuer forfeited
 [.
 . . . no gap in the MS.] To mochel am I peyned for þe
 same þingges þat I neuer deserued and to mochel defoiled
 for frendship þat man bene worþi for to haue [274] And þer-
 fore may þe synful man wel saye as seiþ seint Bernard
 ¶ Acursed be þe bitterness. [.
 no gap in the MS.] [275] ffor certes
 aftere þe dyuers discordaunces of oure wilkednes
 was þe passion of Ihesu crist yordeyned in dyuers þingges
 [276] as þus. Certys synful man saule [is] bytraied
 of the deuel by coueityse of temperele prosperite and
 scorned by disceite whan he chesep fleshly delites and
 ȝit is he tormented by impaciencie of aduersite. and by-spette
 by seruage of subieccioñ in synne / and at þe last it is
 sclayn fynally. [277] ffor ¶ þis disordinaunce of synful man
 was Ihesus crist first bytraied and aftere þat was he bounde
 that come forto vnbynde vs of synne and of peyne [278]
 ¶ Than was he byscorned þat only shuld be
 honoured. in alle þingges of al þingges. [279]
 Than was his visage þat auȝt be desired to be seyn
 of al mankynd ¹In which visage aungels desiren to
 loken vileynsly byspitte. [280] Than was he scourged
 þat no þing gilt And fynaly þan was he /
 crucified and sclayn [281] Than was he accomplished þe

¶ Bernardus

wordes of Ysay / He was wounded for ¶ *ymais*!/.
 our mysdedys and defouled by oure vilanyes. [282]
 ¶ Now siþens þat Ihesu crist toke vppon hym self þe
 peyne of al oure wikkednesse ¶ Michel ouȝt synful
 men by-wepe and by-waile þat for his synnes goddis sone
 of heuene shuld al þis peyne endure [283] ¶ The sixt
 þinge þat auȝt meue man to contricion is þe hope
 of iij. þingges. þat is to say forȝeuenes of synne
 and þe ȝift of grace wel forto doo. And þe / glorie of
 heuene wiþ þe which god shal guerdon man for his
 good dedys. [284] and for as moche as Ihesu crist
 ȝeueþ vs þise ȝiftes of his larges and of his souereyn
 bounte. þerfor is he cleped / Ihesus Nazarenus rex
 iudeorum. [285] Ihesus is forto seyn Saueour or sa-
 uacion on whoom men shullen hope to haue forȝeuenesse of
 synnes which þat is proprely sauacion of synnes
 [286] ¶ And þerfore seide þe aungel to Ioseph. þow ¶ *qualiter an-*
 clepest his name Ihesus þat shal saue his puple from her *gelus locutus est*
 synnes [287] And here-of seiþ Seint Petrer ¶ Ther nys *Iosepho.*
 noon oþer name vnder heuene þat is ȝeue to eny man
 by which a man may be saued. but oonly Ihesus [288]
 Nazarenus is as moche for to seyn as florsshinge in
 which a man shal hope þat he þat ȝeueþ hym remission
 of synnes shal ȝeue also hym grace wel to doo for
 in þe floure is hope of fruyte in tyme comynge and in
 forȝeuenesse of synnes hope of grace wel to doo. [289] I
 was at þe door of þine hert seith Ihesus and cleped forto
 entre. He þat opneþ to me shal haue forȝeuenesse of
 synne [290] I wil entre into hym by my grace and
 soupe wiþ hym by þe good werkes þat he shal don
 which werkes bene þe foode of god. and he shal soupe
 wiþ me by þe grete loie þat shal be ȝeue to hym [291]
 Thus shal man hope. þat for his werkes of penaunce
 god shuld ȝeue hym his regne as he bihotē hym in the
 gospel

[292] ¶ Now shal man vnderstonde in which

manere shal be þis contricion I say þat it shal
bene vniversale and total This is to saie. a man shal be
verrey repentaunt for al his synnes þat he haþ doon in
delite of his þouȝt. ffor delite is ful perilous [293] ffor þer
bene twoo / manere of consentyngges that oon of hem is
cleping^t consentynge of affection whan a man is meued
to do synne and deliteþ hym longe forto þenk on
þat synne [294] he haþ reson aperceyued / ¹wel þat
it is synne aȝeinst þe lawe of god [.

.
no gap in the MS.] al þouȝe
his reson ne consent^t not to doon þe synne in dede.
[295] ¶ Ȝit^t seyn somme doctours þat suche delite þat
dwelleth longe it is ful perilous al be it neuere so lite
[296] And also a man shuld^t sorowe namely for al
þat euere he haþ desired aȝeinst þe lawe of god wip
parfite consentynge of his reson. ffor þerof is no ¶ doute
þat it is dedly synne in þe consentinge [297] [. . .

.
no gap
in the MS.] and into dede. [298] Wherefore I say þat
mony men. ne repenten hem neuer of such þouȝtes and
delices ne neuere shryuen hem of it. but only of þe
dede. of grete synnes outward. [299] wherefore I say
þat such wicked delites and wicked þouȝtes bene
subtile bygylers of hem þat shullen be dampned [300]
¶ More ouere man ouȝt to sorowen for his wicked
wordes and for his wicked dedys ffor certes
þe repentaunce of a syngulere synne and noȝt repant of al
her oþer synnes. or ellis repente hym of al his
oþer synnes and not of syngulere synne may not
aualle. [301] ffor certes god almyȝty is al good. and
þerfore he forȝeueþ all or ellis riȝt nouȝt [302]
¶ *Augustinus.* and hereof seiþ seynt Austyne ¶ I wote certeynly [303] þat
god is enemye to euery synner ¶ and how þan he
þat obserueþ oon synne. shal he haue forȝeuenesse of þe

remenaunt of his oþer synnes. Nay [304] ¶ And forþer ouere / contricion shulde be woundes soryful and anguissous and þerfore ȝeueþ hym god pleylny his mercye. And / þerfore whan my soule was angwisshous wip-in me I had remembraunce of god þat my preiere myght come to hym. [305] ¶ fferþer ouer contricion most be continueþ. and þat men han steadfast purpoos to shryue hym and forto amende hym of his lif. [306] ffor soþly þe whiles contricion lasteþ man may haue hope of forȝeuenes. And of þis commeþ hate of synne. þat destroieþ synne boþ in hym self and eke in oþer folk at his power. [307] ffor whiche seiþ dauid / ¶ ȝe þat louen / god haten wikkednes. ffor ¶ *Dauid.* / tresteþ wel to loue god is forto to loue þat he loueþ. and hate þat he hateþ *note*

[308] ¶ The last þing þat men shal vnderstond in contricion is þis. wherof auaileþ contricion ¶ I say þat somtyme contricion delyuereþ man fro synne. [309] of which þat dauid seiþ. I say (*quod dauid*) ¶ *Dauid.* / þat is do say ¶ I purpose me fermely to shryve me. And þou lord reledest my synne. [310] And riȝt so as contricion ¹availeth not wip-outen sad purpoos of shrift [. *no gap in the MS.*] or Satisfaction wip-out contricion. [311] And more! ¶ Contricion destroieþ þe prison of helle and maketh it waike and febleþ þe strengthes of þe deuels and restoreþ þe gift of þe holy goost and of all vertues [312] and enterly clenseþ þe saule of synne and delyuereþ þe soule from þe payne of helle and fro þe company of deuels and fro þe seruage of synne. and restoreþ [it] to all goodys espiritueþ into þe company [and] comunyōn of holy churche. [313] And ferþer ouer it makeþ hym þat whilom was þe sone of yre þe sone of grace. And all these þingges he proueþ by holy writt. [314] and þerfore he þat wil sette his entent to / þise þingges he is

wis. ffor soþ he shuld not þan in al his liff
 haue corage to synne But þan his body and al his hert
 to þe seruise of Ihesu crist and þerof done him
 homage. [315] ffor certes our swete lord Ihesu crist
 hap spared vs so / deuourly in our folies þat ȝit he ne
 had pite of mannys / soule a sory songe myȝt we alle
 syng. ¶ *Explicit prima pars penitencie. Incipit*
secunda / pars eiusdem.

¶ 2. pars peni-
 tencie

[316]

¶ **T**He seconde parte of penitence is confessiō
 þat is signe of contriciō [317] ¶ Now shul ȝe
 vnderstonde what is confessiō. and whedere
 it ouȝt nedes to be or noon. and which
 þingges bene conable to verrey confessiō

[318] ¶ ffirst shalt þou vnderstonde þat confessiō is
 verrey shewing of synnes to þe preest [319] þis is to
 sey verrey. ffor he mot confessen hym of al þe
 condicions þat bylongen to his synne as ferforþ as he
 can. [320] al mote be seide and no þing excused ne
 hid ne forwrapped. and nouȝt auaunte him of his good
 werkes. [321] ¶ And forþer ouer. It is necessary to vnder-
 stonde whennes þat synne springeþ and how þei
 encresen. And which þer bene

[322] in spryngynge of synnes. as seiþ seint poule
 in þis wise. / ¶ That riȝt as by a man. synne entred furst
 into þe ¶ worlde. and þorghē þat synne deide. Riȝt so
 þilk deēp entreþ into al men þat synden. [323]
 And þis man was // Adam by whom þat synne entred into
 þis world whan he brak þe comaundement of god.
 [324] and þerfore he þat first was so myȝty þat he
 shuld not haue deyde. bycame suche oon þat he most
 nedys dye whedere he ¶ wolde or noon. and al his progeny
 þat is in þis world þat in þilk manere synne dyen. [325] Loke
 þat in þe astate of Innocentys ¶ whan A[dam and Eue

naked weren in paradise. and no þing' shame ne hadden
of her nakednesse. [326] How þat serpent' þat was
most' wily of all oþer beestes þat god haþ maked
seide to þe womman ¶ Comaunded god to þou
þe shuld' not' eten of euery tree in paradys [327] ¶ The
womman answerd of þe fruyte quod she of þe trees
in paradise we feden vs. But' soþly of þe froyte of þe
tree þat' is in þe myddel of paradys god for-bede vs
for to ete ne not' touche it'. lest' parauenture we shuld
dyen [328] ¶ The serpent' saide to þe womman. nay.
nay. þe shullen deye of dethe. ffor soþ god woote þat'
what' day þat' þe eten þerof. þour eien shullen open.
and þe shullen ben as goddys knowynge good [and] harme
[329] ¶ The womman seie þat' þe tree was good
to fedyng and faire to þe eyen and delitable to þe
sight' she toke of þe fruyte of þe tree and ete of hit'./ and
ȝaf it' to her husbonde and he eete. and anon þe eyen of
hem boþ opned / [330] and whan þat' þei knewe
þat' þei were naked þe[i] sewed of fige leues in manere
of breche to hiden her membres [331] ¶ Here may þe
see þat' dedly synne haþ furst' suggestion of þe
feende as schewep here by the naddere. And afterward
þe delit' of þe flessch as schewep here by Eua. And
after þat' þe consenting' of þe reson as schewep by.
adam [332] ¶ ffor trust' wel þoþe so were þat' þe
fende tempted oon þat' is to saie þe flessch. And / þe
flessch had delite in þe bewte and þe froyte deffended
ȝit' certes til þat' reson þat' is to sayn Adam con-
sented. to þe etinge of þe fruyte þat' stood hiȝe in astate
of Innocence. [333] þilk Adam toke. þilk
synne of Originall. ffor of hem fleshly descended. bene we all
and engendred. of vile and corrupte matere. [334] And
whan þe soule is putt' in our body. riȝt' anon is con-
tracte origynal synne. and þat' was eerst' but' only
peyne of concupiscens' is afterward' boþ peyne and
synne. [335] And þerfore be we all yborn sonas of

wreth and of dampnacion perdurable if it nere baptisme
 þat we receyuen which bynymeþ vs þe Culpe. But for-
 soþ þe peyne dwelleþ wiþ vs as þe ¹temptacion which
 peyne hiȝt concupissens. [336] And þis concupissence
 whan it is wrongfully disposed or ordeyned in man it
 makeþ hym to coueite coueitise of flessþ flesshly synne
 by siȝt of his eyen as to erþly þingges and
 eke coueitise of hynes of pride of hert

[337] ¶ Now as to speke of þe furst Coueitise
 þat is concupissence After þe lawe of our membres
 þat weren lawfully maked and by rightful Iugge-
 ment of god. [338] I say for as moche as man is not
 obeysaunt to god þat is his lord þerfo is his fleissþ to
 hym disobeisaunt þorghhe concupiscens [.

[339]
 *no gap in the MS.*] it is impossible but if he be

tempred. somtyme in his flessþ and anoyed to synne
 [340] And þis þing may not faille as longe as þat he lyueþ.
 it may wel wexe feble and faile. by vertue of bapteme
 and by þe grace of god. þourghe penitence. [341] but
 fully shal it neuere quenche þat he ne shal som-
 tyme be neued in hym self. but he were all refreyned by
 siknes or by malefice of sorcerie or cold drinkes

¶ Paulus !

[342] ffor what seiþ seint Poule. þe flessþ coueiten
 aȝeint þe ¶ spirit. and þe sprit aȝeint þe flessþ þei
 bene so contrarie and so striuen þat a man may not
 allway as he wolde [343] ¶ The same seint paule
 afters his grete penaunce in water and in lond in water
 by nyght. and in day by grete perile and in grete peyne
 in londe and enfamyne and thrust in colde and cloþes.
 & onys scorned almost to þe deþe. [344] ȝit seid he
 allas I catiff man. who shal deliuere me from þo prison
 of my catiff body [345] And seint Ierom whan he
 longe tym had wõnned in deserte where as he had no
 company. but beestes. wher as he had

¶ Ieromines

no mete but herbes. and watere to his drink'. ne no' bed /
 but þe naked erþe. for whiche his flessch was blak' as an /
 Ethiopen for hete and neighe destroyed for colde [346]
 ȝit' seide he. þe brennyng of lecherie boiled in al
 his body. [347] Wherefore I woote wel sikerly þat þei
 bene deceyued þat saien þat þei ne bene not' tempted in
 her body. [348] Witnesse of seynt Iame þe apostel. ¶ *Iacobus* :/
 þat seiþ þat euery wight is tempted in his owne con-
 cupiscence. þat is to say þat euerych of vs haþ matere
 and occasion to be tempted of þe norshinge of synne
 þat is in his body. [349] And þerfor seiþ seint Iohn ¶ *Iohannes*
 þe Euangelist ¶ ȝif þat we seyne þat we be wiþ-outen *Euangelista* ./
 synne we disceyuen our self. and troupe is not' in vs.

[350] Now 'shullen ȝee vnderstonde in what manere
 þat synne wexeþ and encreseþ in man. The furst
 þing' is pilk' norshyng' of synne of which I spak'
 byform pilk' concupiscens [351] and after
 þat commeth þe subiecciō of the deuel. þis is to saye
 the deuiles bely þi which he bloweþ in man þe fire
 of concupiscence. [352] ¶ And aftere þat a man by-
 þenkeþ hym whedere he wil doo or noon pilk þinge
 to which he is tempted [353] and þan if þat a
 man wiþstonde and waye Off þe furst' entisinge of his
 flessch and of þe feende þan is it no synne And if it
 so be þat he do not' soo þan feleþ he anon a flaumbe
 of delite [354] and þan it is good to be ware and to kepe
 hym wel. Or ellis he wil falle anon into consentyng' of
 synne and þan wil he do it' if he mowe haue tyme
 and space. [355] And / of þis matere seiþ Moyses by ¶ *Moyse* :/
 þe deuel in þis manere. The fende seiþ I wil
 chace and pursue þe man by wicked suggestions
 and I wil hent' hym by mouyng' or stiringe of
 synne And I wil departe my prise or my prey by de-
 liberacioun. and my lust' shal be accomplished by delite
 ¶ I wil drawe my swerde in consentynge. [356] ffor certes
 right as a sweerde departeþ a þinge in twoo peces Right

so consenting^t departeþ god fro man and than
 wil I sclee hym wiþ myn honde in dethe / of synne. þus
 seiþ þe feende [357] ffor certes þan is a man al
 dede in saule and þus is synne conplised by tempt-
 acion by delite and by consentinge and þan is
 synne cleped ¹aūuiel //

[² ū for et or ec]

[358] ffor soþe synne is in two maners / eiper
 it is venial synne or dedly synne. ¶ Soþly whan man loueþ
 eny creature more þan Ihesu crist^t our creature þan
 is it dedly synne And venial synne it is if man loue
 Ihesu crist^t lasse þan hym ouȝte. [359] for soþ þe
 dede of þis venial synne is ful perilous. ffor it^t amenuseþ
 þe loue þat^t man shuld haue to god more and more
 [360] And þerfor if a man charge more hym self wiþ mony
 such venyal synnes. certes but if it^t so be þat^t he som-
 tyme discharge hym of hem by shrift^t þei may ful
 lizthly amenuse in hym al þe loue þat^t he haþ to Ihesu
 crist^t [361] and þis scipped venial into dedly
 synne. ffor certes þe more þat^t a man chargeþ his saule
 wiþ venial synnes. þe more is he enclyned to falle in
 dedly synne [362] And þerfor lat^t vs nat^t be negligent to
 discharge vs of venyal synnes. ffor þe prouerbe seiþ
 þat^t mony smale makeþ a grete. [363] And harken
 þis ensample A grete wawe of the See commeþ somtyme
 wiþ so grete a violence þat^t it^t drencheþ þe shippe
 and þe same harme doon somtyme þe smale dropes
 of water þat^t entreþ þorgh a litel creues into þe
 thorrok and into þe botme of þe shipp. if men be so
 negligent^t þat^t men ne ²discharge hem not^t by tyme
 [364] And þerfore al þouȝe þere be difference bytwixe
 þise twoo causes of drenching^t. algates þe ship is
 dreint^t [365] ¶ Riȝt so fareþ it^t somtyme of dedly
 synne and of annoyous / venyal synnes whan þei
 multiplie in a man so gretly þat^t þilk worldly þingges
 þat^t he loueþ þorgh which he synneþ venyally is
 as grete in his hert^t as þe loue of god or more [366]

And þerfor þe loue of euery þinge þat is not bysette in god ne doon principaly for goddes sake al þof a man loue it lasse þan god. 3it is it venyal synne. [367] And dedly synne whan þe loue of eny þinge. weieþ in þe hert of a man as mochi as þe loue of god. or more [368] more dedly synne as seiþ seint Austyn. ¶ *Augustinus* is whan man turneþ his hert fro god which þat is verrey souereyne bounte þat may nat chaunge. and 3eueþ his hert to a þinge þat may change and flitte. [369] and certes þat is every þinge sauf god only of heuene. ffor soþ is 3if þat a man 3if his loue þe which þat he oweþ al to god wiþ al his hert vnto a creature. certes as moche of loue as he 3eueþ to whiche creature so moche [he] byreueþ fro god [370] and þerfore dooþ he synne. ffor he þat is dettour to god ne 3eldeþ not al his dette to god þat is to sayn al þe loue of his hert

[371] ¶ Now siþens a man vnderstondeþ generally which is venyal synne. þan is it conable to tellen of special synnes which þat mony a man paraurenture ne demep hem not synnes ne schryuen hem nat of þe same þingges and 3it napeles þei bene synnes [372] and soþly as clerkes writen þis is to say þat euery tyme þat a man etep or drinkeþ more þan suffiseth to þe sustinaunce of his body in certeyn he dop synne [373]. ¶ And eke whan he spekeþ more þan it nedep. it is synne. eke whan he harkenep not mekely þe complaynt of þe poore. [374] eke whan he is in hele of body and wil not fast whan opere men fast withouten cause resonable. Eke whan he slepeþ more þan nedeth or whan he commeþ by pilk encheson late to church or to opere workys of charite. [375] Eke whan he vseþ his wiff wiþ-uten souereyne desire of engendrure to honure of god. Or for þe entent to 3elde to his wiff þe dette of his body. [376] Eke whan he wil not visite þe seke or þe prisoners when he maye.

Eke if he loue wiff or child or eny worldly
 þing more þan reson requireþ. Eke if he flatere or
 blaundissh more þan hym ouȝt for eny necessite./
 [377] ¶ Eke if he amenuse or wiþdrawe þe almesse of
 þe poor./ ¹¶ Eke if he apparailleþ his mete more
 deliciously þan nede is. or ete it to hastely by licourous-
 nesse [378] ¶ Eke if he tale vanytees at þe churche or
 at goddes seruise. or þat he be a talker of ydel wordys
 of folý or of vilanye. for he shal ȝeelde accountes of
 it at þe day of dome [379] ¶ Eke whan he bihotep
 or assureþ to done þingges þat he may not perfourme
 ¶ Eke whan þat by liȝtnesse of folý [he] mysseieþ
 or scornep his neighbour [380] ¶ Eke whan he haþ eny
 wikked suspesion of þinge þer he ne wote of it no soþ-
 fastnesse [381] ¶ Thise / þinges and moo wiþ-out nombre

¶ *Augustinus.* bene synnes as seiþ seynt Austyne

[382] ¶ Now shul men vnderstonde þat al be it soo
 þat noon / erþely man may eschwe all venial synnes. ȝit
 may he refreyn hym by þe brennyng loue þat he
 haþ to our lord Ihesu crist and by preiers and confessionn
 and oþer good werkes so þat it shal but litel greue.

¶ *Idem.*

[383] ffor as seiþ seynt Austyne. If a man loue god
 in such manere þat al þat euere he doop is in þe
 loue of god / or for þe loue of god verreyly. for he
 brennep in þe loue of god. [384] ¶ loke howe moche þat
 a drope of watere þat falleþ in aournays ful of fuyre
 annoyep or greueþ so moche annoyep a venyal
 synne vnto a man þat is parfit in þe loue of Ihesu
 crist [385] ¶ Men may also refreyne venyal synne
 by þe receyuyng of þe precious body of
 Ihesu crist [386] By receyuyng eke of holy watere.
 by almes dede. by general confession of confiteor
 at þe mas. at comlyne. and by blessing of
 biishoppys and of preestes and by other good werkes.

¶ *Sequitur de septem peccatis mortalibus . scilicet
de Superbia . et eorum dependencijs .
circumstancijs & spectantibus . /*

[387] ¶ **N**ow is it bihouely pingē to tellen which bene
dedly synnes þat is to say Caytifnesse
of synnes al þei renne in cooles . but in
dyuers manere ¶ Now bene þei cleped Caytif
for as moche as þei bene cheef . and spryngen of all
oper synnes [388] Of þe roote of þise vij. synnes .
pride is þe general rote of al harmes . for of
þis roote springen certeyn braunches . as Ire . Envie .
Accidie . or sloweth . Auarice . or couetise to comon
vnderstandinge . Gloteny . and lechery . [389] And
euerich of þise chief synnes haþ his braunches and his
twigges . as shal be declared in her chapters folowyngē .

[De superbia.]

[390] And þouȝe so be þat no man can / telle vterly
þe nombre of þe twigges and of þe harmes þat comen of
pride . ȝit wil I shewe a party of hem as ȝe shul
vnderstonð . [391] Ther is Inobeliēce Auauntinge .
Ypocresie . Despite . arro-gance . Imprudence . Swellinge
of hert . Insolence . Elacioun . Pertinacie . veynglorie :
Impaciēce ¶ strif . Contumacie . presumcioun . irreuer-
ence ¶ and mony anoper twigge þat I can not declare [392]
¶ Inobedient is he þat disobeieþ for despite to þe comaun-
ment of god and to his souereyns and to his goostly
fadere [393] ¶ Auauntour is he þat boosteþ of þe harme
or of þe bounte þat he haþ doon [394] ¶ Ipocresie is
hee þat hideþ hym to shewe hym such as he is . and
scheweþ hym suche as he is not [395] ¶ Dispitous
is he þat haþ disdeyne of his neighbours þat is to
sayn of his euen / cristen or haþ despite to doo þat
hym ouȝt to doo [396] ¶ Arrogance is he þat penkeþ
þat he haþ þilk bountes in hym that he haþ not . or

weneþ þat he shuld haue hem of his desertes. or ellis þat he demeþ þat he be. þat he nys nouȝt [397] ¶ Impudent is he þat for his pride haþ no shame for his synne [398] ¶ Swelling of herte is he. whan a man reioyseþ hym of harme þat he haþ doñ [399] ¶ Insolent is he. þat despiseþ in his Iuggement al oþer folk as to regarde of his valewe and of his conynge. and of his spekinge. and / of his berynge [400] ¶ Elaciō is whan þat he ne may neiþer suffre to haue maistrie ne felawe [401] ¶ Inpacient is he þat wil not bene ytauȝt ne vndernome of his vices and by strif werreieþ / troupe wittingly and defendeþ his folye [402] ¶ Contymax is he þat þorgha his indignaciō is azeinst euerich autorite or power of hem þat bene his souereyns [403] ¶ Presumpciō is he. whan a man takeþ an emprise þat hym ouȝt not to doo. or ellis he may it nouȝt doo and þat is called Surquidrie ¶ Irreuerence is whan men done nat honore þer as hem ouȝt to doon. and waiten to be reuerensed [404] ¶ Pertynacy is. whan a man defendeþ his foly. and trusteþ to moche to his owne witte. [405] ¶ Veynglorie is forto haue pompe and delite in temporel heynesse and glorifie hem in worldly estates [406] ¶ Iangelynge is whan a man spekeþ to moche toforn folke and clappeþ as a mylle. and takeþ no kepe what he saip.

[407] and ȝit is þer a prively spice of pride þat waiteþ first to be halowed or he wil be salwed al be he lasse worþi þan þat opere is parauenture and eke he waiteþ or desireþ to sitte or to goo aboute hym in þe way or kys paxe or bene ensensed or goon / to offringe byforn his neighbour [408] and such [.
 no gap in the MS.] a proude desire to be magnified / and honoured to forþe þe puple.

[409] ¶ Nowe beñ þere twoo maners of pride. þat oon of hem is wiþ-in þe herte of man and þat

oper is wiþ-out [410] ¶ Of which soþly þe for
 seide pingges and moo þan I haue seide appartenaunte to
 pride þat is in þe herte of man. And þerto oper spices
 of pride bene wiþ-outen [411] But napeles oon
 of þise spices of pride is signe of þat oper/ Riȝt
 as / þe gay leueseth att' tauerns is signe of þe wyne
 þat is in þe salere. [412] As þis is in mony pingges
 as in speche and in countenaunces. And in outrageous araye of
 cloþinge / [413] for certes of þis nad he no synne ¶ *Note de super-
 his vestimenta-
 rum.*
 in cloþinge. Crist wold not so sone haue noted and spoke of þe
 cloþinge of þilk' riche men in þe gospell [414] ¶ And
 as seiþ seynt Gregore. þat' precious cloþing' is cou-
 pable for þe derþe of hit. and for his soþnesse and
 for his traungenesse. and for his disgisenesse and for þe super-
 fluite. or for þe inordinate scantnesse [.] [415]

 *no gap in the MS.]*

[416] as to þe furst synne þat' is in superfluyte of
 cloþinge which þat' makeþ it so dere to harme of þe
 puple [417] þat' only þe cost' of enbrawdunge.
 þe degyse endentyng or barringe. owdyng' palyng.
 or bendinge. and semblable waast' of cloþinge
 in vanyte [418] But þer is also costlewe furringe in
 her gownes / so mochi pownsenyng of Chisels to maken
 holes. so mochel daggyng' of sheres [419] forþwith
 the Superfluyte in length of þe forseide gownes tral-
 yng in þe dunge and in þe myre on hors and eke on
 foote as wel of man as of womman þat' al þilk
 traill'ng' is varrely as in effecte waasted. consumed. thred-
 bare and roten wiþ dunge raper þan it is ȝeuen to
 þe poor to grete damage of þe forseid' poor folk'
 [420] and þat in sondrie wise This is to seyn. þe
 more þat' clooþ is waasted þe more mote it cost' to
 þe puple for þe scarcenesse [421] ¶ And ferþerouere
 if it so be þat' þei wolde ȝeue suche pounsoned and

dagged cloping^t to þe poor folk^t. it is not^t conuenient^t
 to were for her estate ne suffisaunt^t to bete her necessite^t
 to kepe hem from þe desperaunce of þe firmament^t
 [422] ¶ On þat oper side to speke of þat^t
 disordynat^t scanternesse of clopinge as bene thise Cutted
 scloppes or hanselynes þat^t þorgh^t her schortnesse ne
 keuere not^t þe shameful membres of man to wikked
 entent^t [423] Alasomme of hem shewen þe Shappe and þe bote
 of þe horrible swollen membres þat^t semep^t
 like to þe malady of hirnias in the wrapping^t of her hosen.
 [424] and eke þe buttokkes of hem þat^t faren as it were
 þe hynder part^t of asshe ape in þe ful of þe mone.
 [425] And more ouer the wrecched swollen membres
 þat^t þei / shewe þorgh^t disgisinge in departinge of
 her hosen white and ¹rede semep^t þat^t half hyre shame-
 ful priue membres weren flayne [426] and so be þat^t
 þei departen her hosen in opere colours as is white
 and blak^t or white and blewe or blak^t and rede and so /
 forþ. [427] þan ne semep^t it^t as by variaunce of coloure
 þat^t half þe party of his priuey membres bene corrupte
 by þe fuyr of seynt^t Antonye or by cancre or by oper
 such meschaunces [428] ¶ ȝit^t of þe hyndere parte of her
 buttokkes it^t is ful horrible forto see. for certes in þat^t
 party of her body þer as þei purgen her stynkinge
 ordure [429] þat^t foule party shewe þei proudly to þe puple
 in despite of honeste. which honeste þat^t
 Ihesu crist^t and his frendes obserued to shewe in his
 lif [430] ¶ Now as to outrageous aray of women
 god woote þouȝe þe visage of hem semen
 ful chaaste and debonaire. ȝit^t notefyen þei in her aray of
 a-tyre likerousnesse and pride [431] ¶ I say not^t þat^t
 honeste in clopinge of man and womman is vncon-
 able. but^t certes þe superfluite or þe disordynate scantite
 of clopinge is reproveable [432] ¶ Also þe synne of
 anornament^t or apparaile in þingges þat^t appertenen
 to ridynge. as into mony delicate horses þat^t bene holden

for delite. þat þei bene so faire. fatte and costlewe. [433].
 and also mony a vicious knaue Meyntened by
 cause [of hem] and in to curious harnays and in sadels. In
 cropours in peytrellis and brideþt keuened wip precious
 clope and riche barres and plates of golde and of
 siluere. [434] ffor which god seiþ by Sakarye þe ¶ *Zacharia propheta*
 prophete ¶ I wil confounde þe riders of suche horses
 [435] ¶ This folk taken litel rewardinge of þe rydinge of
 goddes sone of heuene and of his harnays whan he rode
 vpon an asse and had noon oþer harnayes but
 clopes of his poor disciples. ne w[e] ne rede not
 þat euere he rode on oþer beest // [436] I speke þus
 of þe synne of superfluyte and not for þe resonable
 honeste whan reson it requireþ. [437] And ferþer /
 ouer certes pride is gretly notefied in holdinge of grete
 mayne whan þei bene of litel profit or of riȝt of no profite
 [438] And namely whan þat Mayne is felenous and damag-
 ous to þe puple by hardynesse of hie lordship or by
 wey of office. [439] ffor certus such lordes foylen
 þan her lordshipes to þe deuel of helle whan þei
 sustene þe wikkednesse of her mayne [440] ¶ Or ellis
 whan þise folk of lowe degree. as þilk þat halden
 ostelers. sustene þe þeft for her ostilers
 and þat is in mony ¹maners of disceytes.
 [441] Thilk manere of folk bene þe flies þat folowen
 þe honye Or ellis þe houndes þat folowen þe Careyñ
 which forseide folk stranglen spirituelli her lordshipes.
 [442] ffor which þus seiþ David þe prophet ¶ Wikked ¶ *David propheta.*
 dep mote come on þilk lordshipes and [god] ȝeue þat
 þei mote descende a doune into helle. ffor in her
 houses bene iniquitees and shrewdenesses and not god
 of heuene. [443] And certes but if þei done amende-
 ment Riȝt so as god ȝaf his blessinge to Pharao by þe
 seruise of Iacob. & to Laban by the seruise of Ioseph.
 Riȝt so god wil ȝeue his malison to suche lordshippes
 as to sustene þe wikkednesse of her seruauantes [. . .]

. . . *no gap in the MS.*] [444] ¶ Pride of þe table appereþ eke ful oft. for certes / riche men bene cleped to feestes and poor folk ben putte away and rebuked [445] in exceſſe of dyuers metes and drynkes and namely ſuche manere of bake metes [.
. *no gap in the MS.*] and of ſemblabled waast ſo þat it is / abuſion forto penk [446] and eke in grete preciousneſſe of veſſell and curioſite of Mynſtralcie by þe which a man is ſtired þe more to delices of luxurie [447] If ſo be þat he ſette his hert leſſe vpon our lord Iheſu criſt certeyn it is a synne And certeynly þe delites / myȝt bene ſo grete in þe caas þat men myȝt liȝtly falle by hem into dedly synne [448] ¶ The Eſpices þat ſourden of pride. ſoply whan þei ſourden of malice ymagyned and auiſed and fornc caſt. or ellis of vsage bene dedly synnes. it is no doute. [449] And whan þei ſourden by freelte vn- auiſed ſodeynly and ſodeynly wiȝdrawe aȝein. all bene þei greuouſ synnes I. geſſe þat þei be not dedly [450] ¶ Nowe myȝht men aſke wherof þat pride ſourdeþ and ſpringeþ. And I ſay ſomtyme it ſpringeþ of þe goodes of nature and ſomtyme of þe goodes of fortune. and ſomtyme of þe goodes of grace. [451] Certes þe goodes of nature ſtonden in þe goodes of body or goodes of ſoule [452] Certes þe goodes of body bene hale of body ſtrength delyuernesſe. beute. gentrye. ffranchiſes [453] ¶ Goodes of nature of þe ſaule bene good wiȝ ſharpe vnderſtondinge ſotile engin ¶ vertu material. good memorie [454] ¶ Goodes of fortune ben richesſes hye degrees of lordſhipes. preiſynges of þe puple [455] ¶ Goodes of grace bene ſciences. power to ſuffre ſpiritueþ trauaile benygntees vertuous contemplaciõ. wiȝſtondyng of temptaciõ and ſemblable þingges [456] of which forſeide goodes certes it is a ful grete foly a man to priden hym in eny of hem alle. [457]

Now as forto speke of goodes of nature. god wote þat somtyme 'we han hem in nature as moche to our damage as to our profit' [458] As forto speke of helpe of body: certys it' passeþ ful listly. and eke it' is ful oft encheson of þe siknesse of þe saule for god wote þe flessch is a ful grete enymye to þe soule And þerfore þe more þat' a body is hool þe more be we in perile to falle [459] ¶ Eke forto pride hym in his strenght' of body it' is an hie folý for certes þe flessch coueiteþ aȝeinst' þe spirit And ay þe more stronge þat' þe flessch is: þe sorier may þe saule be [460] ¶ And oueral þis strength of body and worldly hardnesse causeþ ful often many men to perile and meschaunce [461] ¶ Eke forto pride hym of his gentrie is ful grete folý. ffor often tyme þe gentry of þe body. bygynneþ þe gentry of the saule And eke we bene al of oon fadere and al of oo modere. and al we be of oo nature roten and corrupte boþ riche and poor [462] ¶ fforsoþ a manere gentrie is to preise þat' apparailþ mannys corage wiþ vertues of moralitees and makeþ hym cristes child' [463] ¶ ffor tresteþ wel þat' ouer what' man þat' synne haþ maistrie he is verrey cherle to synne.

[464] ¶ Nowe bene þere general þingges of gentilnesses. as schewyng' of vices or ribawdry and seruage of synne. in worde. in werk. in contenaunce [465] & vsyng' vertu. Curtesie. and clenness and to be liberal þat' is to sayn / large by mesure. ffor þilk þat' passen mesure is folý and synne [466] ¶ A noþer is to remembre hym of bounte þat' he of opere folk' haþ receyued. [467] Anopere is to be benigne of his sogette. wherfore as seiþ Senek. Ther is no þinge more ¶ Seneca conable to a man of hie estate þan debonairte [468] ¶ And þerfore þise flies þat' men / clepen bees whan þei maken her kynge þei chesen oon þat' haþ no prikke wherwiþ he may styng [469]

¶ Anoper is a man to haue a noble hert^t and a diligent^t to atteyn to hie vertuous pingges [470* *see after 474 and Hengwrt and Petworth MSS.*]

. *no gap in the MS.*

[471] ¶ Certes also who þat^t prideþ hym in þe goodes of fortune he is a ful grete fool. ffor somtyme is a man a ful grete lord^t by þe morowe: þat^t is a wrecche and a caytif er it^t be nyght [472] And somtyme þe [.] *no gap in the MS.*] delites of a man ben cause of þe greuous malady þorgh^t which he dyeth [473] Certes þe commendaciōn of þe puple is somtyme ful fals and ful/ brutile forto trest^t. This day þei preise to morowe þei blame^t. [474] God woote desire to haue commendaciōn eke of puple haþ caused deþe to mony a bisy man [*470] Now certys a man ¹to pride hym in goodes of grace is eke an outrageous folý for þilk^t ziftes of grace þat^t shuld haue turned hym to goodnesse and to medecyne. turneþ hym to venym and to confusiōn as seith seynt Gregor. [475] ¶ Now syþens þat^t so is þat^t 3e han vnderstonden what is pride. and which bene þe spices of it^t and whennys pride sourdeþ and springeþ

¶ *gregorius*

[*The Remedy against Pride.*]

¶ *Remedium
contra
¶ Superbiam*

[476] Now shal 3e vnderstonde which is þe remedy azeinst^t pride. and þat^t is humilite or mekenesse [477] þat^t is a vertue þorgh^t which a man haþ verrey ¶ knowlecch of hym self and holdeþ of hym self no pris ne deynte as in regarde of his desertes consideryng^t euer his frealte [478] ¶ Now bene þer thre maners of humilite. as humilite in hert^t annoþer in mouþ / and þe iij. is in werkes [479] ¶ The humilite of herte is in iij. maners. þat^t oon is whan a man boldeþ hymself as nouȝt^t worþ by-fore god in heuene. Anoþer is whan he despiseþ

noon oper man [480] ¶ The iij. is whan he rekketh nouȝt þoȝe / men holde hym nouȝt worþ ¶ The iij. is whan he nys not sory of his humiliaciō [481] ¶ Also þe humilite of mouþ is in 4 þingges In attempture speche and in humblesse of speche. And whan he byknoweþ wiþ his owne mouþ þat he is such as hym þenkeþ þat he is in his hert. Anoþer is whan he preiseþ þe bounte of anoþer man and nopeng' þerof amenuseþ [482] humilite ¶ Eke in werk' is in 4. maners. The furst' is whan he putteþ oper men to-forn hym. The secounde is to chese þe lowest' place oueraȝ The iij. is gladly to assent' to good counsaile [483] ¶ The 4. is gladly to stonde to þe award' of his souereyn or of hym þat is hier in degre Certeyn þis is a grete werk' of humilite.

¶ De Peccato. Inuidie.

¶ De inuidia: /

[484]

Aftere pride wil I speke of þe foule synne of envie which þat is as by þe word' of þe philisophre sorow of opere mannys prosperite And aftere þe word of seynt Austyne. it is sorowe of oper mennes wele and Ioie of oper mennys harme [485] ¶ This foule synne is platly aȝeinst þe holy goost. al be it so þat euery synne be aȝeinst' þe holy goost. ȝit for as moche as bounte apperteneþ proprely to þe holy goost. and envie commeþ proprely of malice þerfore is proprely aȝenist' þe bounte of þe holy goost [486] ¶ Now haþ malice ij. spices. þat is to sayn hardnes of herte. And wikkednesse or ellis þe flessħ of a man is so blynde þat he 'considereþ not þat he is in synne [. , *no gap in the MS.*] which is þe hardnesse of þe deueth [487] ¶ That opere spice of envie is whan þat a man / werreþ troupe whan þat he wote þat it is troupe. And eke whan þat he werreieþ þe grace of þat god haþ ȝeue to his

neighbour. and al þis is by envie [488] Certes þan is envie þe worst synne þat is. for soþly al oþer synnes bene somtyme aȝein oo special vertue [489] But certes envie is aȝeinste alle vertues and of alle goodnesse for it is sory of alle bountes of neighbour. and in þis manere it is dyuers from alle maner synnes. [490] for wel vnneþes is þer eny synne þat it ne haþ somme delite in hym self sauf only envie þat euer haþ in [hym]self anguyss and sorowe [491] ¶ The spices of envie bene þise. þer is furst sorowe of oþer mennys goodnesse and of her prosperite [. . . *no gap in the MS.*] is kyndely matere of Ioye. þan is enuye a synne aȝeinste kinde. [492] ¶ The seconnde spice of envie is Ioie of oþer mennys harme. [.] . . . *no gap in the MS.*] [493] Of þis seconnde spice commeþ bakbitynge [. . . *no gap in the MS.*] or detraccon and þat haþ ij. spices as thus: ¶ Somme man preiseþ his neighbour by a wikked entent. [494] for he makeþ alway a wikked knotte at the last ende. alwey he makeþ a but at þe last ende. þat is digne and more blame than worþe is al the plesinge [495] ¶ The seconnde spice is þat if a man be good and doþ and seiþ a þinge to good entent þe bakbiter wil turne al þe goodnesse vp so down to his schrewde entent [496] ¶ The iij. is to amenuse þe bounte of his neighbour [497] ¶ þe .4. spice of bakbityng is þis. þat if men speke goodnesse of a man wil þe bakbiter sayn parfay such a man ȝit is bette þan he in dispreysinge of hym that men preise [498] ¶ The .v. spice is forto consent gladly harken þe harme þat men speken of oþer folk. þis synne is ful grete and ay encreaseþ after þe wikked entent of þe bakbiter [499] ¶ aftere bakbitynge commeþ grucchyng or murmuraunce and somtyme it springeþ of inpace aȝeinste god and somtyme aȝeinste man

[500] Azeinst^t god it is whan a man grucceheth azeinst
 þe peyn of helle or azeinst^t pouert^t or losse of cateh^t
 or azeinst reyne or tempest^t or ellis grucceþ þat^t shrewes
 han prosperite. or ellis good men han ad-
 uersite. [501] and alle thise þingges shuld men suffre
 paciently. for þei comen by the riȝtful Iuggement^t and
 ordinaunce of god [502] ¶ Somtyme¹ commeþ grucchinge of
 auarice as Iudas grucched azeinst þe Mawdeleme whan
 she ennoynted þe hede of oure lorde Ihesu crist wip her
 precious oynement^t [503] This maner of murmur is such
 as whan men grucchen of goodnesse and þat^t men selue
 done er þat^t oþer folk doon of her owne Cateh^t [504]
 ¶ Somtyme commeþ murmur of pride / as whan symon
 þe phiryse grucched azeinst Maudelēyn. whan
 she approached to Ihesu crist and wepte at his fete for her
 synnes. [505] And somtyme it sourdeþ to
 envie whan man diskeuereþ a mannys harme þat^t was
 pryvey or bereþ hym / on honde þinge þat^t is fals [506]
 ¶ Murmur eke is oft^t amonges seruauantes þat^t grucchen
 whan her souereynes bidden / hem to doon leeful þingges.
 [507] and for as moche as þei dure not openly say nay. ne wiþ-
 saye the comaundementz of her souereyn. ȝit wil þei saye
 harme and grucche and murmure priuely for verrey
 despite. [508] which wordes men clepe þe deuels
 Pater noster. Thouȝe so be þat^t þe deuēl had
 neuere Pater noster. but^t þat^t folk ȝeuen it such
 a name. [509] Somtyme it commeþ of Ire or
 of prive hate þat^t norshethi rancour in hert^t as afterward^t
 I shal declare. [510] þan commeþ eke bitternesse of
 hert^t þorgh which bitternesse euery good dede of his
 neizbour semeþ to hym bitter^t and vnsauery [511]
 Than commeþ discord þat^t vnbyndeþ al maner
 of frendship Than comeþ scornynge of [.
 , *no gap in the MS.*] his neiz-
 bour^t al doo he neuer so wel [512] ¶ Than comeþ
 accusinge as whan a man sekeþ occasiō to annoyen his

neighbour which þat is like þe craft of þe deucl
 þat waiteþ boþ nyȝt and day to accusen vs alle
 [513] ¶ Than commeth malignite þorgh which a man
 annoyeth his neighbour prively if he may [514] And if he
 noȝt ne may algate his wikked wille ne shal not wante.
 as forto brenne his hous prively. or enpoyesen or scleen /
 his beestes and semblable þingges

¶ *Remedium contra Inuidiam [from the margin]*

[515] ¶ Now wil I speke of þe remedie aȝeinst þis foule
 synne of Envie ¶ first is þe loue of god
 principal and louyng of hym self and of his neighbour. for
 soþly þat oon ne may not be wipouten þat
 oþer [516] And trust wel þat in þe name of þi
 neighbour þou shalt vnderstonde þe name of þi
 broþer for certes al we han oo fader flesshly. and oo
 Modere ¹that is to say Adam and Eve and eke oo fadere
 spirituel þat is to say god of heuene [517] Thine
 neigboure art þou holden forto louen And willen hym al
 goodnesse and þefore seiþ god loue þine neigbour as
 þine self þat is to say to saluacion boþ of lif and of
 saule [518] And more ouer þou shalt loue hym in
 word and benigne amonesyng and chastisyng
 and conforte hym in his anoyes and prey for hym wip
 al þine hert [519] ¶ And in dede þou shalt loue hym
 in such wise þat þou shalt done to hym in charite
 as þow woldest man did to þine owne persone.
 [520] & þefore þow shalt not done hym no damage
 ne wikked worde ne harme in his body ne in his catel
 ne in his saule by entising of wikked ensample. [521]
 þow shalt not desiren his wif ne noon / of his þingges
 ¶ Vnderstonde eke þat in þe name of þi neigboure his com-
 prehended his enemye. [522] Certes a man shal loue his
 enemye for þe comaundmentz of god And soþely þi
 frende shalt þou loue in god. [523] I say þine
 Enemye shalt þou loue for goddis sake by his comaunde-

ment. ffor if it were reson þat man shuld hate his enemye. forsoþ god wold not receyue vs to his loue þat bene his enemyes [524] azeinst iij manere of wrongges þat his enemye doþ to hym he shal do þre þingges as þus. [525] Azeinst hate and rancour of hert he shal loue hym in hert. Azeinst chidyng and wikked wordes. he shal prey for his enemye. Azeinst þe wikked dede of his enemye he shal doon hym bounte [526] ffor crist seiþ. Loueþ þoure enemyes and preieþ for hem þat spekeþ þou harme And eke for hem þat þou chasen and purswen and doth bounte to hem þat yow haten ¶ Loo þus comaundeþ vs our lord Ihesu crist to doo to oure enemyes. [527] ffor sople nature dryueþ vs to loue our frendes. And parfay oure enemyes han more nede to loue þan our frendes. and þei þat more nede haue certes to hem shal men doo goodnes. [528] and certes in þilk dede haue [we] remembraunce of þe loue of Ihesu crist þat deyed for his enemyes. [529] And in as moche as þilk loue is þe more greuous to perfourme so moche is more grete þe merite And þefore the louyng of our enemye haþ confounded þe venyme of þe deueþ. [530] ffor riȝt as þe deuel is discomfited by humilite riȝt so is he wounded to the deep by þe loue of oure enemye [531] Certes þan is loue þe medecyne þat chaseth out þe ve'nym of Envie fro mannys herte [532] The spices of þis pas shullen be more largely declared in her chapters folowinge

¶ De Ira: / [from the margin]

[533]

Aftre Envie wil I declare þe synne of Ire ffor Asople who þat haþ Enuye vpon his neizbour anon comonly he wil fynde hym matere of wreth in worde or in dede azeinst hym to whom he haþ envie [534] And as wel commep Ire of pride

as of enuye. ffor soply he þat is proude or envious
is lityly wroop

[535] This synne of Ire aftere þe descriuyng of
¶ *Angustinus* seint Austyne is wikked wylt to bene auenged. by
worde or by dede || [536] Ire aftere þis Philosophre is
þe veruent blood of man yquykke in his hert þorgh
which he wil / harme to hym þat he hateþ. [537] ffor
certes þe hert of man. by eschawfyng and moovinge of
his blood waxeþ so trouble þat he is out of all
Iugement of reson [538] ¶ But 3e shullen / vnderstonde
þat Ire is in two maners þat oon of hem is good and
þat oþer is wikked [539] The good is by
Ialousie of goodnesse þorgh þe which a man is wrope
wylt wikkednesse [. . . . *no gap in the MS.*] And þer-
¶ *anyone.* / for seith þe wise man þat Ire is bette þan play [540]
This Ire is with debonairete and it is wroop wylt-
outen bitternesse not wrope azeinst þe man but
wroop wylt þe mysdede .of þe man. As seiþ þe
prophete david Irascimini & nolite peccare [541] ¶ Now
vnderstonde þat wikked Ire is in two maners
þat is to seyn sodeyn Ire or hastif Ire wylt-outen
avisement and consentyng of his reson [542] þe menyng
and þe sens of þis is þat þe reson of a man ne con-
sent not to þilk sodeyn Ire and þan is it venial
[543] Anoper Ire is ful wikked þat commeth of
vilany of herte avised and cast bifore wylt wikked wylt
to do vengeaunce and þerto his reson consenteþ. and
so soply þis is dedly synne [544] ¶ This Ire is so dis-
pleasaunt to god þat it troubleþ his hous and chaseþ þe
holy goost out of manne saule [.
.
.
no gap in the MS.] [545] and putte in hym þe lik-
nes of þe deueþ and bynymmeþ þe man fro god þat
is his riztful lorde [546] This Ire is a ful grete
pleasaunce to þe deueþ. for it is þe deuels forneys
þat is eschauffed wylt þe fuyre of helle. [547] ffor certes

as fuyre is more myȝty to distroye erply
 pingges þan another element Riȝt so Ire is myȝty to
 distroye aȝ spiritual pingges. [548] Loke howe þat
 fire of smale gledys that bene almost dede vnder asshen
 wollen quyklike aȝein whan þei bene touched wip
 bremstone Riȝt soo Ire wil euermore quikke aȝein
 whan it is touched by pride þat is kered in
 mannys hert. [549] ffor certes fire may not come
 out of no þinge but if it were first in þe same þing,
 naturelly as fire is drawen out of þe flyntes wip steele
 [550] And riȝt so as pride is often matere of Ire
 Riȝt so is rancoure norssher and keper of þe [551] Ther is
 a maner of tree as seiþ seint Isodere þat whan men ¶ Isodere
 maken fire of þilk tree and keuereþ þe cooles of it with
 asshen soþly þe fuyre of it wil last last al a ȝere or more
 [552] ¶ And riȝt so fareþ it of rancour whan he is
 onys conceyued in þe hertis of somme men. Certeyne it wil
 last þerauenture from oon / Ester day til anoþer
 day or more [553] But Certes þilk man
 is ful ferre from þe mercy of god al þilk while

[554] ¶ In þis forsaide deuels fornays þer foorgen. thre
 shrewes Pride þat aȝ bloweþ and encreseþe
 þe fire by pride and wikked wordes. [555] Than
 stant Envie and holdeþ þe hote yren vpon þe hertes
 of man wip a peire of longe tongges of longe Rancour
 [556] and þan stant þe synne of contynnyng or
 strif and þeest and þatereþ and forgeþ by vileyns
 reprouyngges [557] ¶ Certes þis cursed synne annoyep
 boþe þe man hym self and eke to his neighbour.
 ffor soþly al ¶ most al þe harme þat eny man
 doþe to his neighbour commep of wrath. [558] ffor
 certes outrageous wraþe doþ aȝ þat euer the
 deuyl hym comaundeþ for he ne spareþ neiþer
 crist ne his swete modere [559] And in his out-
 rageous angre & Ire allas allas ful mony one
 at þat tyme feleþ in his / herte ful wikkedly

bop of crist and of all his halowes. [560] Is
 not þis a cursed vice [.]
 *no gap in the MS.* his debonaire
 wif espiritueþ þat shulde kepen his saule [561]
 Certes it bygynneþ eke goddys dieu lordship and
 þat is mannys saule and þe loue of his neighbours
 It striveþ eke alday azeinst þe troupe. It reueþ hym þe
 quiete of his hert and subuerteþ his saule

[562] ¶ Of Ire comen þise stynkinge engendures.
 first hate þat is olde wreþe discord þorgh which
 a man forsakeþ his olde frende þat he haþ loued ful
 longe. [563] and þan comen werre and euery
 manere of wronge þat man doth to his neighbour in
 body or in cateþ [564] ¶ Of þis cursed. ¹synne of Ire
 comen eke mannys slaughtere And vnderstondeþ wel þat
 homicide þat is mannys sclauztere is in dyuers wise Some
 manere of Omycide is espirituel and somme is bodely. [565]
 Spiritual mannesslaughter is in vj. þingges first by
 hate as seiþ seint Iohn. That he þat hateþ his broþer
 is an homicide. [566] [Homicide] Is eke by bakbytinge. of
 whiche bakbiters seiþ salomon. þat þei han. twoo
 swerdes with which þei scleen her neighbours. ffor
 soþly as wikked is to bynyme his good name as
 his lif [567] ¶ Omycide is eke in ȝeuynge of wikked
 counsaile by fraude as forto ȝeue / counsaile to array
 wikkedly custumes and taliages [568] Of which seiþ
 Salomon ¶ lyoun rorynge. bere hungry bene like to
 cruel lordshippes in wipholding or a-breggyng of þe
 Shepe or þe hire of þe wages of [.]
 *no gap in the MS.* þe almesse of poor folk
 [569] ffor which þe wise man seiþ ffeþeþ hym þat
 almost dieþ for hunger. for soþly but þou fede hym
 þou sleest hym. and alle þise bene dedly synnes [570]
 Bodyly mansclaunter is whan þou sleest hym wip þi
 tunge in opere manere as whan þou comaundest to
 sclene a man or ellis ȝeuest hym counsaile to scleen a

¶ Iohannes.

¶ Salomon

¶ Idem

man. [571] Mansslaughtere in dede is in foure maners
 That oon is by lawe Riȝt as a Iustice dampneþ
 hym þat is copable to þe deef But lat þe Iustise
 be ware þat he do it riȝtfully. and þat he do it not
 for delit to spille bloode. but for riȝtwi-
 nesse. [572] Anopere homycide is doon for
 necessite as whan a man scleeþ anoper in his defendaunt
 and þat he may noon oper wise eskaþe for his
 owne deþe. [573] But certeynly if he may eskaþe wiþ-
 out sclaughter of his aduersary and scleeþe hym
 he doþ synne and he shal bere penaunce as for dedly
 synne [574] ¶ Eke if a man by caas or auenture shete
 an arowe or cast a stone wiþ whiche he scleeþ a man
 it is homycide [575] ¶ Eke if a womman by negligence
 ouerleip her childe in sclepinge it is homycide. and
 dedly synne. [576] Eke whan a man distourbeþ con-
 cepcion of a childe or makeþ a womman barayn
 by drynkinge of venemous herbes þorgh which she may
 not conceyue or scleeþ a childe by drynkes or
 ellis putteþ in certeyn material pingges in her secre
 places to sle þe child [577] or ellis doþ vnkinde
 synne by which man or womman shedeth his nature
 in manere or in place þer as a childe may not be con-
 ceuyed or ellis if a womman haþ conceyued and hurte
 he[r] self and scleeþ her childe ȝit is it homycide
 [578] ¶ What say we eke of wommen þat Mordren
 her children for drede or worldly shame certes an
 horrible homicide [579] Homicyde is eke if a mon ap-
 procheþ to a womman by desire of lecherie þorge which þe
 childe is pershed or ellis smyteþ a womman wittingly
 þorgh which she leseþ her childe aft þise bene homy-
 cides and horrible dedly synnes / [580] ȝit commeþ þerof
 Ire and mony moo synnes as wel in worde as in þouȝt and
 in dede as he þat aretteþ vpon god or blameþ god
 of þinge of which he is hym self gilty or dispiseþ
 god and aft his halowes as done þise cursed hasardours

in dyuers cuntrees. [581] þis cursed synne doon þei
 whan þei felen in her hert ful wikkedly of god and
 his halowes [582] ¶ Also whan þei treten vnreuerently
 þe sacrament of þe autere Thilk synnes is so grete
 þat vnnepes may it be relested but þat mercy of
 god passeþ his werkes it is so grete and he so
 benigne. [583] Than commep of Ire attray Angre
 whan a man [is] sharpely amonased. in his shrift to for-
 lete synne [584] þan wil he be angry and
 answer hokerly and angerly or defende and excuse
 his synne by vnstedfastneshe of his flessch or ellis he
 did it forto holde company with wise felawes. or
 ellis he seiþ þe fende entised / hym [585] or ellis he
 did it for his zouþe. or ellis complexioñ is so
 corracious that he may not forbere. or ellis it is his
 destanye as he seiþ vnto a carteyn age. or ellis he
 seiþ hit commep hym of gentilnesse of his owncestres
 and semblable þingges [586] ¶ Alle þise manere folkes
 so wrappen hem in her synnes þat þei ne wol not
 delyuere hem self. Soply no wizt þat excusel
 hym wilfully of his / synne may not be delyuered of her
 synne til þat he mekely byknowep his synne [587]
 ¶ Aftere þat commep sweringe þat is expresse
 azeinst þe comaundement of god. and þis bifalleþ oft
 of anger and of Ire [588] God seiþ þou shalt not
 take þe name of þi lorde god in veyn nor in ydelh ¶ Also
 our lorde Ihesu crist seiþ by þe word of seynt Mathewe
 [. *no gap in the MS.*] [589] Ne wil 3e
 not swere in al manere. Neiper by
 heuene for it is goddes trone. ne by þe erþe for it is þe
 benche of his fete ¹ne by Ierusalem for it is þe cite of
 a grete kyng Ne by þine hede. for þou maist not
 make an heer white ne blak [590] But seiþ by þour
 3ee 3ee. and nay nay and what þat is more
 it is euell þus seiþ crist [591] ¶ flor cristes sake ne swereþ
 not so synfully in dismembringe of crist by soule

¶ Textus

¶ Mathewe

herte bonys and body for certes it' semep þat' 3e
þenk þat' þe cursed Iwes ne dismenbred / hym nouzt
ynouze þe precious persone of crist' But' 3e dismenbren
hym more [592] And if so be þat' þe lawe com-
pelle 3ou to / swere þan rewleþ 3ou after þe lawe of
god in 3oure sweryng' as seiþ Ieremye 4^{to}. capitulo.

[. no gap in the MS.] Thou ¶ Ieremie quarto
capitulo

shalt' kepe thre condicions. Thou shalt swere in troupe
in doom and in riȝtwisnesse [593] This is to sayn ¶ Iurabis in
veritate in iudicio
et iustitia [same
side-note and
quotation in the
Somptour's
Tale. MS. leaf
219, back]
þou shalt swere soop. for euery lesinge is aȝeinst' crist'
ffor crist' is verrey troupe And þenk wel þis þat'
euery grete swerer not' compelled lawfully to swere
þe wounde shal not' departe fro his hous þe whiles he
vseth such vnlieful sweringe [594] ¶ Thow shalt swere

eke in doom whan þow arte constrayned by þi domes
man to witnesse þe troupe [595] ¶ Eke þou shalt
not' swere for envie ne for fauour' ne for mede
but for riȝtwisnesse for declarynge to
worship of god and in helping of þine euen-
cristen [596] And þerfore euery man þat'
takeþ goddis name in ydel or falsely swereþ wiþ
his mouþ or ellis takeþ on hym þe name of crist'
to be called a cristen man and lyueþ aȝeinst' cristes
lyuyng' and his techinge alle þei taken goddes name
in ydel [597] ¶ Loke eke what' seiþ seint' Petere

¶ Petrus' /
Actus 4^o. Non est aliud nomen sub celo. Ther

nys noȝ oþer name seiþ seint' Peter vnder heuene yȝeuen
to men in which þei mote be saued þat' is to
seyn but' in þe name of Ihesu crist' [598] ¶ Take kepe eke
how þat' þe precious name of Ihesu crist' as seiþ seynt' paule

Ad philipenses 2^o In nomine Ihesu &cetera. That' in þe ¶ Ad philipenses

name of Ihesu euery knee of heuenly creatures or
erply or of helle shuld bowen for it' is so hiȝe
and so worshipfult' that' þe cursed fende in helle shuld
tremblee to heren it' nempned [599] than
semep it' þat' men þat' sweren / so horribly by his

blessed name þat þei dispisen it more boldely
þan did þe cursed Iwes. or ellis þe deuel þat
trembleþ whan he hereþ his name

[600] ¶ Now certes sipens þat swerynge but it be
doo al lawfully is holy defended me The wors is
forswering falsly. and ȝit nedelees.

[601] What say we eke of hem þat deliten hem
in swerynge and holden it a gentrye or a manly dede to
swere grete oþes And what of hem þat of verrey
vsage ne cessen not to swere grete oþes al þe cause
not worþ oon strawe Certes þis is horrible synne [602]
swering sodeynly wip-out avisement is eke a
synne [603] ¶ But lat vs nowe goo to pilk horrible and cursed/
swerynge of adiuracioñ and coniuracioñ as doñ þise fals en-
chauntours or nigromanciens in basyns ful of water or
in a bryt swerde. in a sercle or in a fuyre or in a shulder
bone of a shepe [604] I can not seyn but þat þei
doon cursedly and ¶ dampnably aȝeinst crist and al þe
feip of holy church.

[605] What say we of hem þat byleuen on
dyuynales as by fliȝt or by noys of briddes or of beestes or of
sorte by Egrimauncye. by dremes. by chirking
of doores by gnewyng of rattyte or crakinge of howses
and such maner wrecchednesse [606] Certes al þis
thyng is defended by god and by holy churche for //
which þei bene acursed to þei come to amendement
þat on such filþe setten her byleue [607] ¶ Charms
for woundes and maladies of men or of beestes if þei
taken eny effecte it bene perauenture þat god suffreþ
it for folk shuld ȝeue þe more faipe and reuerence to
his name

[608] ¶ Now wil I speke of lesyngges which gener-
ally is fals signyfiant or woord in entent to deceyuen
his euen cristen [609] ¶ Some leying is of which
þer commeþ noon auauntage to no wiȝt and somme lesyng
turneþ to þe ease eiper profit of a man and to

damage of a noþer man [610] A noþere lesing is for to saue his liff or his catell. An oþer lesynge comþeþ of delit^e furto lye In which delite þei willen / forge a longe tale and peynte it wip aȝt circumstanneces. wher alle þe grounde of þe tale is fals [611] ¶ Some lesynge comþeþ for he wil sustene his word^e and some lesing^e commeth of recchelessnesse with-outen avisement^e and Semblable þingges

[612] ¶ Lat^e vs nowe touche þe vice of fflaterie which ne comþeþ not gladly but for drede or for coueityse. [613] fflattery is generally wrongfuȝt presinge. fflaterers bene þe deuyl norrces þat norsþeþ his chyldren wip mylk of losengry^e. [614] ffor soþ seiþ Salomon: ¶ Salomon. þat fflaterie is wors þan detracciōn. ffor. somtyme detracciōn makeþ an haunteyn man be þe more humble. ffor he dredeþ detracciōn But certes fflaterye makeþ a man to vn¹haunten his hert^e and his countenaunce [615] ¶ fflaterers bene þe deuyls Enchaunters for þei make a man to wene of hym self be like þat he nys not like [616] Thei bene like Iudas þat bytraied [. no gap in the MS.] a man to selle hym to his enemye þat is to þe deuēȝ [617] ¶ fflaterers bene þe deuyls Chapileyns þat synggen euer Placebo [618] I rekken flaterye in þe vices of Ire. ffor oft tyme if a man be wrooþ wip a-noþere þan wil he flater some wiȝt to susteyne hym in his querēȝ

[619] Speke we now of such cursyng^e as comþeþ out of yrouis herte ¶ Malisoun may be seide generally Euery maner power of harme such cursyng^e byreueþ man fro þe regne of god. as seiþ seynt paule [620] And oft ¶ Paulus. / tyme such cursing^e wrongfully retourneth aȝein to hym þat curseþ as a brid retourneth aȝein to his owne nest [621] And ouer al þing^e men ouȝt eschewe to curse her children and ȝeue to þe deuēȝ her engendrure as ferforþ as in hem is ¶ Certes it is a grete perile and grete synne.

[622] Lat vs þan speke of chidyng and reproche
 which bene grete woundes in mannys hert ffor
 þei vnsewen þe semes of ffrendship in mannys hert.
 [623] ffor certes vnneþes may a man pleyndly ben
 accorded wip hym þat haþ hym openly reuyled and
 reproued and disclaundred þis is a ful grialy synne
 ¶ And crist seip in þe gospell [624] ¶ And take kepe now
 þat he þat reproueþ his neighbour eipere he reproueþ
 hym by som harme of peynes þat he haþ on his body.
 as meself croked harlot or by some synne þat he doþ
 [625] ¶ Now if he reproue hym by harme of peyn
 þan turneþ þe prophete to Ihesu Crist. ffor peyne is
 sent by þe riȝtwis sonde of god and by his suffraunce
 be it meselrye or maym or maladie [626] and if he
 reproue hym vncharitably of synne as þou hullour þou
 dronklewe harlot and so forþ þat apperteneþ þat
 to þe roiȝsyng of þe deuell þat euer haþ ioye
 þat men doñ synne [627] ¶ And certes chyding may
 not come but of vileyns hertes. ffor after þe
 habundaunce of þe hert spekeþ þe mouþ ful oft
 [628] And ȝe shullen vnderstonde þat loke by eny way
 whan eny man shal chastise a noþer þat he be ware
 fro chydyng or reprouyng ffor trewly but he be
 ware he may ful liztly quykken þe fyre of angre and of
 wretth which þat he shuld quenche. and perauenture
 scleeþ ¹him þat he myȝt chastise wip benyg-
 nyte [629] ¶ ffor as seip Salomon ¶ The amyable tunge is
 þe tree of lif þat is to saye of lif spiritual. and
 a disselaue tunge scleeþ þe spirit of hym þat
 reproueþ and eke of hym þat is reproued [630] ¶ Loo
 ¶ what seip seint Austyn ¶ Ther nys no þinge ylike þe
 deuels child as he þat oft chideþ ¶ Seynt Poule seip
 eke ¶ I þe Seruaunte of god by-house not to chide. [631] and
 howe þat chydyng is a vileyns þinge bytwix al
 manere folk. ȝit is it certes most vncounable
 by-twix a man and his wiff. for þer nys neuer rest

¶ And þerfor seiþ Salomon ¶ An hous þat is vnkeured ¶ Salomon.
 in reyn and droppinge and a chidyng' wiff bene ylike
 [632] a man þat is in a dropping hous in many
 places. they hee eschewe þe droppinge in oon place
 it droppeþ on hym in a noþer place ¶ So fareþ it be
 a chiding wiff. but she chide hym in oo place she
 wol chide hym in anoþer [633] And þerfore better is ¶ Idem.
 a morsel of brede with loye þan an hous ful of
 delices wip chidynges seiþ Salomon [634] ¶ And
 poule seiþ O ȝe wommen be ȝe subiectys to ȝoure ¶ Paulus.
 husbondes as byhousþ in god. And ȝe men loueþ ȝoure
 wyves. Ad colonisenses .3°.

[635] ¶ Afterward speke we of scornynge which is a
 wikked synne And namely whan he scornep a man for
 his good werkes. [636] for certes suche scorners
 faren like þe foule tode þat may not endure to
 smelt þe swete sauour of þe vyne what it
 floursaþ [637] ¶ Thise scorners bene partyng' felawes
 wip þe deueth. for þei han Ioie whan þe deueth
 wynneþ and sorowe whan he leseþ [638] ¶ They bene
 aduersaries to Ihesu crist for þei haten þat he loueþ
 þat is to say sauacion of saule

[639] ¶ Speke we now of wikked counsaile. ffor he þat
 wikked counsaile ȝeueþ is a traitour. ffor he disceyueþ
 hym þat trustep in hym Vt Achitofel de Absolonem
 ¶ But napeles ȝit is it wikked counsaile firste aȝainst hym
 self [640] for as seiþ þe wise man Euery fals
 lyuyng' hap his propre in hym self þat he þat
 wiff any anoþer man he annoyep firste hym self.
 [641] And men shullen vnderstonde þat man shal not
 take his counsaile of fals folk ne of to angry folk or
 greuous folk ne of folk þat louen specially to moche her owne
 profite ne to moche worldly folk namely in counsailling'
 of saules

[642] ¶ Now commeþ þe synne of hem þat
 maken discorde amonges / folk which is a synne þat

crist' hateþ vtterly and no wonder is. ffor he deyed
 forto make concorde. [643] And more shame done þei to
 crist' þan did þei þat' hym crucified' ffor god
 loueþ better þat' frendship be amonges folk' þan
 he did his owne body þe which he ȝaf for vnitees.
 therfore bene þei likned to þe deuel þat' euer is
 about' to make discord'

[644] ¶ Now commeþ þe synne of double tunge. such
 as spoken faire to-fore folk and wikkedly behynde or
 ellis þei / maken semblaunt' as þouȝe þei spoken of
 good entencioñ or ellis in game and pley and ȝit' þei
 speke of wikked entent

[645] ¶ Now commeþ bywreying' of counsaile þorgh
 which a man is defamed vnneþes may he restore þe
 damage

[646] ¶ Now commeþ manace þat' is an open foly ffor
 he þat' open manaceþ he tretteþ more þan he may
 performe ful often tyme

[647] ¶ Now commeþ ydel wordes þat' is wip-outen
 profite of hym þat' spekeþ þe wordes. and eke of hym
 þat' harkenep þoo wordes // or ellis ydel wordes. ben /
 þoo þat' bene nedeles or wip-outen entent' of naturel
 profite. [648] and al be it' þat' ydel wordes be som-
 tyme venial synne ȝit' shuld' men doute hem. for we
 shullen ȝeue rekenyng' of hem to-fore god

[649] ¶ Now commeþ langelynge þat' may not come wip-
 oute synne. And as seiþ Salomon ¶ It is signe of a-perþ
 foly [650] and þerfor a philisophre seide whan
 a man asked hym how men shulde plesse þe puple.
 And he answerd' to mony good werkes and speke fewe
 langelynggs

[651] ¶ After þis commeþ þe synne of Iapes. þat'
 bene deuels apes. for þei maken folk to lauze at
 her Iaprie as folkes doon at þe gaudes of an ape.
 Suche Iapes defendep seint' Poule [652] ¶ Loke how
 þat' vertuous wordes and hooly conforten hem

¶ Salomon

þat' travaillen in þe seruise of criste Riȝt so conforten
þe vileyns words and knakkes of Iapers hem þat'
trauailen in þe servise of þe deueſt [653] ¶ Thiſe bene
þe synnes / þat' comen of þe tunge þat' comen of Ire
and of other synnes

[*Remedies against Ire.*]

[654] ¶ The remedye aȝeinſt Ire is a vertue þat' men
clepen mansuetude þat' is debonairete and
eke a nother vertue þat' men clepe pacience [.]
no gap in the MS.

[655] ¶ Debonairte wiȝdroweþ and refreyneþ
þe styryngges and þe meuyngs of mannys corage in his
hert' and ſuch manere þat' þei ne ſkippe not' out' by
anger ne by Ire [656] ſuffraunce ſuffreþ ſwetly al
þe annoyaunces and þe wrongges þat' men doon to a man
outward [657] ¶ Seint' Ierom seiþ þus of debonairte ¶ *Ieronimus*
þat' hit' dooþ noon harme to no wiȝt ne seiþ for noon
harme þat' men hym done ne ſayn He ne eſchaungeþ nouȝt'
aȝeinſt' his reſon. [658] This vertue ſom / ¹ſomtyme commeþ
of nature ¶ ffor as seiþ þe philisophre. A man is a quyk
þinge by nature. debonaire and treteable by goodnes
But' whan debonairte is enfourmed by grace. it
is þe more worþ

[659] ¶ Pacience þat' is anoþer remedye aȝeinſt' Ire
is a vertue þat' ſuffreþ ſwetely euery mannys goodnesse
and is not' worþ for non harme þat' is doon to hym
[660] ¶ The philisofre seiþ þat' pacience is þilk
vertue þat' ſuffreþ debonairely aȝ þe outrages of
aduerſite and euery wikked worde. [661] This vertue
makeþ a man like to god. and makeþ hym his
owne dere childe as seiþ criſt'. This vertu diſcomfiteþ
þine enemye And þerfore seiþ þe wiſe man If þou
wilt venquyſſh þine / ennemye. lerne to ſuffre [662] And
þou ſhalt' vnderſtonde þat' a / man ſuffreth four maner

of greuauunce in outward þingges. azeinst which foure he mote haue iiij. maners of paciencies./

[663] ¶ The furst greuauunce is of wikked wordes. þilk greuauunce suffreþ Ihesu crist wiþ-uten grucchinge ful patiently whan þe Iwes despised hym and reproueden hym ful oft [664] Suffre þou perfore patiently. for þe wise man eke seiþ ¶ If þou stryue wiþ a fool þoughe þe fool be wroþ. or þouze he lauze algate þou shalt haue no rest. [665] That oþer greuauunce outward is forto haue damage of þi catell ¶ Ther azeinst suffred crist ful patiently whan he was dispoilled of al þat he had in this liff and þat nas but his clothes [666] ¶ The iiij. greuauunce is a man to haue harme in his bodye. and þat suffred crist ful patiently in all his passioñ [667] ¶ The iiij. greuauunce is in an outrageous labour in werkes. wherfore I say þat folk þat maken her seruauñtes to travaille to greuoualy or out of tyme as in holy days. soþly þei doon grete synne. [668] Here azeinst suffred crist ful patiently and taught vs patience whan he bare vpon / his blessed shulder þe crois vpon which he shuld suffre dispitous deep. [669] Here may men lerne to be patient. for soþly not oonly cristen men bene patient for þe loue of Ihesu crist and for guerdon of þe blisse of heuene and of þe blisful liff þat is perdurable But certes þe olde paynyms þat neuere were cristen comenden & vseden þe vertue of pacience

¶ *Philosophus* [670] A philosphre vpon a tyme þat wold haue beten his disciple for his grete trespase. for which he was gretly amened and brouzt a zeerd to scoure þe childe [671] and whan þe childe segh þe zeerde he seide to his maister what wil 3e doo. I wil bete þe quod his maistere. for þine correctionn. [672] for soþ quod þe childe 3e ouzt first correcte 3oure self þat hap lost 3oure pacience for þe gilt of a childe. [673] for soþ quod þe maister al wepinge þu

saicest þe soop. Hauē þou þe ȝerde my dere sone and correcte me for myn Inpacience [674] ¶ Of pacience commeth obedience þorgh which a man is obediē to crist and into alle hem to which he ouȝt be obediē in crist [675] and vnderstonde wel þat obedience is parfite whan men doon gladly and hastely wiþ good hert entierly al þat he shuld do. [676] Obedience / generally is to perfourme þe doctrine of god and of his souereins to whiche hym ouȝte to bene obeysaunt in al riȝtwisnesse

¶ *De peccato accidie [from margin]*

[677]

Aftere þe synnes of Envie I wil speke of þe synne of Accidie. ffor Envie blyndep þe hert of a man. And Ire troubleth a man. and accidy makeþ hym heuye þouȝtful and wrowe [678] ¶ Envie and Ire maken bitternesse in hert which bitternesse is / modere of accide and bynymeþ hym þe loue of al goodnes þat is accyde þe angwiſh of a trouble hert and seynt Austyne seiþ it is anoye of goodnesse and anoy of harme. [679] / Certes þis is a dampnable synne for it doop wronge to Ihesu crist in as mochi as he nymeþ þe seruice þat men ouȝt to doo Ihesu crist wiþ al diligence as seiþ salomon / ¶ *Salomon.* [680] But accide doop noon suche diligence He dop al þing wiþ anoy and wrawnesse sclaknesse and escusaciō and wiþ dulnesse and vnlust ¶ ffor which þe booke seiþ. Accursed be he þat dop þe seruise of god negligently [681] Than is accidy enuye to euery estate of man for certes þe estate of man is in þre maners. [682] eiþer It is þe estate of Innocence as was þe estate of Adam byforn þat he felle in to synne in which estate he was halden to wirche as in heryng and in adourynge of god [683] ¶ Anoper estate is þe estate of synful men in which estate men ben halden

to labour in preyng^t to god for amendement^t of her
 [. *no gap in the MS.*]
 synnes [684] ¶ Anoþer estate is þe estate of grace in
 which estate he is halden to do werkes of penitence and
 certes to all þise þingges is accidye / enemye and con-
 trary for he loueþ no bysynes at all [685] ¶ Now
 certes þis foule synne accidye is eke a ful gret^t enemye
 to þe lifode of þe body for it^t haþ no purvyuance
¹ aȝeinst^t temporel necessite ffor it^t is for-
 slewþe and for-sluggeþ and distroieþ al good temporals by
 rechelesnesse

[686] The iiij. þinge is þat^t accidie is like hem
 þat^t bene in þe peyne of helle by cause of her sclouþe
 and of her heynesse. for þei þat^t bene dampned bene
 so bounde þat^t þei ne may wel do ne wel
 þenk^t. [687] Of accidye commeþ first^t þat^t a man is
 anoied and encombred to doon eny goodnesse and
 makeþ þat^t god haþ abhomyngacioñ of such
 accidye as seith seynt^t Iohn

¶ *sanctus*
Iohannes.

[688] ¶ Now commeþ sleuth^t þat^t wil not^t suffre noon
 hardnesse ne no penaunce ffor soþ^t sclouþe is so
 tendere and so delicate as seiþ Salomon þat^t he wil not^t
 suffre noon hardnesse ne penaunce and þefore he
 sheendeþ all þat^t he dooþ [689] aȝeinst^t his roten
 herted synne of accidie and sclouþe shulde men
 exercise by hem self to done good werkes and manly
 and vertuouusli cacchen corage wel to done þenk-
 yng^t þat^t our lorde Ihesu crist^t quiteþ euery good
 dede be it^t neuere so lite. / [690] Vsage of labour is a
 grete þing^t for it^t makeþ as seiþ Seynt^t Bernard^t þe
 laborers to haue stronge armes and harde Synewes and
 sclouthe makeþ hem feble and tendere [691] Than commeth
 drede forto bygynne to wirkes ffor
 certes he þat^t is enclyned / to synne hym þenkeþ it^t
 is so grete an emprise forto vndertake to do werkes
 of goodnesse [692] [.]

¶ *Salomon*

¶ *Bernardus*

.

 . . . no gap in the MS.] as seiþ Seint gregorie.

[693] ¶ Now commeþ wanhope þat is despeire of þe mercy of god þat commeþ somtyme of to mochi outrageous sorowe and somtyme of moche drede ymagynynge þat he haþ do so mochi synne þat it wil not auaille hym þouȝe he wolde repent hym and forsakesynne and doo good [694] þorȝe which despeire or drede he boundeneþ his hert to euery maner synne as seiþ seint Austyne [695] ¶ Which dampnable synne if þat ¶ *Augustinus* it contynue vnto his ende. it is cleped synnyng in þe holy goost [696] This orible synne is so perilous þat he þat is despeired þer nys no felonye ne no synne þat he douteþ for to doo as shewed wel by Iudas [697] Certes þen abouen all synnes is þis synne most displeaunt to crist and most aduersarie to crist. [698] Soþly he þat despeireþ he is like þe coward champion recreaunt and seiþ creaunt wipouten nede Allas / alas / nedeles is he recreaunt ¹ and seiþ creaunt ¹ [¹ repeated in MS.] and nedeles / despeired [699] ffor certes þe mercy of god is euer redy to þe penytent. it is abouen all his werkis [700] ¶ Allas can a man not ² vmbypenke hym of þe gospel of Luke xv°. Where as crist seiþ þat as wel shal ¶ *Lucas xxv.* þer be ioye in heuene vpon a synful / man þat doþ penytence þan vppon 90. 19. Riȝtful men þat [. . . . no gap in the MS.] neden to penytence [701] ¶ Loke forþer in þe gospell þe Ioye and / þe feestes of þe good man þat had lost his / sone. Whan his sone wiþ repentaunce was retourned to his fadere. [702] Can / þei not remembre hem eke þat as seiþ seint luca xxiii°. Hou þat þe þeeþ þat was honged ¶ *Lucas xxiii.* besides Ihesu cristes side ¶ Lord remembre on me whan þou comest into þi regne. [703] fforsoth seide crist to day shalt þou be wiþ me in paradys [704] Certes þer nys noon so horrible synne of

man þat it ne may in his lif be destroyed by penytence
 þorgh vertue of þe passioun and of þe deþ of crist
 [705] ¶ Allas what nedep man þan to be despeired
 siþens his mercy so redy is to aske and haue
 [706] ¶ þan / commep sompnolence þat is sluggy
 sclumbringe which makeþ a man be hevie and dulle in
 body and in saule and þis synne commep of sclouþe
 [707] And certys þe tyme þat by way of resou men
 shuld not slepe þat is by þe morowe but if þer were
 cause resonable [708] ¶ ffor soply in þe morowe tyde is
 most conable a man to say his preiers and for-
 to þenken on god. and to honouren god and to
 ȝeuen almesse to þe poor þat first comen in þe name
 of crist [709] ¶ Lo what seiþ Salomon. who so wil
 by þe morowe awake to seke me. he shal fynde
 [710] ¶ Than commeth negligence or rechelesnesse
 þat rekketh of no þinge and how þat ignoraunce is
 modere of al harme ¶ Certes negligence is þe norice.
 [711] negligence ne dop no force whan he shal done
 eny þinge whedere he do it wel or badly

¶ Salomon.

[712] ¶ Of þe remedie of þise two synnes as seiþ
 þe wise / man þat he þat dredep god spareþ not
 to done þat hym ouȝt to done [713] and he þat louep
 god. he wil do diligence to plesse. god by his werkis
 and abunden hym self wiþ al his myȝt wel forto doon.
 [714] þan commep ydelnes þat is þe ȝate of al
 harmes. An ydel man is like to a place þat haþ no
 walles þe deuett may entre on euery side or shete
 at hym at discouerte by temptacioþ on euery side
 [715] This ydelnesse is þe thurrok of al wikked and
 vyleyns pouȝtes. and of alle langelingges trowfuls and
 al ordure [716] ¶ Certes þe heuene is ȝeue to hem þat
 wil laboure. and nouȝt to ydel folk ¶ Eke dauid seiþ
 þat þei ne be not in þe labour of men. ne þei shul
 not be whipped wiþ men þat is to say in purgatorie

¶ sapientis

¶ dauid

[717] ¶ Certes þan semeþ it. þei shul be tormented
wip þe deuel in helle but if þei done penitence

[718] ¶ Than commeþ þe synne þat men clepen
tarditas as was a man is so lattred and so taryng' er
he wil turne to god. and certes þat is a grete foly.
he / is like hym þat falleþ in þe dicke and wil not
arise. [719] And / þis vice commeþ of fals hope. þat
he þenkeþ he shal lyue longe. but þat hope
failleth ful oft

[720] Than commeth lacchesse þat is he þat whan he
bygynneþ eny good werk. anoon / he wil forelete it and
stynt. as done þei þat han eny wigt to gouerne
and ne taken of hym no more kepe anoon as þei / fynden
eny contrary or eny anoye [721] ¶ Thise ben þe newe
shipardes þat laten her shepe wetyngly go rennen to
þe / wolf þat is in þe breres or doon no force of her owne
gouernaunce [722] ¶ Of þis commeþ pouerte and distruction
boþ of spiritual and of temporel pingges. Than commeth
a manere of coldnesse þat freseþ all þe hert of a man
[723] ¶ Than commeth vndeuocon þorghe which a man is
so blent. And as seiþ seint Bernard haþ such langour in ¶ Bernardus
soule þat he may neiþere rede ne syng in holy church
ne þenk on deuocion ne travaille wip
his hondes in no good werk þat it ne is / to hym vnsauery
and al appalled [724] þan wexeþ he sore and / sclowe and
slumbry and sone wil be wroop and sone is / enclyned
to hate and to Envie [725] ¶ Than commeþ þe synne of
worldly sorowe. which þat is cleped tristicia þat scleeþ a ¶ Tristitia /
man. as seiþ seint Paule [726] ffor certes such sorowe
wirkeþ to þe deef of þe saule and of þe body ¶ Also
for þerof commeth þat a man is annoyed of his owne liff
[727] Wherefore such sorowe shorteþ ful often þe lyf // of
a man er þat his tyme comen is by way of kinde

[*The Remedy against Accidie.*]

[728] ¶ Azeinst þis horrible Synne of Accide and þe
 braunches of þe same Ther is a vertue þat is called
 ¶ fortitudo. / fortitudo or strenght þat is an affecciō þorgh
 which a man despiseþ al noyous þinge [729] ¶ This
 vertue is so myȝty and so vigorous: þat it dar wiȝstonde
 myȝtely and wrastel azeinst þe Sawtes of þe deuelt
 and wisly kepen hym self fro periles þat bene wikked
 [730] for it enchaunseþ and enforseþ þe soule ¹riȝt as
 accidy abateþ it and makeþ it feble. ffor þis fortitudo
 may endure by longe suffraunce þe trauailes þat bene
 conable

[731] ¶ This vertue haþ mony spyces ¶ The
 furst is cleped magnanimitas. þat is to / saye grete corage.
 ffor soply þer byhoueþ grete corage azeinst Accidy lest
 þat it swelowe þe soul by þe synne of sorowe. or
 destroy it by wanhope. [732] This vertu makeþ
 folk vndertake harde þingges. and greuous þingges
 by her owne wille wisely and resonably [733] And for
 as moch as the deuelt fighteþ azeinst man. more by
 queynteysse & by sleight þan by strenght þerfore a man
 shal withstonde hym by witte and by reson and by dis-
 creciō [734] ¶ Then ben / þer þe vertues of feiþ and
 hope in god and in his seyntes to atcheuen and accomplise
 þe good werkes in which he purposeþ feermely
 to contynue [735] ¶ Than commeþ suerte or sikernesse
 and þat is whan a man ne douteþ no trauaile in tyme
 commynge of þe good werk þat a man / haþ bygonne
 [736] ¶ Than commeþ Magnificence. and þat is to sayn whan
 a man doþ and perfourmeþ grete werkes of goodnesse
 þat he haþ bygonne. and þat is þe ende whi þat men shuld
 doo good werkes. ffor in þe accompleying of good
 werkes lith þe grete guerdoun [737] ¶ Than is þer
 constaunce þat is stablenesse of corage and þis shulde
 be in hert by stedfast feiþ and in mouþe and in

beryng and in chere and in dede [738] ¶ Eke þer bene
moo / special þingges and remedies azeinst Accidie in dyuers
werkes and in consideracions of þe pyne of helle and of þe
Ioye of heuene and in þe trust of þe grace of þe holy
goost þat wil zeuen hym myzt to perfourmen his
entent

¶ De auaricia.

[739]

Aftre Accidie wil I speke of auarice and of ¶ De Auaricia
coueytise of which synne seiþ seint Poule ¶ Paulus
þat þe Roote of all synne is coueitise ¶ And
Thimothei 2^o Capitulo. [740] ffor trewly. whan þat þe hert of ¶ Timothei
a man is confounded in it self and trouble and þat þe
saule haþ lost þe comforte of god þan sekeþ he an
ydel solace of worldly þingges

[741] ¶ Auarice aftre þe scripcion of seynt Austyne ¶ Augustinus
is a likerousnesse in herte to haue erpely þingges.
[742] Som 1^o oper folk seyn þat auarice is forto
purchase mony erpely þingges and no þinge zeue
to hem þat han nede. [743] And vnderstonde þow wel þat
auarice nys not oonly in land ne catell but som-
tyme in science and in glorie and in euery manere of
outrageous þingges is auarice and coueitise [744] And
þe difference ytwix Auarice and couetise is þis
Coueitise is forto coueite suche þingges as þow
hast not And auarice is forto wiþholde and kepe suche
þingges as þou hast wiþ-out riȝtful nede [745] Soply
þis Auarice is a synne þat is ful dampnable for al holy
writte curseþ it and spekeþ azeinst it ffor it dop
wronge to Ihesu crist [746] for it byreueþ hym þe loue
þat men to hym owen and turneþ it bakward azeinst
all reson [747] and makeþ þat þe auaricious man
haþ more hope in his catel þan in Ihesu crist And
[.]
[.] no gap in the MS. [748] perfore seiþ

¶ *Ephesianos*
5^o *capitulo*

seyñ Paule *Ephesianos* .5^o. That auerous man / hap more hope in his þraldome of ydolatrie

¶ *Exodi xxx.*
capitulo .i

[749] ¶ What difference is ytwix an ydolastre and an auarous man but þat an ydolastre and an auarous man ne hap but a mawmet or twoo: and þe auaricious man hap monye ffor certes euery floreyñ in his Coffre is his mawmet [750] And certes þe synne of Maumetrie is þat god in þe ten / comaundmentes as bereþ witnesse in *Exodi capitulo .xx^o*. [751] Thou / shalt haue no fals goddes byform me. Ne þou shalt make to þe no grauen þinge. Thus as is an Auaricious man [. . . *no gap in the MS.*] ¶ And ydolastre [752] þorgh his synne of Auarice and of coueitise commen þise hard lordshippes þorgh which men ben strayned by taliages. custumes and cariages more þan / her duete or reson is ¶ And ellis take þei of her bonde men amercementz which myghten more resonably be cleped extorcions þan amercymenz. [753] Of which amercymentes and raunsonynge of boond men some lordes Stuardes seyñ þat it is rightfult for as moche as a cherle hap no temporett þinge. þat it ne is his lordes as þei sayne. [754] But certes þise lordshippes doon wronge þat byreuen her bonde folk þingges þat þei

¶ *Augustinus de*
civitate. libro.
ix^o¶ *Genesis .5^o /*

neuere ne 3af hem. / *Augustinus de Civitate libro ix^o*. [755] ¶ Soop is þat þe condicioñ of þraldome and þe furst cause of þraldome is for synne. *G[e]nesis v^{to}*.

¶ *Seneca.*

[756] Thus may 3e seen þat þe gilt deserneth thraldom ¹But not nature [757] Wherfor þise lordes ne shuld not moche glorifie hem in her lordship siþens þat by naturett condicions þei bene [not] lordes ouer her þralles. but for þat þraldom come furst by desert of synne. [758] And ferþer ouer þer as þe lawe seiþ þat temporett goodes of bonde folk bene þe goodes of her lordshippes 3e þat is forto vnderstonde þe goodes of þe Emperour to defende hem in her rízt but not to robbe hem ne to reue hem. [759] ¶ And þerfore

seip Senec. Thy prudence shuld lyue benignely wip
pine praff. [760] Thilk pat pou clepest pine praff
bene goddys puple. ffor humble folk bene cristes frendes
pei bene contubernial wip pe lord

[761] ¶ Thenk eke pat suche sede as churles ¶
springen: of suche seed springgen lordes. as wel may
pe cherle be saued as pe lorde. [762] pe same dep pat
takeþ pe cherle. pe same deep takeþ pe lorde. wherfore I
rede do riht so wip pi cherle as pou woldest
pi lorde did wip pe if pou were in his plite
[763] Euery synful man is a cherle to synne ¶ I rede
pe Certes pat pou lorde worche in suche wise pat
pi cherles raper loue pe than drede pe [764]
¶ I woot wel þer is degree aboue degre as resoun
is and skill is pat men / done her devoyre þer as it is dwe
But certes extorcions and despites of þoure vnderlyngges is
dampnable.

[765] And forther ouer vnderstonde weþ pat
conquerours or tyrauntz maken ful often þralles of
hem pat bene born of as Royal blood as bene þei pat
hem conqueren. [766] This name of thraldome was
neuere knowe erst til pat Noe seid pat his sone ¶ De Mo
Canaan shuld be praff to his breþeren for his synne.
[767] ¶ What say we þan of hem pat pillen and done
extorcions to holy church ¶ Certes pe swerd pat
me zeuen furst to a knyght whan he is newe dubbed
signifieþ pat he shuld defende holy church and
nouȝt robbe it and who so doop is a traitour
to crist. [768] as seip seynt Austyne ¶ They bene ¶ Augustinus
deuels wolves pat stranglen pe shepe of Ihesu
criste and bene wors þan wolves. [769] ffor soply
whan pe wolf haþ ful his wombe. He stynteth to
strangle shepe. But soply pe pylours and distroy-
ours of good of holy church ne doon not so for þei ne
stynte neuere to pillen. [770] Now as I haue seide so siþens so
is ¹pat synne was furst cause of thraldome Than it is

þus þat þilk tyme þat al þis world was in synne
þan was al þis worlde in þraldome and in subiection./
[771] But certes siben þe tyme of grace cam god
ordeyned þat some folk shuld be more highe in estate
and his degree. and some folk more lowe and þat
eueryche shulde be serued in his estaat/ and in degre.
[772] And þerfore in some contrey þer þei bene
þralles whan þei / han turned hem to þe feiþ þei maken
her þralles free out of þraldome And þerfor certes
þe lorde oweþ to his man þat þe man oweþ to
his lorde [773] ¶ þe pope clepeþ hym self seruauhte
of Seruauntes of god. But for as moche as þe state of
holy church ne myȝt not han bee ne þe comon
profite ne myȝt han be kept ne pees and rest in
erþe but if god had ordeyned þat som men han
hier degre and somme men lowere [774] ¶ þerfor was
souereynthe ordeyned to kepe and mayntene and de-
fende her vnderlyngges or her subiectes in reson as fer-
forþe as it liþe in her power and not to distroye hem
ne as ferforþ confounde. [775] wherfore I say þat þilk lordes
þat bene þilk wolfes þat deuouren þe possessions or
þe catel of poor folk wrongfully wiþ-outen mercy or
mesure [776] þer shullen receyue by þe same mesure
þat þei han mesured to poor folk þe mercy of Ihesu
crist but it be amended [777] ¶ Now commeþ despite
bytwtix Marchaunt and marchaunt. And þou shalt vnder-
stonde þat Marchaundise is in many maners. þat oon
is bodyly & þat oþer is goostly. þat oon is
leeful and þat oþer is dishonest and vnlieful
[778] ¶ of þilk bodily marchaundyse þat is leeful and
honest is þis þat þer as god hath ordeyned þat a
regne or a contre is sufficient him self þan is it
honest and lieful þat of þe habundaunce of þis cuntre
þat men helpe anoþer cuntre þat is more nedye
[779] and þerfore þei mote be Marchauntz to
bringe from þat oon cuntre to þat oþer her march-

aundise./ [780] ¶ That opere marchaundise þat men
haunte wip fraude trecherye and disceyte wip
lesyngges and fals opes is cursed and dampnable.

[781] ¶ Espiritual Marchaundise is proprely Symonye
þat is ententif desire to by þenk' espiritual that is
þing' þat apperteyneth to þe sentuary of god and to
cure of þe soule. [782] This desire if so be þat a
man do hys diligence to perfourme it al be it þat his
desire ne take noon effecte ȝit is it to hym a dedly
synne and if he be ordred he is aregulere [783] ¶ Certes
Symony is cleped of Symon magus þat wolde haue
bouȝt þe temporel Catech./ þe ȝift þat god had ȝeuen /
by þe holy goost to seint Peter and to þe apostels./
[784] And þefore vnderstondeþ þat boþ he þat
selles and he þat byeth þingges espirituell bene
cleped Symonys be it catel be it procuryng
or by flesshly preier of his frendes or of spiritual
frendes [785] [.

. *no gap in the MS.*]

Soply if þei prey for hym þat is not able ne worþi. it
is Symonye. If he take þe benefice and if he be worþi and
able he nys noon. [786] ¶ That oper maner is if a man
or a womman preyeth for folk to auaunsen hem / only for
wikked flesshly affection þat þei han vnto þe persones
and þat is in foule Symonye. [787] But certes in seruice
for which men ȝeuen þingges espirituels vnto her
seruauntes It most be vnderstonde þat þe seruise
most be honest and ellis. not. and eke þat hit be
wip out barganyng and þat þe persone be able.

[788] ffor as seiþ seint Damasie ¶ Alle þe synnes of þe ¶ *Damasius*
world at þe regarde of this synne bene as a þinge of nouȝt.

ffor it is þe grettest synne þat may be after ²þe synne ^[2-3 repeated in MS.]
of lucifer² and of antecrist [789] for by þis synne god
forleseþ þe churche and þe soule þat he bouȝt wip
his precious blood by hem þat ȝeuen chirches to hem
þat bene not digne. [790] ffor þei putten in þeues þat

Of Hazardry

¶ De falso testi-
monio

¶ De furto

stelen þe soules of Ihesu crist and distroyeþ his patry-
moyne [791] by suche vndigne preestes and curates
han men þe lasse reuerence of þe sacramentes of
holy church. And suche zeuers of churches putten out
þe children of crist. and putten in þe church þe
denels owne sone. [792] þei sellen þe soules
þe lombes shulden kepen to þe wolf þat strangleþ
hem and þerfore shul þei neuere haue parte
of þe pasture of lambes þat is þe blisse of
heuene. [793] ¶ Now commeþ hasardy with his a'pur-
tynauces as tables and Rafuls of which commeþ disceite
fals oþes chidyngges and aȝt ravanys blasphemynge
and reneiynge of god and hate of his neighbours waast
of good in spendyng of tyme and somtyme mannys
slaughter [794] Certes hasardours ne may not be
wip-out grete synne þe whiles þei haunte þat craft [795]
Of Auarice commeþ eke lesingges. þeeft and falawitnesse. and
fals oþes and ȝe shal vnderstonde þat þise bene grete synnes
and expresse aȝeinst þe comaundementz of god as I haue
saide [796] ¶ fals witnesse is in worde and eke in dede
In worde as forto byreue þine neiȝbours good name
by þi fals witnessinge or byreue hym his Cateȝ or his
heritage by þi fals witnessinge. whan þou for Ire or
for mede or for envie berest fals witnesse or accusest
hym. or excusest hym by þi fals witnesse. or ellis ex-
cusest þine self falsly. [797] ware ȝou questmongers and
notaries. Certes for fals witnessyng was Susanna in
grete sorowe & peyn and mony anoþer moo [798] ¶ The
synne of þeft is eke expres aȝeinst goddes heest and þat in
two maners corporeȝ and spiritueȝ [799] [Corporeȝ]
as for to take þine neighbours cateȝ aȝeinst his wille.
be it by force or by sleight by it by mette or by mesure.
[800] By stelynge eke of fals enditementz vpon hym and
in borowing of þine neighbours Cateȝ in entent neuer
to pay. And semplable þingges [801] es-
piritueȝ þeft is sacrilege þat is to seyn hurt-

ynges of holy pingges or of pingges sacred to crist in two maners by reson of þe holy place as churches or chirch hawes. [802] for euery vyleyns synne þat men doon in suche places may be cleped Sacrilege or euery violence in þe semblable places. / ¶ Also þei þat wiþdrawen falsly þe riȝtes þat longen to holy church. [803] And pleynly and generally sacrilege is to ȝeue holy pingge fro holy place. or vnholly pingge out of holy place. or holy pingge out of vnholly place

[*The Remedy against Avarice.*]

[804] ¶ Now shul ȝe vnderstonde þat þe releuyng of ¶ *Reuelacio*
Auarice is misericordȝ and pite largely taken. / *Auarice*
¶ And men myȝten axen why þat misericorde and pite is releuyng of auarice [805] ¶ Certes þe Auarous
man scheweth no pite ne misericordȝ to þe nedeful man ffor he deliteþ hym in þre kepingges of his tresoure and not in þe reskowinge ne releuyng of his euen-cristen and þerfore speke I first of misericorde [806] þan is misericorde as seiþ þe philosophe ¶ *Philosophus*
¶ A vertue by whiche þe corage of a man is stired by þe myssees of hym þat is myssees [807] vpon which misericord foloweth pite in perfourmyng of charitable werkes of misericordȝ. [808] And certes þise meuen man to þe misericordȝ of Ihesu crist þat hym self for our gilt suffred deeth for misericordȝ and forȝaue vs our origynal synnes [809] and þer-by relees vs fro þe peyne of helle and amenuseþ þe peynes of purgatorie by penytence. and ȝeueþ grace wel to doo. and at þe last þe Ioie of heuene [810] The spices of misericorde bene as forto lene. and forto ȝeue / and forto [. . . no gap in the MS.] relees. and for to haue pite in hertȝ and compassion of þe meschief of his

euencristen. and eke. chastise þer as nede is
 [811] ¶ Anoper maner remedy azeinst Auarice is
 resonable largesse. But sople here byhoueth þe con-
 sideracioñ of þe grace of Ihesu crist and of his
 temporell goodes and eke of þe goodes perdurables
 þat crist ȝane vs. [812] and eke to haue remembrance of
 þe deep þat he shal haue he noot not whan.
 and eke þat he shal forgoon all þat he hape
 [. . . *no gap in the MS.*] dispended in good

[813] ¶ But for as moche as some folk bene vnmesur-
 able men ouȝten eschewe fool largesse þat men
 clepen waast [814] Certes he þat is fool large ne
 ȝeueþ not his cateñ. but he leseþ his cateñ. Sooply
 what þinge þat he ȝeueþ for veyn glorie as to
 Mynstralles and to folk forto byreuen his renown in þe
 world he hap do / [synne and non] almesse.
 [815] ce[r]tes he leseþ foule his good þat he ne sekeþ
 no þinge of his good but synne.
 [816] he is like to an hors þat sekeþ rapet to drink
 drovy or troubylly watere þan of þe
 clere welle [817] And for as moche as þei ȝeue þere
 as þei shuld not ȝeue to hem apperteyneþ pilk
 malysoñ þat criste shal ȝeuen at þe day of dome to
 hem þat shul be dampned. /

De Gula /

[818]

¶ Gula .i.

Aftre Auarice commeþ gloteny which is expresse eke
 azeinst þe comaundement of god ¶ Gloteny is
 vnmesurable appetit to ete or to drink or ellis
 to doon ynogh to þe vnmesurable and discord
 coueityse to ete and to drynk [819] ¶ This synne cor-
 rumpeþ al þis world as is wel shewde in ¹in þe synne of
 Adam and of Eua ¶ Loo eke what seiþ seynt Paule of
 gloteny [820] ¶ Mony seiþ seint Paule goon of which

¶ Paulus

I haue oft seide to ȝou. and nowe I seie it wepyng
 þat þei bene Enemyes of þe crois of crist of
 which þe ende is deep and of which her woombe is
 her god and her glorie in confusion of hem þat so
 sauereu erpely pingges [821] he þat is vsant to
 þis synne of glotenye he ne may no synne wipstonde.
 he / mote bene in seruage of all vices. for it is þe deuels
 hoorde þer [he] hideþ him and restep [822] ¶ This
 synne hap many spices ¶ The first is drcnknes
 þat is þe horrible sepulcre of mannys resoñ And þer-
 fore whan þat a man is drunken. he hap lost his resoñ and
 þis is dedly synne [823] ¶ But certes whan a
 man is nat wonte to straunge drynk and perauenture ne
 knowep not þe strength of þe drynk or hap feblenesse
 in his hede or hap travailled þorgh which he drinkeþ
 þe moore al be he sodeynly cauȝte wip drink it is no
 dedly synne. but venial [824] ¶ The secounde spice of
 Gloteny is þat þe spirit of a man wexeþ al trouble.
 for dronknesse byreueþ hym þe discrecion of his witte
 [825] ¶ The þred spice of gloteny is whan a man
 deuoureþ his mete and hap no riȝtful maner of etynge
 [826] ¶ The fourte is whan þorgh þe grete habund-
 aunce of his mete þe humours of his body bene dis-
 tempred [827] ¶ The v. is forȝetelnesse by to mochel
 drynkyng. ffor which somtyme a man forȝetep by þe
 morowe what he did at Eue or on þe nyȝt byfor

[828] ¶ In oþer manere bene distincte of vices & spices of
 glotenye aftere seint Gregorie ¶ The first is forto ete by- ¶ *Gregorius* /
 fore tyme. The secounde whan a man getep hym
 to delicate mete [829] ¶ The iij. is whan
 men taken to moche ouere mesure ¶ The 4 is
 curiosite wip grete entent to maken and apparailen
 his mete ¶ The .v. is forto eten to gredely [830] Thise
 bene the .v. fyngers of þe / deuētes honde. by which
 he drawep folk to synne

[*The Remedy against Gluttony.*]

¶ *Remedium.* [831] ¶ Aȝeinst glotenye is the remedy abstinence of his body as seiþ Galien. but þat hold I not meritorie if he do it only for þe help of his body ¶ Seynt
 ¶ *Augustinus.* austyne wil þat abstinence be doon for vertue & wiþ pacience [832] ¶ Abstinence he seiþ is lital worþ. but if a / man haue good wille þerto / and but if it be enforced by pacience and by charite and þat men doon it for goddys / sake and in hope to haue þe blisse of heuene

[833] ¶ The felowes of abstynence. bene attemper-
 aunce þat haldeþ þe mene in alle ¹þingges ¶ Eke shame þat escheweþ all dishoneste. Suffisaunce þat sekeþ no riche metes ne drinks ne dooþ noo force of noon / outrageous apparaillynge of mete [834] Measure also þat restreyneth by reson þe delaue appetite of etynge. Sobrenesse also þat restreyneth þe outrage of drynk. [835] Sparyng also þat restreyneth þe delicate eese to sitte longe atte mete and softly // wherfore some folk stonden of her owne wille and to eten at þe lasse leisere

¶ *De luxuria Sequitur.* /

[836]

¶ *Luxuria*

Aftre Gloteny commeth lecherye. ffor þise two synnes ben so nygh Cosyns þat often tyme þei wil not departe. / [837] God woote þis synne is ful displeaunt þing to god. ffor he / seiþ hym self. do no lecherye. And þerfore he putteþ grete paynes aȝeinst þis synne. As in þe olde lawe. [838] ¶ If womman þral were taken in þis synne. she shuld be beten wiþ staues to þe dethe And if she were a gentile womman she shulde be slayn wiþ stones And if she were a bishoppes douȝter she shuld be brent by goddis comandement [839] ¶ fferþermore by þe synne of lecherye god draynt al þe world at þe

diluve. And after þat he brant .v. Citees wip
lyt and sonke hem into helle

[840] ¶ Nowe lat vs speke þan of pilk stynkinge
synne of lechery. þat men clepen aduoutrie of wedded
folk þat is to say if þat oon of hem be wedded
or ellis boþ [841] ¶ Seint Iohn seiþ þat þe aduoutrers ¶ *Sanctus*
schullen be in helle in a stynk' brennyng' of fuyre and *Iohannes*
of bremstoon. In fuyre for lechery. In bremstone for þe
stynke of her ordure [842] ¶ Certes þe brekinge of
þis sacrament' is an horrible þinge. it was made of
god hym self in Paradise and confermed by Ihesu crist as
witnesses seint Mathewe in þe gospell ¶ A man shal lete
fadere and modere and take hym to his wiff and þei
shul be twoo in oo flessch [843] ¶ This sacrament' bytoken-
es þe knyttyng' to-gidere of crist' and of holy churchē.
[844] and nat' oonly þat god forbad aduoutrie in bedde.
but eke he comaunded þat þou shuldest not' coveyte þine
neighbours wiff [845] ¶ In þis heest seiþ seint
Austyne is for-boden al manere coueitise to doon
lecherie ¶ Loo what seiþ seint Mathewe þe .v. chapitle/in þe ¶ *Augustines*
gospell. þat who so sees a womman to coueitise of his lust. he ¶ *Mathew*
hap doon lechery wip her in his hert [846] ¶ Here may 3e
see þat not' oonly þe dede of this synne is forbode:
but eke þe desire to doon þat synne [847] ¶ This cursed
synne annoyēs greuously hem þat it haunten and first
to her saule for he obligēs it to synne and to peyne of
þe deep / þat is perdurable. [848] vnto þe body annoyēs
it greuously also for it driep hym and waastes hym / and
[. . . no gap in MS.] of his blood he makes sacrifice to þe
feende of helle. hit waastes eke his catell and his substaunce.
[849] & certes if it be a foule þing a man to waast
his catell on wommen. 3it is it a foulere þinge whan þat
for such ordure wommen dispenden vpon men her catell
and her substaunce [850] ¶ This synne as seiþ the prophete ¶ *Propheta*
byreueþ man and womman her good fame and al her
honure and it is ful plesaunt to þe deuel. for þerby

wynneth he þe most partie of þis world
 [851] And riȝt as a marchanthe deliteþ hym most
 in chaffare þat he haþ most auuntage of Riȝt.
 so deliteþ þe feende in þis ordure

[852] this is þat oþer hand of þe deuel wiþ .v.
 fyngres to cacche þe puple to his vilanye [853] ¶ The
 first fynger is þe foolissh lokinge of the foolyssh man
 or the foliash womman þat scleeþ riȝt as þe basilicok
 scleeþ folk by þe venyme of his / sight. ffor þe Coueitise
 of þe eyen folowep þe couetise of þe herte [854] ¶ That
 oþer fynger is þe vileyns touchynge in wicked
 maner And þerfore seiþ Salomon. þat who so
 toucheþ and handleþ a womman. he fareþ like hym
 þat handleþ þe scorpion þat styngep and sodeynly
 scleeþ þourgh his enuenemyng. As who so toucheþ
 warme picch. he shent his fyngres [855] ¶ The iij is
 foolissh wordes þat fareþ lich fire þat brennep. þat riȝt anoon
 brennep þe herte. [856] ¶ The iiij. is þe
 kissyng. And soply he were a grete fool þat wolde
 kysse þe mouþ of a brennyng ouen or of a forneys.
 [857] And / more fooles bene þei þat kissen in vileynye
 for þat mouþ is þe mouþe of helle. And namely þise
 olde dotardes holours ȝit wil þei kisse þouȝe
 þei may not do. and smatere hem [858] ¶ Certes þei
 bene like to houndes. ffor an hounde whan he comep by
 þe Rosere or by oþer bewtees þouȝe he may not
 pisse. ȝit wil he heuene vp his legge and make coun-
 tenaunce to pisse. [859] And for þat mony man weneth
 þat he may noȝt synne for no likerousnesse þat he dop
 with his wiff Certes þat opynyon is fals ¶ God woote a
 man / may sle hym self wiþ his owne knyff. And maken
 hym drunke wiþ his owne tunge [860] Certes
 be it wif or childe or eny worldly þing þat he
 loueth to-fore god it is his mameut and he is his ydolastre
 [861] ¶ A man shuld loue his wiff by discrecion
 paciently and temperally And þan is she as it

were his suster [862] ¶ The .v. ¹fynger of þe deuels honde is þe stynkyng dede of lecherie [863] Certes þe .v. fyngers of glotenye þe fende putte in þe wombe of a man. and wip þise .v. fyngers of lecherie he gripeþ hym by þe Raynes forto þrowe hym into þe fornais of helle. [864] þer as þei / shul han þe fuyr and þe wormes þat euere shul lasten. and wepyng and waillyng. sharp hunger and þrest. Grislynese of deuels þat shullen alto treden hem wip-outen respite and withouten eende [865] ¶ Of lechery as I seide sourden dyuers spices As fornicacion þat is bytwix man and womman þat bene not married. and þis is dedly synne and aȝeinst nature. [866] for al þat is enemye and destruction to nature is aȝeinst nature. [867] Parfay þe reson of a man telleth hym eke wel þat it is dedly synne for as mochi as god forbode lechery. And seint Paule ȝeueþ hym þe regne þat is due to no wight ¶ But to hem þat doon dedly synne [868] ¶ A noþer synne of lechery is forto byreuen a maide of her maidenhode. for certes he þat so dooþ he caccheth a mayde out of þe hiest degree þat is in þis present lif [869] and byreueþ hure þilk pr[e]cious fruyte þat þe boke clepeþ þe hundred fruyte I ne can not say it in noon oþer way in englissh. but in latyne it hight Centesimus fructus [870] Certes he þat so doþ is cause of mony damages and vilenyes moo þan eny man can rekne Riȝt as he somtyme is cause of all Damages þat beestes doon in þe feelde þat brekeþ þe hegge or þe closure þorowe which he distroieþ þat may not be restored. [871] ffor certes no more may maidenhede be restored. þan an harme smyte fro þe body may retourne aȝein to wexe. [872] She may haue mercy þis wote I weþ if she doo penitence. but neuer shal it be þat she nas corrupte. [873] And al be it so þat I haue spoken somewhat of aduoutrie. it is good to shewen moo periles þat longen to aduoutrie forto eschewe þe foule

synne of [874] aduoutrie ¶ Auoutry in latyne is forto seyne
 approuching of an oper mannys bed. þoorgh which þoo þat
 whilom were oo flessch. abounden her body to oper persones
 [875] ¶ Of þis synne as seiþ þe wise man commeth
 mony harmes ¶ first brekinge of þei feiþ. And certes
 feiþ is keye of cristendome [876] And whan þat
 feiþ is broke and lorne. soþly cristendome stant.
 [veyne] And wiþ-out fruyte [877] þis synne is eke a
 þeef. / ¶ ffor þeeft generalli to speke is forto Reue a wight his
 þing' azeinst his wille. [878] Certes þis is þe foulest þeft
 that may be. whan 'a womman stelep her body from
 her husbond and zeueþ it to her holour to defoule
 her' and stelep her soule from crist' & zeueþ it to
 þe deuel. [879] This is a foule[r] þeft þan forto stele or breke
 þe chalice from þe autere. ffor þise aduoutrers
 breken þe temple of god spirituelli and stelen þe vessell
 of grace þat is þe body and þe saule. ffor which crist
 shal destroyen hem as seiþ seynt Paule. [880] ¶ Soþly
 of þis þeft douted gretly Ioseph whan þat his lordys
 wif preide hym of vilanye whan he saide ¶ lo my lorde
 howe my lady haþ take to me vnder my ward al þat he
 haþ in þis world. ne no þing' of his ouȝt of
 my pouer' but' oonly ȝe þat bene his wiff [881] and
 howe shuld I þan doon þis wikkednesse & synne so
 horribli azeinst god. god it forbede.
 Allas al to litel is suche troupe now yfounde [882] ¶ The
 iij. harme is the filþe þorowe þe which þei breken
 þe comaundemen of god and defoulen þe autere of
 her matrimoyne þat is crist' [883] ffor certes in so moche
 as þe sacrament of mariage is so noble and so digne. So
 moche it is þe gretter synne forto breke it. ffor god
 made mariage in paradys in þe estate of Innocence to
 multiplie mankynde to þe seruice of god. [884] and
 þerfore is þe brekinge þerof greuous. Of which
 breking' commen fals heires often tyme þat wrongfulli
 occupien folkes heritage and þerfore wil crist' putte

¶ Paulus.

hem out of þe regne of heuene þat is heritage to good folk [885] ¶ Of þis breking' comþeþ eke oft tymes þat folk vnware wedden or synnen wiþ her owne kynrede. and namely þilk' harlottes þat haunten bordels ¶ Of thise fool wommen þat mowen be likned to a comune gonge wher as men purge her ordure [886] ¶ What' say we eke of putours þat lyuen by þe horrible synne of Putrie and constreynen wommen 3e somtyme his owne wiff or his childe as doon þise bawdes to 3eelden hem a certeyn rent of her bodily putrie Certes þise bene cursed synnes [887] ¶ Vnderstondeþ eke þat aduoutrie is sette gladly in the x. comaundementz bytwix þeft and manys slaughter. for it is þe grettest þeft þat may be. for it is þeeft of body and soule [888] and it is like homycide ffor it kerueþ a twoo and brekeþ a twoo hem þat furst were ymaked oo flesh. and þerfor by þe olde lawe þei shuld be sclayn [889] But napeles by þe lawe of Ihesu crist þat is þe lawe of pite whan he saide to þe womman þat was / founde in aduoutrie and shuld haue bene sclayn wiþ stones aftre þe wille of þe Iwes as was her lawe ¶ Go quod ihesu crist and haue no more wille to do synne or wil no more to do synne [890] Soply vengeance of aduoutrie is a-warded to þe peyne of helle but it be destroubled by penaunce [891] ¶ 3it bene þere moo spices of þis cursed synne. as whan þat oon of hem is religious or ellis boop. or of folk þat bene entred into ordere as subdeken or deken or preest or hospitalers. and euer þe hier þat he is in ordere þe gretter is þe synne [892] The þingges þat gretly aggreggen. his synne is þe breking' of his avowe of chaastite whan he receyueþ order'. [893] And ferþer ouer. soþ is þat holy order' is cheef of all þe tresour of god. And his especial syngne and marke of chaastite to shewe þat þei bene Ioyned to chastite which þat is þe moost precious lif þat is. [894] And eke þise ordred folk bene specially tytled to god. and of þe

¶ Paulus.

special mayne of god. ffor which whan þei doon dedly synne þei bene þe special traitours of god and of his puple. ffor þei lyuen of þe puple to prey for þe puple. And while þer bene such traitours her preiers availen not to þe puple. [895] ¶ Preestes bene as aungels as by þe dignite of hir mysterye ¶ But forsop seynt poule seiþ. þat sathanas transformeþ hym into an aungeþ of liȝt. [896] Soply þe preest þat haunteþ synne he may be likned vnto þe aungel of derknesse. transformed in þe aungel of liȝt ¶ He semeþ aungel of liȝt. but forsop he is aungel of derknesse [897] ¶ Suche preestes bene þe sones of Belye. as scheweþ in þe boke of kyngges þat þei weren þe sones of Belial þat is þe deuett [898] Belial is to say wip-out Iuge. and so faren þei. hem þenke þei bene free and han no Iuge no more þan haþ a free boole þat takeþ which kowe þat him litek in þe toun. [899] So faren þei by wemmen. ffor riȝt [as] a fre bulle is ynouze for al a toun Riȝt so is a / wikked preest corrupte ynough for al a parissþ or aȝt a cuntree [900] Thise preestes as seiþ þe boke ne kon nott þe mysterye of preesthode to þe puple. ne god ne knoweþ hem nouȝt They ne holden hem nouȝt a-paides seiþ þe boke of soden flessþ þat was to hem offred but þei toke by force þe flesshe þat is rawe [901] Certes riȝt so þise schrewes ne holdene hem not a-paide of rosted flessþ and soden flessþ wip þe which þe pupel fedden hem in grete reuerence. But þei wil haue rawe flessþ as folkes wyues and her doughtren [902] ¶ And certes wommen þat consenten to her harlotrie done grete wronge to crist and to holy church and to alhalowes and to aȝt saules ffor þei byreuen al þese hym þat shulde worshipen crist and holy church and prey for cristen saules [903] And þerfore han suche preestes and her lemmans eke þat consenten to her leccherie þe malison of þe/ courte cristen to þei come to amendement

[904] ¶ The iij spice of aduoutrie is somtyme by-twene
a man and his wiff. & þat is whan þei taken no reward
in her assemblynge but only to her fleshly delite as
seip seint Ierom. [905] and ne rekken of noþinge but ¶ *Ieronimus*
þat þei bene assembled by cause þat þei bene ymariet.
al is good ynouȝe as þenkeþ to hem [906] But in suche
folk haþ þe deuel pouer as seide þe aungel Raphael ¶ *Angelus*
to/ Thobie. ffor in her assemblynge þei putten Iheru *Raphael*
crist out of her hertes and ȝeue hem self to all ordure
[907] ¶ þe iiij spice is þe assemblynge of hem þat bene
of her kynrede. or of hem þat bene of oon affinite or
ellis wiþ hem wiþ þe which her faders or her kynrede
han deled wiþ in þe synne of lecherie This synne makeþ
hem liche houndes þat taken no kepe of kynrede
[908] and certes Parentela is in two maners oþer /
goostly or fleshly. Goostely as forto delen wiþ her
gossipes [909] ffor riȝt so as [.]
. *no gap in the MS.*] is his godfader his fadere
espirituel ffor which a womman may in no lasse synne
assemble wiþ her Gossipe þan wiþ her owne fleshly
broþere [910] ¶ The v. spice is þilk abhominable
synne of which þat no man vnneþes ouȝt to/ speke ne
write // Napelees it is openly rehersed in holy writt
[911] [.]
. *no gap in the MS.*] speke of horrible synne Certes holy writt may not be
defouled no more þan þe sonne þat shyneþ on a
myxen. / [912] ¶ Anoþer synne apperteneþ to lecherie þat
commenþ in slepinge and þis synne commenþ oft to hem
þat bene maydens and eke to hem þat bene corrupte
And þis synne men clepen pollucioþ þat commenþ in iiij.
maners [913] Somtyme of a langwishing¹ of body for
þe humours bene to rank and habundaunt in þe body
of man. somtyme for þe infirmite for þe feblesse of þe
vertue retentif as phisik makeþ mencioþ. somtyme for
sorfete of mete and drinke [914] and somtyme for

vileyne pouztes þat bene enclosed in mannes mynde
whan he goop to slepe which may not bene wip-outen
synne fro whiche þei may not kepe hem wisely or ellis
may men synne ful greuously

¶ *Remedium contra luxuriam*

[915] ¶ Now comen þe remedy azeinst lecherie and þat
is generali chaastite and contynence at re-
freyneþ al þe disorderne meuyngges þat comen
of fleshly talentes [916] And euere þe gretter merite
shal he haue þat most restreynen þe wikked enchaw-
finge of ordure of þis synne and this is in two
maners / þat is to sayn. chaastite of mariage and chastite
of widowhede [917] ¶ Now shalt þou here þat
matrimoyne is leefful assemblyng of man and
woman þat resceyuen by þe vertue of þe sacrament þe
boond þorgh which þei may not bene departed in aþ hir
liff þat is to say. þe whiles þei lyuen toþ.
[918] this is as / seiþ þe booke a ful grete sacrament.
god made it as I haue saide in paradis and wold hym-
self be born in maryage. [919] and for [to] halowe mariage
he was at a weddinge. Where as he turned water into
wyne which was þe furst myracle þat he wrougt in
erþe byform his disciples. [920] Trewe effecte of
mariage clenseþ fornicaciõ & replenyssheþ holy
church in good lynage. ffor as þe ende of mariage
as it chaungeþ dedly synne into venial ytwix
hem þat bene wedded / and makeþ þe hertys allon
of hem þat bene ywedded as wel as the bodies
[921] þis is verrey mariage þat is established by
god er þat synne bygan. whan naturel lawe was in his
riht poynt in paradys. And it was ordeyned þat oo man
shuld haue but oo womman and oo womman but oo man
as seiþ seynt Austyne by mony resons

¶ *Augustinus*

[922] ffurst for þat mariage is figured bitwix man. and

holy churchē. And anoþer is. for þe man is hede of
þe womman. Algate by ordynaunce it shulde be doo soo.
[923] ffor if a womman haue moo men þan oon. þan
shuld she haue moo hedes þan oon. and þat were and
horrible þinge byfore god./ ¹And eke oon womman ne
myȝt not plesse to mony men at ones And also
þer ne shuld be neuer pees no rest amonges hem for
euereche wold aske his owne þinge [924] And
ferþermore no man shulde knowe his owne en-
gendrure ne who shuld haue his heritage and þe
woman shuld þe lasse be byloued fro þe tyme þat
she were commytte to mony men

[925] ¶ Nowe commeth how þat a man shuld bere hym
wip hys wiff. and/ namely in two þingges þat is to
say in suffraunce and in reuerence and þat shewed first crist
whan he made furst womman [926] ffor he ne made her
nouȝt of þe hede of Adam. for / she shulde not haue to
grete lordship. [927] ffor þer as þe womman hap þe
maistrie she makeþ to mochel disaraye þer neden noon
ensamples of þis. The experience of þis
auȝt suffice [928] ¶ Also certes god ne made not
womman of þe foote of Adam for she shuld not be
holden to lowe for she can not pacyently suffre But god
made womman of the ribbe of Adam for womman shulde
be felawe vnto man [929] ¶ Man shulde bere hym to his
wiff in feip. in troupe an in loue. as seiþ seint
paulē that a man shal loue his wiff as crist loued ¶ Paulus./
holy church þat loued it so wel þat he dyed for it.
So shal a man for his wiff if it were nede

[930] ¶ Now how þat a womman shuld be subiecte
to her husbond þat telleþ seint Peter / [. . . *no gap* ¶ Petrus
in the MS.] [931] and eke as seiþ þe decree. A womman
as longe as she is a wiff she ne hap noon
auctorite to swere ne bere witnesse wip-out leue of
her husbonde þat is her lord it shuld be so
by resoun. [932] she shulde eke serue hym in all

honeste and bene attempre. of her aray I woot weþ
 þat þei shulden setten her entent to plesse her hus-
 bondes but not by her queyntise of aray. / [933] Seynt
 ¶ Ieronimus Ierom seiþ. þat wyves þat bene apparaild in silk and
 in purpure ne mowe not cloþen hem in Ihesu
 crist [. no gap in the MS.]
 ¶ gregorius. / [934] ¶ Seynt Gregor seiþ eke þat no wif sekep
 precious aray but oonly for veynglorie to bene
 honoured þe more toforn þe puple [935] ¶ It is a
 foly a womman to haue a grete aray outward and
 her self be foule inward [936] ¶ A wif shuld eke be
 mesurable in lokynge and in berynge and / in laughinge
 and discrete in alþ her wordes and dedys [937] and /
 abouen alþe worldly þingges. She shulde loue her husbonde
 wiþ al her herte and to hym by trewe of her body
 [938] ¹So shuld an husbonde eke by trewe to his wif.
 ffor siþens þat al þe body is þe husbondes. soo shuld
 her hertes bene oon Or ellis þer is bytwix hem twoo as in
 þat no parfite mariage [939] ¶ Than shal a man vnder-
 stond þat for iij. þingges a man and his wif
 mowen assemblen ¶ The furst is for engen-
 drure of children to serue god. ffor certes þat is
 þe cause fynaht of matrimoynye [940] ¶ Anoper is to
 3eelde eueriche of hem to oper þe dette of her body.
 ffor neiþer of hem haþ power of her owne bodye
 ¶ The iij. is forto esthewe leccherye and vilenye
 ¶ The iiij. forsop is dedly synne. / [941] As to þe
 furst it is meritorie þe seconnde also for as saieþ þe
 decree. þat chaseþ merite of chaastite þat 3eldeþ to
 her husbonde þe dette of her body. 3e þou3e it be
 ageinst her lykinge and þe lust of her herte [942] ¶ The
 iij. manere of venial synne. And trewly scarcely may
 eny of þise be wiþ-uten venyal synne for þe
 corrupcion and for þe delite [943] ¶ The iiij.
 manere is forto vnderstonde if þei assemble oonly for
 amorous loue. and for noon of þe forsaide causes but

forto accomplise pilk brennyng' delite þei rechi
neuere hou often · soþly it is a dedly synne. And ȝit wiþ
sorowe some folk wil peynen hem more to doo þan
her appetit suffiseþ

[944] ¶ The secounde maner of chastite is to be
a clene wydowe and to eschewe þe enbrasing' of man
and to desire þe enbrasing' of Ihesu crist. [945] These
bene þoo þat han beñ wyues and han forgoon her hus-
bondes And eke wommen þat han / doon lecherye and bene
releued by penaunce [946] And certes if þat a wiff
coupe kepe her al chaast' by licence of her husbonde so
þat she ner noon occasiō þat he a-gilt' it
were to hir' a grete merite [947] These maner
of wommen þat obseruen chaastite most be clene in herte
as wel as in body and in þouȝt and mesurable in clopinge
and in contynauce ¶ Abstynent' in etynge and
drynkyng in spekinge and in dede and þan is she þe
vesseñ of þe boyst' of þe blessed Mawdeleyne þat
fulfilleþ holy church ful of good odure [948] ¶ The iij.
maner of chaastite is virgynyte. And it byhoueþ þat she
be holy in hert' and clene of body þan is she
spouse to Ihesu crist and she is þe lif of aungels.
[949] She is þe preysyng' of þis world And she is as
þise marters in regalite 'she haþ in hure þat tunge may
not telle [950] Virgynite bare our lorde
Ihesu crist and virgyne was hymself

[951] ¶ Another remedy aȝeinst' lecherye is specially
to wiþdrawe such þingges as ȝeuen occasiō to pilk
vilanye as ease and etynge and drinkinge. ffor certes whan
þe pottle boyleþ strongly þe best' remedy is to wiþ-
drawe þe fuyre [952] ¶ Sleping' longe in grete quiete
is eke a grete norice to leccherie

[953] ¶ Another remedye aȝeinst' lecherie is þat a
womman or a man eschewe compagne of hem by
whiche he douteþ to be tempted. for al be it soo þat þe
dede be wiþ-stonde ȝit is þere grete temptaciō

[954] ¶ Sonly a white waff al-pouze it ne brenne not fully by stikkyng of a Candell 3it is þe walle blak of þe leyte [955] ful oft tyme I rede þat no man trest in his owne perfeccion But he be strengre þan Sampson. Holyer þan david. wiser þan ¶ Salomon

[956] ¶ Now after þat I haue declared 3ou as I can of þe vij. dedly synnes and some of her braunches and her remedies. sonly if I coupe I wold telle 3owe þe ten Comaundementz. [957] but so hi3e a doctrine I lete to devynes. Napeles I hope to god þei bene touched in þis tretys euerech of hem alle

¶ De confessione!

¶ Confessionoun

¶ Augustinus

[958] **N**OW for as moche as þe secounde part of penitence stant in confession of mouþ as I byganne in þe [first] chapitere I seye Seint Austyn seip. [959] Synne is euery word and euery dede and al þat men coueiten azeinst þe lawe of Ihesu crist. And þis is forto synne. in herte in mouþ and in dede be þi .v. wittes þat bene sizt hering smellynge taasting or sauouringe and felynge [960] ¶ Now is it good to vnderstonde þe circumstances þat aggreggen mochel euery synne. / [961] ¶ Thow shalt considere what þou art þat dost þe synne. whedere þou be male or female. 3ong or olde. gentile or þraff fre or seruauente. hool or seke. wedded or syngeH. Ordred or vnordred. wise or fool. clerk or Seculere. [962] If she be of þi kynrede bodily or goostly or noon. If eny of þi kynrede haue synned wip hure or noon. and mony moo/ þingges

[963] ¶ That other circumstaunce is this. Whedere it be doon in fornicacion or noon. or in aduoutrie. or in incest. or noon maiden / or noon in maner of homicede or noon horrible grete synne or smale. and how longe þou hast contynued in synne [964] ¶ The iij. circumstaunce is þe place where þou hast doon synne whedere in oþer

mennys house or in þine owne. in feeld or in church.
 or in chirch hawe In church dedicate or noon
 [965] For if þe church were halowed and man or womman
 spillen her kynde in wiþ þat place by-twene way of synne or by
 wikked temptacioñ þe church were enterdited til it
 were reconciled by þe bisshope [966] and þe preest shuld
 be enterdited þat did such a vilany þe teerme of al his liff. he
 shuld no more synge masse. and if he did he shuld
 do dedly synne at euery tyme þat he songe masse
 [967] ¶ The 4. circumstannce is by which mediat-
 ours as by massagers or for enticement or for
 consentement to bere company wiþ felawship for
 mony a wrecch forto bere companye willen goo to þe
 deuel of helle. [968] ffor þei þat eggen or con-
 senten to þe synne bene partniers of þe synne and
 of þe dampnacioñ of þe synners

[969] ¶ The .v. is of how many tymes
 þat he hap synned and /it be in his mynde. and howe oft
 þat he hap falle. [970] ffor he þat oft falleþ in synne
 he despiseþ þe mercy of god and encreseþ his synne
 and is vnkynde to god and he wexeþ þe more feble
 to wiþstonde synne. and synneþ þe more listlier
 [971] and þe latter ariseþ. and is þe more eschewe for
 to schryuen hym and namely to hym þat hap bene his con-
 fessoure. [972] ffor which þat folk whan þei falle azein
 in her old folies. ouzt þei forleten her confessours
 al vtterly or ellis þei departen her shrift in dyuers
 place But soply such departed shrift deserueþ no
 mercy of god of his synnes. [973] ¶ The sext circum-
 stannce is þis why þat a man synneþ as by whiche temptacioñ
 And if hym self procure þilk temptacioñ or by ex-
 cityng of oþer folk. or if þou synne with a womman by
 force or by hure owne assent [974] /Or if þe womman
 Maugre her hede hap bene enforced or noon. þis
 shal she telle for coueityse or for pouert. And
 if it were her procuryng or noon and such manere

harnays. [975] ¶ The .7. circumstaunce is in what manere he haþ doon his synne. or noon or / how þat he haþ suffred. howe folk han done to her. [976] Of þe same shal men telle pleyntly all circumstannces and whedere he haþ synned wip comune bordell wommen or noon [977] 'or do his synne in holy tymes or non. In fast- yng' tymes or non. or be longe from his shrift'. or after his latter schrift' [978] haþ perauenture broken his penaunce enioyned. by whos helpe and whoos counsaile by sorcery or craft' all þise þingges mosten be tolde. [979] After þat' þei bene grete or smale engreggen þe conscience of man ¶ And eke þe preest' þat' is þi Iuge may þe better be auysed of his luggement' in zeuyng' of þi penaunce and þat' is after þi contricioñ. [980] ffor vnderstondeþ wel þat' afters tyme þat' a man hath defouled his bapteme by synne if he wil come to sauacioñ. ther nys noon oþer way but' by penitence and schrift' and by satisfaccioñ / [981] and namely by þe two if þer be a confessour' to which he may schryve hym. And þe iij. if he haue lif to perfourme it'

[982] Than .shal man loke and considere if he wil make a trewe and a profitable confessioñ. Ther most' be 4. condicioñs [983] ¶ ffirst it most' be in sorowful bitternes of herte as seide þe kyng' Ezechieþ to god ¶ I wil remembre all þe 3eeres of my lif in bitternesse of myn herte [984] ¶ This condycioñ of bitter- nesse haþ .v. signes. The furst' is þat' confession most' be shamefast' not' forto keueren ne to hiden his synne but' for he haþ agilt' his god and defouled / his soule ¶ [985] And here of seiþ seynt' Austyne ¶ The herte travailþ for shame of his synne. And for he hath grete shamfastnesse he is digne to haue grete mercie [986] which was þe confession of þe publycane þat' wold not' heue vp his yen to heuene for he had offended god in heuene. ffor which shamfastnesse he had anoon þe mercy of god [987] ¶ And therfore seiþ

¶ *Augustinus*¶ *Idem.*

seint Austyne. þat such shamefast folk bene next
 forȝeuenes and remissioñ [988] ¶ That oþer signe is
 humylite of confessioñ / of which seiþ seint Petre ¶ *Petrus*
 ¶ Vmbleþ ȝou vnder þe myȝt of god þe hand of god
 is myȝty in confessioñ for þer-by god forȝeueþ þe
 synnes. ffor he allon haþ þe power / [989] and þis
 humilite shal be in hert and in sygne outward ¶ ffor
 riȝt as he haþ humilite to god in his herte Riȝt so
 shulde he humble his body outward to þe preest þat sitte
 in goddes place [990] for which in no manere siþes þat
 crist is souereyne and / ¹þe preest mene and mediatour by
 twix crist and þe synner. and þe synner is þe last
 by way of resoiñ [991] þan shuld not þe synner sitte
 as high as his confessoure but knele toforn hym or at
 his fete but if malady distroubed it. ffor he shal not take
 kepe who sitte þer but in whos place þat he sitteþ.
 [992] A man þat haþ trespassed to a lorde and commet for to
 aske mercy and maken his accorde and sette hym downe a-noon
 by þe lorde men wolden holde hym outrageous and not
 worpi so sone forto haue remissioñ ne mercy. [993] ¶ The
 iiij. signe is þat þi shrift shul be ful of teeres if
 man may wepe or if man may not wepe wiþ his bodely eyen.
 lat hym wepe in his herte. [994] ffor suche was þe confessioñ
 of seynt petre ffor aftere þat he had forsake Ihesu crist
 he went out and wepte ful bitterly [995] ¶ The iiij.
 signe is þat he ne lette not for his / shame to shewen
 his confessioñ. [996] Such was þe confessioñ of þe
 maudeleyn þat sche ne spared for no shame of hem þat weren
 at þe fleest forto go to our lorde Ihesu crist and byknowe
 to hym her synne [997] ¶ The .v. signe is þat a man
 & a womman be obeysaunte to receyue þe penaunce þat
 is hym enioyned. ffor certes Ihesu crist for
 þe gyltes of oon man was obedient to his deþe

[998] ¶ The secounde condicioñ of verrey confessioñ ¶ *2^a condicio.*
 is þat it be hastely doñ. ffor certes if a man had a
 dedly wounde: euer þe lenger þat he tariet to warisshe

him self þe more wold it corrupte and hast hym to his depe and eke þe wounde wold be þe wors forto hele [999] ¶ And riȝt so fareþ synne þat longe tyme is in a man vnschewed [1000] ¶ Certes a man ouȝt hastely to shewe his synne. for mony causes as for drede of deþe þat cometh often sodeynly and is in no certeyn what tyme it shal be ne in what place. And eke þe stretchyng of oo synne draweth in anoþer [1001] ¶ And eke þe lenger þat he tarieth þe farther is he from crist. And if he abide vnto his last day scarcely may he shryve hym or amende hym of his synnes ne repenten hym for þe greuous maladye of his deþ. [1002] & for as moche as he haþ not in his lif herkened Ihesu Crist whan he haþ spoken vnto hym. he shal crien to our lord Ihesu crist at his last day. and scarcely wil he harken hym [1003] ¶ Vnderstonde þat þis condicioṃ moste haue four þingges¹ thi schrifte most be pursueide byforn and avised for wikked hast dooþ no profite and þat a man konne shryue hym of his synnes be it of pride eijer of Envie and so forþ wiþ þe spices and circumstaunces / [1004] and þat he haue comprehended / in his mynde þe nombre and þe gretnesse of his synnes and / how longe þat he haþ layne in synne [1005] and eke þat he be contrite of his synnes and in stedfast purpoos by þe [grace of god] neuere eft to falle aȝein in synne and eke þat he drede and countrewaite hym self þat he flee þe occasions of synne to which he is enclyned [1006] ¶ Also þat þow shalt schryve þe of alle þi synnes to oo man and nouȝt parcell mele to oon man and parsel mele to a noþer man þat is to vnderstonde in entent to parten þi confession as for shame or for drede. ffor it nys but stronglyng of þe soule [1007] ffor certes Ihesu crist is al good in hym is noon imperfeccion and perfore euere he forȝeueþ alle partitly or ellis neuere a dele [1008] ¶ I say not if þowe be sygned to þe penytauncere for certeyn synne þat þou art bounden to shewe hem all þe remenaunt of þi synnes of which

þowe hast be shryuen of þi curate but it like þe
 of þine humilite This is no departing of shrift
 [1009] ne I ne say not þer as I speke of dyuision of confes-
 sion þat if þou haue licence. forto shryue þe to a discrete
 and honest preest and where þe likeþ / and by þe licence
 eke of þe curate þat þowe ne maiste wel shryue þe
 of alle þi synnes [1010] but lat no blot be behynde.
 lat no synne be vntold as fer as þou hast remem-
 braunce [1011] And whan þou shalt bene shryuen of þi
 Curate telle hym eke of alle þe synnes þat þou hast done
 sþens þou were last yahriuen as þis is þe wikked entent of
 dyuision of shrift

[1012] ¶ Also þe verrey shrift askep certeyn con-
 ditions. ffurst þat þou shryue þe by þi free wille
 not constreyned ne for shame of folk ne for maladie
 or such þingges ffor it is reson þat he þat trespaseþ
 by his ffree wille / [. . . *no gap in the MS.*] confesse his
 trespas. [1013] noon oþer man shal telle his synne
 but he hym self ne he shal not nay or denye his synne
 ne wraþe him azeinst þe preest for his amony synge
 to lete synne [1014] ¶ The seconnde condicio is þat þine
 shrift be lawfull. þat is to say þou þat shryuest
 þe and eke þe preest þat hereþ þi confession bene
 verrelly in þe feip of holy church [1015] and þat a
 man be not despeired. of þe mercy of Ihesu Crist And
 Caym or Iudas [1016] And eke a [man] mote accuse
 hym of his owne trespas and nouzt anoper but he
 shal blame & witen hym self of his owne malice of his
 synne and noon oþer. [1017] But napeles if
 anoper man be encheson or entiser of his synnes Or þat if
 þe state of a persone be such thorgh which his synne is
 a-gregged or ellis þat he may not pley nly shryuen hym.
 but he telle þe persone þe which he haþ synned wiþe.
 þan may he telle it [1018] so þat his entent ne be not
 to bakbite þe persone but oonly to declaren his con-
 fession.

[1019] ¶ Thowe þe shalt not eke make no lesing in þine confessiō for humilite parauenture to say þat þou hast doon synnes of which þou were neuere gylty [1020] ¶ ffor seint Austyn seiþ if þow be cause of humilite makest lesing of þi self þough þowe ne were nouȝt in synne afor: ȝit art þowe þan in synne þorgh þi lesynges. [1021] Thow most eke shewe þi synne by þi propre mouþe but þou be wexe dombe and not by no letter ffor þou þat hast done synne þou shalt haue þe same confessiō [1022] ¶ Thow shalt not eke peynt þi confessiō be faire and subtile wordes to keuere more þi synne ffor þan bygilest þou þi self & nought þe preest. Thow most tel it platly be it neuere so foule ne so horrible [1023] ¶ Thow shalt eke shryue þe to a preest þat is discrete to counsaile þee. and eke þou shalt not shryue þe for veynglorie ne for ypocrecy ne for no cause but oonly for þe doute of Ihesu crist and þe helpe of þi soule. [1024] Thow shalt not eke renne to þe preest al sodeynly to telle hym listly þi synne as who so telleþ a lape or a tale but avisely and wiþ grete deuociō [1025] & generally shryue þe oft if þou often falle oft arise by confessiō [1026] And if þow shryue þe after þan onys of synne which þou hast be shryuen it is þe more merite as seiþ seint Austyne. Thow shalt haue þe more lightly relesinge and grace of god boþe of synne and of peyne. [1027] And certes onys a ȝere at þe leest way it is lawful forto bene howseled. ffor sobly onys [a ȝere] al þingges renouellen

De satisfaccione.

[1028]
Now haue I tolde of verrey confessiō þat is þe Secounde part of penytence

[1029] ¶ The iij. parte of penyence is Satisfaccion and ¶ *Satisfaccio*
 þat stant generalli in almesse and in
 bodily peyne. [1030] Nowe bene þere þre
 manere of Almesse. Contricion of hert wher a man
 offere hym self to god. Anoper is to haue pite of
 þe defaute of his neighbours. þe ¹³ is in
 zeuyng of good counsaile and confort goostly and bodily where
 men han nede and namely in sustynauce of manys foode.
 [1031] And take kepe þat a man haþ nede of þise
 þingges generalli he haþ nede of foode of
 cloþinge and harborowe. he haþ / nede of charitable
 counsaillinge and visitynge of prison and / maladie and
 sepulture of his dede body. [1032] And if þow maist not
 visite þe nedeful wiþ þi persone. visite hym with þi
 massage & / þi giftes [1033] ¶ These bene þe generall
 almesses or werkes of charite of hem þat han temporell
 richesces or discrecion of consailling. Of þise werkes
 shalt þou here at þe day of dome

[1034] ¶ These almesses shuldest þou doon of þine owne
 propre þingges and hastely and / prively if þou maist
 [1035] But napeless if þow maist not doon it prively
 þou shalt not forbere almesse þouze men it See.
 So þat it be not ydo for þonke of þe worlde. but oonly
 forto haue þe þonke of oure / lordes Ihesu crist [1036] ¶ for
 as witnesseth seint Mathewe .v°. A. Cite may not be hid ¶ *Matthai. v.*
 þat is sette on a mounteyn. ne men lighten not a lanterne and
 putte it vnder a busshe. but men sette it on a candel-
 stik to lighten þe men in þe hous. [1037] Riht
 so shal þoure liht lihten toforen men þat þei mowe
 seen þoure good werkes and glorifien þour fadere þat is in
 heuene

[1038] ¶ Now as to speken of bodily peyne. It stont in
 preiers. in wakingges and in fastingges and in vertuous

techingges of orisons [1039] ¶ 3e shul vnderstonde þat orisons or preiers is / forto seyn a pitous wille of hert þat redresseþ in god and expresseþ it by worde outward to remoooue harmlees. and to han þingges espirituel and durable. and somtyme temporal þingges of which orisons certes þe orison of þe pater noster haþ Ihesu crist enclosed most þingges [1040] ¶ Certes it is priuilegged of .3. þingges. in his dignite ffor which it is more digne þan eny oþer preiere for þat ihesu crist hym self made it. [1041] and it is short for it shuld be conned more listly and forto wipholde it þe more esely in herte and helpen hym self þe after wip þe orison [1042] and for a man shuld be þe lasse very to sey it / and for a man ne may. not excusen hym to lerne it it is so short and so esy. and for it comprehendeth in it self alle good preiers [1043] ¶ The exposicioñ of þis holy preier þat is so excellent and digne I bytake to þise maisters of theologie sauf þus moche wil I seyne. þat whan þou priest þat god / forȝeue þe þi giltyes as þou forȝeuest hem þat a-giltyen þe be ful wel ware þat þow ne be not out of charite [1044] This holy orison amenuseþ eke venyal synne and þerfore it aperteneth specialy to penitence.

[1045] This preiere most be trewly saide in verrey feiþ and þat men prey to god ordynatly & discretely and deuoutly. Alway a man shal putt his will to be subiecte to þe wille of god [1046] This orison most eke be saide wip gret humblesse and ful pure honesty and not to annoyauce of eny man or womman. It most nedes be contynued with þe werkes of charite [1047] it availleþ eke aȝeinst þe vices of þe saule. ffor as seiþ seynt Ierom ¶ By fastyng ben saued þe vices of flesh and by preiers þe vices of þe saule

¶ Ieronimus

[1048] ¶ Afters þis þou shalt vnderstonde þat bodily payne stant in wakinge. ffor Ihesu crist seiþ. wakeþ and preieþ þat 3e ne entre in wikked

¶ The

temptaciōns [1049] ¶ 3e shul vnderstonde þat fastyng stont in .3. thyngges. In forberyng of bodily mete and drink and in forberyng of worldly Iolitees. and in forberyng of dedly synne. This is to say þat a man shal kepe hym / from dedly synne with al his myzt.

[1050] And þow shalt vnderstonde eke þat god ordayned fastyngges And to fastyng apperteneth four þingges. [1051] largenesse to poor folk. Gladnes of hert espiritueh nouzt to be angred nor anoyed ne to gruch for he fasteth and also resonable houre forto ete by mesure. þat is to say þat a man shuld not eten in vntyme. ne sitte þe lenger at his table for he fasteth.

[1052] Than shalt þou vnderstonde þat bodily peyne stant. in disciplyne or techyng. by word or by // writyng or by ensample Also in weryng of heires. eiper of stamyne eiper of haberion on her naked flessch for cristes sake and such manere penaunces [1053] ¶ But ware þe wel þat such manere penaunces ne make not þine hert bitter or angry. anoyed of hym self. ffor better is to cast away þine heire. þan forto cast away þe swetnesse of our lord Ihesu Crist [1054] And þefore seiþ saint Poule ¶ Paulus / ¶ Clope þou as þei þat beñ chosen of god in hert of mysericord. debonairte. suffraunce and such maner of clopinge of whiche Ihesu crist is more apaide þan of heire or of hawberkes.

[1055] Then is disciplyne eke in knokkyng of þi brest. in scourgyng wip 3eerdes. in knelyng in tribulacions [1056] in suffryng paciently wrongges þat bene doon to hym. and eke in pacient suffraunce of maladies or lesyngges. of worldly Cateh of wiff or childe or oþer frendes

[1057] Than shalt þow vnderstonde which þingges distrowben penaunce as þis is in þre maners. þat is drede. Shame. and hope. And whan hope þat is desperaciō. [1058] And forto speken / furst of drede for whiche he

weneþ þat he may suffre no penaunce [1059] þer
 aȝeinst is remedye fforto þenk' þat bodily penaunce. is
 but short and litell at þe regarde of þe peyne of helle. þat
 is cruel and so longe þat it lasteþ wiþ-uten ende.

[1060] ¶ Now aȝeinst þe shame þat a man haþ to
 shryuen hym [.]

. *no gap in*
the MS. [1061] aȝeinst þe shame shuld a man þenk' þat
 by þe way of reson þat he þat haþ not bene ashamed. to
 doo foule þingges Certes hym ouȝt not be ashamed to
 doo fair þingges and good þingges and þat is confessions. [1062]
 A man shuld þenk þat god seþ and woote al his
 þouȝtes and his werkes to hym may no þinge be
 hidde ne keuered [1063] ¶ Men shuld eke remembre
 hem of þe shame þat is to come at þe day of dome to
 hem þat bene nouȝt penytent and lif in present
 lif. [1064] ffor alle þe creatures in heuene in erþe and in helle
 shuln seen / apertly al þat þei hyden in þis world.

[1065] ¶ Now forto speke of þe hope of hem þat
 bene so negligent and sclowe to shryuen hem it stant in
 two maners. [1066] That oon is þat he hopeþ to lyve
 longe and forto purchase mochel Richesse for his delite
 and þan he wil shryuen hym as he seiþ
 he may as hym semeþ tymely ynowe come to shrift
 [1067] ¶ Anoper is of þe Surquidrye þat he haþ in cristes
 mercye. [1068] And aȝeinst þe first he shal þenk
 that our lif is in no sikernesse And eke þat alle þe
 richesse of þe world bene in aduenture and passinge as a
 shadowe on a walle [1069] ¶ And as seiþ seynt gregoris
 That it apperteneþ to þe grete riȝtwisnesse of god þat
 neuer shal þe peyn stynt of hem þat neuer
 nolde wiþdrawe hem from synne her þonkes. but
 euer contynued þer Inne. ¶ ffor þilk perpetual wille to done
 synne shullen þei haue perpetual peyne.

¶ Gregorius ./.

Or Wanhope, or
 Despair

[1070] ¶ Whan-hope is in two maners ¶ þe furst whan-
 hope is in þe mercy of Crist ¶ That oper is þat þei

þenk þat þei ne myȝt not longe perseuere in goodnesse [1071] ¶ The furst wanhope cometh of þat he demeth þat he hath synned so gretly so ofte and so longe liggyng in synne þat he shal not be sauēd [1072] ¶ Certes aȝeinst þat cursed wanhope he shuld þenk þat þe passiō of Ihesu crist is more ¹stronge forto vnbynde þan synne is forto bynde [1073] ¶ And aȝeinst þe seconnd wanhope he shal þenk þat as often as he falleþ he shal arise by penytence. And þouȝe he neuer so long haue lyen in synne þe mercy of crist is alway redy to receyuen hym to mercy [1074] aȝeinst þe wanhope þat he demeth þat he shuld not longe perseuere in goodnesse ¶ he shal þenk þat þe feblenesse of the deul may no þing doon but men willen suffre hym [1075] And eke he shal haue strength and þe helpe of god and of al holy churche and of þe protection of aungels if him lust

[1076] ¶ Than shullen men vnderstonde what is þe ¶ *Verba saluatoris*
fruyte of penaunce as aftre þe wordes of Ihesu Crist it is þe endelees blisse of heuene [1077] þer Ioie hap no contrariouse of woo ne greuaunce þer alle harmes ben passed of þis present liif wher as is þe sikernesse fro þe peyn of helle þer as þe blisful company þat reioysen hem euermoo euery of opers Ioie [1078] þer as þe body of man þat whilom was foule and derk is more cleer þan þe sonne Ther as whilom þe body was seke and frele and feble and mortel is vnmortel and so stronge and so hool þat þer may no þinge enpeire it. [1079] wher as neiþer is hunger prest. ne cold but euery soule repleynshed wip þe sȝt of þe parfit knowynge of god [1080] This blisful regne may man purchase by pouert espirituel and þe glorie by lownesse. þe plente of Ioy by hunger and prest. and þe rest by travaille and þe liif by deef and mortificaciō of synne.

To pilk' liff he vs bringe þat' bouȝt' vs wip his pre-
cious blood ./ Amen ./

¶ *Explicit fabula Rectoris.* ./

Here takeþ þe maker of þis booke his leue ./

[1081] **N**owe prey I to hem alle þat' harken þis lital tretise.
or rede þat' ȝif þer be eny þing' in it' þat' likeþ
hem þat' þerof þei þonk our lord Ihesu
crist' of whom procedeþ al witte and al goodnes.
[1082] And ȝif þer be eny þing' þat' displese hem ./ I
prey hem also þat' þei arette it' to þe defaute of myne
vnkonnyng and not to my wille þat' wold' ful fayn haue
seide better ȝif þat' I had hade connyng. [1083] ffor our
boke seiþ ¶ *Al* þat' is writen is writen for our
doctrine & þat' is myn entent' [1084] ¹Wherefore I
biſeche ȝou mekely for þe mercy of god þat' ȝe prei for
me þat' crist' haue mercy on me and forȝeue me my
geltys [1085] and namely of my tranſlaciōns and endit-
tinges of worldly vanytes þe which I reuoke in my re-
tracciōns [1086] As is þe boke of Troiles. The book
also of fame. The boke of the xxv. ladies. / The
boke of þe duchesse. The boke of ſeynt' valentyne's
day of þe parlement' of briddes. The tales of Canter-
bury pilk' þat' sownen into synne [1087] The book
of þe lyōn and mony oþer bokes ȝif þei were in my
remembraunce. and mony a ſonge. And mony a lecherous
lay þat' Crist' for his gret' mercy forȝeue me þe synne.
[1088] ¶ But' of þe tranſlaciōn of Boys de *consolacione*
and oþer bokes of legendys of ſeyntes and omelies
and moralite & deuociōn [1089] of þat' I þonke our
lord Ihesu crist' and his blessed / modere and alle þe
ſeyntes of heuene [1090] byſechyng' hem þat' þei from
hens forþ vnto my lyues ende ſende me grace to
bywaile my giltyes and to stody to þe ſauaciōn of my
soule. and graunt' me grace of verrey penaunce. con-

fession and satisfaccion to doon in þis present liffe
 [1091] þorgh þe benigne grace of hym þat is kyng of
 kyngges and preest of alle preestes þat bouȝt vs
 wiþ þe precious blode of his hert [1092] So þat I may
 bene oon of hem at þe day of dome þat shal be saued./
 Qui cum patre & spiritu sancto vivis & regnas deus &cetera.

Here endep þe boke of þe talys of Canter-
 bury compiled by Geffray Chawcer on whoos
 soule Ihesu crist haue mercy. || AmeN ||

[*Square painting of the arms of Henry Percy, 4th Earl of Northumberland, K.G., quartering Poynings, Fitz Payn and Bryan. H on the right, P on the left of the shield, in a Garter with the legend 'hony . soit . qui . mal . y . pence..'* A lion, unicorn, &c, in the 4 corners.]

APPENDIX (to Group B, p. 591).

[*Christ Church MS. 152.*] [on leaf 173, back,
sign. k 2, back]

¶ Sire Nonnes preest oure hoost seyde a none
y-blessed be thy breth & euery stoon
This was a mery tale of Chaunteclere
But be my trouthe if *thou* were seculere
Thow woldeste bene a tredefoul a right
ffor if thow haue corage as *thou* haste myght
The were nede of hennes as I wene
Ye moo than .vij. tymes seventene
See whiche braunnes hath *this* gentel preeste
So grete a nekke & so large a breeste
He loketh as a Sparhauke with his yen
Hym nedeth nat his colour for to dyen [leaf 174, sign. k 3]
with Brasile ne with Greyne of Portyngale /
Now sire faire falle yow for youre tale
And aftir he with fult mery chere
Saide vnto a nother as ye shulle here

Here is ended the Nonnes prestes tale
And folowith the prologe of the Maunciples tale

PETWORTH MS. APPENDIX

OF SECTIONS, WOODCUTS, ETC., NOT IN THE
PETWORTH MS.

- | | PAGE |
|---|------|
| 1. End of the <i>Sumner's Tale</i> , l. 2159-2294 of Group D, § 6, from the Additional MS. 5140 in the British Museum. ('Twould have followd p. 334 above, had it been in the Petworth MS., instead of the spurious lines there given.) | 705 |
| 2. The <i>Clerk-Merchant-Link</i> , Group E, § 3, from the Additional MS. 5140, British Museum. ('Twould have followd p. 373 above (instead of the <i>Merchant's End-Link</i> , p. 374), had it been in the Petworth MS.) | 710 |
| 3. Drawings of the 23 <i>Tellers of the 24 Canterbury Tales</i> , copied from the Ellesmere MS., ¹ and cut on wood by Mr Hooper. | |
| 4. Drawings of 6 <i>Tellers of 6 Canterbury Tales</i> ,—the Reeve, Cook, Monk, Pardoner, Wife of Bath, and Manciple—and 6 <i>Allegorical Figures</i> —Wrath and Mercy, Gluttony and Abstinence, Lechery and Chastity,—from the Cambridge University MS., Gg. 4. 27, cut by Mr Hooper. | |

¹ The Ellesmere cuts can be arranged either in their order in the Ellesmere MS., or in the *Six-Test* order of the Tales. In the latter they 'll be easier to find. See these two orders on p. 704.

Sis-Tent Order of Tales.

	Group
1. Knight	A
2. Miller	
3. Reeve	
4. Cook	
5. Man of Law	B
6. Shipman	
7. Prioress	
8. Chaucer	
9. Monk	C
10. Nun's Priest	
11. Doctor	
12. Pardoner	
13. Wife of Bath	D
14. Friar	
15. Sum'ner	E
16. Clerk	
17. Merchant	F
18. Squire	
19. Franklin	G
20. Second Nun	
21. Canon's Yeoman	H
22. Manciple	
23. Parson	I

Ellesmere MS. Order.

	Group
1. Knight	A
2. Miller	
3. Reeve	
4. Cook	
5. Man of Law	B ₁
6. Wife of Bath	D
7. Friar	
8. Sum'ner	E
9. Clerk	
10. Merchant	F
11. Squire	
12. Franklin	C
13. Doctor	
14. Pardoner	B ₂
15. Shipman	
16. Prioress	
17. Chaucer	
18. Monk	G
19. Nun's Priest	
20. Second Nun	H
21. Canon's Yeoman	
22. Manciple	I
23. Parson	

1.

END OF THE SUMMONER'S TALE.

[*Addit. 5140, Brit. Mus., on leaf 123, back.*]

[And fet his felawe / ther that lay his store
 He loked as he were a wilde bore
 And grynt with the teth / so was he wroth 2161
 A sturdy pas / down to the court he goth
 Wher that ther woned / a man of grete honour
 To whom that he / was alway confessour 2164
 This worthy man / was lorde of that vyllage
 This frere cam / as he were in a rage Sompnour [leaf 124]
 Wher as the lorde / sat etyng at his borde
 Vneth myht the frere / speke a worde 2168
 PETWORTH 705 (6-T. 397) [this page, Addit. 5140]

Til at last / he seid god you see [Addit. MS 5140]
 This lorde gan look / and sayd benedicite
 What frere lohn / what maner worlde is this
 I see weel / that som thing is a-mys 2172
 Ye looke / as the woode wer ful of thevys
 Sit doun a-noon / and telle me what you grevis
 And it shaft ben amendid / yf y may
 I haue *quod* he / had a foul despyt this day 2176
 God yelde it you / a-doun in your village
 That in this worlde / ther nys so pore a pape
 That he nolde haue / abhomyacioun
 Of that y haue / receyved / in the toun 2180
 And yit ne grevith it me also sore
 As that the olde chirle / with lokkis hoore
 Blasfemed hath / our holy covent eek
 Nowe maister *quod* this lorde / y you beseeche 2184
 No maister *quod* he / but a servitour
 Thouh y haue had in scole / that honour
 God lyketh nat / that raby men vs calle
 Nothir in Markat / ne in your large halle 2188
 No force *quod* he / but telle me aH your greef
 Sir *quod* this frere / an odious myschieff
 This day betid is / myn ordre and me
 And so *par consequens* / in eche degre 2192
 Of holy chirch¹ / god amende it sone [¹ Looks like church in the MS]
 Sir *quod* the lorde / ye wot what is to done
 Distempir you nat / ye be my confessour
 Ye be salt of the erth / and the souour 2196
 ffor goddis love / your pacient now holde [See 124, back]
 Tell me your greef / and a-non he him tolde
 As ye haue herd beforne / ye wot weH what
 The lady of the hous / ay still sat 2200
 Tyl she hadde harde / aH what the frere said
 By goddis modir *quod* she / the blisful mayd
 Is ther auht ellis / telle me feithfully
 Madame *quod* he / how thinke ye herby 2204

PETWORTH 706 (6-T. 398) [this page, Addit. 5140]

How that me thenkyth *quod* she / so god me spede [Addit. MS. 5140]
 I sey a cherl / hath don a cherlis dede
 What sholde y sey / god lat him nevir the
 His sike hed / is ful of vanyte 2208
 I holde him / in a maneer ffrenesie
 Madame *quod* he / bi god y shaft not lye
 But yf y / be any weyes may be wreke
 I shaft diffame him / ovirath wher y speke 2212
 The fals blasphemour / that chargid me
 To depart / that wol not departed be
 To euerych man / alych with myschaunce
 The lord sat styth / as he wore in a traunce 2216
 And in his hert / he rolleth vp and doun
 How that this cherle / had ymaginacioun
 To shewe such a probleme / to the ffirere
 Nevir e[r]st er nowe / her y of such matere 2220
 I trow the deviH / put it in his mynde
 In ars / shaft no man / metryk fynde
 Byforn this day / of such a questioun
 Who sholde make / a demonstracioun 2224
 That euery man / shulde haue lyk his part
 As of soun / or of savour / of a fart
 O nyce prowde chirH / y shrew his face
 Loo sirs *quod* the lorde / what harde grace 2228
 To euery man lyk / telle me howe Sompnour [leaf 125,
 That a fart / sholde be departed nowe
 It is an Impossible / it may nat be
 Ey nyce cherl / god lat him nevir the 2232
 The romblyng / of a fart / and euery soun
 Nys but of heyr / reuerberacioun
 And ther it wasteth / lytel and lytel a-vey
 Ther is no man / can deme bi my fey 2236
 Yf that it were / departed equally
 What lo my cherle / lo howe shrewdely
 Vnto my confessour / to day he spak
 I holde him certayn / a demonyak 2240

PETWORTH 707 (6-T. 399) [this page, Addit. 5140]

Now ete your mete / and lat the chirle go play [Addit. MS. 5140]
 Lat him go hang him self / a devylway

[*The Solution of the "Probleme" by the Lord's Squire.*
No break in the MS.]

Now stood the lordis Sqwyer / atte boorde
 That karf his mete / and herd woorde bi woorde 2244
 Of aȝ thing / whiche y haue said
 My lorde *quod* he / be ye nat eviȝ a-payde
 I cowde telle / for a gowne cloȝh
 To you sir frere / so ye be nat wroȝh 2248
 How that a ffart / shaȝ evene delt be
 A-mong your covent / yif it lyke the
 Teȝ *quod* the lorde / and thou shalt haue a-nonȝ
 A gowne cloȝh / bi god and bi seint Iohn 2252
 My lord *quod* he / whan that the wedir is fair
 Ryȝt her before you / sitting in a chayr
 Lat bryng a cart wheel / her in-to this haȝ
 But loke that it haue / his spokys holis aȝ 2256
 xij. spokys / hath a cart wheel comonly
 And bryng me xij. ffrerys / wyte ye why
 ffor xiiijth is a covent as y gesse /
 Your confessour heer / for his worthynesse 2260
 Shaȝ parforme vp the noumbre of his covent [leaf 125, back]
 Thanne shaȝ ye knele adoun / bi oon assent
 And to euery spokis ende / in this maneer
 ffuȝ sadly ley in his nose / shaȝ a ffrere 2264
 your noble confessour / god him save
 Shaȝ holde his nose vpriȝt / vnder the nave
 Thanne shaȝ this chirle / with bely styf and touȝt
 As any tabur / hidir be brouȝt 2268
 And set him on the wheel / ryȝt of this carte
 Vpon the nave / and make him let a fart
 And ye shaȝ seyn / vp pereil of my lyf
 By preeff / whiche is demonstratyf 2272

PETWORTH 708 (e-T. 400) [this page, Addit. 5140]

That equally / the soun of it wol wende [Addit. MS 5140]
 And eek the styng¹ / vnto the spokys eende [1 altered from
 stinch]
 Sauþ that this worthi man your confessour
 Bicause he is a man / of gret honour 2276
 Shal haue the first frute / as resoun is
 The noble vsage of freris / it is this
 The worthiest man of hem al / shal first be served² [2 d written
 over st]
 And certeynly / he hath it wel deserued 2280
 He hath to day tauht vs / so moch good
 Wyth preching in the pulpet / ther he stood
 That y may vouchesauf / y say for me
 He hadde the first smelt / of fflartis thre 2284
 And so wolþ all thys covent hardely
 He berith him so fair / and so hoolyly
 The lord / the lady / and ech man sauþ the freres
 Said that Iaynkyn / spake in his mateere 2288
 As well as Euclido / or Partholome
 Touchyng the Cherlis / thei seiden / subtilte
 And bi witt / made him speke as he spake
 He is no fool ./ nor no domynyak Sompnour [leaf 126]
 And Iaynkyn / hath wonne a new gowne 2293
 My tale is don / we be almost at towne

Explicit fabula Apparitoris] [Addit. MS 5140
 extract stops]

2.

[Addit. MS, Brit. Mus., 5140, leaf 148.]

Marchaunt

WEpyng and weylyng / care and othir sorwe
 I knowe Inouh / on evyn and on morwe
 Quod the marchaunt / and so don othir mo
 That weddid be / I trowe that it be so 1216
 fful wel y wot / it farith so by me
 I haue a wyf / wors may non be
 ffor thouh the feende / to hir coplid were
 She wolde him ouyr macche / I dar wel swere 1220
 What shulde y reherce / in specialle
 Hir hih malice / she is a shrewe wyth alle
 Ther is a long / and a large difference
 Betwene Grisildes / grete pacience 1224
 And of my wyf / the passing cruelte
 wer y on-bounde / also mot y the
 I wolde neur eft / com in the snare
 we weddid men / lyve in sorwe and care 1228
 Assay who wyth / and he shaft fynde
 That y sey soth / be seynt Thomas of ynde
 As for the more partye / y sey nat alle
 God shelde / that it sholde so be-falle 1232
 A good sire ost¹ / y haue wedded be [? MS. 5140]
 Thes monethes too / and moo nat parde
 And yit y trowe / that he that att his lyf
 wyfles hath ben / thouh that men wolde him ryffe 1236
 Vnto the hert / ne cowde he in no maneer
 Tellen vs so moche sorwe / as I nowe heer
 Cowde telle of my wyfys / cursidnesse
 Nowe quod our ost / marchaunt so god you blisse 1240
 Sith so mychil / knowe ye of that arte
 fful hertely y pray / telle vs a parte
 Gladly quod he / but of myn owne sore
 ffor sory hert / y telle may no more 1244
Explicit prologus Mercatoris [Addit. MS 5140 extract ends]

PETWORTH 710 (6-T. 443) [this page, Addit. 5140]

DRAWINGS OF THE 23 TELLERS

OF THE

24 CANTERBURY TALES,

COPIED FROM THE ELLESMERE MS,

AND CUT ON WOOD,

BY

MR TH. H. Hooper.

In this first issue, 1871, only 14 of the Cuts are given. The other 10 will follow in 1872. When the print of each MS is bound, the cut of each Teller of a Tale can be put at the beginning of his Tale, as in the Ellesmere MS, or by his description in the General Prologue, to contrast the artist's hand with the poet's; or, all the cuts can be put together before or after the Prologue, or at the end of the volume (as not part of the MS), according to the fancy of each Member.



THE MILLERE.
Ellesmere MS, leaf 38, back.



THE KNIGHT.

Ellesmere MS, leaf 14.

(The brand on the horse's hip—M, ? for *Miles*—
is in ink, and probably by a later hand.)



THE COOK.

Ellesmere MS, leaf 51.



THE REVE.

Ellismere MS, leaf 68.



THE WYF OF BATHE.

Ellesmere MS, leaf 76.



THE MAN OF LAWE.

Ellesmere MS, leaf 54, back.



THE FRERE.

Ellesmere MS, leaf 80, back.



THE SOMONOUR.

Ellsmere MS, leaf 85, back.



THE CLERK OF OXFORD.

Ellesmere MS, leaf 92.



THE SHIPMAN.

Ellesmere MS, leaf 147, back.



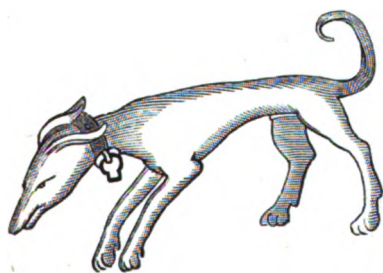
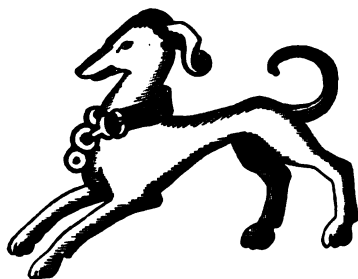
THE PRIORESSE.

Ellesmere MS, leaf 162, back.



CHAUCER.

Ellesmere MS, leaf 137, back.



THE MONK.
Ellemer MS, leaf 173.



THE NONNES PREEST.

Blacmore MS, leaf 183.

